



Gc  
929.2  
Sm513s  
1159001

GENEALOGY COLLECTION

ALLEN COUNTY PUBLIC LIBRARY



3 1833 01418 7972





# FAMILY TREE BOOK

## *Genealogical and Biographical*

*Listing the relatives of General William  
Alexander Smith and of W. Thomas Smith*

COMPILED BY THEM

---

DATA for The Flake Tables gathered  
by Mrs. Julia Flake Burns and by  
Osmer D. Flake.

NAMES of writers of sketchess appear-  
ing after the sketch, except when asked  
that the name be omitted.

---

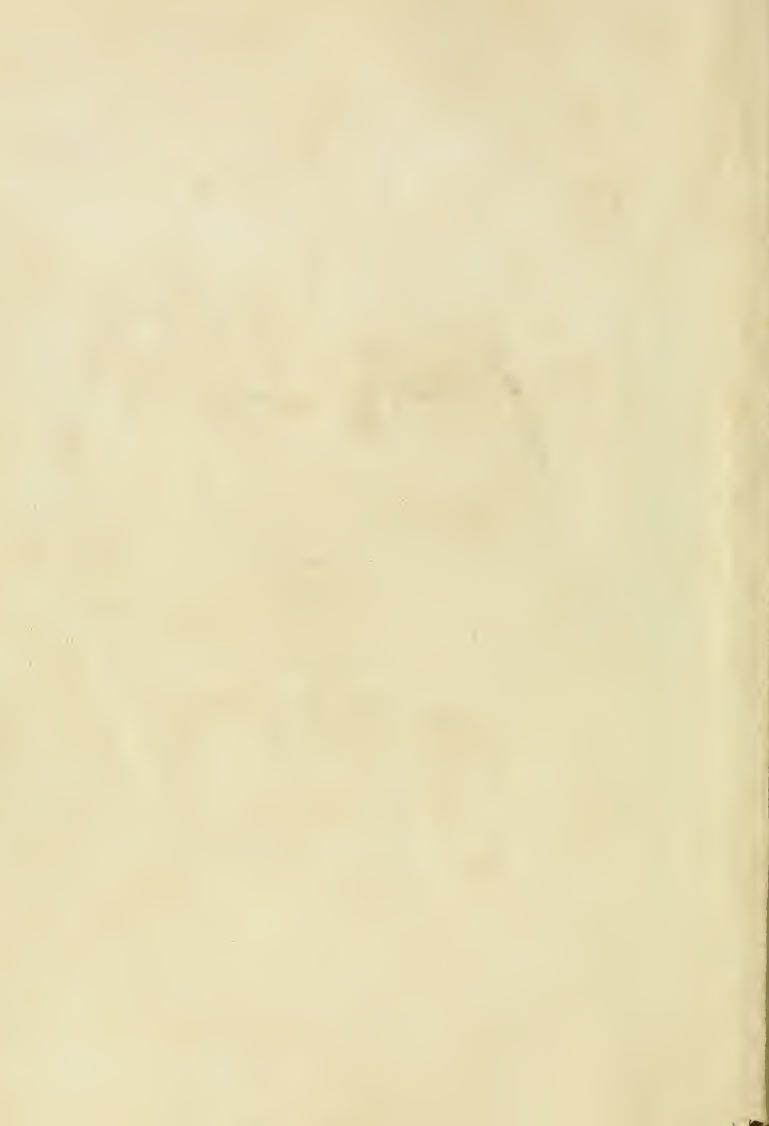


PUBLISHED BY W. THOMAS SMITH

- 1922 -

---

One thousand books printed. For sale by Mrs. Bettie Smith Hughes, 102 North Gramercy Place, Los Angeles, California. Price \$10.00. All books ordered and paid for before Dec. 25, 1922 will be sold for \$7.50 each and sent by Parcel Post. After Dec. 25, 1923, price will be \$12.50 each.



1159001



Smith

14 Charles E. Little - #10.00



## Honor Roll of Our Ancestors

- Alston, Col. John, The Emigrant of Chowan County, N. C. (100) married Mary Clark.
- Alston, Elizabeth, daughter of Col. John, married Samuel Williams Sr. (102).
- Bellew, Isaac, The Emigrant (800, 840).
- Bellew, Abraham, married Catherine (Katie) Smith, (800, 840).
- Bellew, Mary, married John Smith No. 3 (600, 907).
- Bennett, Gen. William, The Emigrant (844) also (806F, 806, 845).
- Bennett, Rev. William Jr. about 1778, married Nancy Hucksten (806E, 844).
- Bennett, William No. 3, married Susanna Dunn (806F, 844, 845).
- Bennett, Lemuel Dunn, married Jane Little (806G, 806H, 845).
- Bennett, Mary Jane, married William Alexander Smith (806H—F, 631).
- Collin, Laurence, Master Gunner under Sir Oliver Cromwell at Nottingham, England (500).
- Collin, Fortune, wife of Thomas Smith Sr. of Nottingham (500, 901).
- Cartlitch, John, father of Elizabeth Cartlitch (501B).
- Cartlitch, Elizabeth, married Samuel Smith Sr. of London (501B).
- Clark, Mary, The Emigrant and wife of Col. John Alston (100).
- Dunn, John, The Emigrant (806D, 845, 846).
- Dunn, Bartholomew, born 1716, husband of Ruth Dunn (806D, 845, 846).
- Dunn, Ruth, wife of Bartholomew.
- Dunn, Isaac, married Mary Sheffield (806D, 846, 845).
- Dudley, Mary, wife of Samuel Williams of Edgecombe County, N. C. prior to Revolution (103).
- Flake, Samuel, The Emigrant, (300, 301, 904). Sallie (Alcy) Harris second wife, stepmother of Mary Flake.
- Flake, Mary, wife of John Smith No. 2 (301-A, 503, 903).
- Garton, Thomas, father of Elizabeth (500).
- Garton, Elizabeth, in 1630 married John Smith Jr. (500) (901).
- Goff, Jane, born about 1768, married Thomas Smith (504, 912).
- Harris Sallie (Alcy), second wife of Samuel Flake, stepmother of Mary Flake, our ancestor.
- Hooper, Mary, the first wife of Thomas Smith of Nottingham. We are from Fortune Collin, the second wife.
- Hucksten, "Miss", wife of Rev. William Bennett (806E, 844).
- Ingram, Edwin, married Nancy Montgomery (801, 839, 841).
- Ingram, Joseph, "Redhead", married Catherine (Katie) McCaskill (801, 839, 841).
- Ingram, Ann (Nancy) Montgomery, married Presley Nelme Jr.
- Little, William, (806G).
- Matlock, John Caswell, married Mary Merrick (2, 960).
- Merrick, "Mother", died age 111 Dode County, Mo. (2).
- Merrick, Elizabeth, married James White (2, 50, 961).
- Montgomery, Col. Hugh, married Lady Moore (801, 839).
- Moore, Lady, married Col. Hugh Montgomery (801, 839).
- McCaskill, Catherine, married Joseph Ingram (804).
- Nelme, John, The Emigrant (803, 841).
- Nelme, Charles, married Eliza Sydnor (803, 839).
- Nelme, Presley Sr., husband of Winfred Nelme (804, 839).
- Nelme, Winfred, wife of Presley Sr. (804, 839).
- Nelme, Presley Jr., married Ann (Nancy) Montgomery Ingram (804, 839).
- Nelme, Eliza Sydnor, married Col. William Gaston Smith (806, 619).
- Pyatt, Peter Sr., killed in the Revolutionary army (15).
- Pyatt, Martha (Patsy), married John White (15, 22, 26, 961).
- Sheffield, Dr. Mary, married Isaac Dunn (806D, 846).
- Smith, John Sr., died 1602 (500).
- Smith, John Jr., baptized 1593, married Elizabeth Garton, later Frances Wilcocke (500).
- Smith, Thomas Sr., born 1631, married Fortune Collin (500, 901).
- Smith, Samuel Jr., married Elizabeth Cartlitch (500B).
- Smith, John, The Emigrant to America, settled in Wake County, N. C. about 1735.
- Smith, John No. 2, soldier of the Revolution, married Mary Flake (503, 903).
- Smith, Philip, father of Catherine (Katie) Smith.
- Smith, Catherine (Katie), married Abraham Bellew (800, 840).
- Smith, John No. 3, married Mary Bellew (503, 907) (600).

**Honor Roll of Our Ancestors (continued)**

Smith, Thomas, married Jane Goff (503, 504, 912).

Smith, Col. William Gaston, married Eliza Sydnor Nelme (619, 908, 806-A).

Smith, Gen. William Alexander, married Mary Jane Bennett (631, 909, 910, 911, 806-F).

Smith, John Auld, married Leusey Williams (505, 912, 151).

Smith, Dr. John Devergie, married Veturly White (506, 50-F, 913, 914).

Steele, Elizabeth (Betsy) married William Little, The Emigrants (806G, 845).

Tyre, Catherine, married William Williams of Edgecombe County, N. C. (104).

White, John, of South Carolina in 1788 married Martha (Patsy) Pyatt (15, 22, 960, 26).

White, James, married Elizabeth Matlock (50, 961).

Williams, William, The Emigrant (101).

Williams, Samuel Sr., of Chowan, later of Edgecombe County, N. C. married Elizabeth Alston (102).

Williams, Samuel Jr., of Edgecombe County, N. C., married Mary Dudley (103).

Williams, William, married Catherine Tyre, moved from Edgecombe to Wake County about 1780, to Anson County in 1800 (105).

Williams, Benjamin, married Elizabeth in 1802 (she is thought to have been Leusey Elizabeth Pate.) He then lived in Anson County, having moved from Wake County in 1800.

To these, the ancestors of W. Thos. Smith and of the sleeping babes of Gen. W. A. Smith, we dedicate this book. It is to preserve some of the things now known of them that the book was compiled. All have passed to the beyond save Gen. Smith. We think him entitled to a space in the Honor Roll. May 3, 1922. A. D.

W. Thomas Smith



## Table of Contents

Numbers refer to paragraphs. Letters to subdivision of paragraphs. After Tables were made out, additional matters caused us to add a letter. 806A means first paragraph after 806. 806-A means the first subdivision of paragraph 806. We shall not index Tables. By following numbers in Honor Roll, Table of Contents, List of Subscribers and in body of book, names can easily be found. Each owner, on the fly leaf, can make a short index of his family. Blank pages in back are for the recording of births, marriages, and deaths. Errors can be corrected on margin of pages. We suggest that if any owner wishes to leave data other than this, that he secure a well bound blank book and write it out. Some descendant will appreciate it more than any money you can leave him.

Maternal relatives of W. Thos. Smith: 1 to 100, 961, 962.

Paternal Relatives of W. Thos. Smith: 100 to 800; 900 to 960.

Relatives of children of Gen. W. A. Smith: 800 to 960.

Relatives of Osmer D. Flake: 300 to 800; 903 to 960.

Relatives of Mrs. Julia Flake Burns: 100 to 500; 503 to 800; 903 to 960. This is general. In these numbers are found names to be excluded, which from the context will be apparent.

1 The Merrick Family; "Mother" Merrick, buried in Dode County, Mo. James E., Molten, and Mary, her children.

2 The Matlock Family. John Caswell Matlock and Mary Merrick, his wife. Children, husbands, wives and descendants. (See 960, for sketch).

10 John Dewit Fry, Martha McDaniel, his wife, and descendants. Sketch.

15 The Pyatt or Pyeatt Family. Peter Pyatt, killed in the Revolutionary Army. Children: Peter Jr., of Charleston, S. C.; Jane, married Mr. Davis and went to Georgia; James and Jacob, located near Little Rock, Ark. about 1807; Martha (Patsy) married John White, located near Nashville, Tenn., 1788, eventually moved to Hickman County, Ky.

22 The White Family of South Carolina. John, married Martha (Patsy) Pyatt; Mary, married John (Jack) Craig McDaniel, located Benton County, Tenn.; Richard, located near Nashville, a daughter married Johnathan Pryor and located

in Graves County, Ky. about 1822; a daughter married Duncan Pryor, located in Hickman County, Ky., about 1822. (See 960 for sketch).

26 John White—Martha (Patsy) Pyatt Tables: 26 to 100; 506 to 525. (See sketch 15, 22 and 960).

46 Green Bivens, born 1830, living at Camden, Tenn. sketch.

50 James White—Mary (Polly) McSweine—Elizabeth Matlock Tables: 50 to 100; 596 to 525. (see sketch 961, sketch of Veturly White 914).

50 James Clay White, Confederate Soldier, sketch.

53 Hugh Lawson (Bud) White, Confederate Soldier, and Josephine Octervine Walker, his wife, sketch.

56 Eliza White—Clark Hubbs Table, sketch.

59 Dr. E. Clark Hubbs of Los Angeles, Cal., sketch.

71 Caroline (Callie) Donia White—Lieut. James Ballowe Table, sketch.

100 The Alston Family; Col. John Alston of Chowan County, N. C. and Mary Clark, his wife, The Emigrants.

101 The Williams Family; William Williams of Virginia, The Emigrant.

102 Samuel Williams Sr. of Chowan, later of Edgecombe County, N. C. and Elizabeth Alston, his wife.

103 Samuel Williams Jr. of Edgecombe County, N. C. and Mary Dudley, his wife.

104 William Williams, married about 1758, and Catherine Tyre, his wife, of Edgecombe County, N. C. moved to Wake County about 1780, to Anson County about 1800.

105 Will of William Williams, recorded in Anson County, N. C. in 1807.

106 The Harris Family; Captain Sherwood Harris died at Granville, N. C. 1763. Sherwood Harris Jr., and family of Anson County, N. C.

107 Sherwood Harris Jr. and Williams Tables. (See 107 to 150).

108 Williams Williams—Catherine Tyre Tables: 108 to 300; 311 to 342; 505 to 550.

109 David Williams, Soldier in the Revolution—Martha Ivey Table (951).

110 John Harris—Mary Ann (Nancy) Williams Tables; sketch of John David Harris.

150 Benjamin Williams, married 1802, An-

Table of Contents (*continued*)

- son County, N. C., Tables 150 to 300; 505 to 550. (See ske'ch 912).
- 152 Elizabeth (Betsy) Williams—David Townsend Tables; sketch.
- 152 Pauline Sherwood Townsend, Ward-Belmont School, Nashville, Tenn., sketch.
- 169 Hampton Williams, The Witch Doctor, Tables (See sketch 952).
- 300 The Flake Family: Samuel and Henry Flake, The Emigrants. (See 904 for sketch of Samuel Flake.)
- 301 The will of Samuel Flake. Names of children, Tables 301 to 500; 503 to 800. Sketches 902 to 960.
- 305A William Green Flake Tables and sketch.
- 311 Elijah Flake, born 1768, emigrated to Henderson County, Tenn. 1818, married Elizabeth Williams. Tables 311 to 320 sketch.
- 320 Jordan Flake, born 1783, Anson County, N. C., Penelope Williams Tables. 320 to 342.
- 342 Jordan Flake, born 1783, Faithy Elizabeth Hanna, his second wife, Tables 342 to 500.
- 333 John Wesley Flake, Roxaline Dunn Bennett Tables. 333 to 342.
- 338 Flavel Bennett Flake, Ann Allen, and Jane Allen Tables. 338 to 342.
- 339 Julia Hough Flake of Wadesboro, N. C., Charles N. Burns Table. To her we are indebted for much of The Flake Tables.
- 353 James Madison Flake, born 1815, Agnes Hailey Love Tables 353 to 500. (See sketch 954).
- 355 William Jordan Flake, Lucy White, Prudence Kartchner Tables 355 to 500 (See sketch 955).
- 364 Osmer D. Flake, Elsie Owens Tables 364 and following. Osmer D. Flake resides in Phoenix, Arizona. He gathered the data for The Flake Tables.
- 367 James Madison Flake (See 956).
- 374 George M. Flake, sketch.
- 380 Charles Love Flake. He gave his life in The World War. Sketch.
- 500 The Smith Family: The origin, early history in England; John Smith Sr., died 1602. John Smith Jr., Elizabeth Garton, his wife, Thomas Garton, her father, Thomas Smith, their son, Fortune Collin, his wife.
- 500 Thomas Smith Sr., born 1631, The Nottingham Mercer and Banker, known as the Founder of The Nottingham Thomas Smith Family. Fortune Collin, his wife, Laurence Collin, her father, Master Gunner under Sir Oliver Cromwell. (See 900 and 901 for more data).
- 501B Samuel Smith Sr., Elizabeth Cartlitch, his wife, John Cartlitch, her father. (See also 901).
- 502 John Smith, born 1719, No. 1, The Emigrant to Wake County, N. C., about 1735. (See sketch 902).
- 503 John Smith No. 2, born 1740, Wake County, moved to Anson County, married Mary Flake. Soldier in the Revolutionary Army. (See sketch 903) Tables 503 to 800.
- 504 Thomas Smith, born 1768, married Jane Goff. (See sketch 912) Tables 504 to 550.
- 505 John Auld Smith, born 1794, moved to Henderson County, Tenn., 1838, Leusey Williams Tables. 505 to 540 (See 912).
- 506 Dr. John Devergie Smith, born 1829, Veturly White Tables. 506 to 525 (See sketches 913 and 914) They are parents of W. Thos. Smith.
- 507 Dr. Millard McFarland Smith, Alice Hinkle Tables 507 to 515 (See sketches 915, 916, 917).
- 515 Dr. Richard Filmore Smith, Alice Buckley his wife. (See 918 sketch.)
- 519 Prof. John D. Smith Jr., Lina Warren Table. Laura Lee Allard second wife. (See sketch 920).
- 520 Benjamin Franklin Smith, Izora Bond Tables (See 921).
- 521 Dr. Julius Alexander Smith, Nettie Warden Wilson Tables. (See 922).
- 522 W. Thos. Smith, Compiler of Book (See 923).
- 523 Mrs. Bettie Smith Hughes, 102 North Gramercy Street, Los Angeles, California. (See 924) Copies of this book can be purchased of her.
- 524 Weightman Smith Sr., May Hawkins Table (See 925).
- 526 William Thomas Smith of Henderson County, Tenn. Susan Williams, Arstalia Hoy Tables. (See 926).
- 526 Nancy Ellen Smith, James Robertson Fessmire Tables.
- 530 Eli Tyre Smith, Elizabeth York Tables (See 927).
- 535 Susan Smith, William Rhodes Tables.
- 538 Elijah Flake Smith, Lydia Argo Tables (See 928).
- 540 Naomi Elizabeth Smith, James Capel Tables.
- 550 James Smith, Mary Gathings Tables. 550 to 600.
- 551 Thomas Jefferson Smith, Mary Wash-



Table of Contents (*continued*)

- ington Ledbetter Tables 551 to 560 (See 938, 939).
- 552 Mary A. Smith, Gen. Thomas Walter Blake Tables.
- 554 James Ledbetter Smith, Eugenia (Genia) Womack Tables (See 941).
- 554 William Blake Smith, sketch 554-F.
- 556 Lewis Philip Smith, Aurelia Walton, Mattie Beeson Tables (See 942).
- 558 Sallie Eliza Smith, Sanford Gibbs Tables (See 943, 944).
- 558-A Wilbourn Smith, Annie Nugent Table (See 945).
- 558-B Mary Alla Gibb, Henderson Yoakum Robinson Table (See 946).
- 558-C Thomas Clifton Gibb, Jamesetta Hunt Tables (See 947).
- 558-D Sarah Sanford Gibbs, Dr. Oscar L. Norsworthy Table (See 950).
- 558-E Dr. James Philip Gibbs, Mary Brent McAshen Table (948).
- 558-F Leutola Gibbs, Henry Houston Hawley Table (See 949).
- 578 Philip Gathing Smith, born 1806, Ann E. Cheairs Table.
- 578-E Thos. Smith, Mattie Randle, his wife (See 940).
- 580 Winifred Ann Smith, James Clothier Caraway Table.
- 585 William Calvin Smith, Mary Tillman Table (See 935).
- 584 Mary Frances Smith, Lieut. John William McGregor Table (See 937).
- 585 James Tillman Smith, Ellen Pedeus, Emma Adela DeMaret (See 936).
- 585 Sarah Smith, James Boggan Table.
- 600 John Smith No. 3, Mary Bellew Table (See 907) Tables 600 to 700.
- 607 Joseph Pearson Smith, Mary Aleff Cooper Tables (See 930).
- 617 Samuel Smith, Jane Henderson Meacham Table (See 932).
- 619 Col. William Gaston Smith, Eliza Sydnor Nelme Tables (See 908).
- 619-H Sarah Aleff Smith, Lewis Williams, Nicholas William Lilliton (See 934).
- 620 Dr. John Guinn Smith, Ann Eugenia Smith Tables (See 935).
- 631 Gen. William Alexander Smith, of Ansonville, N. C., Mary Jane Bennett Table. After her death he married Nancy Jane Flake. He is one of Compilers of Book (See 909, 910, 911).
- 632 Eliza Catherine Smith, Henry W. Robinson Tables (See 931).
- 635 Mary Jane Smith, Oliver Berry Bennett Table.
- 636 Charles Ebenezer Smith, Sarah Ann Brown Table.
- 642 Presley Nelme Smith, Sarah Steele Leak Table, and her ancestry.
- 700 Jesse Smith, born 1780, Mary Seago Tables.
- 750 Samuel Smith, born about 1782, Margaret (Peggy) Hutchinson Tables. Mary Smith, their daughter (See 906) married Jesse Lindsay.
- Relatives of Gen. W. A. Smith, but not related to W. Thos. Smith 800 to 900.
- 800 Abraham Bellew and Catherine Smith, his wife; Isaac Bellew and Phillip Smith, their parents (See 840).
- 801 Col. Hugh Montgomery, The Emigrant, Lady Moore, his wife, Nancy Montgomery, their daughter, Edwin Ingram, her husband, Joseph Ingram, their son, and Catherine (Katie) McCaskill, his wife. (See 839, 802, 841).
- 802 Malcolm McCaskill, The Emigrant (See 831).
- 803 John Nelme, The Emigrant. (See 804, 841, 835, 619, to 700).
- 804 Presley Nelme Sr. and Winfred, his wife (See 801, 806, 619, to 703).
- 805 Elizabeth Nelme and Mr. Davis, her husband.
- 806 Presley Nelme Jr. and Ann (Nancy) Montgomery Ingram, his wife.
- 807 Dr. Joseph Presley Nelme and Sarah Parson, his wife.
- 806B Ebenezer (Eben) Nelme and Martha Ann Smith, his wife.
- 806C Kate McCorkle Crump and Jasper Francis Butler, his wife.
- 806D John Dunn and Francis Dunn, his wife, The Emigrants (See 845, 844).
- 806E Gen. William Bennett, of Maryland, The Emigrant (See 806F, 806, 845, 844).
- 806G William Little and Elizabeth (Betsy) Steele, The Emigrants, of Anson County, N. C. (See 806F, 806H, 845).
- 807 George Starback, The Emigrant. Table 807 to 819.
- 809 Charles Starback and Della F. Ingram Table.
- 810 Jude Steele Starback and William Starback Dockery Table.
- 811 Presley Starback and Ann Winnefred (Nancy) Davis Table.
- 812 Thomas Francis Starback and Julia Manly Table.
- 813 George Manly Starback and Annie Leak Moss Table.

Table of Contents (*continued*)

- 814 William Little Starback, Confederate Soldier.
- 815 George Little Starback, Confederate Soldier.
- 816 Elizabeth Starback and Henry W. Ledbetter Table.
- 817 Lillie May Ledbetter and John W. Wassemann Table.
- 839 Col. Hugh Montgomery, The Emigrant, sketch (801).
- 840 Abraham Bellyew, sketch (800).
- 841 Presley Nelme Jr. sketch (804).
- 842 Ebenezer Nelme and Martha Ann Smith, his wife, sketch (806E).
- 843 Charles Gallatin Ne'me, Confederate Soldier, sketch (806B).
- 844 The Bennetts and descendants, sketch (806H).
- 845 Lemuel Dunn Bennet and Susannah Dunn, his wife, and children, sketch (806H).
- 846 Dr. Mary Sheffield, Revolutionary Heroine, wife of Isaac Dunn, sketch (806D).
- 847 William Smith Williams and Nellie Johnson Williams.
- 848 Col. Joseph Williams of Anson County, N. C.
- 849 Hon. Edward Hull Crump of Memphis, Tenn. (806A-A).
- Historical Relatives of Gen. W. A. Smith and W. Thos. Smith.
- 900 Coat-Armour of Thomas Smith Sr. of Nottingham and Gaddesby, England.
- 901 Thomas Smith Sr. of Nottingham and Gaddesby and English descendants. (500)
- 902 John Smith No. 1, The Emigrant to Wake County, N. C. (See Table 502).
- 903 John Smith No. 2, soldier in the Revolutionary army and Mary Flake, his wife, of Anson County, N. C. (503, 301-A).
- 904 Samuel Flake, The Emigrant to Anson County, N. C. born about 1700 (300, 301).
- 905 The Mecklenburg Declaration of Independence.
- 906 Mary F. Lindsey. Affidavit as to the names of children of John Smith and Mary Flake. (750-E).
- 907 John Smith No. 3, born 1770, and Mary Bellyew, his wife. (600).
- 908 Col. William Gaston Smith, born 1802, and Eliza Sydnor Nelme, his wife (619).
- 909 Gen. William Alexander Smith, Ansonville, N. C., one of Compilers of this book (631).
- 910 Mary Jane Bennett, first wife of Gen. W. A. Smith (631).
- 911 Nancy Jane Flake, second wife of Gen. W. A. Smith (631).
- 912 Thomas Smith, born 1768, Jane Goff, his wife. Benjamin Williams all of Anson County, N. C. John Auld Smith, Leusey Williams, his wife, of Henderson County, Tenn. (See 504).
- 913 Dr. John Devergie Smith of Paducah, Ky. He is the father of W. Thos. Smith. His life inspired the compiling of this book (506).
- 914 Veturly White, wife of Dr. John D. Smith, mother of W. Thos. Smith (506). (Also see 50)
- 915 Dr. Millard McFarland Smith, son of Dr. John D. Smith (507).
- 916 Alice Hinkle, wife of Dr. Millard McFarland Smith (507).
- 917 Children of Dr. M. M. Smith and his wife, Alice Hinkle (507 to 515).
- 918 Dr. Richard Filmore Smith, son of Dr. John D. Smith; Alice Buckley, the wife of the son (515).
- 920 Prof. John D. Smith Jr. (son of Dr. John D. Smith Sr.) Lina Warren, his first wife, Laura Lee Allard, his second wife (519).
- 921 Benjamin Franklin Smith (son of Dr. John D. Smith) of Birmingham, Alabama (520).
- 922 Dr. Julius Alexander Smith (son of Dr. John D. Smith), Nettie Warden Wilson, his wife, of Greenville, Texas. (521).
- 923 W. Thos. Smith, Chief Compiler and Publisher of this Book. (522).
- 924 Mrs. Bettie Smith Hughes, daughter of Dr. John D. Smith, 102 North Gramercy Place, Los Angeles, California. Copies of this book can be purchased of her. (523).
- 925 Weightman Smith Sr. (son of Dr. John D. Smith), May Hawkins, his wife (524).
- 926 William Thomas Smith of Henderson County, Tenn., Susan Williams, and Arstalia Hoy, his wives. (525).
- 927 Eli Tyre Smith, of Friendship, Tenn. Elizabeth York, his wife (530).
- 928 Elijah Flake Smith, Deport, Texas, Lydia Argo and Mary McGraw, his wives. (538).
- 929 Samuel Smith Sr. (son of John Smith and Mary Flake) and Margaret Hutchinson, his wife, Anson County, N. C. (750).
- 930 Joseph Pearson Smith, born in Anson County, N. C. 1813, Mary Alef Cooper, his wife. (607).

Table of Contents (*continued*)

- 931 Eliza Catherine (Kate) Smith and Dr. H. W. Robinson, her husband. (632).
- 932 Samuel Smith Jr. and Jane Meacham, his wife. (617).
- 933 Dr. John Guinn Smith and Eugenia Smith, his wife. (710-C, 620).
- 934 Sarah Alef Smith, Lewis James Williams, her first, and Cap. N. W. Lillington, her second husband. (619-H).
- 935 Col. William Calvin Smith and Mary Ann Tillman, his wife. (See 935).
- 936 James Tillman Smith, Ellen Pedues first wife, Emma Adela DeMaret, second wife. (585).
- 937 Mary Francis Smith and Lieut. John Williamson McGregor, her husband. (584).
- 938 Thomas Jefferson Smith, born 1810, married Mary Washington Ledbetter. (551).
- 939 Mary Washington Ledbetter, wife of Thomas Jefferson Smith. (551).
- 940 Thomas Smith, born 1839, and Mattie Randle, his wife. (578-E).
- 941 James Ledbetter Smith, born 1840, and Eugenia Womack, his wife. (554).
- 942 Lewis Philip Smith, born 1847, Aurelia Walton, first, and Mattie Beeson, second wife. (556).
- 943 Sallie Eliza Smith, born 1844, wife of Sanford St. John Gibbs. (558).
- 944 Sanford St. John Gibbs, born 1819, husband of Sallie Eliza Smith. (558).
- 945 Wilbourn Smith Gibbs, born 1866, and Annie Nugent, his wife. (558-A).
- 946 Mary Alla Gibbs, born 1868, and Henry Yoakum Robinson, her husband. (558-B).
- 947 Thomas Clifton Gibbs, born 1870, and Jamesetta Hunt, his wife. (558-C).
- 948 Dr. James Philip Gibbs, born 1875, and Mary Brent McAsham, his wife. (558-E).
- 949 Luteola Gibbs, born 1878, and Henry Houston Hawley, her husband. (958-F).
- 950 Sarah Sanford Gibbs, born 1873, and Dr. Oscar Laertius Norsworthy, her husband. (558-D).
- 951 David Williams, Soldier in the Revolution, and Martha Ivey, his wife, Tables. (109).
- 952 Hampton Williams, born about 1810. The Witch Doctor of Henderson County, Tenn. (See Table 169).
- 953 Obituary notices: Deacon William Tyre Williams, John Dudley Williams, William Ellis Williams, Albert Williams, Mrs. Roxie (Williams) Tyson, all of Lilesville, N. C. (171, 171-E, 171-D, 176).
- 954 James Madison Flake, born in Anson County 1819, Agnes Haily Love, his wife, Emigrants to Utah. (353).
- 955 William Jordan Flake, born 1839, now residing at Snowflake, Arizona. (355).
- 956 James Madison Flake, born 1859, and Nancy Hall, his wife. (367).
- Maternal Relatives of W. Thos. Smith.
- 960 John White, Martha (Patsy) Pyatt, his wife of South Carolina, emigrated to Nashville, Tenn., about 1788, to Hickman County, Ky., about 1835 and there died.
- John Caswell Matlock and Mary (Polly) Merrick, his wife, emigrated to Nashville, Tenn. about 1800.
- 961 James White, born near Nashville, Tenn. July 27, 1789, Mary (Polly) McSwaine, first wife, Elizabeth Matlock, second wife, all buried at Sugar Tree, Benton County, Tenn.
- 962 List of Subscribers for Books.



## PREFACE

Human destiny is the noblest thing that can engage the intellect of man. Sublime in its mysteries, commanding in its interest, it marshalls about its issues the grandeurs of futurity, contemplates the rise and fall of the past, but fixes as its chief object of solicitude in the minds of each individual, thoughts of the immediate future, as it relates to him and his family. Human nature when molded into an exalted character fortifies the hopes of man, intensifies his ambition and raises his aim in life's purposes, while this wealth he may be able and oft does contribute to the worlds fortune can never be known.

If misguided into ignoble character, the blemish may scar the third and fourth generation before the penalty of error is paid. Education of character is always very much of a model. Although like begets like, it is possible for each to have the privilege of imitating the virtues and avoiding the vices of his forefathers. Still we are largely influenced by and modeled after our associates, whether they be found in the books we read or those with whom we mingle in our daily walks of life.

A life well spent, a character uprightly sustained is a legacy rich in splendor for any one to leave his children. It is the most eloquent lesson in virtue, the severest reproach of vice which can and of necessity must be felt to correctly assist his posterity in molding the exalted character.

Thus we thought it a good purpose that our forefathers and foremothers might still continue to live among and with their posterity, as well by the acts they have done which still live also, as that they should sit at their table, and converse with this posterity, through their history as it is now known, and in the quiet moments of home life, take their children by the hand and thus help other surroundings mold their youthful character. We deemed it well to give them some information that they might admire and imitate the virtues of those long dead who gave them existence. However it is not for us to criticize those who differ from us, nor even him of neglectful thought who cares not that the name and the good deeds be ever known or remembered by his grandchildren, of that father who toiled to supply the wants of childhood days, or the name and Christain traits of the mother whose suckled breast yielded him nutritious food in helpless days.

We however commend that filial feeling which tempts some other in the erection of a monument to the memory of a deceased parent, or causes him to converse and acquaint his children with those valiant deeds and noble traits of his ancestors which have shaped and helped to mold the better traits of his mode of living. "Honor thy Father and thy Mother"—a sentiment that has grown into a passion with us—took root before the death of our parents, when we wrote out in manuscript form considerable of what they were able to remember of their ancestry, with a then intended purpose to eventually publish in small booklet form something of our parents.

We felt that posterity would lose a beautiful, instructive and wealthy heritage when and if the lives of our parents were lost sight of in the cycle of ages. Our father had such an exalted opinion of the parents of our mother and held

## Preface (*continued*)

in such high regard his ancestry, we thought it worth while to likewise preserve something of them. We took the matter up with General Smith and asked him for some data two years ago. He generously offered to turn about from an intended Commentary he purposed to write on some parts of the scripture and assist us without compensation in compiling those parts that related to his and our common kindred. We accepted this noble offer and later asked of him that he include his relatives not related to us.

We were fortunate in obtaining a manuscript of the Flake family on which Mrs. Julia Flake Burns of Wadesboro, N. C. had expended a considerable amount of labor in obtaining. Osmer D. Flake, with a copy of this manuscript, had a few years ago seen in person many of this family and had compiled much data. For two years he had been constantly trying to complete it by correspondence. We are very grateful to them, and posterity is indebted to them for the Flake information in the most part.

In the spring of 1921 we took a five weeks' journey and interviewed many of our aged kindred to learn traditions. We have searched the deed and will records in a number of places. We have spent days in the libraries of Nashville, Tenn., Louisville, Ky., Raleigh, N. C., Charleston, and Columbia, S. C., and Los Angeles, Cal., and gone through the state archives of North Carolina and of South Carolina. Our purpose was to prove traditions by recorded history. Our purpose has been to write facts and not theories. General Smith had gathered a large part of the data for our Smith Tables and assisted and helped us in many other ways. He it was who first informed us that we were of the Thomas Smith Family of Nottingham and Gaddesby, England. This has been confirmed by others of the Smith branches. With prodigious knowledge of general history and a keen recollection of a multitude of family traditions, and with, in his large private library of perhaps 2,000 volumes, containing the something over 30,000 pages of North Carolina Colonial History, gathered by a commission from funds appropriated by the legislature, Gen. Smith has taken as much and perhaps more time and care than we to secure accuracy. He made trips to Raleigh and there searched books in the state library.

We took the initiative but it was Gen. Smith who gave impetus and rounded our now common large Cemetery. Posterity owes to him a debt that in it there are many of the markers. Those massive monuments, that with his fund of information he has been able to so chisel the outline of with such grace and skill, have made our book most interesting, and made our Cemetery wonderfully beautiful.

A number of sketches we asked and especially wished for are lacking. There exists the same condition as to data for our tables. The time has come when Gen. Smith and the writer have other duties which need attention. The work has become very laborious. Our monuments have been erected to our ancestors and this was the one great purpose.

As this is the first venture we have ever made to speak in print, we trust that others will be generous in overlooking our errors. We would that some genius had marshalled our facts in more lucid way and written the sketch of our interesting father in a way more in keeping with the nobility of his character than our feeble efforts may impress those of his posterity who never knew him.

## Preface (*continued*)

We shall place a copy of this book in the following libraries: Daughters of American Revolution, Washington, D. C. as a part of the additional record of Mrs. Esther Veturia (Smith) Dickerson (see 510) whose number in that organization as a descendant of John Smith No. 2 is No. 160569; also a copy in the State Libraries of Raleigh, N. C., Columbia, S. C., Little Rock, Ark.; in the Carnegie Libraries, Paducah, Ky., Nashville, Tenn., and in the Public Library at Dyersburg, Tenn.

We regret that the graves of all our ancestors, save that of our parents, are in a somewhat neglected state of preservation. This should not be. We feel that this book completes our duty. We are not adverse to contributing our mite if someone else shall undertake the details of this duty. The almost universal custom of burying in private burial grounds has been the cause of this. The lands have passed to other hands in some cases. What is true of our ancestors is true of nearly all who have kindred buried in new countries. We trust some wealthy relative will undertake this duty long neglected, or some one else will take up a collection and have it done.

The commercial feature of this has never bothered us. The writer first expected to publish a booklet and send it out to those he thought would wish it. It grew into a book. 250 books were thought of but the price was prohibitive. When the circulars were sent out, 500 books were thought of. The number who subscribed is smaller than we expected. With cost of compiling, publishing, distributing, that price on 500 books would lack considerable in reimbursing us for actual money spent. This does not include anything for labor.

The writer has a sister in Los Angeles, California. She lives in a home purchased from proceeds of the home her parents lived in. This was given to her at their death. At the age of fifty she rents out three of her rooms and is in the business world battling for a living, as the rents will not keep her. The writer will have 1,000 books printed and donate to her the whole of the proceeds obtained for them. The prices and her address can be seen on the Fly Leaf in front part of this book. Books of this kind at times sell from \$15.00 up.

W. Thos. Smith





James White and Eliza M. White

# MATERNAL RELATIVES OF W. THOS. SMITH

## 1

The Merrick Family, probably from Maryland, North Carolina or Virginia, settled at or near Nashville, Tenn., about 1800 it is thought, and later moved to Waverly Blue Creek, south of Waverly, Tenn. and on the north side of Duck river. About 1820 they moved to Morgans Creek in what is now Benton County. Here we find Molten Merrick, James E. Merrick and Mary Merrick and "Mother" Merrick, the mother of them. Molten Merrick died in Benton County and has many descendants in that county. March 24, 1851 James E. Merrick sold 425 acres of land and went to Missouri possibly to Dode County, but, at all events, is thought to have settled near some river. "Mother" Merrick went with her son and is said to have died in Missouri at the age of 111 years. Mary (Polly) Merrick married John Caswell Matlock and died and was buried near Sugar Tree in that county. John Barnett took up land in Benton County in 1821. In 1846 Mansfield Barnett also had land in that county. They are said to have been related to the Merrick or the Matlock Family.

## 2 (See 960)

The Matlock Family probably lived in Maryland, North Carolina or Virginia; and John Caswell Matlock of that family married Mary (Polly) Merrick above mentioned. It is thought they married in the east and that he came to Tennessee with the Merrick family. As their first child was born Sept. 21, 1804, he and his wife were perhaps born about 1783. He was a farmer by occupation and was one of the first settlers in Benton County, that county having been acquired from the Indians in the Jackson Purchase in 1818 and opened for settlement in 1820. We do not give the following with any claim that any of the parties are related to us but it is matter we have run across in our search and is given as a possible fruitful field of research for any who desire to search for the ancestors of these people. The 1790 census gives the following: George Merrick, 1 male over 16, slaves 87, New Hanover County, N. C.; David Matlock, 2 males over 16, 3 males under 16, 5 females Chatham County, N. C.; Nicholas Matlock, Caswell County, N. C.; John Merrick, Pittsylvania County, Va.; George Matlock, Hanover County, Va.; John Matlock, Hanover County, Va.; John



Matlock, Jane Matlock, and Zackariel Matlock, Halifax County, Va.; William Merrick, 1 male under 16, 3 females, Caroline County, Maryland; Izrel Merrick Sr; Izrel Merrick Jr., 2 males over 16, 3 under 16, 1 female; James Merrick, 2 females; John Merrick; Mathew Merrick, 1 male over 16, 3 under 16, 3 females, all Talbot County, Maryland; Thomas Merrick, 2 males over 16, 1 female, 6 slaves, Charles County, Maryland.

Born to John Caswell Matlock and Mary (Polly) Merrick above mentioned the following children:

(A) Rachel Matlock married Ashburn Davis and later Mike Fry. -3-

(B) Elizabeth Matlock, born Dec. 12, 1806, died March 13, 1874, married James White. -50-26-

(C) Caswell Matlock, born Nov. 27, 1809 and went to Mo. Book C, page 396, deed records of Benton County, Tenn. shows Edward Matlock of Dode County, Mo. on March 3, 1853 to have appointed Luke Matlock of Benton County, his attorney to receive all moneys coming to him from the estate of Mary Matlock deceased.

(D) Mary Matlock, born July 11, 1811, died August 18, 1857, buried at the Matlock graveyard, Sugar Tree, Tenn.

(E) Hannah Matlock, born Nov. 25, 1815, married Mr. Evans and went to Mo.

(F) Bessie Matlock, born Sept. 10, 1828, died when small.

(G) John Wesley Matlock, born Oct. 21, 1823, died April 5, 1891, married Elizabeth Flowers. -13-

(H) Joseph Matlock, born March 1, 1839.

3

-2-A-RACHEL MATLOCK-ASHBURN  
DAVIS-MIKE FRY TABLE

Mike Fry was the son of Joseph Fry and his wife, a Miss Hardeman. Joseph Fry is said to have been born in Germany and first located in North Carolina. Mike Fry is thought to have been born in North Carolina in 1799 and, with other brothers, first moved to Robertson County, Tenn. and from there to Eagle Creek Benton County. He was a man of good habits and a farmer by occupation. He died July 19, 1885 and was buried on Eagle Creek. Born to Rachel Matlock and Ashburn Davis, her first husband:

(A) Ashburn Davis Jr. who went to Texas. His grandchildren are thought to be living near Gainsville, Texas.

Born to Rachel Matlock and Mike Fry, her second husband:

(B) Florinda Fry, married Joseph Peacock. -4-

(C) Joseph Hardeman Fry, married Nancy Wesson. -6-

(D) Mike Fry, married Mary Jane Hubbs. -7-

(E) Olenia Everyn Fry, married John Craig (Jack) McDaniel. -8-

(F) Andrew Jackson Fry, enlisted in the Confederate army and was killed at Shiloh and left no issue.

(G) Alma Fry, married India Wood. -5-

(H) John Dewit Fry, married Martha McDaniel. -10-

4

-3-B-Florinda Fry married Joseph Peacock and they moved to Texas and there died. Children are said to be:

(A) Julius Peacock.

(B) Caldwell Peacock.

(C) John Peacock.

(D) Joseph Peacock Jr.

(E) Ann Peacock. All these children went to Texas. Ann is said to have married and gone to New Mexico.

5

-3-G-ALMA FRY-INDIA WOOD TABLE

Alma Fry, born in Benton County, Tenn., June 3, 1847, devoted himself largely to farming, and having accumulated a sufficiency for all his wants, moved to Camden, Tenn., and now lives the retired life. He married India Wood, daughter of Elija Wood who married a Miss Barnett. Children:

(A) Andrew Jackson Fry, born 1869, married Clara Merrick and moved to Senith, Mo. He has one child, Clyde Fry, born about 1898 now married and has one child.

(B) Addie Fry born about 1880, single, Camden, Tenn.

(C) Mellon Fry, Camden, Tenn., born about 1882, married Lillie Castleman. Children: Mora Fry, born about 1898; Raymond Fry born about 1899; Guy Elija Fry, born Nov. 25, 1901; LaVerne Fry, born about 1905; Thomas Fry, born about 1906; Henry Fry, born about 1907; Mary Lillian Fry, born about 1910; and Mellon Fry Jr., born about 1911.

(D) Mike Fry, died when small.

(E) Dosie Fry, married Dr. Thomas H. Coke, Hustburg, Humphrey County, Tenn. She was born about 1890. Children: Hartwell Coke, born about 1914; Weldon Coke, born about 1915; Thomas Coke, Jr., born about 1918.

(F) Vernia Fry, born about 1892, married Marsh C. Bowles.

(G) Bud Fry, died single.

(H) Belus Fry, born about 1888, married

Eluh L. Hudson. R. F. D. R. Jackson, Ten 1. Farmer.

Children:

- (A) Cyril Hudson, born about 1901.
  - (B) Malcolm Hudson, born about 1903.
  - (C) Fletcher Hudson, born about 1908.
  - (D) Alma Lee Hudson, born about 1913.
- India Wood died 1916.

## 6

### -3-C-JOSEPH HARDEMAN FRY- NANCY WESSON TABLE

Joseph Hardeman Fry, born May 3, 1830, died March 6, 1861 and was buried at Manly's Chapel, on Morgans Creek. He was a farmer by occupation, born, lived and died in Benton County, Tenn. He married Nancy Wesson, born August 14, 1832, died July 29, 1894. Children:

(A) James Buchanan Fry, July 2, 1856, married Elizabeth (Bettie) Hamer. Both are dead.

(B) William Griffin Fry, Clerk, Camden, Tenn. Born May 12, 1859, married Jennie Hendricks.

(C) John Wesley Fry, born March 6, 1861, married Dora Pratt and then Jennie Cain, and later Anna Flournoy. P. O. Alum, Texas.

(D) Sarah Frances Fry, born Dec. 15, 1862, dead, married Samuel Thomas, Benton County, Tenn.

(E) Beulah Fry, born October 9, 1868, married Joseph Lessenary.

(F) Harold Jackson Fry, Farmer, Sugar Tree, Tenn., born Dec. 20, 1870, married Lena Agnew.

(G) Victoria Adrene Fry, born July 18, 1864, married Hiram Dorsey Odle.-6A-

## 6A

### -6-G-VICTORIA ADRENE FRY- HIRAM DORSEY ODLE TABLE

Victoria Adrene Fry, born July 18, 1864 in Benton County, Tenn., has lived in that county all of her life and now resides at Camden. She is a lady of splendid intellect and knew more of the detail and early history of our ancestors as it relates to her side of the house than any one else I have ever met. She married Hiram Dorsey Odle, who was born Nov. 11, 1843 and died Feb. 26, 1919. Children:

(A) William Stewart Odle, born April 7, 1875, married Mable Roberts.-6E-

(B) Samuel Odle, born Oct. 10, 1876, married Anna Ward.-6D-

(C) Minnie May Odle, born Sept. 17, 1878, married John Malin, Sugar Tree, Tenn. Farmer. They have one child: Richard Malin, born 1919.

(D) Joseph Fry Odle, born May 29, 1880, married Miss Paschall.-6C-

(E) Richard Odle, born March 20, 1882, died single.

(F) Nellie Gray Odle, Camden, Tenn., born April 25, 1884.

(G) Hiram Dorsey and Victoria Herman Odle, twins, born 1885 and died about one year later.

(H) Nancy Dove Odle, born October 27, 1886, married Clarence Hinant, Woodbury, Kentucky, an engineer. One child: Maryland Hinant born 1919.

(I) Robert Odle, born Sept. 24, 1888 married Allie B. Combs.-6B-

(J) Carrie Elizabeth Odle born May 11, 1892, single.

## 6B

-6A-I-Robert Odle, R. F. D. R., Mail Carrier and Farmer, Camden, Tenn., married Allie B. Combs. Children:

(A) Robert Combs Odle, born about 1914.

(B) James Richard Odle, born about 1916.

(C) Kenneth Odle, born about 1919.

## 6C

-6A-D-Josephy Fry Odle, Camden, Tenn. Attorney, married Miss Paschall. Children:

(A) Virginia Odle, born 1915.

(B) Mildred Odle, born 1916.

(C) Joseph Fry Odle, born 1919.

## 6D

-6A-B-Samuel Odle, Sugar Tree, Tenn., farmer, married Anna Ward. Children:

(A) Pauline Odle, born about 1899, single.

(B) Hettie Odle, born about 1902.

(C) Alice Odle, born about 1904.

(D) Hildred Odle, born about 1909.

(E) Louise Odle, born about 1916.

(F) John Dorsey Odle,.

## 6E

-6A-A-William Stewart Odle, Lexington, Tenn., Hardware; born at Sugar Tree, Tenn. April 7, 1875, married Mabel Roberts. Children:

(A) Helen Odle, born about 1900. School Teacher.

(B) Hiram Odle, born about 1902.

(C) Maud Odle, born about 1903.

(D) Wilbur Odle, born about 1915.

## 7

### -3-D-MIKE MERRICK FRY- JANE HUBBS

Mike Merrick Fry, born about 1828, died about 1895, married Jane Hubbs, dead. Both were born, lived, died and are buried in Benton County, Tenn. Children:

(A) Earnest Fry, merchant, Camden, Tenn.

(B) Mike Fry, druggist, Camden, Tenn.

## 8

## -3-E-OLENIA EVERYN FRY-JOHN CRAIG (JACK) McDANIEL TABLE

Olenia Everyn Fry, born August 11, 1834, Camden, Tenn., married (see 52) John Craig (Jack) McDaniel, now dead. Children:

(A) Mike Alonzo McDaniel, born March 12, 1867, farmer, Camden, Tenn. Single.

(B) Thomas Willie McDaniel, born Feb. 6, 1864, farmer, Camden, Tenn. Single.

(C) Eugenia McDaniel, married Gillis Steegall, dead. Children: Opal Steegall, dead; Beulah Rea Steegall, born Oct. 26, 1907.

(D) Mary McDaniel, born Dec. 3, 1859, married Ollie Black, dead. One child: Guy Black.

(E) Beulah McDaniel, born April 21, 1866, Camden, Tenn., single.

(F) Beatrice McDaniel, born Sept. 11, 1863, married Clark Wiseman, Camden, Tenn.

(G) Sadie McDaniel, born March 13, 1873, married Benjamin Lashlee, farmer, Camden, Tenn.-9-

## 9

-8-G-Children of Sadie McDaniel and Benjamin Lashlee, her husband:

(A) Hershall Lashlee, born about 1895, clerk, Memphis, Tenn., married Madeline Smith. One child: Russell Lashlee, 1920.

(B) Thomas Lashlee, born April 2, 1897, Camden, Tenn., single.

(C) Frank Lashlee, born March 17, 1899.

(D) Catherine Lashlee, born about 1901.

(E) Ione Lashlee, born about 1905.

(F) Blanch Lashlee, born March 26, 1907.

(G) John Carter McDaniel, son of John Craig McDaniel, born May 25, 1885, is dead.

## 10

## -3-H-52-JOHN DEWIT FRY-MARTHA McDANIEL FRY TABLE

John Dewit Fry was born in Benton County, Tenn. about 1833 and died at Fulton, Ky., January 5 1906. Martha McDaniel was born in Benton County in 1833 and died at the home of her son in Union City, Tenn. in 1919. Left an orphan by her mother when eight days old, she was taken by the second wife of her grandfather, suckled her breast, and was reared as a twin sister to my mother, there only being a few days difference in their ages.

There has always been a tie between the two which made her closer to my mother than any of my mother's sisters because they were raised as twin sisters. Thus while she was a niece of my mother, she ever seemed a sister and we always called her Aunt Martha. Sometime after she married John Dewit Fry who was a cousin to my mother and who was a

nephew of the step-grandmother who raised her, the two moved to Harris Station, Tenn. There John Dewit Fry was the one foremost citizen in that particular locality. He kept the only general merchandise store, and for some years operated a cotton gin. His business was large for a village store and he and his good wife were most highly respected citizens. Both were connected with the Methodist church and brought all the members of their family up in that religion and as members of that church. He was liberal in his contribution to matters of this character, was sober, industrious and ever attentive to his business. He did a large credit business and carried farmers from year to year when it so happened that crops were bad. In later years he purchased lands and engaged also in farming. To those of his family who wished, he gave a collegiate education. He was not a believer in fire insurance and on two occasions lost practically all he had by fire. Notwithstanding these reverses he was a most successful business man and died with a sufficiency. He and his wife ever did teamwork and to her he owed much of his success. It is rare indeed that parents have left as many children as these two and whose children have acquitted themselves as creditably in every way as these.

Algenon Fry, the oldest son, is a highly respected farmer and is now living on his father's old farm near Fulton, Ky. Bettie Fry, the oldest daughter, married Dr. Powers and they reside in Fulton, Ky. and are counted of the best in the community. Sadie Fry who married J. B. Chambers, now dead, also lives in Fulton, as does the son, Mike Fry, owns a shoe store. William D. Fry lives at Union City, Tenn., and as a successful business man, the county has no superior. Mattie Fry married Mr. Glass who is a retired farmer at Martin, Tenn. Joseph Fry is an attorney of high standing at Union City, Tenn. and Superintendent of the Methodist Sunday School. We asked three members of this family for an extended biographical sketch but like many others it was not furnished. We especially regret it was not sent us. Children:

(A) Algenon Fry, born 1854 at Camden, Tenn. Farmer, Fulton, Ky., married Elizabeth (Bettie) McClanahan. Children: Sadie Fry, married Mr. Preston of Rives, Tenn. in Dec., 1920; Essie Fry at home; Algenon Fry at home.

(B) Elizabeth (Bettie) Fry born about 1855, married Dr. Powers.

(C) Mike Fry, merchant, Fulton, Ky., married, no children.

(D) Joseph Fry, Attorney, Union City,

Tenn., married Miss Carroll. Two children:  
Robert Fry and Mary Fry.

(E) William D. Fry, born about 1864, merchant, Union City, Tenn., married Miss Peoples. Two children: William D. Fry Jr., Martha Fry.

(F) Sadie Fry, born January 14, 1859, married J. B. Chambers-11-

(G) Mattie Fry, born Jan. 18, 1869, married W. R. Glass, 1893, retired farmer, Martin, Tenn.

# 11

-10-F-Sadie Fry, born January 14, 1859, Fulton, Ky., married J. B. Chambers, born July 4, 1846, died April 27, 1913, buried at Fulton, Ky. Children:

(A) Malcolm Chambers, clerical, Illinois Central Railroad, Fulton, Ky., married Annie Hughes, born Aug. 14, 1888, daughter of W. P. and Willie Hughes. One child: Mary Hughes Chambers.

(B) Kathleen Chambers, born at Union City, Tenn., Aug. 29, 1889, married H. C. Chitwood of Fulton, Ky., son of C. C. and Mildred Chitwood of Hisville, Ky.

# 12

-10-B-Elizabeth (Bettie) Fry married Dr. Powers, born about 1845, merchant, Fulton, Ky. Children:

(A) Lester Powers, born about 1876, single. Traveling Salesman.

(B) Lupe Powers, born about 1878, married Mr. Willingham, merchant, Fulton, Ky. One child: Ruth Willingham, married Hal Taylor of Henshaw, Miss., son of Thomas Taylor, planter, Memphis, Tenn.

# 13

## -2-G-JOHN WESLEY MATLOCK- ELIZABETH FLOWERS

John Wesley Matlock, born October 21, 1823, died April 5, 1891, married Elizabeth Flowers, born July 23, 1827, died April 13, 1895. They were born, lived, died and are buried in Benton County, Tenn. Children:

(A) William Lane Matlock, born March 21, 1851, married Nancy Alexander.-14-

(B) Sarah Ann Matlock, born May 18, 1855, married J. T. Camp

(C) Caswell Green Matlock, born April 1, 1859, married Eliza Wood, January 28, 1878.

(D) West Tennessee Matlock, born Nov. 7, 1861, married Henry Craig and they moved to Missouri.

(E) Elizabeth B. Matlock, born March 27, 1863, married Frank Leslie, moved to Texas. Mr. Leslie died there.

(F) John Wesley Matlock Jr. born April 20, 1865, married Malissy Phillips.

# 14

-13-A-William Lane Matlock, married Nancy Alexander, born April 21, 1867. He died June 5, 1913, and she died Nov. 18, 1910. Children:

(A) William Lane Matlock Jr., merchant, Coxburg, Tenn., married Mina Seets, born August 17, 1891. Several children.

(B) Jesse Alexander Matlock, married Luvernia Henry April 16, 1911.

(C) Fannie May Matlock, married Amos Deaden July 4, 1915.

(D) Charles Whitman Matlock, married Ada Wood Feb. 1918.

# 15

## THE PYATT OR PYEATT FAMILY

Pyatt is the way the name of our ancestor, Peter Pyatt Sr. is spelled in the Colonial Records of North Carolina. Pyeatt is the way the name of his son, Peter Pyeatt Jr. is spelled in the same records. Peter Pyeatt Jr. signed his will by mark and the name is there spelled Pyeatt. Elizabeth, the wife of Peter Pyeatt Jr., signed her own name to her will and signs it Elizabeth Pyatt. Jacob and James Pyeatt, brothers of Peter Pyeatt Jr. after going to Arkansas spelled the name Pyeatt it seems. We find that Sept. 25, 1777 Robert Pyeatt of Virginia took the oath of allegiance to Continental Congress and on Oct. 4th, 1777 John Pyatt of Virginia is listed as having refused at that time. We find that Joseph Pyatt, born in Warwickshire, England, 1755, enlisted in the Revolutionary army in Virginia 1776 and also in 1778, and was granted a pension of date 1833, living at that time in Burke County, N. C. He moved there after 1790 as the census list of that time does not give any one of the Pyatt name in North Carolina. One John Pyatt settled early at Georgetown, S. C. and his will is dated 1760. He married Hannah LaBruce. He left an estate of considerable size at Georgetown. He also in his will makes mention of lands at "North Pasture" and "Colliehill," England. We do not know that any of these parties are related to our ancestors Peter Pyatt Sr. and his children. We have not been able to locate any other family of that name in North or South Carolina prior to 1800. However, the descendants of John Pyatt who lived at Georgetown, S. C. are related to us on our father's side. John Pyatt No. 3 of Georgetown, S. C. married Martha Allston. Martha Allston was a grandchild of John Allston who settled in Charleston, S. C. in an early day. This John Allston was a cousin of Col. John Alston, our ancestor who settled in Chowan County, N. C. about 1711 (see 100). This Pyatt family still lives at Georgetown, S. C.

and have ever been of the best people in that section.

John Crosbie of London, England, in his will 1724, mentions "my son-in-law Jno. Pight of South Carolina gt." Those writers who speculate as to the derivation of names tell us the name was originally a nickname rather than a name given at birth. That it came from the word *Pye* from the *magpie* or *night-ingle* and was a nickname applied to the loquacious or to one who could or thought he could sing, and was frequently making the effort. Thus one named *Dick, John, or Tom* was later nicknamed *Pye* by others than his parents and the name at times clung to him all through life. We see: "Agnes relicta *Pye*, Oxford, 1273". When people began to assume family names in addition to the name given at birth, *Pye* was lengthened into *Pyott*. We see: "In 1584 Richard *Pyott* married Margery Roberts". Since then the name has been spelled: "*Pyott, Pyett, Pyette, Pyot, Pyat, Pyatt and Pyeatt*". Since the war of the Revolution we find it often spelled in this country *Piatt*.

There of course might be a possible relationship between all the families who were from English ancestors. Peter *Pyatt Sr.*, our ancestor, is thought to have been the Emigrant to America. Tradition is that his daughter, *Martha (Patsy) Pyatt*, our great-grandmother, was Irish.

Peter *Pyatt Sr.* lived near Charleston, S. C. When the Revolutionary war broke out, he espoused the cause of Continental Congress, and enlisted in the army. He, in 1777, enlisted in the 9th North Carolina Regiment for three years, Cook's Company, and became Quartermaster Sergeant June 15th, 1778. He was discharged June 15th, 1779 (see North Carolina Colonial Records Book 16, page 1136). The cause of his discharge was a wound he received in battle and from this wound he died. He thus paid the Supreme Sacrifice and died for his country. His wife was very devotedly attached to him. She grieved the loss of her husband until her mind became unbalanced and in that condition she died. We do not know and there is no traditional information as to the name of the wife. On the stub of a book in the archives at Columbia, S. C. we find the following: "No. 1641 Lib: X Issued the 26th of January 1786 to Mrs. Mary *Pyet* for One pound four shillings and three pence ster: for 2 steers for public use in 1781 as per account passed by the Commissioners. Principal Lb 1. 4. 3 Int : Lb. 1. 8"

We feel sure she was not of the Georgetown family and as we are not able to locate

any other family by that name in South Carolina at this period, we think it possible that she was the wife of Peter *Pyatt Sr.* but do not give the information as a certainty. This was about two years before our great-grandmother *Martha (Patsy) Pyatt* left Charleston, S. C. Both her mother and father were dead then. Tradition is that Peter *Pyatt* left three boys, Peter Jr., James and Jacob, and that he left two daughters, Jane who married a Mr. Davis and *Martha* who married John White. The will of Peter *Pyeatt Jr.* now on record at Charleston, S. C. bears out this tradition. Peter *Pyeatt Jr.* was the oldest child. *Martha* was the youngest. Peter *Pyeatt Jr.* lived about two miles from Charleston, S. C. He is thought, under the old English law of *Primo Geniture*, to have inherited all of the estate of his father.

Peter *Pyatt Jr.* or *Pyeatt* as he spelled the name was also a soldier in the Revolutionary army. He also with the army went to North Carolina. He enlisted in the 10th North Carolina Regiment March 30, 1782, and was Lieutenant in Dixon Company (see N. C. Colonial Record, book 16, page 1136). The stub book in the archives of South Carolina at Columbia shows as follows: "No. 591 Issued 14 decr 1785 to Mr. Peter *Pyeatt* for Lb. 80. 18.4 Ster. duty as assist. Commissary of Issues to the No. Carolina Line under commnd. of Genl. Green, as per account audited. Principal Lb 80. 18. 4½ Interest Lb 5. 3. 3"

A. B. Sallay Jr., Secretary of Historical Commission of South Carolina who sent the above, together with the one above mentioned as possibly having referred to the mother, says in his letter: "I enclose copy of records of pay issued to Mrs. Mary *Pyett* and Peter *Pyeatt*. You will notice that the pay to Peter (your especial object of search) was for duty as assistant Commissioner of Issues to the North Carolina Line under command of Gen. Greene. If you will examine Historical Register of Officers of the Continental Army by F. B. Heitman, Washington, 1914, you will find Peter *Pyatt* as Lieutenant 10th North Carolina 30th March 1781 to——. The blank properly filled would show when he was assigned to staff position. He was serving in South Carolina in a detached capacity and South Carolina paid his claim".

When the war was ended Peter *Pyeatt Jr.* returned to Charleston and engaged in raising rice. We do not know how much of an estate he received from his father. Tradition in our family is that he and his first wife had family jars and spats. Her will is dated Oct.



14, 1799 and probated Feb. 23, 1804 She signs her name as Elizabeth Pyatt. The will discloses that on July 13, 1784 her husband Peter Pyatt deeded to Dr. Samuel Clitherall of Charleston, S. C. for her separate use eight negro slaves, and that the profits from them was to be hers also. In her will she leaves "my beloved husband Peter Pyatt all my household furniture". She leaves to her grandson Thomas Radcliff the eight slaves her husband gave her, also eight more she had accumulated from this eight and another one that she owned. She also leaves him twenty-five shares of Bank Stock and all of her property save her household. Tradition in our family is that Peter Pyatt Jr. had no children by either his first wife nor by his second wife. We take it therefore this was the son of a child by a former husband.

The census of 1790 showed that Peter Pyeatt at that time had 15 slaves. Before his death he had accumulated over one hundred, so tradition tells us. After the death of his first wife, Peter Pyatt Jr. married the widow Sarah Ann Landsdale. His will is dated June 6, 1816 and probated Feb. 24, 1818. He leaves the whole of his estate to his wife, Sarah Ann Pyeatt for life and then to his step-son, William Butler Landsdale. His will uses the word "son-in-law" but at that time this word was used in referring to a step-son. His will further provided that if the step-son died without issue, then the estate was to be divided equally between his two brothers, James and Jacob Pyatt and his two sisters, Jane (Pyatt) Davis and Martha (Pyatt) White.

Jane Pyatt married a Mr. Davis and they went to Georgia. We know nothing further of them.

After the death of her mother, Martha (Patsy) Pyatt went to live with her brother, Peter Pyatt Jr. She was unable to get along with the first wife Elizabeth Pyatt and at length the treatment was such that, as a mere strip of a girl, she left this home and started on foot through the forest to make her way to Georgia to there live with her sister and brothers, James and Jacob Pyatt. She stopped over night on this journey with a German family. She was prevailed upon to remain there for a few days and there she met John White, married him and they went to Nashville, Tenn. This is thought to have been in 1788. (See 960).

James Pyatt and Jacob Pyatt after the death of Elizabeth Pyatt and before the death of Peter Jr. came to Tennessee. They

said they were then living in Arkansas and not very far apart. They said that news had reached them that their brother Peter Jr. was dead. As his wife had died in 1804 and he had no children, they with John White went back to Charleston, S. C. to look after the winding up of the estate of Peter Jr. When they reached there, they learned the report was not true and Peter was very much alive and owned over one hundred negroes. Peter gave each of them \$10.00 and after a visit they returned home. This was between 1804 and 1818. We know nothing further of them from tradition after they passed through Tennessee on their return trip to Arkansas. We learn from other sources that about 1807 Jacob Pyatt settled at Crystal Hill, about fifteen or twenty miles up the Arkansas river from Little Rock. That James Pyatt settled at an early day in what is now known as Pyeatt Township, Pulaski County, Ark., not far distant from Little Rock. James Pyeatt died April 24, 1837, and his wife died March 15, 1834. Jacob Pyeatt lived at Crystal Hill for some years and then moved to Cadron and founded a settlement there in 1815. He was Coroner of Pulaski County 1818 to 1821. In 1822 Pyeatt Township, Pulaski County, was created. Jacob Pyeatt is said to have lived to be 70 or 80 years old. Margaret, the wife of a Peter Pyeatt died in January 21, 1822 in Arkansas.

There was a Major John Pyeatt who settled in this section about 1807. He is said to have come from Georgia. We suspect that he was a relative. Peter Pyeatt of Pulaski County, Ark. Dec. 31, 1822, married Mary Miller, daughter of James Miller.

In that section Feb. 10, 1820, Henry P. Pyeatt married the daughter of Rev. Mr. Carahan at Big Rock. At Cane Hill, Washington County, March 16, 1831, John Piatt, late of Pulaski County, married Eliza, daughter of the widow Buchanan of Lincoln County, Tenn. James R. Pyeatt born in Kentucky in 1805, in 1812 with his parents, James Pyeatt and Kate (Finley) Pyeatt moved to Crystal Hill. In 1827, James R. Pyeatt removed to Washington County, Ark. and erected the first frame house built in that section. He married Elizabeth Buchanan who was a native of Tennessee. They married in 1831. She died 1868. We think it possible that James Pyeatt who married Kate Finley and in 1805 lived in Kentucky, going to Ark. in 1812, was the brother of our great-grandmother and that only Jacob and the sister went to Georgia.

## 22

## THE WHITE FAMILY

Tradition is that the White Family is of English origin and were among the early settlers in South Carolina. John White was born in South Carolina, probably about 1768 or within a few years of that. His father was married twice. John White was a son by the first wife, as was Richard White, who, in an early day, settled West of Nashville, Tenn. and died there. Mary White, a sister of John White, was a daughter by the first wife. She married John Craig (Jack) McDaniel and after 1820 settled in what is now Benton County, Tenn., and there died.

Two daughters by the second wife married Jonathan Pryor and Duncan Pryor, so tradition tells us, and Jonathan Pryor at an early date settled near Mayfield, Graves County, Ky. and has many descendants in Graves County. Duncan Pryor is thought to have settled in Hickman County, Ky. It is not known that these two gentlemen were related and it is thought that if they were it was not a close relation. It is not known to us whether or not there were other children. Tradition is that the father left a will in South Carolina and left the bulk of his property to these two girls by his last wife. To Mary White who married John Craig McDaniel he left a negro slave. To John White, \$1.00. If this will is later located, it is possible that the family can be traced back further.

John White is supposed to have lived not a great way from Charleston and somewhere on the route that Martha Pyeatt took when she started out to walk to Georgia. John White and Martha Pyeatt were probably married in 1787 or 1788 as James White was born July 17, 1789. It is thought he was the oldest child and was born after they reached Nashville, Tenn. They settled near the home of General Jackson about twelve miles south of Nashville, and some years later moved to then Hickman but now Humphrey County, Tenn. settling on Waverly Blue Creek near Duck River and it is thought this was about 1809. They engaged in farming and stock raising. John White was also a hunter. After having lost three crops in succession by high water, about 1820 they moved to Benton County, Tenn. and settled near Sugar Tree. About 1836 they moved to the "Iron Banks" on the Mississippi River now known as Columbus, Hickman County, Kentucky and both died there about 1850. (See sketch 960).

## 26

## 15-23 JOHN WHITE-MARTHA (PATSY) PYEATT TABLE

## Children:

(A) James White born July 27, 1789, thought to have been the oldest child, married (1-B) Elizabeth Matlock.-50-

(B) William White, said to have participated in the war of 1812 and been at the battle of New Orleans, married Susan Carter and is thought to have gone to Hickman County, Kentucky, and there settled.

(C) Cyrus White who is said to have fought in the Indian wars and was at Pensacola, Florida, in those wars, according to traditions, is thought to have gone to Hickman County, Kentucky and settled.

(D) Elizabeth Bettie), married a Mr. Capps.

(E) Isabelle White, married a Mr. Capps.

(F) Sallie White, married William Traylor and is thought to have gone to Missouri.

(G) John (Jack) White Jr., thought to have gone to Hickman County, Kentucky and settled.

(H) Martha (Patsy) White, married Alexander Bivens.-27-

## 27

## -26-H-MARTHA (PATSY) WHITE-ALEXANDER BIVENS TABLE

Martha (Patsy) White was born near Nashville, Tenn. about 1807 and died about 1850. She married Alexander Bivens, born about 1801 and died 1874. Alexander Bivens was the son of Leonard Bivens who came from Maryland and was one of the early settlers of Tenn., having settled about four miles east of Murfreesboro. Leonard Bivens was married twice and had eight boys and one girl by each wife, or, eighteen children in all. Alexander Bivens was born about four miles east of Murfreesboro and later moved in south of Waverly, Tenn. and then to Benton County where he and his family lived until they died. Both he and his wife are buried at Powels Chapel, Benton County, Tenn.

## Children:

(A) John White Bivens, born May 28, 1828, married Mary Farrar.

(B) Green Bivens, born 1829, married and wife dead.-46-

(C) William Elija Bivens, married Belle Johnson, later married Dicie Durdin.-44-

(D) Artie Miss Bivens, who lived to be quite old, died single.

(E) Ellen Bivens, married Judge William East.-43-

## 28

## -27-A-JOHN WHITE BIVENS-MARGARET FARRAR TABLE

John White Bivens, born in Humphrey County, Tenn. May 28, 1828, with his parents moved to Benton County, Tenn. in 1844 and engaged in farming. He has led an honorable and upright life and has ever been a good citizen. In April, 1921 at the ripe old age of 93, he was still living, making his home with his daughter in Camden, Tenn. He married Margaret Farrar, the daughter of William and Mary Farrar. She was born July 30, 1827 and lived to the age of 81, having died August 9, 1908. Children:

(A) Lemria Bivens, married John Griggs.-30-  
(B) Alexander King Bivens, married Tennesseee Frasier.-39-

(C) Mary Jane Bivens, married Arthur Joseph Utley.-38-

(D) William Byron Bivens, married Fannie Stevens.-40-

(E) Martha Elizabeth Bivens, born May 13, 1850, died when small.

(F) Calony Gertrude Bivens, born January 15, 1863, died when she was small.

(G) Margaret Ellen Bivens, married Grant McGlohon.-41-

(H) John Sherman Bivens, married Mary Stevens.-42-

(I) William Franklin Bivens, married Nancy Emily Bartlett.-29-

## 29

-28-I-William Franklin Bivens, born Oct. 7, 1849, died about 1897, married Nancy Emily Bartlett who died about 1906. They were born, lived and died in Benton County, Tenn. Children:

(A) Elizabeth Bivens, born 1896, married Julius A. Cole, Camden, Tenn., R. F. D. mail carrier. Children: Eddie, born about 1911; William Cole, born about 1913; Fred Cole, born about 1916 and one smaller child.

(B) Robbie Bernice Bivens, born about 1898, married Thomas Tucker, Huntington, Tenn., painter by occupation. One child: Thomas Tucker Jr., born about 1915

(C) Mary Frankie Bivens, married Earl Hartly, East St. Louis, Illinois. Three children: Emily Hartly, William Hartly, and one smaller child.

## 31

-28-A-Lembria Bivens, born August 26, 1851, died about 1901. Born, lived and died in Benton County, Tenn., married John Griggs, Camden, Tenn. Farmer. Children:

(A) Walter Guss Griggs, married Ruby Bivens.-45-

(B) Virgie Griggs, died when small.

(C) Effie Griggs, married William Box.-31-

(D) Maggie Griggs, married Anderson Lashlee.-32-

(E) Lula Griggs, married Bertram Serratt.-33-

(F) Carrie Griggs, married Nan Overfield.-34-

(G) Earl Griggs, died when small.

(H) Hallie Griggs, married Neal Bell.-35-

(I) Annie Griggs, married Guy Lashlee.-36-

(J) Virgil Griggs, born about 1901, single, Camden, Tenn.

(K) Cecil Griggs, married Lula Beasley.-37-

## 31

-30-C-Effie Griggs, born about 1877, married William Box. He is a farmer and lives near Denver, Colorado. One child:

(A) Aline Box, born about 1912.

## 32

-30-D-Maggie Griggs, born about 1878 in Benton County, Tenn., married Anderson Lashlee and moved to Eva., Tenn. He is dead. There are several children, two of whom are:

(A) William Lashlee.

(B) Harry Lashlee.

## 33

-30-E-Lula Griggs, clerical department, Nashville, Tenn., married Bertram Serratt. They have two girls.

## 24

-30-F-Carrie Griggs, born about 1883, married Benjamin Overfield. They live in East St. Louis, Illinois and he works for the Packing Company.

## 35

-30-H-Hallie Griggs, born about 1887, married Neal Bell, farmer, Camden, Tenn. Mr. and Mrs. Bell have four children.

## 36

-30-I-Annie Griggs, born about 1889, married Guy T. Lashlee, Camden, Tenn., Veterinary Surgeon. One child:

(A) Malcolm Griggs Lashlee, April 10, 1919.

## 37

-30-K-Cecil Griggs, born about 1891, Camden, Tenn., married Lula Beasley. Two children.

## 38

## -28-C-MARY JANE BIVENS-ARTHUR UTLEY TABLE

Mary Jane Bivens, born Nov. 30, 1853, married Arthur Joseph Utley, born about



1853. He is a carpenter and they reside at 1723 Euclid Avenue, Memphis, Tenn. Children:

(A) Connie Parish Utley, born August, 1889, Memphis, Tenn.; carpenter.

(B) Blanch Utley, born January 30, 1893, married Charles V. Spencer, 1757 Nelson Avenue, Memphis, Tenn.; clerical position.

(C) Garland Bivens Utley, born about 1895, Jackson, Miss. Traveling salesman, Standard Oil Company.

Born to Blanch Utley and Charles V. Spencer, above, two children:

(A) Camilla Spencer, born about 1917.

(B) Utley Spencer, born March 27, 1919.

## 39

### -28-B-ALEXANDER KING BIVENS-TENNESSEE FRASIER TABLE

Alexander King Bivens, born Feb. 12, 1856, died about 1901, married Tennessee, Frasier who died about 1897. They were born, lived and died in Benton County, Tenn. and are buried at Chalk Hill Cemetery. Children:

(A) Charles Bivens, born about 1900, Camden, Tenn. Farmer, married a Miss Hubbs; two children.

(B) Nellie Bivens, born about 1892, married Ray Walker, Camden, Tenn., farmer. They have two children.

(A) Mable Walker, born about 1913.

(B) Tenney Ray Walker, born 1918

## 40

### -28-D-WILLIAM BYRON BIVENS-FANNIE STEVENS TABLE

William Byron Bivens, born March 28, 1858, Camden, Tenn. Farmer, married Fannie Stevens. Children:

(A) Sallie Bivens, born about 1895, married Jerry Thomson, Camden, Tenn., produce dealer. They have three children.

(B) Dewey Bivens, married a Miss Van Cleave. They live in eastern part of Tennessee.

(C) Ruth Bivens, born about 1904

(D) William Bivens, born about 1908.

(E) T. B. Bivens, born about 1911.

## 41

### -28-G-MARGARET ELLEN BIVENS-GRANT MCGLOHON TABLE

Margaret Ellen Bivens, born May 28, 1856, married Grant McGlohon, Camden, Tenn., farmer. He was born October 16, 1854, and was a son of John Taylor McGlohon and his wife Mary C. Pearce and a grandson of John McGlohon who emigrated from North Caro-

lina and was one of the first settlers of Benton County. Children:

(A) John Logan McGlohon, born July 2, 1892, Camden, Tenn., married Bessie Hillard. They had 2 children: Logan Hillard McGlohon, born May 19, 1919.

(B) Hazel McGlohon, born Nov. 27, 1892, died Aug. 1896.

## 42

### -28-H-JOHN SHERMAN BIVENS-MARY STEVENS TABLE

John Sherman Bivens, Camden, Tenn., farmer, was born Sept. 23, 1858, married Mary Stevens. Children:

(A) Leber Bivens, died single.

(B) Annie Bivens, born about 1903.

(C) Windle Bivens, born about 1905.

(D) Jarol Bivens, born about 1907.

(E) Sanford Bivens, born about 1909.

(F) Joseph Bivens, born about 1913.

(G) Franklin Bivens, born about 1917.

## 43

### -27-E-ELLEN BIVENS-JUDGE WILLIAM EAST TABLE

Ellen Bivens, born about 1831, married Judge William East, who was a painter by occupation. They lived, died and were buried at Camden, Tenn. Children:

Virgie East, married A. J. Saunders. Both dead. Born to them:

(A) Maud Saunders, about 1883 who married, first Frank Plant, and after his death, married Albert McKelvy. By her last husband she had one child; by her first husband, two children.

(A) Millard Plant, born about 1898, Huntington, Tenn.

(B) Homer Plant, born about 1900, Detroit, Mich.

(C) Virgie McKelvy, born about 1914.

## 44

### -27-C-WILLIAM ELIJAH BIVENS-BELLE JOHNSON-DICIE DURDEN TABLE

William Elijah Bivens, born about 1848, now dead, married Belle Johnson. There was one child who died without issue. After this wife died, he married Dicie Durden who is now dead. Children by his last wife:

(A) Alexander Bivens, born about 1894, died about 1909, married Pearl Larkins who lives at Bakersville, Tenn. One child: Lislser Larkins Bivens, born about 1907.

(B) Ruby Bivens, married Walter Augustus Griggs.-45-

(C) Hugh Elijah Bivens, born about 1891, single, Camden, Tenn., undertaker.

(D) Turney Bivens, born about 1894, married Edward Walker, Camden, Tenn., farmer. They have several children.

## 45

-30-A-44-B-Walter Augustus Griggs, born about 1875, died about 1906, born, lived and died at Camden, Tenn., married Ruby Bivens, Camden, Tenn. Children:

(A) Louis Griggs, born about 1902.

(B) Harry Griggs, born about 1904.

(C) Bessie Griggs, born about 1906.

## 46

## -27-B-GREEN BIVENS TABLE

Green Bivens, born in Humphrey County, Tenn., Sept. 19, 1830 and in 1844, with his father, moved to Benton County where he has since lived and engaged in farming. He lives about two miles from Camden, Tenn., and at the age of 92 years, when we went to see him in April, 1921, was able to tell us more of the ancient history of our family than any one else we have met. Although our father and mother had told us substantially all that he told us, there were some little details that he remembered that we did not know. Green Bivens is a most elegant old gentleman and we very much regret we had so short a time to talk with him. He has a remarkable memory and is a high-minded citizen, and commands the respect and confidence of all who know him. His wife has been dead for some years. His children are:

(A) John Dudgeon Bivens, born January 9, 1860, Camden, Tenn., farmer, married Isdora Spalding, born 1860. They had 4 children, Clara May Bivens, born Oct. 20, 1892, single.

(B) Kate Estell Bivens, born Oct. 13, 1863, died April 7, 1864.

(C) Martha Isabelle Bivens, born June 23, 1866, single, Camden, Tenn.

(D) William Franklin Bivens, born March 20, 1876, died August 28, 1877.

The wife of Green Bivens was Nancy Viola Johnson. She has been dead for some years.

## 50 (See 961)

## -26-JAMES WHITE-MARY (POLLY) McSWAINE-ELIZABETH MATLOCK TABLE

James White, born July 27, 1789 near the home of General Jackson, south of Nashville, Tenn., in 1808, with parents, moved to Waverly Blue Creek, south of Waverly, Tenn. and north of Duck river, where they farmed

and raised cattle until the Jackson Purchase in 1818. It is thought in 1820 he moved near Sugar Tree and settled on Morgans Creek, now Benton County, Tenn., where he engaged in farming until death April 6, 1879. He was buried near Sugar Tree. He married first Mary (Polly) McSwaine. After her death he married Elizabeth Matlock.

-2-B-Elizabeth Matlock was born Dec. 12, 1806, and is thought to have been born at or near Nashville, Tenn. With her parents she later moved west near the Tennessee river and about 1820 moved near Sugar Tree, Benton County. Here she died, March 13, 1874, and is buried near Sugar Tree.

Children of James White and Mary (Polly) McSwaine:

(A) Andrew White, married Miss Murphy. -51-

(B) Martha (Patsy) White, married John Craig McDaniel. -52-

Children of James White and Elizabeth Matlock:

(C) Hugh Lawson White, born Oct. 20, 1825, married Josephine Octervine Walker. -53-

(D) Thomas White, born August 28, 1828, married Martha Johnson. -70-

(E) Mary White, married Joe Peacock. Both dead. No issue.

(F) Veturia White, born January 5, 1833, married Dr. John Devergie Smith. (For her descendants see Smith Table. -506) (914).

(G) Ellen White and Eliza White, twins, born January 13, 1838. Ellen White married James Walker. Both are dead. -69- Eliza White married Clark Hubbs. -56-

(H) Florilla White, born Feb. 13, 1840, married Clinton Walker. -66-

(I) Caroline White, born Aug. 12, 1846, married James Ballowe. -71-

(J) James Clay White, born June 4, 1844, died April 23, 1921, and was never married. He was a Confederate soldier and ran away from home to join the colors. He was wounded at Shiloh and was never able to return to the war. Our father Dr. J. D. Smith extracted the bullet. In late life he drew a pension from his native state for his services rendered. He is said to have had a love affair in early life which resulted in the nature of a disappointment and ever afterwards he was content to live the life of single blessedness. He engaged in farming in a small way and was contented to live and breathe the free air of God far from the hum and wheels of factories. He lived the life so many of the wealthy in the cities yearn for. The vacation they long for once a year was his whole life's history. Some months prior to his death, he was stricken with paralysis

from which he died. For some years he had not been able to work. He took his daily paper and kept in touch with the world's doings. In early April at Camden, we had engaged a team to go to see him the next day. A hard rain that night raised the creeks so we could not reach him. We then went on our journey to North and South Carolina, stopped again at Camden on April 29, to go and see him and then learned he had died six days previous and had been buried. We shall always regret that we did not in the first instance remain over to see him but this is one of life's mistakes we can never rectify.

## 51

-50-A-Andrew White, born in Benton County, Tenn., went to Texas when the Mexican war came on and engaged in it. He then settled in Texas and married a Miss Murphy. At the time of his father's death in 1879 he could not be located and was supposed to have been dead.

## 52

-50-B-Martha (Patsy) White married John Craig (Jack) McDaniel, who was a son of John McDaniel and Mary White. They being first cousins one degree removed, Mary White being the sister of Martha White's grandfather. There was born to this union one child, Martha McDaniel. The mother died when the child was eight days old. Martha McDaniel suckled the breast and was reared by her step-grandmother as a twin sister to our mother, Veturia White, there being only a few days' difference in their birth. John Craig McDaniel married again as seen in the Fry Table-8-. Martha McDaniel married John Dewit Fry. See Fry Table-10-

## 53

-50-C-Hugh Lawson White was born in Benton County, Tenn., Oct. 20, 1825, lived and died in that county, May 28, 1889. Hugh Lawson White was a man of quiet demeanor, esteemed and a highly respected farmer. He was ever a peaceable man and had no trouble with his neighbors. Never in his life was he a party to a lawsuit, always being able to adjust differences in more peaceable ways. When the war broke out, he went to the defense of his father's rights as he saw them, and enlisted in the Confederate army. He enlisted under Captain Winfree and was with Gen. Cheatam until after the battle of Perryville, Ky. At Perryville he was shot through the left lung with a minnie ball and left on the battle field. He was not missed until roll call. Then "Rebel John"

and Dave Gosset went in search of him and when he was found he had bled until there was not left sufficient blood to stain a handkerchief. He was taken under a tree and there nursed for the night. Confederate soldiers had no tents. It made no difference how hard it rained, how the winds blew, nor how cold the nights were, in that war the Confederate soldier usually had one blanket and this was his home, his covering, and his only protection. On cold nights at times, three would bunk together. One blanket would be laid on the ground and the three lay on it, covering themselves with the other two blankets. When tired of lying on one side, all three would have to turn at the same time. Hugh Lawson White was the next day sent to the hospital. He had now served his country for three years. As soon as able, he was sent home to recover but was never able to return to the army. He, at that time weighed 175 pounds but never again weighed over 135 pounds. He was never again able to do hard manual labor and eventually died of this wound. Four years before his death he made an open profession of religion and united himself with the Methodist Church and ever afterwards lived a consistent christian life. We asked for a sketch of him but it was not furnished. Of him, we have a good opinion and regret we know so little of his life's history. He married Josephine Octervine Walker, born May 2, 1847. She is the daughter of Samuel Walker and Eliza Ann Wesson, his wife, and grand-daughter of Adam and Mary (Polly) Walker; Nathaniel Wesson and Elizabeth McDaniel, his wife. Josephine Octervine Walker White lives at 318 Howerton Avenue, Nashville, Tenn., with two grand-daughters. She is very active for her age in life, is a charming lady and has a splendid memory. In April, 1921 we very much enjoyed a visit with her.

Children of Hugh Lawson White and Josephine Octervine Walker, his wife:

(A) James Samuel White, born 1867, died when small.

(B) Eugene Boatright White, born May 25, 1869, married Leonia Walker, later married Lillie Hawley-55-

(C) Gertrude White, born 1871, died when small.

(D) Lela Pocahontas White, born 1873, died when small.

(E) Walter Hendricks White, born Oct. 1, 1878, married Erie Cherry.-54-

## 54

-53-E-Walter Hendricks White, farmer, Camden, Tenn., married Erie Cherry. Children:

- (A) Wallace White, born Dec. 16, 1904.
- (B) Lola May White, born Feb. 1909.
- (C) Hattie White, born 1913.
- (D) Charles White, born 1919.

## 55

-53-B-EUGENE BOATRIGHT WHITE-  
LEONIA WALKER-LILLIE HAWLEY  
TABLE

Eugene Boatright White, farmer, Camden, Tenn., married Leonia Walker who died April 20, 1909. Children:

(A) Walter Hendricks White, born Aug. 21, 1892, married Queen Hartley. One child: Fred Walker, Dec. 1918.

(B) Ray White, born April 21, 1894, single. Ray White and his brother, Walter Hendricks, run a barber shop, Camden, Tenn.

(C) Dollie White, Nov. 30, 1899, 318 Howerton Avenue, Nashville, Tenn., clerical position.

(D) Hettie White, born March 15, 1901, 318 Howerton Avenue, Nashville, Tenn. Telephone operator.

Born to Eugene Boatright White and Lillie Hawley:

(E) Martin White, August 1917.

## 56

-50-G-ELIZA WHITE-CLARK HUBBS  
TABLE

Eliza White, born January 13, 1838, at Sugar Tree, Benton County, Tenn., married Clark Hubbs, son of William Hubbs, who settled there about 1818 when this territory was purchased from the Indians and offered as territory for settlement. If born there, Clark Hubbs, born 1820, was one of the first born in that county. Tradition is that he was born there. About 1852 they left Sugar Tree and settled near Murray, Ky. where they lived until death. Clark Hubbs was a farmer. He died Feb. 2, 1900. Eliza White Hubbs died Dec. 24, 1921 at her home about six miles from Murray, Ky. It happened our fortune to visit this aunt in the spring of 1921. For a woman of 83 she was active and insisted upon being allowed to do her part in all things to be done. She was a member of the Church, led a religious life and was mostly interested in her children. Her children are all good, sober, respectable people; those "honest-to God" kind that it does the man of the city good to get out and mingle with now and then. There is a genuine welcome in the home for all. We asked her granddaughter for a sketch. It was, like many others, not furnished.

Born to Clark Hubbs and Eliza White, his wife:

(A) Jefferson Harris Hubbs, born Dec. 8, 1851, married Lucy Johnson-57-

(B) Mary Elizabeth Hubbs, born Sept. 11, 1864, died Nov. 20, 1865.

(C) Alice Victoria Hubbs, born Nov. 22, died 1885, married Rev. Jesse French. Both are dead.-63-

(D) Frances Isabella Hubbs, born Sept. 14, 1856, died 1859, buried Camden, Tenn.

(E) Margaree Eliza Hubbs, born August 16, 1859, married John Parn Bynum.-62-

(F) William James Hubbs, married Maggie Auston, later Susanna Jones.-65-

(G) John Constantine (Connie) Hubbs, born March 26, 1871, married Eliza Collie.-64-

## 57

-56-A-JEFFERSON HARRIS HUBBS-  
LUCY JACKSON TABLE

Jefferson Harris Hubbs, R. F. D. R. 3, Benton, Kentucky, farmer, married Lucy Jackson. Children:

(A) Sabra Hubbs, married Claud J. Morton.-58-

(B) Dr. Clark Hubbs, married Myrtle House.-59-

(C) Mildred C. Hubbs, married Robert Smotherman.-60-

(D) Tommie C. Hubbs, married Clyde Lane.-61-

(E) Bessie Hubbs, born Dec. 31, 1900, married Harry Stewart, molder, Metropolis, Illinois.

(F) Burn Hubbs, born March 18, 1906.

(G) Eron Hubbs, born August 7, 1910.

(H) Margaret Hubbs, born Dec. 11, 1913.

## 58

-57-A-Sabra Hubbs married Claud J. Morton, farmer, Murray, Kentucky. Children:

(A) Mary Louise Morton, born Feb. 11, 1907.

(B) Sadie Lavina Morton, born June 24, 1908.

(C) Asa C. Morton, born January 19, 1910.

Claud J. Morton, born Feb. 12, 1881 at Clarksville, Tenn.

## 59

-57-B-Dr. Clark Hubbs was born near Murray, Ky., moved to Nashville, Tenn. and by his own efforts, worked himself through the school after he was twelve years of age. After sufficiently advancing, he worked until he had \$1100.00 saved up. With that he entered the Dental Department of Vanderbilt University and graduated from there in 1917. He responded to the call of his country and went to France. He was assigned to the

Dental Department and had a year's service in France. Returning, his health was impaired. He went to Los Angeles, California, for that and has remained there since. Financially broke, or in fact never having had much money, he was unable to set himself up in business. He began on a small salary. His skill was soon discovered by the dentist for whom he worked. He was given an opportunity to make good. Accustomed to hard knocks, and being a self-made man, he made the venture. We doubt if there is any dentist in Los Angeles who has been there so short a time, who has climbed so near the top as has Dr. Clark. We predict that it will not be many years until this young dentist will have reached the top and if not the leading dentist of Los Angeles, he will be so near, that the one above him had better be careful. Dr. Clark realizes that an education is not finished when you leave the college. He realizes that all model after associates. He selects books and the best of people for associates. When not busy at work, he is at his books. At night when others are going to places of amusement, Dr. Clark is in search of further education. He realizes that man never gets too wise to learn. He is a man of splendid appearance. Polite, in every way agreeable, he makes friends wherever he goes.

In Nashville, Tenn. he met Miss Myrtle House. She is not a daughter of, but of the family of Ex-Mayor House of Nashville. A most charming young woman is she. In this home on March 30, 1922 there arrived E. Clark Hubbs, Jr. He is their first child. Dr. Hubb's office is located on the 8th floor of Ferguson Building, 307 Olive Street, Los Angeles, California.

## 60

-57-C Mildred C. Hubbs, born May 13, 1894, January 4, 1915, married Robert Smotherman, farmer, Almo, Ky. Children:  
(A) Robert Smotherman, Jr.  
(B) Albert Harris Smotherman.

## 61

-57-D-Tommie C. Hubbs, born January 5, 1897, married Clyde Lane, Cottonwood, Tenn. Children:

- (A) Carrie Lavernia Lane, dead.
- (B) Vena Evalyn Lane.

## 62

-56-E-Margaree Eliza Hubbs, born August 16, 1859, married John Park Bynum January 20, 1880, live near Union City, farmer. Children:

(A) Ona Lee Bynum, born Nov. 14, 1880, died Aug. 12, 1912. She was teacher of Domestic Science, a member of the Methodist Church, and was buried at Coles Camp Ground, near Murray, Ky.

(B) Ollie Monte Bynum married Dock Cain. They live about sixty miles from Los Angeles, California. Three children: Vatele, Mazelle, and Margaree Cain.

(C) Norman Alice Bynum, born Nov. 16, 1882, married Wesley Lipford, farmer, Murray Kentucky. Three children:

(D) Eva Bynum, born March 24, 1885, married Walter Bridges, Coca-Cola representative, Cairo, Illinois. Five children.

(E) Atlanta Bynum, born May 1, 1890, taught school for ten years, married Alba Puckett, traveling salesman, Sikeston, Mo. One child: Cox Valva Puckett, October 2, 1920.

(F) Maud Lavernia Bynum, born Oct. 29, 1887, died May 24, 1900, buried at Goshen Church, Murray, Ky.

(G) Clark Horton Bynum, born March 2, 1894, at home.

(H) Vera Annetta Bynum, born April 23, 1896, school teacher, Union City, Tenn. ...

(I) Fannie Forest Bynum, born Sept. 21, 1898, married Elmer Wadkins, railroad, Union City, Tenn.

## 63

-56-C-Alice Victoria Hubbs, married Rev. Jesse French, a Baptist Minister of Hollow Rock, Tenn. Both dead. One child, Margary Bell French, married Edward Evans. She died Dec. 17, 1920. Husband and four children survive her. One is called Alice Victoria Evans.

## 64

-56-G-JOHN CONSTANTINE HUBBS-  
ANN ELIZA COLLIE TABLE

John Constantine (Connie) Hubbs, farmer, Murray, Ky., married Ann Eliza Collie. Children:

(A) Novice Oaks Hubbs, Dec. 9, 1898, married Lillian Misher. Born to them: Collie Hubbs, January, 1913; Cherry Louise Hubbs, March, 1915.

## 65

-56-F-WILLIAM JAMES HUBBS-MAGGIE AUSTON-SUSANNA JONES TABLE

William James Hubbs, now dead, married first Maggie Auston, dead. Children:

(A) Mary Eliza Hubbs, born Sept. 4, 1886, married James E. Cunningham, Sept. 26, 1902.



(B) Wildy Hubbs, born March 1890, died 1918, married H. M. Wilson, Murray, Ky. Children: Ornice K. Wilson, Nov. 1917; Mary Madeline Wilson, July 1911.

(C) Robert Hubbs, born June 10, 1895, married Helen, daughter of Rev. Owen Hargroves, Nov. 8, 1914. Two children: Ladine Hargroves and Wilmot Hargroves.

(D) Gladys Hubbs, born May 3, 1900, married Charles Hale March 28, 1915, clerical, Murray, Ky. One child: Maye Hale, January 30, 1916.

Children of William James Hubbs and Susanna Jones:

(E) Curtis Hubbs, born Oct. 28, 1903.

(F) Cletus Hubbs, born January 29, 1905. Curtis and Cletus now live with their mother on the farm near Murray, Ky.

## 66

### -50-H-FLORILLA WHITE-CLINTON WALKER TABLE

Florilla White, born Feb. 13, 1840, died Feb. 13, 1920, married Clinton Walker, born August 7, 1830, died April 12, 1905. Both were born near Sugar Tree, Benton County, Tenn. and moved to Point Pleasant, Mo. shortly after they married; lived, died and were buried there. Children:

(A) Cheat Walker, born March 10, 1861, married Christine Jones. -67-

(B) Ira Walker, born June 15, 1863, farmer, single, New Madrid, Mo.

(C) Dollie Walker, born Dec. 27, 1870, married James Lee Girvin. -68-

(E) Constantine Walker, born April 15, 1859, left home in 1880 and has not been heard from for years. Supposed to be dead and to have had no issue.

(F) Alonzo Walker, born July 9, 1874, died March 1880, buried Point Pleasant, Mo.

(G) Mary Walker, born May 9, 1872, died 1873.

## 67

### -66-A-CHEAT WALKER-CHRISTINE JONES TABLE

Cheat Walker, farmer, Point Pleasant, Mo., married Christine Jones, born Sept. 5, 1873, daughter of Edward and Josephine Jones, of New Madrid, Mo. Children:

(A) Ruth Margaret Walker, born August 10, 1893, married John Fletcher, Point Pleasant, Mo. Children: Cortez Fletcher, Aug. 15, 1914; Ruth Lois Fletcher, April 30, 1917.

(B) Roy Walker, born Dec. 17, 1895, single, Point Pleasant, Mo.

(C) James Harold Walker, born Feb. 12,

1898, brakeman on railroad, Kennett, Mo., married Pearl Reno.

(D) Clinton Edward Walker, born Feb. 9, 1902, government position Caruthersville, Mo.

(E) Hazel Dorothea Walker, born March 16, 1905.

(F) Josephine Walker, born July 29, 1907.

(G) Earnest Lonnie Walker, born March 20, 1910.

(H) Vernon Walker, born June 22, 1912.

## 68

### -66-C-DOLLIE WALKER-JAMES LEE GIRVIN TABLE

Dollie Walker married James Lee Girvin, farmer, Point Pleasant, Mo. One child:

(A) Florilla Lee Girvin, born April 21, 1901, school teacher.

## 69

### -50-G-ELLEN WHITE-JAMES WALKER TABLE

Ellen White, born January 13, 1838, married James Walker. Both were born, lived, died and are buried in Benton County, Tenn. Children, so far as we have learned:

(A) Valarie Walker, married John Doyle and moved to near Brawdied Landing on Tenn. River in Decatur County, Tenn. and are said to have a son by name of Grover Doyle who married and had children.

(B) Hoss Walker, whose correct name was William Henry Walker, is said to have married Mary (Polly) Townsend and moved to Missouri.

## 70

### -50-D-THOMAS WHITE-MARTHA JOHNSON TABLE

Thomas White, born August 26, 1828, near Sugar Tree, Tenn., was a farmer by occupation, lived and died near where he was born. He died about 1900, perhaps some time earlier. We have not been able to get any reply to letters written to Sugar Tree trying to get a correct table so we give it as best we can. Some of these names are perhaps nicknames. Children:

(A) Duck White, married Enock Henry.

(B) Sis White, married Monroe Henry.

(C) Wright White, married Ruth Bishop.

(D) Florilla White, married a Mr. Henry.

(E) Coon White, single.

(G) Monroe White, single.

(H) Eliza White.

(I) Constantine White, single.

(J) Samuel White, married a Miss Ward.

(K) Ditcher White, single, dead.

All these people or their descendants for the most part are thought to live near Sugar Tree, Tenn.

## 71

-50-1-CAROLINE (CALLIE) DONIA  
WHITE-JAMES BALLOWE TABLE

Caroline (Callie) Donia White, born August 12, 1846, Des Arc, Ark., married James Ballowe, born 1823, died Dec. 9, 1904.

Caroline Donia White was born in Benton County, Tenn., and spent the first twenty-four years of her life in the vicinity of Sugar Tree. In early life she connected herself with the church and has ever lived a most devoted christian life. She, with her husband, went to the Baptist church. She is one of those gentle, true and kind sympathetic mothers whose chief solicitude in life has been the training of her children and an endeavor to correctly influence them in the paths that go to make good citizens and Christian gentlemen. At the age of 76 she is still cheerful, hopeful and ever ready to act her part in life's battles, and takes sweet consolation that she has succeeded and when her Master calls she will be ready, knowing that her manner of living her life has made the world better for her having been here, and that she leaves behind a posterity that no one need be ashamed of.

James Carroll Ballowe first saw light on the 12th of March, 1823, at Nashville, Tenn., or near there. When the Civil war came on he cast his lot with the Confederacy and enlisted as a private. A gallant and brave man he was, with a high degree of intelligence, honest and true. He early attracted the attention of his superior officers and in him there was discovered leadership. He was promoted from time to time and by the time of the battle of Shiloh he had been made First Lieutenant, and, as such took part in that battle. He was all of his life a farmer by occupation. He became a member of the Masonic Lodge, walked on the level, and his acts with his fellowman squared with the tenets so fundamental with that order and so necessary to the high type of good citizens.

He was an honorary member of White River Lodge No. 37 F. & A. M. for many years before he died and a consistent and attentive member of the Baptist Church. After the war was over James Carroll Ballowe returned to the fields to retrieve and recover, as best he could, what had been lost. He settled in Benton County, Tenn. and was received a welcome visitor in the home of James White, one of the most substantial farmers of that county until the war had freed his negroes. He still had his lands and a charming daughter who attracted the eye of Lieutenant Ballowe. Lieutenant sought

the hand of Caroline Donia White and was accepted. In the year of 1865 they were united in marriage and in Humphrey County, Tenn., began their life together. The father had given his other children a slave when they married but the fortune of war had changed conditions, in a way impoverished the father, and there was little to be given to this daughter. In 1870 they decided to follow the footsteps of their parents as pioneers and, in a way, go further West and live in a new country. They moved to Mt. Adams in Arkansas County, Ark., and there resided until 1872 when they moved to near Des Arc, Arkansas and made that their permanent home. There, they took up again the occupation of farming and reared a large family. This country was new in a way but they overcame difficulties as they came. The Creator was good to James Carroll Ballowe for there were added eleven years to his three score and ten years, when on the 9th of December, 1904, after having a few days before been stricken with small-pox, he passed away at the ripe old age of 81. Peace be to his ashes. Well done! Thou good and faithful servant. His good wife still survives him and with her sons, lives on the old farm place at Des Arc, Arkansas.

## 72

-71-CHILDREN OF JAMES CARROLL  
BALLOWE-CAROLINE DONIA WHITE

(A) Thomas Cortez Ballowe, born Nov. 15, 1867.-80-

(B) Zenobia Ballowe, born June 8, 1869, married Edmund B. Morrill.-79-

(C) James Forrest Ballowe, born March 13, 1872, married Emma Loving.-78-

(D) Randolph P. Ballowe, born 1874, died at the age of 17 and was buried at the Ballowe burial plot near Des Arc, Ark.

(E) Sarah Beulah Ballowe, born April, 1876, married Rev. D. R. Whitley.-77-

(F) Samuel P. Ballowe, born about 1884, married Fredia Sailor.-76-

(G) Elizabeth Ballowe, born 1882, married Percy D. Weaver.-75-

(H) Putnam Ballowe died when about 8 years old and was buried in the Ballowe burial ground at Des Arc, Ark.

(I) Olivia Ballowe, born 1887, married Schuler Ried.-74-

(J) Dewitt Talmage Ballowe, born 1889, married Ida Johnson.-73-

(K) Earl E. Ballowe, born 1893, owns his own farm and lives with his mother and brother at Des Arc, Ark. He is single.

## 73

-72-J-Dewitt Talmage Ballowe, Des Arc, Ark., is a farmer by occupation. He owns his own farm, and lives near Des Arc, Ark. He also engages in stock-raising, is a member of the M. W. O. A., also of the W. O. W. He has for some years been a director of the consolidated schools near his place and when under the Federal Banking law there was organized the Oak Prairie Farm Loan Association, he was made secretary and treasurer, which position he still holds. In 1909 he married Ida Johnson. Children:

- (A) Victor Ballowe, born about 1910.
- (B) Milton Ballowe, born about 1912.
- (C) Allene Ballowe, born about 1914.
- (D) Randolph Ballowe, born about 1916.
- (E) Talmage Johnson Ballowe, born 1918.

## 74

-72-I-Olivia Ballowe married S. Reid, son of Judge J. R. Ried who for some years was County Judge at Des Arc, Ark. They live near that place. Children:

- (A) Ruth Ried, born 1905.
- (B) Jack Ried, born 1907.
- (C) Elizabeth Ried, born 1909.
- (D) John Ried, born 1911.
- (E) Buster Ried, born 1913.
- (F) Schuler Ried Jr., born 1920.

## 75

-72-G-Elizabeth Ballowe, born 1882, died January 3, 1919, married Percy D. Weaver and moved to Little Rock, Ark., where she died. They were married in 1908. Percy D. Weaver is an electrician by occupation, Lonoke, Ark. Children now live with his uncle, John Weaver, Lonoke, Ark., and are:

- (A) Sarah Weaver, born 1907.
- (B) George Weaver, born 1909.

## 76

-72-F-Samuel P. Ballowe owns his own farm, is also a plantation manager and lives near Des Arc, Ark. In 1914 he married Fredia Sailor. Children:

- (A) Samuel P. Ballowe, Jr., born 1916.
- (B) Alice Ballowe, born 1918.

## 77

-72-E-Sarah Ballowe about 1893 married Rev. D. R. Whitley and died at Tomberson, Ark. Rev. D. R. Whitley now resides R. R. 2, Mt. Ida, near Hot Springs, Ark. He is a Baptist minister. Children:

- (A) Valpean Whitley, born 1897, served in France with the American army, now engaged in the timber and road building business with Des Arc, Ark., as headquarters.
- (B) Blanch Whitley, born 1899, was attending school in some College in Oklahoma in 1921.

(C) Catherine (Katie) Whitley, born 1901, is at home at Mt. Ida, near Hot Springs, Ark.

(D) D. R. Whitley, born 1903, at home at Mt. Ida, Arkansas.

## 78

-72-G-James Forrest Ballowe lives on his own farm near Des Arc, Arkansas. He married Emma Loving, daughter of Rev. J. and Linnie Loving. Children:

(A) Odessa Ballowe, born about 1897, married in 1919 to Elbert Rogers. They live at Batesville, Arkansas; saw mill business.

(B) Joseph Ballowe, farmer in Oklahoma, was born 1899.

(C) Bascom Ballowe, farmer in Oklahoma, born 1901.

(D) Winfield Ballowe, in United States Navy, born 1903.

(E) Biscoe Ballowe, born 1905.

(F) James Ballowe, born 1907.

## 79

-72-B-Zenobia Ballowe, born June 8, 1869 in Humphrey County, Tenn., in 1870 went with her parents to Arkansas. In 1887 she married Edward B. Morrill who was a newspaper man and at different times owned and edited papers at different places in Prairie County. He died in 1912, being then Editor of Duvall Bluff Democrat. Mrs. Morrill still resides at Duval Bluffs. Children are:

(A) Randolph Morrill, born Dec. 25, 1886, died Sept. 28, 1902.

(B) Addie Brownie Morrill, born August 28, 1891, married W. B. Hoagland, machinist, They live in Dyersburg, Tenn.

(C) John Calhoun Morrill, born April 28, 1894, was in Co. C 57th, Engineers with the American forces and saw service in France in the World War. He was in France for twelve months. He is engineer on a government boat on the Mississippi River.

(D) James Morrill, born Oct. 1900, is a printer at Duval Bluffs, Ark.

(E) Caroline Maud Morrill, born March 4, 1907, is assistant cashier of State National Exchange Bank in Little Rock, Ark.

(F) Rosalind Morrill, born Dec. 31, 1902, is stenographer in a Law Office in Little Rock, Arkansas.

(G) Virginia Morrill, born July 31, 1905, will complete high school in the term now ending.

## 80

-72-A-Thomas Cortez Ballowe, born in Humphrey County, Tenn., Nov. 15, 1867; at the age of three went to Arkansas with his parents. He is a school teacher by occupation, and has taught school for some thirty years.



He has been a member of White River Lodge No. 37, F. & A. M. for thirty years. This Lodge is located at Des Arc. He has been continuously elected Justice of the Peace for thirty years; is a member of the County Board of Education of his County; belongs to the W. O. W. and carries the insurance for his mother. He owns his farm, lives with and looks after the farm owned by his mother. He has never married and probably will not do so as long as his mother lives. He is one of the most highly respected citizens of his country.

## 100

## COL. JOHN ALSTON-MARY CLARK FAMILY

Please bear in mind in reading this article that in an early day Chowan Precinct, as then called but County as we shall refer to it, composed the large part of northeast North Carolina. In 1722 Bertie County was formed. In 1741 Edgecombe was formed from Chowan, and Craven joined Edgecombe on the south and east; Halifax County was formed out of Edgecombe and Gates from Chowan. Currituck joined Bertie and Chowan.

The Alston family is said to have been of Saxon origin. The meaning of the name was "most noble". The family is thought to have sprung from Saxham Hall, Suffolk County, England.

William Alston was the father of Edward of Saxham Hall (1537-1617), father of Thomas Gedding Hall, Suffolk County, (1564-1619). Thomas Hall was knighted June 13, 1642, and created a knight as Sir Thomas Alston of Odell in Bedfordshire. His brother who was the fourth son of Thomas Hall of Gedding Hall, is said to have been John Alston of Inner Temple. This John Alston was said to have married Dorothy Temple, daughter of Sir John Temple whose ancestry is said to date back to Alfred the Great. William Alston, son of this John Alston, is said to have married Thomasine Brooke.

John Alston, who later spelled his name Allston, and said to have been a son of the last above William Alston, with a cousin John Allston also is said to have settled in South Carolina in 1694-95, coming with Gov. Archdale, while some authorities claim he came some twelve years earlier as a political prisoner sent over because of his liberal views. Many of the Emigrants to America prior to 1700 were sent here because of their hostile attitude, openly pronounced against the Europ an Autocracies as they then existed. The family of this John Allston

who settled in South Carolina became very prominent. A descendant married the daughter of Aaron Burr and this Alston we think was the one who became Governor of South Carolina. One Mary Allston married John Pyatt of Georgetown, of a wealthy and prominent family. This Georgetown family is not to be confused with the Pyatt family related to us on our mother's side. This last family lived at Charleston and we have no reason to think they were related. The Georgetown family spelled their name Pyatt, while the Charleston family spelled their name Pyatt and also Pyeatt, we think it was Pyatt.

Col. John Alston who married Mary Clark is said to have been a cousin of the John Allston of South Carolina. Whether he and Mary Clark were married in America or Europe is not known. It is thought they married in Europe. They perhaps first settled in Virginia and prior to 1711 settled in Chowan County, N. C., and in that year obtained a grant of 200 acres of land northwest of Bennett's Creek. In 1723 he obtained 200 acres at the head of Bennett Creek. March 1722 he deeded away 100 acres on the north side of Bennett Creek. In July 1745 he received a commission as sheriff of Chowan County. In 1748 he was a member of the Court. On March 6, 1739, he was appointed Justice of the Peace for Chowan County and at the same time, his son-in-law, Thomas Kearney and his son-in-law Samuel Williams Sr. each also received Commissions as Justice of the Peace for Edgecombe County. He served as Juryman in 1715, and was a Grand Juryman at General Court of Oyer and Terminer for several years. In 1725 he was made Captain of the King's forces, and 1729 promoted to Colonel. He also served as Collector for the King, and Vestryman of St. Paul's Parish. He accumulated a considerable fortune, conducted himself with due regard to his position, was highly esteemed and one of the most prominent and most trustworthy citizens of the Province of North Carolina in his day. The spot where he first settled is said to be near Pasquotank, N. C., but he later moved to near what is now known as Gatesville, N. C. His will was probated in Chowan County, Dec. 2, 1758. He and May Clark, his wife, were the parents of ten children, five sons and five daughters, as follows:

(A) Joseph John Alston, born 1702, died 1780.

(B) Solomon Alston, married Ann Hinton and died 1785.

(C) William Alston, married Ann Kimbrough, lived and died in Halifax.

(D) Phillip Alston, married Winifried Whitmel of Bertie County, N. C.

(E) James Alston, married Christian Lillington and settled in Orange County, N. C.

(F) Sarah Alston married Thomas Kearney, and settled in Edgecombe County.

(G) Charity Alston, married John Dawson.

(H) Elizabeth Alston, married Samuel Williams Sr.-102-

(I) Two daughters, died single.

About 1736 there began a considerable emigration to Edgecombe County and on March 6, 1739 a Commission as Justice of the Peace was issued to Thomas Kearney and Samuel Williams and in that year there was granted to Solomon Alston 400 acres of land in Bertie County, to Thomas Kearney 300 acres in Edgecombe County, to Samuel Williams 400 acres in Edgecombe County, to William Alston 150 acres in Edgecombe County, and in 1743 to Joseph John Alston 150 acres in Edgecombe County, but he had obtained grants to lands in this County in 1732 and 1738. All the parties to whom land had been granted in Edgecombe County are thought to have moved to that County the year of the grant except Joseph John Alston who moved to Edgecombe County in 1741. In 1744 he was sent as a representative of Edgecombe County to the Legislature and was appointed as one of the Committee on grievances of the people. When he moved to Edgecombe County, he brought with him 19 slaves while Thomas Kearney brought 16 slaves. Thomas Kearney is said to have been the son of an English Earl. In 1739 Thomas Kearney was commissioned as Provost Marshall, or High Sheriff of the territory then known as Edgecombe Precinct or County.

In 1813 Willis Alston of Halifax was elected to Congress. James Alston and wife moved and settled in Orange County, N. C. Solomon Alston who settled in Edgecombe lived on land now located in Warren County. He is said to have many descendants in Mississippi, South Carolina and Alabama.

Joseph John Alston was the wealthiest of all the children and was a very prominent man, married twice and left an estate of 100,000 acres of land and 150 negroes.

### 101

## WILLIAM WILLIAMS, OF VIRGINIA, THE EMIGRANT

The Williams Family is of Welsh origin. One tradition is that William Williams, the Emigrant, was the son of a wealthy English-

man and came to Virginia as a Missionary; that he was a very frugal and industrious man, and preached up and down the Shenandoah River Valley for many years; that the people paid him largely in tobacco and that he early invested in slaves; that he added to his wealth until he had become a wealthy citizen. That as he was growing old, he became convinced that slavery was wrong and, a man true to his convictions, he freed his many slaves, and in that way impoverished himself and family. We have not been able to learn positively anything of him, save this traditional story which has been handed down in one of the families of his descendants. There was a considerable mixture of Scotch blood by the time our grandmother Leusey Williams was born, but of course that may have come by inter-marriages of the Williams family with others.

We do not know the name of the wife of this Emigrant, nor the name of any child save that of Samuel Williams Sr.-102-who married Elizabeth Alston.-100-H-

### 102

## SAMUEL WILLIAMS SR.-ELIZABETH ALSTON FAMILY

-101-100-H-Samuel Williams Sr. was born in Virginia and crossed over the border line and married Elizabeth Alston. He is thought to have lived in Chowan County until about 1739 when he moved to the County of Edgecombe. He was then appointed Justice of the Peace for Stony Creek, obtained a grant of 400 acres of land in 1739, 400 acres in 1740, 300 acres in 1741, and 640 acres in 1743 and purchased other lands. He lived and died in Edgecombe County, N. C. His will is dated Oct. 21, 1753 and was probated in February 1754. In his will he leaves his property to his three sons, grandson and wife. Children mentioned in the will were-

(A) William Williams.

(B) Samuel Williams Jr. who married Mary Dudley.-103-

(C) Joseph John Williams.

He mentions his grandson, Samuel Williams. The executors were: Phillip Alston and Benjamin Wynes. It was witnessed by Thomas Kearney and his son Edmund Kearney; James Alston was then Clerk of Court. There was a Coat of Arms on the seal. We do not know what his Coat of Arms was but this connects him with Heraldry of England. He left to Joseph John Williams 11 negroes and 800 acres of land on Reedy Branch, and to Samuel Williams Jr.-103-he left his plantation on Mush Island.

## 103

## -103-B-SAMUEL WILLIAMS JR.-MARY DUDLEY FAMILY

Samuel Williams Jr. after the death of his father in 1754 is thought to have spent the balance of his life in Edgecombe County. We have not been able to locate his will and do not know when he died. We do not know when his wife died.

The Dudley family is of English origin. The Barons and Earls Dudleys of England are descended from John D. Sutton (1310-1349) of Dudley Castle, Staffordshire, who was summoned to parliament as a Baron in 1342. John Sutton or Dudley (1400-1487) the fifth Baron, was first summoned to parliament 1440, having been Viceroy of Ireland.

We do not know anything for certainty as to who were the ancestors of Mary Dudley. On Feb. 15, 1755 one Thomas Dudley of Currituck County made his will, which was probated in that county March 1757. He left one half of his plantation to his sons: William Dudley and Thomas Dudley, and one half to his grandson Malakie Dudley. He also leaves property to his daughter, Mary (Dudley) Williams. The will was witnessed by Charles Williams, Thomas Williams, and Solomon Ashe. We think it possible that he was the father of Mary Dudley who married Samuel Williams Jr. but have nothing to base it on save the location and time, as the two counties then joined. We only know of one child of Samuel Williams Jr. and Mary Dudley, his wife, to wit: William Williams-104.- There were probably other children.

## 104

-103-William Williams was born in Edgecombe County and married Catherine Tyre. Tyre is of Celtic origin and the same as Tyer or Tyors and comes from the word Tiler. The Cornish word tyor, meaning a tiler comes from the word ty, meaning to cover.

We feel reasonably sure that Catherine Tyre was a daughter of Captain Thomas Tyre who on June 11, 1776 was appointed as Captain for Craven County for "Brigade of Militia now in actual service under command of Brigadier Gen. Ashe at Cape Fear" (see Vol. 10, page 675, Colonial Records of North Carolina). In 1758 Thomas Tyre Sr. and Thomas Tyre Jr. of Craven County were members of the Militia. We are of the opinion that Ann Tyre of Craven County who in the census of 1790 is given as the head of a family was the wife of Thomas Tyre Sr. and she then had at home one son over 16 and one son under 16; that Jesse Tyre, John Tyre, Lewis Tyre, Major Tyre, and Thomas Tyre, men-

tioned in Craven County in the census of 1790 were probably children of Thomas Tyre Sr. probably dead then. The 1790 census does not disclose that there were at that time any other persons by the name of Tyre living in North Carolina save George Tyre of Wilkes County which was in the extreme west end of the state. The Colonial Records do not mention any other Tyre save William Tyre who was at Newbern Feb. 6, 1777.

Tradition is that when the Revolutionary war came on, that William Williams was a patriot and aligned himself with the forces of this country; that he went North and with other forces joined and fought under Gen. George Washington; that while away, the Tories came and took the last horse that his wife had; that she went out, took hold of the horse and undertook to prevent it; that the Tories by drawn swords and threats to cut off her arm, compelled her to drop the halter from her hand and they took the horse.

From a history of Edgecombe County by Turner Bridges, published in 1920, we learn that in 1777 troops were sent from Edgecombe County to other sections of the country and that some troops were sent to join Gen. George Washington and with him made a campaign into Pennsylvania.

David Williams, the son of William Williams enlisted under Capt. Coleman, January 10, 1882 for one year in the 10th North Carolina Regiment. The Colonial Records disclose that in this same Regiment William Williams enlisted June 20, 1777 under Capt. Moore; that William Williams enlisted May 5, 1776 for two and one half years and was discharged Nov. 10, 1778; that the one Wm. Williams who enlisted under Captain Moore was captured April 14, 1779; that William Williams enlisted January 20, 1778 under Captain Blunt; that William Williams enlisted April 25, 1781 under Capt. Dixon; that William Williams enlisted Aug. 1, 1782 under Captain Carter; that William Williams enlisted June 1, 1779 for 18 months.

There were other William Williams in other companies but we think with the above tradition told our father by Leusey Williams, the grand-daughter of William Williams, and he having told it to us, this record in the Colonial Records is fairly presumptuous that one of those above William Williams was our ancestor and that he made the campaign into Pennsylvania under Gen. George Washington. With the war ended about 1783-84 William Williams moved to Wake County, N. C. and there remained until 1800 when he moved to Anson County, N. C. and settled near Lilesville. There he died in 1807 and

his unrecorded will was probated Oct. 1807 and is now among the unrecorded wills of that county.

On Nov. 25, 1758 William Williams of Edgecombe County was selected as a representative to convey to Earl Granville the grievances of the people of Edgecombe County. Whether this was our William Williams or some other we know not. As his grandfather had been so prominent; his great uncle, Thos. Kearney the High Sheriff; his great uncle, James Alston the County Clerk; and his great uncle Joseph John Alston, perhaps the wealthiest man of the county, it is not improbable that it was he who was selected for this mission.

Joseph John Alston's will was probated at Halifax January 1, 1780. He mentions sons: John Alston, Philip Alston, William Alston, Harry Alston; daughter Pattie (Alston) Merony, May (Alston) Palmer; grandson Joseph John Alston, son of John; John Alston, son of Phillip. He also mentions John Cooper, Eupham Wilson Cooper, Wesley Jones, and Solomon Williams.

James Alston-100-E-who married Christian Lillington and settled in Orange County, N. C. in his will mentions: son James Alston, John Alston, wife Christian Alston, daughters; Mary Alston, Charity Alston, Sarah Alston; brothers Joseph John Alston, Phillip Alston, Solomon Alston, brother-in-law John Dawson; Solomon Alston Jr. and John Alston sons of brother Solomon Alston. Will probated Feb. 1761. We note an inquiry in 1900 from W. W. C. T. of Atlanta, Georgia for information as to Martha R. Dudley whom she says married James Napier Torrance. She says Martha R. Dudley was daughter of John Alston Dudley and Mary Robinson, his wife. That John Alston Dudley was the only son of Sir Thomas Dudley who came to America during Revolutionary days and married Sallie Alston.

Benjamin Rawlings whose will was probated in Edgecombe County Dec. 10, 1738 was no doubt related to us on the Alston side of the house and probably through Mary Clark, wife of Col. John Alston. He remembers in his will: Elizabeth (Alston) Williams, William Alston, Elizabeth Alston (wife of Joseph John Alston), Sarah (Alston) Kearney, her son Edmond Kearney, James Flood, Benjamin Hill, Henry Hill, David Coltraine, and Robert Locklear. These last mentioned matters properly belong elsewhere in this book.

### 105

Unrecorded but probated will of William Williams, now on file in office of County

Recorder, Anson County, N. C.: "In the name of God Amen: I William Williams, of Anson County, being sick and weak in body but in perfect mind and memory thanks be given unto God, calling unto mind the mortality of my body and knowing that it is appointed for all men once to die do make and ordain this my last will and testament that is to say principally and first of all I give and recommend my soul unto the hands of Almighty God that gave it and my body I recommit to the earth to be buried in a decent Christian burial and as to touching such worldly estate as it has plesed God to bless me in this life with, I give devise and dispose of the same in the manner and form. First, I give and bequeath to my son Thomas Williams seven dollars. I give and bequeath to my daughter Mary Harris seven dollars. I give and bequeath to my daughter Milley King, Elizabeth Harris, Susannah Harris, one dollar each of them. I also give and bequeath to my sons William and David and John one dollar each to them. I also give and bequeath to my dearly loved wife Catherine Williams all my household furniture and stock of all kinds by her freely to be possessed and enjoyed during her life and at her death to be equally divided between my sons Dudley and Benjamin Williams. These two I want my executors and I do hereby disallow revoke and disannul all and every other former testament, will legacies, notifying and confirming this and no other to be my last will and testament. In witness whereof I have hereunto set my hand and seal last day of May and in the year of our Lord eighteen hundred and six. (signed) William Williams. Signed and sealed in the presence of Jordan Flake and Elijah Flake probated October 1807.

William Williams was a farmer by occupation. We have spent a number of days in the libraries and searched many books to verify the traditions. We have only tradition to verify the occupation as to the William Williams, the Emigrant. The ancestry of Mary Dudley is only conjectural and somewhat in doubt. Otherwise, we feel sure that from paragraph 100 to the closing of the life of this William Williams, the history and movements are absolutely correct in every particular. We need no further biographical sketch to tell the story of William Williams and his wife Catherine Tyre. The fate of her father, Captain Tyre is not recorded. The probabilities are that early after the beginning of the Revolutionary war he passed beyond and with the fates of thousands of others, his ending will never be known. If

William Williams had much of property, it must have been lost in Revolutionary days. Near Lilesville, N. C. lie the remains of these two ancestors.

We will for the present digress from the Williams family to the Harris family which became united with the William Williams family by a four-ply marriage between the families. We will then return to the Williams family.

## 106

## THE HARRIS FAMILY

In the History Sketches of the Harris and Williams Families, published 1919, by Miss Wincie (now deceased) and Miss J. Nicholene Bishop, of Akron, Alabama, we learn that the Harris family came from Buckingham, England, a parliamentary and municipal town of great antiquity, fifty-eight miles from London; that they were among the early colonists who settled in North Carolina. We are informed by Mrs. Eugene Little that Captain Sherwood Harris No. 1 lived at Granville, N. C. and there died 1763; that he was Captain of the North Carolina Militia and also a Vestryman in that village; that his son Sherwood Harris No. 2 lived there during the Revolutionary period and was a Justice of the Peace, which was much desired position in those days, as the office made the holder the Community Adviser. Sherwood Harris No. 2 later moved to Wake County and from there with the Williams families moved to Anson County in 1800. His will was dated Aug. 23, 1805 and probated Oct. 1805 in Anson County. It was witnessed by Jordan Flake and Benjamin Williams. He mentions the following children: (1) Jonathan Harris; (2) William Harris; (3) Nancy Harris; (4) Simeon Harris; (5) Tilman Harris; (6) Sherwood Harris No. 3; (7) Elizabeth (Harris) Hooker; (8) Martha Harris; (9) Franky (Harris) Eason; (10) Archibald Harris; and (11) Mary (Harris) Williams. (See 107)

## 107

-106-Children of Sherwood Harris No. 2 by his first wife whose name is unknown to us: (A) Jonathan Harris who settled on land in Richmond County, N. C. and died 1810.

(B) William Harris.

(C) Nancy Harris.

(D) Sherwood Harris No. 3.

(E) Elizabeth (Harris) Hooker. We do not know the given name of her husband, Mr. Hooker.

(F) Martha Harris.

(G) Franky (Harris) Eason. We do not know the given name of Mr. Eason.

(H) "Elder" Archibald Harris, married (108-G) Susanna William.-114-

(I) Mary Harris, married (108-I) Dudley Williams.-177-

(J) John Harris, married (108-E) Mary Ann (Nancy) Williams.-110-Sherwood Harris No. 2's second wife was (108-F) Elizabeth Williams, daughter of William Williams and Catherine Tyre, his wife. Children by this marriage:

(K) Simeon Harris, married one Elizabeth Williams and went to Pickens County, Alabama and there settled in 1819.

(L) Tilman Harris, went to Pickens County Alabama and settled 1819.

(M) Hudson Harris, probably born after the death of his father, went to Pickens County, Alabama in 1819 and there settled.

## 108

-104-Children of William Williams and Catherine Tyre, his wife:

(A) Davis Williams, born about 1760, married Martha (Patsy) Ivey.-109-

(B) Thomas Williams, supposed to have remained in Wake or Edgecombe County.

(C) William Williams Jr., thought to have moved to Tenn.

(D) Milley Williams, married John King and went to Alabama in 1819.

(E) Mary Ann (Nancy) Williams, married (107-J) John Harris.-110-

(F) Elizabeth Williams, married (107) Sherwood Harris No. 2, being the second wife.

(G) Susanna Williams, married (107-H) "Elder" Archibald Harris.-114-

(H) John Williams, named Joseph John Williams, our Anson County relatives tell us and he signs his will Joseph Williams. It is dated July 4, 1825, recorded in Anson County, N. C. His wife in the will is called Martha Williams. He mentions his daughter Rebecca, his son Reuben Williams, his son-in-law William Bennett, his grandson, Joel Bennett, his sons; Henry, Harot, Samuel, James, and Hezekiah. His will is witnessed by Nathan Bivens and Grisson Taylor.

(I) Dudley Williams, married (107-I) Mary Harris.-177-

(J) Benjamin Williams, born about 1785, married, (we think his first wife was named Leusey Elizabeth Pate). After her death he married a Miss Mitchel, sister of Thomas Mitchel.-151-

## 109

-108-A-David Williams (see 951) was born about 1760 in Edgecombe County, N. C., moved to Wake County about the close of the Revolutionary war, moved to Anson County, 1800, to Red Mound, Henderson



County, Tenn., 1818, to Alabama in 1819 and is buried near Akron, Alabama. He married Martha Ivey in Wake County, N. C. and she is buried by his side. He was a soldier in the Revolutionary army. Children:

(A) Lizzie Williams, married Malcolm Morrison, a Scotchman and had eight children: John; Nancy, married Mr. Duke; William, married Miss Phares; Norman, married Miss Miller; Elizabeth (Betsy), married Mr. Arnold; Angus (killed in the war), married Miss Geddle; Florida, married Mr. Morrison; and Malcolm Jr., married Miss Kirksey.

(B) Henry Williams, married Nancy Henson, later married Dorcas Williams Henry. He had eleven children, as follows: Charles, married Miss Elliot; David; Thomas; Benjamin, married Eliza Harris-111.; John, married Dicy Harris; Williamson, married Miss Morrison; Harris, married Mirian Harris; Mathew, married Miss Ross; Sallie, married Thomas Barber and later married Bagley Prestridge; Massey; Mary, married Samuel Holloway.

(C) Elias Williams, married Miss Ross. There were several of their children, among them: James, Taylor and Ned. Ned married Miss Stringfellow.

(D) Dicie Williams, married (110-A) Evan Harris.

(E) Aylie (Elsie) Williams, married Abram Barber. They had five or six children: David, married Miss Slay and later Elizabeth (Betsy) Harris; Martha Ann, married Mr. Walls; Wall, Seaborn and "Tal" left Akron, Ala., and it is not known as to them.

(F) Lanie Williams, married Johnathan Hattox and left Akron, Ala.

(G) Mary (Polly) Williams, married (110-C) Page Harris.

(H) Charles Williams, married (110-F) Elizabeth (Betsy) Harris, and after her death married Jackie Whitehead Wiggins. By his first wife he had five children: Susanna (Sukey), married Benjamin Harvey; Nancy, married Mr. Wiley; Mary (Polly), married Timothy Logan; David, married but name of wife not known; Dudley, single. By his second wife he had four children: Charles Jr., married Kittie May; Johnathan, married Caroline Avery; Tempe, married Dr. Chew. She is the only child now living. She is very old and lives at Rosenberg, Texas. Edwin another child, burned to death when small.

(I) Martha (Patsy) Williams, married Joseph Davis and they had ten children: Elizabeth, married Mr. Allen, she later married John Weeks; John, married, name of wife not known; Martha, married William George; William, married Eliza Scarlet; Louvincy,

married Howard Holmes and she died at Knoxville, Ala., Feb. 1922. George, killed in Confederate army; Nancy Ann, married Monroe Stokes; Leonora, married Ptolemy Harris; Franklin, married Mary Powers; Strong Davis, was killed in the Confederate army.

All these grandchildren of David Williams have passed away save Mrs. Tempe (Williams) Chew of Rosenberg, Texas.

## 110

-108-E-107-J-John Harris was born in North Carolina, perhaps at Granville, or in Wake County. In 1800 with his parents he moved to Anson County. In 1818 he went to Red Mound, Henderson County, Tenn. In 1819 he emigrated to near Akron, Alabama. In Anson County he married Mary Ann (Nancy) Williams. Both are buried near Akron, Ala. They had twelve children, two died small. Others were:

(A) Evan Harris, married (109-D) Dicy Williams and had nine children as follows: Sanford, married Susan Harris; Archibald, married Elizabeth (Betsy) Harris; Lizzie, married Mr. Harris; John, married Nancy Miller. David was born 1819, the day his mother arrived at Akron, Ala.; and he married Mary Ann Miller; Simeon, married Marthena Harris; Calloway, married Susan Wilson, and later married Mary Jackson; Leah, married Mr. Shirley; Young, married Sarah Knighton.

(B) John Harris Jr., married Mary (Polly) Hicks, who traced her ancestry to Pocahontas. They had eight children: Susie, married Sanford Harris; Winnie, married Thomas Harris; Mary, married Elam Smith, and then married Mr. Crawford; Elizabeth (Betsy), married Archibald Harris; then David Barber then Mr. Glass; Jane, married Steven Jackson; Page, died single; John, married Miss Munlin; Nancy, married Larkin Edmundson.

(C) Page Harris was born in 1795 in Wake County, N. C. and died in Alabama in 1887. He married (109-G) Mary Williams, born 1800, died 1860. There were born to this union thirteen children: Annie born 1818 in Henderson County, Tenn., married Washington Barber; Eliza born 1820 in Alabama, died 1895-96, married Benjamin Williams; Dicy born 1821, died 1895, married John Williams; Marthena, born 1823, died 1880, married Simeon Harris; Louvincy, born 1827, died 1917, married John Nicholas Bishop, a Major in the Confederate army; John D., born 1834, died 1908, was a lawyer, and married Mary Jane Brown; Ellen, born 1832, died 1872, married Silas Henry; Julia,

born 1840, died 1883; William Harris; Dr. Evan Harris, born 1842, died 1910, married Katherine Wallace; four died small.

(D) William Harris, married Louvincy Williams, daughter of David Williams, whom we by oversight failed to mention in 109. Two children: One died small; Martha, married John Gewin.

(E) Noah Harris, married Margaret Walker. There were five children: Wincie, died in fall of 1920; William, married Miss Harris; Martha, John, and Nannie, single.

(F) Elizabeth (Betsy) Harris, married Charles Williams-109-H-

(G) Wincy, married Jason Harry; one child: John, married Anne Britton.

(H) Jane (Jency), married Christopher Gewin. There were eleven children, as follows: John, married Martha Harris; Elizabeth, married Marion Moore; Nancy, married Alvis Logan, she later married John Wedgeworth; Noah, married Mary Chapman, and later Emmarette Ferrell; Susan, married Calhoun Moore; Evan, married Annie Borden; Mattie, married Benjamin Evans; Christopher Jr., U. S. Marshall at Greensboro, Alabama, married Julia Flynn; three died in infancy.

(I) Sukie Harris, single.

(J) Nannie Harris, single.

John David Harris, above mentioned, was born March 3, 1834 near Akron, Alabama. He was educated at Green Springs, a famous school for boys conducted by Dr. Henry Tutwiler. This school was located about one mile from his home. He then graduated from the Law University at Lebanon, Tenn. His marriage to Mary Jane Brown was in 1850. He began the practice of law at Greensboro, Ala., and when the war broke out he organized a company of soldiers at Five Mile, the old family church, and went to join the Confederate army. He did valiant service and was promoted to the rank of Major. When the war was over, he moved to Livingston, Ala., and there resumed the practice of his profession. He was one time the Democratic Elector in his district, and served as Register of the Land Office in Montgomery by appointment under President Cleveland.

He was a Royal Arch Mason and was Grand Master of the Masonic Lodge of Alabama for a number of years. He was an orator of considerable reputation, a Baptist in religion and an active layman in the Church. For many years he owned and edited the Alabama Baptist. At the meeting of the International Sunday School Convention in Philadelphia he was elected president of that organization. Twice he was elected State

Superintendent of Education in Alabama and at the time of his death in 1908, he was a member of the Railroad Commission.

## 111

-109-B-Benjamin Williams, son of Henry Williams, grandson of Davis Williams and Martha Ivey, his wife, was born in Alabama Dec. 10, 1811, married Eliza Harris Dec. 31, 1835 and with his family in 1856 he moved to Mississippi. Being a farmer, he rented land near Hazel Hurst, Copiah County, and in 1858 moved to Crystal Springs. His health failed him and he returned to near Akron, Alabama with his wife and daughter, Ellen. His health grew worse and June 10, 1870 he died in the house his grandfather, David Williams had built, when he arrived there in 1819. He left two children:

(A) Greenberry Williams, married Sue Barber-112-

(B) Ellen Williams, married Dr. Jere Gibert-113-

## 112

-111-A-Greenberry Williams was born April 1, 1837, married Sue Barber Oct. 24, 1856, died April 14, 1906. They had one child: Dr. James Harris Williams, born January 28, 1858, married Mary Smith Dec. 24, 1893. He engaged in the practice of medicine at West End, Jackson, Miss. They have six children:

(A) James Harris Jr., cotton buyer, Greenwood, Miss.

(B) Mildred Harris, married Claude C. Smith, County Agent, Rosedale, Miss.

(C) Douglass Harris, studying medicine at University of Miss.

(D) Mary Nell Harris, in school.

(E) Ford Smith Harris, in school.

(F) Martha Harris, in school.

## 113

-111-B-Ellen Harris, born Ju'y 29, 1855, married Dr. Jere Gibert Feb. 14, 1878 and they reside at Perthshire, Miss. Dr. Gibert is from a distinguished South Carolina Huguenot ancestry. There were born three children to this union:

(A) John Maury Gibert, planter, Shaw, Miss., born Nov. 29, 1879, graduated with first honors 1896 at Chamberlain Hunt Academy. He graduated at West Point Military Academy 1902, served as 2nd Lieutenant in the Philippine Islands with 10th Infantry, one year in San Francisco, Cal., one year at Sandy Hook with Ordnance Dept. U. S. A., one year in Frankfort Arsenal, Philadelphia, Pa. He resigned from the army and was a planter. Upon the declaration of war, he entered the service, was commissioned Major in Ordnance Department, stationed



at Springfield, Bridgeport, and Hartford, Conn. He was promoted to Lieutenant Colonel, and placed in command of the Arsenal at Governor's Island. In 1919 he resigned from the army and returned to his occupation as planter. Dec. 27, 1905 he married Virgie Tucker. Three children: (A) Jere Tucker Gibert, born Feb. 14, 1908.

(B) Virgie Gibert, born Sept. 28, 1913.

(C) Miriam Gibert, born Feb. 14, 1920.

(B) Vera Gibert, born Sept. 11, 1882, died January 22, 1916.

(C) Susie Gibert was born January 7, 1884, married Samuel D. Knowlton November 14, 1905. He is a cotton planter, Perthshire, Miss. They have three children: Maury Stafford Knowlton, born Aug. 19, 1906, now in Military Academy at Gulfport, Miss.; Emma Elenor Knowlton, born Dec. 3, 1910; and Susie Ellen Knowlton, born March 7, 1917. Mr. Knowlton is of a distinguished Huguenot ancestry, being descended from Col. Thomas Knowlton who was distinguished for his bravery at Bunker Hill.

We are indebted to Miss Wincie Harris, deceased, and to Miss J. Nicholene Bishop of Akron, A'a. for the David Williams data. She is a daughter of (110-C) Louwincy Harris and J. Nicholene Bishop, her husband. Miss Bishop is a school teacher, very highly spoken of by one who knew her. We believe she has held the position of County Superintendent. She belongs to the D. A. R. through David Williams, her ancestor. Elsewhere is a sketch of him, by her.

114

-107-H-108-G-"Elder" Archibald Harris married Susanna Williams. Both of these parties came with their parents from Wake County to Anson County, N. C. in 1800, settled near Lilesville, N. C. and there died. Archibald Harris was a man of strong personality, persuasive in manner of speech, very devout and a leader in the Baptist Church. When he was made an Elder in that Church, the name of Rev. was not yet in their vocabulary. The Minister was called "Elder". He received no compensation for his services. Sometime between 1815 to 1825 came the split in the Baptist church. Then was organized the Missionary Baptist Church as we know it. Its votaries called it the Missionary Baptist Church. The Baptist Church then took the name of Primitive Baptist Church. The Missionary has ever since tried to dub them as "The Hardshell Baptist". One cardinal principle of the Baptist Church was that you must pay your debts. In our twenty-four years experience with the Har-

vester Company, we have found several of the votaries of the Missionary Baptist Church who were not inclined to do this if it could be avoided. We have never had experience with an "Elder" nor lay member of the Primitive Baptist but who did pay all he owed. Our grandmother, Leusey (Williams) Smith was a member of the Church at Lilesville and was present when the Culpepper Brothers came preaching their new doctrine. A controversy arose. She said that "Uncle Archie" a ose and told his followers not to go further in the controversy but follow him and they would build them a new church. As he began to lead his faction from the church, his daughter stepped in front of him and plead that he do not turn his Church over to them. She prevailed for the time. Later another controversy came up. "Elder" Archibald Harris led his following out of the old Church where now stands the Missionary Baptist Church at Lilesville and they built a Church at Gum Springs and there continued to worship with "Uncle Archie" as their Pastor or Elder. He was the dominating character of that branch of the Baptist Church in his section. They have not prospered in numbers as have the churches of the branch but in the communities where live members of this branch, you are invariably told that they are sober, industrious, and God-fearing people, loyal to their country, moral in practice, and have a seven day religion that has a sameness from week to week and from year to year. They succor the sick, befriend the poor, render unto every man his own, have a high standard of business ethics, and when need be, pass the hat quietly around and divide their world's possession with an unfortunate brother. "Am I my brother's keeper" is a dominating trait and a kind of free masonry within the Church. In Illinois it is necessary when an execution is served to claim the exemptions the law allows or else the Sheriff can levy on anything the debtor has, including household goods. We are told that they will turn a member of this Church out if he schedules. If need be his brethren will pass the hat, raise the money and pay the judgment. To us this sounds like a good religion. With the passing of this couple, the community suffered a real loss. Their children were:

(A) Catherine (Kitty) Harris, who in 1818 married Nevel Bennett-116-

(B) Mary (Polly) Harris, married Alfred Waddell and a letter of date of March 8, 1855 showed that she then lived at Villaria, Condar County, Georgia.

(C) Benjamin Harris, born 1802, died 1877, married Rebecca Williams. They lived and died in Anson County. We only know of one child: Johnathan Harris, born 1830, died 1906. He first married Ada Short and had two children: Ada and James Harris; both died when small. His wife died and he married Sallie Short-115-

### 115

-114-Children of Johnathan Harris and Sallie Short, his last wife:

(A) Martha Harris, single, lives at Lilesville, N. C.

(B) Mary Harris, single, Lilesville, N. C.

(C) Rebecca Harris, married Ruffin Jones. She died 1919. Their daughter, Mary Jones, married Charles Craig and they live at Lilesville, N. C.

(D) Benjamin Bradley Harris, born 1869, married Anna E. Henry and they live in Lilesville, N. C. and have six children, as follows: John Kerr Harris, Lucy Harris, Beulah Harris, Julia Harris, Virgie Harris, and Nellie Harris. All live in Lilesville, N. C. and all are single, except Lucy who married John Seago and has one child, John Seago Jr.

Sallie Short, the second wife of Johnathan Harris died. He then married Martha Ann Harrington. By her he had six children, as follows:

(A) Johnathan Prochorus Harris, blacksmith, Lilesville, N. C., born Feb. 7, 1874, married Ida Bell Morton, and they have six children as follows: (1) Ina Corrina Harris, born May 25, 1900, married Edward Henson, Newport News, Va.; (2) Bright Ruby Harris, born May 6, 1903; (3) Rhoda Ethel Harris, born Nov. 30, 1905; (4) Alma Bell Harris, born August 4, 1912; (5) Virginia Harris; (6) Audrey Harris, born Feb. 28, 1919.

### 116

-115-A-Catherine (Kitty) Harris, born 1798, in 1818 married Neville Bennett (see 806F-B) born January 28, 1800. Both were born, lived and died in Anson County, N. C. Children, twelve in number:

(A) Archellus Bennett, married Mary Crawford and then Eliza (Baldwin) Horn.-125-

(B) Susan Bennett, married Mr. Gaddy and later Edmund Davis.-126-

(C) Mary Bennett, married Calvin Cox and later John Knotts.-128-

(D) Fannie Bennett, married Tyre Williams (see Williams Table 176 for descendants)-118-

(E) Nevil Bennett Jr., married Harriet Sturdivant.-119-

(F) Ellen Bennett, married Isaac Williams.-120-

(G) Melvino Bennett, married Captain Parker, C. S. A.

(H) Roxanna Bennett, married Charles Ledbetter.-121-

(I) Lemuel Bennett, married Mary Carpenter.-122-

(J) William O. Bennett, married Harriet Boggan and later Rosa Hammond.-124-

(K) John G. Bennett, went to Mississippi in the sixties.

(L) Risden Tyler Bennett, married Kate Shepherd.-117-

### 117

-116-L-Ridsen Tyler Bennett married Kate Shepherd and they had three children:

(A) Mary A. Bennett, married R. E. Litt'e, they had four children: (1) Robert Eugene Little; (2) Risden Tyler Little, married Rebecca James; (3) Augusta Little, and (4) Mary Little.

(B) Effie Nevil Bennett, married John D. Leak, they had six children: (1) Bennett Leak, married Sadie Mills, they have one child, John Duncan Leak; (2) James Leak; (3) Effie Shepherd Leak, married Dr. Bernard Pritchett; (4) Kate Leak; (5) Alice Leak; (6) Mary Leak.

(C) Kate Bennett, married John T. Bennett, they have three children: (1) Mary Clifford Bennett, married Mr. McCraver; (2) Tyler Bennett; (3) Jack Bennett.

### 118 (See also 176)

-116-D-Fannie Bennett, married Benjamin Cox and has by him one son Julius Cox. She then married Tyre Williams and had children as in 176.

### 119

-116-E-Nevil Bennett Jr., married Harriet Sturdivant. Four children:

(A) Cornelia Bennett, married George T. Little and left five children: (1) Lena Little, married Mr. Pratt, there are several children; (2) Rosa Little, married Walter Crump, several children; Ivey Crump; Nettie Crump, married J. W. Cameron; Fannie George Crump, married Isaac Martin; William O. Crump; Rosebud Crump; and Walter Crump Jr.; (3) Minnie Little, married Alexander Leggett, they have six children: Fred Leggett, William Leggett, Hallie Leggett, Robert Leggett, Harold Leggett, and Julia Leggett; (4) Hallie Little, married John M. Belk, they have seven children: Cornelia Belk, married Mr. Stevens; Sadie Belk, married Mr. Hudson; Mabel Belk; Hallie May Belk, married Mr. Daughtridge; Daisy Belk; Henry Belk; and John Belk; (5) Robert Little, married Lila Wason, they have several children.

(B) Atlanta Bennett, married Walter Lockhart, left seven children: Fisher Lockhart, Frank Lockhart, George Lockhart, Lonnie Lockhart, Olive Lockhart, Anna Lockhart, and Hattie Lockhart.

(C) Press Bennett, we do not know what became of him.

(D) Fisher Bennett, married Annie Bennett, they have four children: (1) Mabel, married Mr. Grousman, they have some children: Earl Grousman, Charles Grousman, and Frank Grousman.

### 120

-116-F-Ellen Bennett, married Isaac Williams and had seven children:

(A) Clelia Williams, married Mr. Whisnant, left four children, one named Helen Whisnant.

(B) Fannie Williams, married Joseph Jowers and later Capt. Harker.

(C) Mary Williams, married C. H. Martin, had ten children, among them: Isaac Martin, married Fannie Crump; Lucy Martin; Nellie Martin; Mildred Martin. Isaac Martin has two children.

(D) Rosa Williams, married Joseph Beaman.

(E) John Williams, married Mattie Powell.

(F) Charles Williams.

(G) Sallie Williams, married Mr. Ashford.

### 121

-116-H-Roxanna Bennett married Charles Ledbetter and left one child: Charles Bennett Ledbetter who first married Miss Crump and had the first five children below by her. Then he married Martha (Pattie) DeBerry and had the last four by her.

(A) Clarence Ledbetter.

(B) Grace Ledbetter.

(C) Mary Ledbetter.

(D) Charles Bennett Ledbetter Jr.

(E) Fred Ledbetter.

By second wife:

(F) Kate Ledbetter.

(G) Hazel Ledbetter.

(H) DeBerry Ledbetter.

(I) Virginia Ledbetter.

### 122

-116-I-Lemuel Bennett, married Mary Carpenter. Six children:

(A) Dora Bennett, married Fulton Allen.

-123

(B) Braxton Bennett.

(C) Jennie Bennett, married Mr. Rivers and had several children.

(D) Merson Bennett, married Alice Allen and had several children.

(E) Lizzie Bennett, married Robert Lampley and had five children: Dora Lampley,

Mary Lampley, Allie Lampley, Robert Lampley, and Fulton Lampley.

(F) John H. Bennett, died 1895.

### 123

-122-A-Dora Bennett, married Fulton Allen and left ten children:

(A) Hampton Allen.

(B) Effie Allen, married H. W. Little and they had six children: Allen Little, Hal Little, Thomas Little, Dora Little, William Little, and Charles Little.

(C) Mary Allen, married L. C. Huntley and they have three children: Leslie Huntly, Fulton Allen Huntley, Haywood Huntley.

(D) Edmund Allen, married Grace Covington and they have five children.

(E) Julian Allen, married Connie Huntley. Two children: Julian and Henry Liles Allen.

(F) Ridsen Allen, married and has one child.

(G) Charles Allen, married Louise Lambeth and has two children.

(H) Fred Allen.

### 124

-116-J-William O. Bennett, married Harriet Boggan and later Rosa Hammond. Children, first by first wife, others by second wife:

(A) Norfleet, married Hannah Lockhart and had several children.

(B) Harriet Bennett, married W. C. Hardison and had six children: (1) William C. Hardison, married Nancy Hardison, three children; (2) Osborne Hardison; (3) Kenneth Hardison, married Mary Anna Justice, two children; (4) Joseph Hardison, married Katherine Smith, one child; (5) Harriet Hardison, married Clarence Kanaga; (6) Hugh Hardison.

(C) Joseph H. Bennett, single.

(D) Fannie Bennett, single.

(E) Ruth Bennett, married Mr. Baker.

(F) Ridsen Tyler Bennett, single.

(G) Ethel Bennett, married Earl Dunlap and has five children: John Dunlap, Tyler Dunlap, Fannie Dunlap, Josephine Dunlap, William (Billie) Dunlap.

(H) Hugh Bennett, married Berta McCue, one child, Edna Bennett. He later married Bettie Brown, one child, Elizabeth Bennett.

### 125

-116-A Archelous Bennett, married Mary Crawford and later married the widow Eliza (Baldwin) Horn. Four children by first wife:

(A) Elizabeth (Bettie) Bennett, married Mr. Kendall and left one child, Clyde Kendall.

(B) Sallie Bennett, married Mr. Blakeney and had three children: Frank Blakeney;

John Blakeney; May Blakeney, married Cecil Meachum and has one child.

(C) Fannie Bennett, married R. C. Gaddy and left three children: (1) Fay Gaddy, married Richard (Dick) Sikes and had one child; (2) Ashe Gaddy, married Dr. E. S. Green and has one child; (3) Bennett Gaddy, married Bertie Iceman.

(D) David Nevil Bennett, married Agnes Dunlap and left six children: (1) John T. Bennett, married Kate Bennett; (2) Crawford Bennett, married Miss McDonald; (3) Mary Bennett, married George Stison and has four children; (4) Irene Bennett, married Cyri Henderson and has three children; (5) Bert E. Bennett, married Maggie Lee and has one child; (6) David N. Bennett, married Lillian Menifee and has two children.

#### 126

-116-B-Susan Bennett, married David Gaddy and had two children by him. Later she married Edmund Davis and had three children by him. Children:

(A) W. A. (Sandy) Gaddy, married Sallie Austin-127-

(B) Gaston Gaddy, married and left several children.

(C) Culpepper Davis, married Elizabeth Hamilton and left eight children.

(D) Henry Davis.

(E) Susan Davis, married Milton Griffin and has ten children.

#### 127

-126-A-W. A. (Sandy) Gaddy married Sallie Austin. Seven children:

(A) Eugenia Gaddy, married Charles Teal and then Mr. Rivers. By the first marriage they had two children; Nora Teal, married W. W. Jordan and they had five children: Lucile, Mildred, William, Edith Jean and Mary Hazel Jordan; Wayne Teal, married Belle Moore.

(B) Susan Gaddy, married W. F. Humbert and has four children: Annie Humbert, William F. Humbert, Ruth Humbert, and Lock Rainer Humbert.

(C) Hessie Gaddy.

(D) W. D. Gaddy.

(E) Neta Gaddy, married C. W. Thomas and has two children: Charles W. Thomas Jr. and Margie Thomas.

(F) Rosa Kate Gaddy, married Mr. Capel.

(G) Nevil Alexander Gaddy.

#### 128

-116-C-Mary (Polly) Bennett married Calvin Cox and later married John Knotts. By her first husband she had one son: Calvin Cox Jr., who married Miss Ratclife and left one child, Tyler Cox, who married Miss

Liles and has several children. She has many descendants by her second husband.

#### 151 (See 912)

-108-J-Benjamin Williams No. 1, great-grandfather of W. Thos. Smith the writer, was born in Wake County, N. C. He was one of the Executors of the will of his father. He was one of the younger children. He and his brother Dudley were Executors. The property left the mother was to go to them at her death. He and Dudley Williams probably cared for the mother after the death of the father.

In 1800, or in the fall of 1799, the Harris Families and Williams Families moved to Anson County. Deed records indicate their holdings of lands were sold in Wake County in the fall of 1799 and they began to purchase in Anson County in 1801.

We are the owner of the Psalm and Hymn Book of his first wife. In his handwriting, it is recorded that "Benjamin Williams and Elizabeth Williams married Oct. 2, 1802" and that she died January 10, 1808. We think her name was Leusey Elizabeth Pate and that she was a sweetheart of Wake County, N. C. Tradition is that he had two girls by the first wife: Leusey the oldest, Elizabeth (Betsy) the second. The book we obtained at Lilesville, N. C. in 1921 verifies this. His second wife was a Miss Mitchell, sister of Thomas Mitchell. His children were:

(A) Leusey Williams, born August 23, 1803, married John Auld Smith. She died in Henderson County, Tenn. about 1850. (See Smith Table 505 and sketch 912).

(B) Elizabeth (Betsy) Williams, born April 24, 1805, married David Townsend and moved to Miss.-152-

The children following were children of Miss Mitchell, his second wife:

(C) Nancy Williams, married Isaac Williams, moved to Henderson County, Tenn. 1838.-153-

(D) Hampton Williams, moved to Henderson County, Tenn. 1838, and there married a daughter of John B. Williams, and later married Mary Johnson-169-(See sketch 952)

(E) John Dudley Williams, born about 1815, married Caroline Liles.-171-

(F) William Tyree Williams, born about 1810, married Fannie (Bennett) Cox, widow of Benjamin Cox, daughter of Nevil Bennett.-176-

#### 152

-151-B-ELIZABETH (BETSY) WILLIAMS-DAVID TOWNSEND TABLE

David Townsend or ancestors was likely born in northeast North Carolina. He per-

haps was born in Anson County, N. C. His ancestors seem to have been early settlers in North Carolina. We see the name Sherwood coming down through the Townsend and Harris families, and they perhaps unite back at some period in a Sherwood family. After marriage in Anson County, N. C., from a letter dated July 25, 1827, and one of date Aug. 12, 1831, we find this family located in Green County, Alabama. Later they moved to and located at Shannon Miss. Elizabeth (Betsy) Townsend died prior to the Civil War. David Townsend was born 1806, died 1870. During the war our father visited David Townsend. His son Sherwood Townsend at that time was the owner of a store at Iuka, Miss. There our father saw David Townsend.

Miss Pauline Townsend of the Ward-Belmont School, Nashville, Tenn., writes us as follows:

"My grandfather on my father's line was David Hampton Townsend. My grandmother was Elizabeth (Betsy) Williams (Townsend). My father is the only one of his family whom I remember though I think he had a sister called Anne—I do remember her. I know he had a young and reputed beautiful sister Ula, married a Mr. Weaver of Mobile, Alabama. There were two children, (perhaps more) Reaben Weaver and Phillip Weaver, both dead. The sister of my father died young and Mr. Weaver married again. These boys were reared in Mobile.

My father was Sherwood Williams Townsend and died at the age of 83. He was a handsome man till the last, with beautiful brown eyes and straight nose and a wonderfully melodious voice. As a boy he was sent on horseback with a "lady servant" to a university in Tennessee, Cumberland University I think. He had a fine mind, was a gentleman in bearing and deeds, tho never tremendously successful in business. He served four years in the Civil war, was in Forrest brigade (I think) but I do know he was on the Southern side and fought bravely. He loved Forrest so, I suspect perhaps that is why I thought he was in his brigade. He was always called Col. Townsend and attended the reunion of Southern Veterans until too old to go. Perhaps Southern fashion, this title was given to him. I do not know positively.

He married Mary Louise Thoms Houghton, daughter of Richard Houghton and Mary (Houghton) Houghton, far off cousins. They had four children: Francis Hampton Houghton Townsend, now of Meridian, Miss.;

Lucy Williams Townsend, died in infancy; Phillip Richard Townsend, died in infancy. They both died perhaps during the war. I only know of them because when I was ten years old, I found my mother weeping one day over two little bundles. Childlike I asked the cause and she said: "Here are some baby shoes Phil and Lucy wore. I made them from an old vest as cloth was not to be had during the war. They were your little sister and brother, dead long years and in God's home." I have never forgotten my mother's beautiful face as she said that. I knew then she was closer to them in spirit than to me in flesh.

I am Pauline Sherwood Townsend. I came out of the reconstruction period following the Civil War. Both my mother and father were great and incessant readers. One day when I was eleven he came home from the State Capitol (Jackson) with a bundle for me. My mind flew to dolls or sweets or some beautiful thing. They were books. They were Ossian, Myths of Many Lands, Tennyson and Browning, Dante, The Oddyssys and Iliad, and a Dictionary. I have them still and many the hours I have lain before the fire while he read aloud to me and I sank into sleep. I was sent to Boston to school at an early age, because the hot climate was injuring my health. My school days were spent there after high school.

My brother married Ina Richards (grandparents a French Huguenot family) Their children are:

- (A) Eugenia Frances, married, one child.
- (B) Henry Sherwood, married, two children
- (C) Francis Richard, died at 15 years.
- (D) Ina, married.
- (E) Mary, married.
- (F) Alfred Houghton, served in Navy 1916-19.
- (G) Charles, Medical student in University of Miss."

Miss Pauline Sherwood Townsend, who wrote the above letter, is a strikingly handsome lady, of noble bearing, charming demeanor, prominent high frontal, indicative of intellectuality, rather large, of commanding appearance. She is the author of several children books and plays. She has been a student of vocal physiology, singing and voice production both in America and Europe. She became a student of dramatic literature in Boston and is a teacher in Ward-Belmont School at Nashville, Tenn. She is on the faculty of the Boston School of Expression as instructor in Pageantry. She is the author



of several pageants, having studied from a noted English pageanteer.

Frank Hampton Townsend, brother of Pauline Townsend is in the insurance business at Meridian, Miss. He was born Oct. 4, 1859, has three sons and three daughters. One son is in the insurance business at Cincinnati, Ohio.

The father of David Townsend who married Elizabeth (Betsy) Williams, was John C. Townsend, killed in the Revolutionary war. David Townsend and Elizabeth (Williams) Townsend also had a daughter, Ann. A. Townsend, dead, Benjamin Hampton Townsend, dead, and Solomon G. Townsend, dead.

## 153

-151-C-Nancy Williams born after 1808, married Isaac Williams, said to be a brother of John B. Williams, and in 1838 moved to Henderson County, Tenn., died there and are both buried in the John B. Williams graveyard, near Center Ridge Church about seven miles northwest of Lexington, Tenn. Their children were:

(A) Richard Williams, married Harriett Gooch, and after her death, married Miss Tyler-154.

(B) Milton Williams, married Miss Reed. -156-

(C) Morning Williams, married Cain Wilson, both dead.-157-

(D) Ellen Williams, married John Rhodes, both dead.-158-

(E) Elizabeth (Betsy) Williams, married Anders Rhodes, both dead.-159-

## 154

-153-A-Children of Richard Williams and Harriet Gooch: (1) Isaac Williams, died single; (2) John Williams, died single; (3) Jerome Williams, married a Miss Holmes and went to Texas.

(A) Millie Williams, married Lewis Douglass-155-

(B) Mattie Williams, married.

Children of Richard Williams, deceased, by Miss Tyler live with their mother around Juno, Henderson County, Tenn.

## 155

-154-A-MILLIE WILLIAMS-LEWIS  
DOUGLASS TABLE

Residence R. R. 1, Juno, Henderson County, Tenn.

Children:

(A) Robert Douglass, born about 1875, Juno, Tenn., farmer, married Ida Patton, they have one daughter Laberta born about 1903, married James Pearce.

(B) Ollie Douglass, born about 1880, single, Carpenter, Miss.

(C) Connie Douglass, born about 1889, single, farmer, Juno, Tenn.

(D) Minnie Douglass, born about 1896, married Andrew Patton, farmer, Juno, Tenn., one child, Leroy Patton, born 1919.

(E) Beulah Douglass, married Millard Holmes, farmer, Juno, Tenn.

## 156

-153-B-Milton Williams, married Miss Reed and they moved to Texas about 1895. They are said to have had children as follows: Lee Williams, born about 1876; William Williams, born about 1878; Birdie Williams, born about 1880.

## 157

-153-C-MORNING WILLIAMS-CAIN  
WILSON TABLE

Children:

(A) Ellen Wilson, born about 1875, married Robert Wilson, farmer, R. R. 1, Lexington, Tenn. Their daughter Hester married Hersy Davis, farmer, Juno, Tenn. and they have children: Wilson, Herbert, and Mary Davis.

(B) Thomas Wilson, born about 1885, went west.

(C) Edward Wilson, born about 1888, single, farmer, R. R. 1, Lexington, Tenn.

(D) Ollie Wilson, born about 1893, married Montie Hart, grocery, Lexington, Tenn.

(E) Vera Wilson, born about 1895, married Mr. Cook, farmer, R. R. 2, Juno, Tenn. Two children.

(F) Vernon Wilson, born about 1897, married a Cook. Juno, Tenn.

(G) Cora Wilson, born about 1903, school teacher, Lexington, Tenn.

(H) Frank Wilson, born about 1901, single, Lexington, Tenn.

(I) Robert Wilson, born about 1905, R. R. 1, Lexington, Tenn.

(J) Lucielle Wilson, born about 1909, Lexington, Tenn.

(K) Frances Wilson, born about 1887, married Luke Johnson, R. R. 5, Lexington, Tenn., farmer. Children: Virgel Johnson, born about , farmer, R. R. 5, Lexington, Tenn., married Ruby, daughter of Isaac Fessmire. Issue: Beulah Johnson, and a son; Roy Johnson, born about 1895, R. R. 5, Lexington, Tenn. Farmer, married Della Johnson, one child.

## 158

-153-D-ELLEN WILLIAMS-JOHN  
RHODES TABLE

Children:

(A) Sid Rhodes, born about 1875, restaurateur, Lexington, Tenn., married Nellie, daughter of William Jackson, one daughter.

(B) Dudley Rhodes, born about 1877, married, Milan or Jackson, Tenn.

(C) Arthur Rhodes, dead, no issue.

(D) Lizzie Rhodes, born about 1881, married Elder Dallas Hamilton, of Primitive Baptist Church, R. R. Lexington, Tenn. Children: Mary Hamilton, born about 1903, school teacher; Vera Hamilton, born about 1905; Myrtle Hamilton, dead, one son, girl baby.

(E) Vesta Rhodes, born about 1883, farmer, R. R. 2, Lexington, Tenn., married Ludy Burket, issue: Ruby, Addie Sue and two smaller children.

(F) Edward Rhodes, born about 1888, farmer and Elder of Primitive Baptist Church R. R. 2, Lexington, Tenn., married Ethel Phillips, married at age of 16, issue: Frances Rhodes, Ardie Rhodes, John Arnold Rhodes, and four smaller children.

(G) John Parker Rhodes, lives in Texas.

(H) Thomas Rhodes, lives in Texas.

(I) Amanda Rhodes, born about 1856, married Ben Phillips. Both dead. Children: Everett Phillips, born about 1870, farmer, Lexington, Tenn., married Ivey Welch, one child; Bertha Phillips, born about 1872, married Mr. Hawthorne, moved to Blythville, Arkansas.

(J) Morning Rhodes, born about 1858, Milan, Tenn., married Frank Fessmire, dead. Children: Maggie Fessmire, born about 1888, Nettie Fessmire, born about 1890. A son died.

### 159

#### -153-E-ELIZABETH (BETSY) WILLIAMS -ANDERS RHODES TABLE

Both buried at Rhodes Graveyard seven miles northwest of Lexington, Tenn. Children: (A) Richard Rhodes, born about 1848, married Mary, daughter of Thomas Fessmire, both dead.-163-

(B) Albert Rhodes, born about 1853, married Lou Fessmire, both dead.-162-

(C) Wylie Rhodes, born about 1857, married Sarah Douglass.-161-

(D) Bud Rhodes, born about 1877, married Sarah Burkett.-160-

### 160

-159-D-Bud Rhodes, married Sarah Burkett, Carpenter, Lexington, Tenn. Children: Ethel Rhodes, born about 1901; Ruth Rhodes, born about 1903; Freeman Rhodes, born about 1905.

### 161

-159-C-Wylie Rhodes, farmer, Lexington, Tenn., married Sarah Douglass. Children: Edgar Rhodes, born about 1900, R. R. 5.,

married Eula Fessmire, one child, Edna Rhodes, born 1918. First wife died and Wylie Rhodes then married Ludy Ringo and they have four children, Ethel being oldest.

### 162

#### -159-B-ALBERT RHODES-LOU FESS- MIRE TABLE

Both buried at Antioch Church, Henderson County, Tenn. Children:

(A) James Rhodes, who died without issue.

After the death of first wife, Albert Rhodes married Bettie Fessmire, cousin of first wife. She lives on R. R. 5, Lexington, Tenn. Born to them:

(B) Felix Rhodes, born about 1890, farmer, R. R. 5, Lexington, Tenn., married Ada, daughter of James Welch. Two children living, one dead.

(C) Hattie Rhodes, born about 1892, married Levi Hamilton, farmer, R. R. 5, Lexington, Tenn. Several Children.

(D) Lessie Rhodes, born about 1894, married Calvin Hunter, Jackson, Tenn., saw mill. Children: Willie May Hunter, Joe Hunter.

### 163

#### -159-A-RICHARD RHODES-MARY FESSMIRE TABLE

Both buried in Henderson County, Tenn. Children:

(A) Harriett Rhodes, born about 1873, married Walter Ingram, residence Rosa, Ark.-168-

(B) Dollie Rhodes, now dead, married Charles Miland now in Texas. Issue: Bernice Miland, about 1900.

(C) Frank Rhodes, born about 1876, married Lizzie Fuller.-167-

(D) William Rhodes, born about 1878, farmer, cotton gin, Wildersville, Tenn., married Pearl Meals. Issue: Josie Lee Rhodes about 1918.

(E) Cecilia Rhodes, born about 1880, Wildersville, Tenn., single.

(F) Robert Rhodes, born about 1882, dead. No issue.

(G) Addie Rhodes, born about 1884, dead, married Peter Phillip. One child died when small.

(H) Luther Rhodes, born about 1886, married Ruby Scott.-166-

(I) Birb Rhodes, born about 1888, now dead, married Sarah Lewis.-165-

(J) Everett Rhodes, born about 1891, married Nina Lee.-164-

### 164

-163-J-Everett Rhodes, farmer, Lexington, Tenn., married Nina Lee. One child, Catherine, born April, 1918.



## 165

-163-I-Birb Rhodes, now dead, married Sarah Lewis, Lexington, Tenn. Children: Everett Rhodes, born about 1911; Mageline Rhodes, born about 1913; Virginia Lee Rhodes, born about 1915; Eva Rhodes, born about 1917; Birb Rhodes, born 1920.

## 166

-163-H-Luther Rhodes, Farmer, Lexington, Tenn., married Ruby Scott. Children: Paul R. Rhodes, about 1911; Excie Rhodes, about 1914.

## 167

-163-C-Frank Rhodes, farmer, Wildersville, Tenn., married Lizzie Fuller. Children: Andres Rhodes, about 1903; Lether Rhodes, about 1905; Mary Rhodes, about 1907; Boyd Rhodes, about 1909; Verna Rhodes, about 1912; Elbert Rhodes, about 1914.

## 168

-163-A-Harriett Rhodes, married Walter Ingram, moved to Rosa, Arkansas. Children: (A) Jesse Ingram, born about 1897, dead, married Alfred Ledbetter. Issue: Hern Ledbetter, about 1912.

(B) Samuel Ingram, about 1899, Rosa, Arkansas.

(C) Ivery Ingram, about 1903, married George Isbell.

## 169 (See 952)

-151-D-Hampton Williams, born in Anson County, N. C. moved to Henderson County, Tenn. 1838, died about 1873, buried in the John B. Williams Graveyard, about seven miles northwest of Lexington, near Center Ridge Church. First married daughter of John B. Williams, and after her death married Mary Johnson. He was a farmer and witch doctor. His children were:

(A) Benjamin Williams, known as "Frisky Ben", dead, married Parallee Meals, now near Milan, Tenn. Three girls, all married. Elizabeth, now dead, Eliza, now dead, married James Barber, dead, leaving Mollie Barber two years old. (170) She was raised by E. C. Hooks, Lexington, Tenn. She married William Ross and she died July 20, 1920-170.

We think perhaps that Eliza Williams above was sister of "Frisky Ben" and daughter of Hampton Williams.

(B) Stump Williams, died about 1896 at Spring Creek, Madison County, Tenn. leaving wife and child.

(C) Richard T. Williams, moved to Madison County, or to Gibson County, Tenn.

(D) Charles Williams, lives about two and

one half miles from Juno, Tenn., farmer, married Rhoda, daughter of James Douglass. Two girls at home, and Atlas married Lee Sellars.

(E) Washington Williams, born about 1855, residence, Betty, Upsor County, Texas.

(F) A daughter married Ben Hall. They went to Texas. She is thought to be dead and have had no issue.

## 170

-169-A-Mollie Barber, daughter of Eliza Williams and James Barber her husband, left an orphan at the age of two, was reared by E. C. Hooks of Lexington, Tenn. She was born June 29, 1872, died July 20, 1920. She married William Ross who is the owner of a meat market in Lexington, Tenn. Children:

(A) Ethel Ross, born 1908, died 1914.

(B) Hautel Ross, born 1902, married James Lacy, railroad engineer, Lexington, Tenn.

(C) William Curtis Ross, born August 1900.

(D) Eva Ross, born July, 1903.

(E) Vera Ross, born 1912.

(F) Callors Ross, born 1906.

Charles Williams, brother of Eliza (Williams) Barber lives near Milan, Tenn. Mrs. Moring Butler Fly, a sister lives near Milan.

## 171 (See 953)

## -151-E-JOHN DUDLEY WILLIAMS-CAROLINA LILES TABLE

Both lived and were buried in Anson County, N. C. near Lilesville. John Dudley Williams died Aug. 9, 1890 and Caroline (Liles) Williams died March 31, 1909, aged 86. Children:

(A) Mary Elizabeth Williams, Oct. 5, 1843, married Robert Dabbs-172-

(B) James A. Williams, about 1845, Confederate soldier, and died during the war. No issue.

(C) Narcissa Williams, June 14, 1840, married Peter Franklin Morton-173-

(D) Roxie Williams, 1852, died Nov. 11, 1887, married James Tyson-174-(See 953).

(E) William Ellis Williams, 1854, died April 11, 1904, married Eugenia Henry-175-(See 953)

(F) Benjamin Albert Williams, died single.

## 172

-171-A-Mary Elizabeth Williams, Lilesville, N. C., married Robert Dabbs, Confederate soldier, died during the war. One child: John August Dabbs, general merchandise, Lilesville, N. C., born Aug. 8, 1861, married Ann Eliza Clark. Children:

(A) Ruth Dabbs, Oct. 24, 1899, teacher, Durham, N. C.

(B) Henry Lawrence Dabbs, April 26, 1901, at college, Chappel Hill, N. C.

(C) Mary Dabbs, Jan. 19, 1903, in school.

(D) Fannie Dabbs, Jan. 29, 1906.

(E) Sarah Dabbs, June 30, 1904.

(F) Mabel Dabbs, Nov. 19, 1910.

(G) Frank Dabbs, Jan. 31, 1908.

### 173

-171-C-Narcissa Williams, married Oct. 1865, Peter Franklin Morton born May 15, 1839. Lilesville, N. C. Children:

(A) Lucy Frances Morton, June 24, 1870, married Charles Frederick, clerk, Lilesville, N. C. Seven children: Jeanette Frederick, school teacher, 1896; Carl Frederick, 1901; Elizabeth Frederick, 1903; John Frederick, 1905; William Frederick, Virginia Frederick, 1909; Lucille Frederick, 1913.

(B) James Alexander Morton, Sept. 4, 1872, married Patty Liles. Children: Franklin Liles Morton, 1899, foreman, Raleigh, N. C. He was in the World War in France on the battle line. Enlisted before he arrived at age he could be made to go. Lucy Covington Morton, 1903, high school; Eugene Lynn Morton, 1908; Patty Lemier Morton, 1914; Jack Pershing Morton, 1919;

(C) John Dudley Morton, January 1, 1877, married Hattie Rogers, clerical, Lilesville, N. C.

### 174 (See 953)

-171-D-Roxy Williams, deceased, married James Tyson who now lives at Cumknock, N. C. Children:

(A) Joseph Lile Tyson, dead, married Julia Tyson, Cumknock, N. C. Four children:

(B) Franklin Harvey Tyson, Lilesville, N. C. Invalid, married Mary Mills. Farmer. Children: Eugene, Thomas, Mabel, and Frankie Tyson.

### 175 (See 953)

-171-E-Born to William Ellis Williams and Eugenia Henry, his wife:

(A) John Williams, trader, Lilesville, N. C. married Sally Seago. Five children: Rachel, Eunice, William, Dorsey, John Dudley, and Evylyn Williams.

(B) Robert Williams, machinist, Baltimore, Maryland.

(C) Roger Lee Williams, merchant, La-Grance, N. C., married Miss Joiner, two children.

### 176 (See 953)

-151-F-WILLIAM TYRE WILLIAMS-FANNIE (BENNETT) COX TABLE

William Tyre Williams, died about 1875, married Fannie, daughter of Nevil Bennett

and Catherine (Harris) Bennett, and wife of Benjamin Cox, deceased at time of marriage to Williams. Both lived, died and were buried near Lilesville, N. C. Children: (See also 118)

(A) Louis David Williams, born about 1848, dead, married Sallie Simmons. No issue

(B) John Dun Williams, about 1851, died in Texas, married Laura Crump, Trinity, Texas. Six children: John, Thomas. A daughter married a Poindexter, East Bend, N. C.

(C) Benjamin Franklin Williams, born about 1855, died single.

(D) Lemuel Marshall Williams, May 27, 1849, farmer, single, Lilesville, N. C.

(E) Elizabeth Vianna (Elvira) Williams, born about 1859, single, Lilesville, N. C.

(F) William Tyre Williams, born about 1857, married Alice Cox. Resides in Charlotte, N. C., merchant. Children: William Tyre Williams Jr., born about 1911; John Skelton Williams, born about 1913.

(G) James Tyler Williams, Sept. 6, 1863, farmer, Wadesboro, N. C., married Hattie Bennett, born Oct. 8, 1877. Children:

Bennett Williams, Oct. 25, 1898, clerical; Harriett Louise Williams, Nov. 21, 1900.

(H) Rosa Ellen Williams married Mial Wall, now dead. Children: Nancy Fairly Wall, about 1893, teacher; Fannie Bennett Wall, married Oren Hunter, cotton grader, Ft. Worth, Texas; John Alexander Wall, farmer, single; William Tyre Wall, clerk, Wadesboro, N. C.; Steve Wall; Mial Wall.

### 177

-108-I-DUDLEY WILLIAMS - NANCY HARRIS TABLE (SEE 1071)

Dudley Williams No. 1 married Nancy, daughter of Sherwood and Elizabeth Harris. About 1800 he came from Wake County, settled at Lilesville, N. C., died and will was probated 1815. Apparently Elizabeth and Solomon were the only children then of age. His wife then lived. Children were:

(A) Solomon Williams, executor. He married a Miss Tendell, went to Henderson County, Tenn. His wife died and then he married a Miss Kirby and lived near Parker's Crossing. A son, Dr. Dudley Williams survived him. There were likely other children.

(B) Dudley L. Williams, married a Miss Boston of Richland County, N. C. and went to Henderson County, Tenn. about 1845, it is thought.

(C) Elizabeth Williams, married Elijah Flake, went to Red Mound, Tenn. and there died. See Flake Table-311-

(D) Susanna Williams, married William Pearson and went to Henderson County, Tenn

(E) Hannah Williams.

(F) Martha Williams.

(G) Elisa Williams.

Two of the last three girls are thought to have married and moved to Henderson County, Tenn. One is thought to have married a Mr. Lovsey and one to have married Charles Pritchard, Elder of the Primitive Baptist Church.

(H) Benjamin Tyre Williams, born about 1797, married Nancy Baily-178-

### 178

-177-H-Benjamin Tyre Williams and wife Nancy Baily lived and died in Anson County, N. C. Children:

(A) Dudley Williams, died when small.

(B) Mary Williams, married Solomon Jones, lived at Lilesville, N.C. Both dead-179-

(C) Benjamin Lafayette (Fayette) Williams, Sept. 10, 1837, married Helen Henry, now dead-180-

### 179

178-B-Born to Mary Williams and Solomon Jones:

(A) Thomas Ruffin Jones, lived at Lilesville, N. C., died about 1915, married Becky Harris.

(B) Susan Jones, Lilesville, N. C., married John Rakes, dead.

(C) Kirby Jones, married Emiline Harris, Lilesville, N. C.

(D) Viney Jones, single, Lilesville, N. C.

(E) Dudley Jones, single, Lilesville, N. C.

(F) "Puss" Jones, married Robert Ballard, Lilesville, N. C.

### 180

-178-C-Benjamin LaFayette Williams, farmer, Wadesboro, N. C., married Helen Henry, deceased. Children:

(A) Benjamin Samuel Williams, born about 1870, married Becky Dry-181-

(B) Solomon Williams, born about 1871, farmer, Morgan, N. C., married Dora Short. One son: Lee Wilson Williams.

(C) William Tyre Williams, born about 1875, died a year later.

(D) Pally Williams, born about 1876, died when small.

(E) Parthenia Williams, died when small.

(F) John Dudley Williams, born about 1877, farmer, Wadesboro, N. C., married Mary Shaver. Children: Fannie Bell, Sept. 1915; Maynard Lafayette Williams, June 10, 1919.

(H) Martha Williams, born about 1881, married Elmore Gilmore. No issue.

(I) George Leonis Williams, born about 1883, married Polly Jones. He is a farmer, Lilesville, N. C. Children: Wortham Williams, Prentis Williams.

### 181

-180-A-Benjamin Samuel Williams, farmer, Wadesboro, N. C., married Becky Dry. Children:

(A) Walter Leake Williams, railroad carpenter, Darlington, N. C., married Annie Gardner. One child: Walter Leake Williams Jr.

(B) Gertrude Williams, born about 1906.

(C) Haney Williams, born about 1909.

(D) Kermit Williams, born about 1917.

### 300

#### THE FLAKE FAMILY

The Flake family is said to have been of Scotch-Irish descent. Samuel Flake and Henry Flake, two brothers, landed at New York. There Henry Flake settled, later visited his brother Samuel Flake in the Carolina and returned to New York. There are thought to be many people in the east who can claim him as an ancestor. Samuel Flake landed at Charleston, S. C., about 1720 and later located at Lilesville, Anson County, N. C., and there died in 1802, then being over one hundred years old. The first tract of land that he purchased so far as the deed records show in Anson County, was Nov. 4, 1763, then Nov. 24, 1767, and several tracts later. He was married twice and the name of his first wife is not known. His second wife was, in the will, called Alcy and her name is said to have been Sallie (Alcy) Harris. The records disclose that one James Harris obtained a deed to land in Anson County Dec. 4, 1874, Samuel Harris on June 24, 1762 and Charles Harris Oct. 19, 1758. From the will of Charles W. Harris, probated Dec. 19, 1803, we are left to think he was quite a gentleman of taste and education as in his will he left to his brother Robert Harris and sister Jenney Harris what was evidently the furnishings of an elegant and richly adorned home. It is possible that the wife of Samuel Flake was related to their people. We know nothing of any of the descendants of these Harris families.

### 301

The will of Samuel Flake now in the office of Recorder of Anson County, N. C., made May 5, 1802, discloses that he had nine children then living. It is known that Mary Flake, his daughter who married John Smith

No. 2 had died before then and it is thought that he had a son John Flake who had perhaps died single.

His children were as follows:

(A) Mary Flake, born about 1748, died about 1794, married John Smith No. 2. She was a daughter by the first wife.-503-The Smith Table.

(B) John Flake. See sketch of Samuel Flake. It is thought that he was a son of Samuel Flake and died without issue.

(C) Jordan Flake, born May 15, 1764, first married Mary Penelope Williams.-320-After her death he married Faithy Elizabeth Hanna.-342-

(D) Samuel Flake Jr., born about 1766, married Elizabeth (Betsy) Gilbert.-302-

(E) William Flake, who went to Warren County, Georgia.-303-

(F) Elizabeth Flake, married Steven Birmingham and left Anson County, going West or South. They are said to have had children by the names of Hardy, Mary, Roxy, Ann and Jemina Birmingham.

(G) Delilah Flake, married Hardy Hooker.-310-

(H) Sarah Flake, married Joshua Talent, so it is thought, as on Nov. 17, 1798 Joshua Talent and his wife Sarah Talent deeded to Hardy Hooker, husband of Delilah Flake, 120 acres, part of a 250 acre tract deeded to Samuel Flake by letter patent Nov. 2, 1771. As the wife in those days did not have to join in a deed save when the land was hers, this might indicate that Samuel Flake had deeded her the land, and it is thought this was his daughter.

(I) Elijah Flake, married Elizabeth Williams.-311-

(J) Thomas Flake, was a Patriot in the Revolutionary war as will be seen by reference to the Exhibit in sketch of Samuel Flake. In 1804 he sold his land in Anson County and went West, and had sons: William Green, born 1810; Augustus, born 1812; Warren, born 1820.

(K) Jemina Flake, married William Cook.-309-A-

### 302

-301-D-Samuel Flake Jr., born about 1766, married Elizabeth (Bessie) Gilbert and went to Miss. Children:

(A) Kinchen Flake.

(B) Lucy Ann Flake.

(C) Silas Flake, married Sallie Byrd.

(D) Polly Flake.

(E) Chapman Flake.

(G) John (Jack) Flake.

(F) Peter Reeves Flake, born 1813, married

Elizabeth Whitehead. They lived at Haggardville, Miss.-302 A-

### 302 A

-302-G-Born to Peter Reeves Flake and Elizabeth Whitehead, his wife:

(A) Martha Flake, born Nov. 10, 1837, died January, 1898, married Jesse Sullivan and they lived at Haggardville, Miss. Children: Bettie, James, Robert, Joseph, William and Minnie Sullivan. Bettie married John Chappel; James married Mattie Chappel; Robert married Emma Hall; Joe married Ella Hurt; William married Emma Hurt; Minnie married Marcus Pace.

(B) James B. Flake, born April 21, 1839, was a confederate soldier and was killed in the war.

(C) Nancy Flake, born July 6, 1840, married Mr. Sullivan; one son: Jesse Sullivan.

(D) William Peter Flake, born July 7, 1844, married Elizabeth Ashmore who died 1882. They lived at Haggardville, Miss.-302 B-

### 302 B

-302A-D-Born to William Peter Flake and Elizabeth Ashmore, his wife:

(A) Minnie Flake, born Feb. 17, 1872, married Frank Crowell.

(B) James Flake, born January 2, 1874, married Anna Sullivan.

(C) William Jesse Flake, born March 7, 1876, married Sallie Hurt.

(D) Emma Flake, born March 22, 1878, married Minnie Haggard.

(E) Elizabeth (Bettie) Flake, born March 6, 1883, lives at Haggardville, Miss.

(F) Nancy E. Flake, born 1871, died 1872.

### 303

-301-E-William Flake was born in Anson County, N. C. There is a tradition in his family that he was a Patriot and as such was a soldier in the Revolutionary War, that there was a record of this services and the records were destroyed when other records of North Carolina were destroyed by Gen. Ross, the British Commander, in the war of 1812. We do not know whom he married nor just when he left Anson County, N. C., but the records show that on January 17, 1799 he was then living in Warren County, Georgia, and sold lands then located in Anson County, N. C. to his brother-in-law, Hardy Hooker, and on Nov. 14, 1807 sold another tract to his brother Elija Flake. His children were:

(A) Thomas Flake, born 1780, married Sarah Edmonson.-304-

(B) John Flake, born 1804, died in Miss.

(C) Seaborn Flake, born 1800, died in Montgomery, Ala. 1863.

(D) William Flake, Jr., born 1798, married Miss Chapell-305-

### 304

-303-A-Thomas Flake, born 1780, died in Green County, Georgia. He married Sarah the daughter of William Edmonson who served as a soldier in the Revolutionary War, from Va. They lived in Green County, Georgia where he died in 1824 of fever contracted while fighting in a war against the Indians. Their children are:

(A) William Green Flake, born in 1810, died 1888, married Adeline Maddox.-305 A

(B) Augustus Flake, born 1816, died 1885, lived in Gadsden County, Florida.

(C) Warren Flake, born 1820, died 1840.

(D) Martha Flake, born 1808, married a Mr. Lewis and lived in Florida.

(E) Louisa Flake, born in 1822, married a Mr. Morgan and lived in Florida.

(F) Caroline Flake, born in 1824, lived in Florida.

### 305

-303-D-Dr. William Flake Jr., born 1798, was a physician of great skill, a scientific practitioner. He wrote and contributed to the Medical Journals published in his day. He married a Miss Chapell and they lived at Eufaula, Alabama, where he died in 1853. Born to them:

(A) Dr. Benjamin Flake, married Ret. Apling. He was a valued surgeon in the Confederate army. He and his wife owned a large plantation and hundreds of slaves. They had faith in the Confederacy and disposed of their property for Confederate money and at the end of the war lost all. He died in 1865, leaving his young wife in destitute financial circumstances due to these causes.

(B) Sarah Flake, married a Mr. Apling.

(C) Florida Flake, married a Mr. Cureton.

(D) Virginia Flake, married and moved to Texas.

(E) Dr. William Flake, lives in Mariana, Florida.

### 305 A

-304-A-William Green Flake was born in 1810 in Green County, Georgia and there married Adeline Maddux, daughter of William Maddux of Eatonton, Georgia. They moved to Russell County, Ala. He was a planter by occupation and a slave owner. He was a man of good judgment, cultured, and served his country in trusted positions. He was Judge of the Probate Court for many

years. He was also School Commissioner and served as County Trustee. He accumulated considerable of wealth. He very bitterly opposed secession but when the South became for the time a separate nation, he freely gave his time and his fortune to his people. He freely gave his money, purchased clothing and provisions and gave to the soldiers. He sent his slaves to the salt mines and two of his sons went to battle for the Confederate cause. When the war ended he accepted defeat with composure and resignation and bore the cruel changes with little complaint. Tendered a lucrative position by the victors, he spurned the offer, preferring to live and suffer with his people. They were the parents of the following children:

(A) Thomas J. Flake, born 1838, died 1921, married Laura Hulsey-309

(B) William Warren Flake, born 1845, died in Childress, Texas, Feb. 4, 1919, married Anna Keen.-308-

(C) Martha Louisa Flake, born Dec. 22, 1851, married John C. Farley.-307-

(D) Eugene A. Flake, born 1848, died 1907, married Alia Hulsey.

(E) Arabelle Alabama Flake, born May 28, 1850, died Feb. 2, 1879, married J. J. Smith. He is dead. Fannie Belle Smith, a daughter, married W. T. Davis and they live in Topeka, Kansas.

(F) Green Flake, born 1855, married Emma Pickell.-306-

(G) Sarah C. Flake, born 1837, married Mack Ferguson and they had two children:

(A) Ada Belle Ferguson, married Perry Lard. Issue: Arthur Lard, John P. Lard, and Green Flake Lard.

(B) Katie Ferguson, another daughter, married Mr. Fuller. Both dead. She died in 1818.

### 306

-305A-F-Green Flake, real estate, Pilot Point, Texas, married Emma Pickell, born March 1853, died Oct. 11, 1911. Children:

(A) W. G. Flake, born Dec. 20, 1880, died January 25, 1882.

(B) Snowflake Flake, born March 27, 1884, married Ray A. Chance, who is a miller at Pilot Point, Texas.

(C) T. J. Flake, born Oct. 8, 1885, Clayborn, Texas, married Jes McCammon. One child: Emma Louise Flake, born Nov. 20, 1915.

### 307

-305 A-C-Born to Martha Louise Flake and John C. Farley, her husband:

(A) John C. Farley Jr., born Sept. 19, 1877, Opelika, Alabama. He graduated from Ala-



bama Polytechnic Institute in Electric Engineering in 1896. He deals in cotton and manufactures hosiery. He is a 32nd degree Mason and a Shriner. June 11, 1902 he married Martha Antionette Banks. One child: John Culbert Farley III, born April 27, 1909.

(B) Frank Farley, born July 6, 1879, Opelika, Alabama, graduated from the Alabama Polytechnic Institute in 1898. He is President and Manager of Opelika Heading Mill Co. and a wholesale groceryman. March 1, 1905 he married Lillie Engram, one child: Louise Farley, born May 18, 1909.

(C) Flake Earle Farley, born Sept. 18, 1880, Opelika, Ala., graduated from Alabama Polytechnic Institute with first honors in 1899. Is Secretary of Opelika Heading Company. Is a member of the A. T. O. and Masonic fraternities. April 9, 1908, he married Wellie Melton. Children: Flake Earle Farley Jr., Feb. 3, 1914; William C. Farley, July 4, 1918.

(D) James Douglas Farley, Atlanta, Ga., born Nov. 27, 1883, is an Electrical and Mechanical Engineer, having graduated from Alabama Polytechnic Institute in 1902. He is a 32nd degree Mason and a Shriner.

(E) Walter Scott Farley, Opelika, Ala., was born Feb. 23, 1888, graduated from Alabama Polytechnic Institute in 1907 in the Electrical course. He enlisted in the World War July 4, 1918, was commissioned Ensign U. S. Aviation January 2, 1919 and was made Instructor in Naval Aviation at the Great Lakes Training Station. June 12, 1912 he married Bethany Hicks, and he is connected with Farmer's National Bank, is Vice-President of Opelika Heading Mill Co. and Secretary and Treasurer of Lee County National Farm Land Association, at Opelika, Ala. He is a member of the Phi Delta Theta Fraternity, a 32nd degree Mason and a Shriner.

### 308

-305 A-B William Warren Flake, born 1845, died Feb. 4, 1919, lived at Childress, Texas, was a cotton weigher. He married Anna Keen, born Oct. 4, 1848, she lives at Childress, Texas. Children:

(A) William Green Flake, married Jennie Gies. He died in Childress, Texas and she lives in Dallas, Texas. Their children are:

(A) Hazel Flake, born March 11, 1893, married A. B. Monroe. To this union was born Hazel Louise Monroe Dec. 10, 1912. Mr. Monroe is dead. Hazel Flake Monroe is cotton weigher at Childress, Texas.

(B) Fannie Belle Flake, born Oct. 4, 1895, Dallas, Texas.

(C) Gladys Flake, born Sept. 12, 1902, Dallas, Texas.

(D) William Frederick Flake, born March 3, 1904, Dallas, Texas.

### 309

-305 A-A Thomas J. Flake, born 1838, Capitalist, Atlanta Georgia, died 1921. He married Laura Hulsey. Children:

(A) Walter G. Flake, born 1879, married Elizabeth Ausley and they live at Scottdale, Georgia.

(B) Augustus H. Flake, born 1872, married Minnie Mathews and they live at Scottdale, Georgia.

(C) Campbell Wallace Flake, born 1877.

### 309 A

#### -301-K-JEMINA FLAKE-WILLIAM COOK TABLE

Jemina Flake married William Cook and went to Kershaw District, S. C. and the records of Anson County, N. C. disclose that they lived in Kershaw District, S. C. Oct. 20, 1804 and sold 31 acres in Anson County, N. C. to Jordan Flake for \$30.00. Deed is witnessed by Samuel Flake, Elijah Flake and Robert Dunlap.

### 310

#### -301-C-DELILAH FLAKE-HARDY HOOKER TABLE

Delilah Flake was born, lived and died in Anson County, N. C. She married Hardy Hooker who was a man of considerable prominence, acquired a large landed estate and lived between what is now known as the Old Benjamin Ingram farm, called the Mountain, and the Pee Dee River. His will was probated in the Anson County Court under date of January 19, 1839. The children were:

(A) Hannah Hooker.

(B) Mary Hooker.

(C) Benjamin Hooker, married a Miss Wall.

(D) James Hooker, married the wife of his brother, Benjamin Hooker, after the death of Benjamin Hooker.

(E) Samuel Hooker.

(F) William Hooker, married Harriett Liles, daughter of Eli Liles.

(G) Sarah Hooker, married Abraham Bell-yew.

(H) Jane Hooker, married Job Curtis.

(I) Jemina Hooker, married William Butler.

### 311

#### -301-I-ELIJAH FLAKE-ELIZABETH WILLIAMS TABLE-177-C

Elijah Flake was born in Anson County, N. C. 1788 and died in Henderson County,

Tenn. prior to January 16, 1854. In Anson County he married Elizabeth Williams, born 1788 died June 7, 1861, daughter of Dudley Williams and Nancy Harris and grand-daughter of William and Catherine Williams-177-C. In 1818 with David Williams, John Harris who married Mary Williams, and John King who married Milley Williams, he emigrated to Henderson County, Tenn. A year later these other parties went to Alabama but Elijah Flake settled at Red Mound, Henderson County, Tenn. Deed records of Henderson County disclose that in 1818 he paid \$600.00 to one Henry Williams for a tract of land. This Henry Williams may have been a son of David Williams, we know not. Henderson County was Indian country until 1818 when the Jackson Purchase was made in a treaty by General Jackson and the Indians. The will book and some other records in Henderson County were destroyed when the court house was burned but deed book 1 preserved shows on page 398 that January 16, 1854, for \$1200.00, James S. Flake deeded to his mother Elizabeth Flake, 172 2-3 acres of land received under the will of his father Elijah Flake. Elijah Flake was living as late as January 1837 as he was then on a visit in North Carolina and present when Elijah Flake Smith, the uncle of writer was born and asked that he be named after him, which was done. He died 1841.-312-

## 312

-311-Children of Elijah Flake-Elizabeth Williams Flake.

(A) James S. Flake, born 1818, died 1909, married a Miss Howard and after her death married a Miss Boswell.-313-

(B) Benjamin Labon Flake, married Sarah Ann Douglass.-315-

(C) Samuel Flake, born 1799, thought to have gone West.-389-

(D) Mary Flake, married a Mr. Liles and went to Texas. She is said to have died 1844.

(E) William B. Flake, born about 1803, died 1855, married Nancy Howard.-316-

(F) Dudley L. Flake, born 1815-319-

(G) M. J. Flake, born 1821.-392-

(H) Thomas Flake, died at the age of 23, single.

## 313

-312-A-JAMES S. FLAKE-TABITHA HOWARD-FRANCIS BOSWELL TABLE

James S. Flake, born about 1818, about the time his parents moved from Anson County, N. C. to Red Mound, Tenn., spent the whole of his life in Henderson County, Tenn. and died about 1908. His home in

later years was in Huron, Tenn. He first married Tabitha Howard and there was born to his union:

(A) Hyson Flake, born 1845, died 1918, married Kate Diffie.-314-

Tabitha Howard Flake died and James S. Flake then married Frances Boswell. There was born to this union:

(B) Mary Elizabeth (Bettie) Flake, married Rev. James Lewis and moved to Texas and died 1917 without issue. Rev. Lewis married again and lives in Florida.

(C) William B. Flake, born about 1843, moved to Texas and is said to have never married.

(D) Elijah Thomas Flake, married Ollie Mason and moved to Texas. They are said to have the following children:

(A) Odell Flake, born about 1890.

(B) James Lewis Flake, married and in Texas

(C) Mary Flake, in Texas.

(D) Frances Flake, in Texas.

(E) Mary Flake, is a school teacher.

## 314

-313-A-HYSON FLAKE-KATE DIFFE TABLE

The widow lives in Jackson, Tenn with her son Eugene Flake. Hyson Flake was born 1845, died March 27, 1918 and was buried at Pleasant Hill, Madison County, Tenn. His wife was born about 1858. Children are:

(A) James Washington Flake, married Anna Lee Mainord, Jackson, Tenn. He was born about 1878 and has one child: Guy Flake, born 1912.

(B) William M. Flake, born Sept. 10, 1880, Jackson, Tenn., real estate dealer, married Ella Mainord. Two children: Mamie Irene Flake, born 1902; John Howard Flake, born 1904.

(C) Ida M. Flake, born Aug. 7, 1882, married A. A. Mainord, Jackson, Tenn. Two children: Alpheus Mainord, born about 1913; William Mack Mainord, born about 1917.

(D) Ora E. Flake, born Nov. 10, 1884, Jackson, Tenn., married John Young who is now dead. No issue.

(E) Eugene T. Flake, born Dec. 22, 1891, Jackson, Tenn., Gulf Refining Company, married Ophelia Phyrton. Two children: Otha Flake, born about 1915; Catherine Flake, born 1920.

(F) Fannie J. Flake, born 1894, married Clarence Alexander, Jackson, Tenn. One child. Mary Alexander, born 1918.

(G) Madge L. Flake, born March 27, 1900, married Frank Todd, Jackson, Tenn.



## 315

-312-B-BENJAMIN LABON FLAKE-SAR-  
AH ANN DOUGLASS

Benjamin Labon Flake lived at Red Mound, Henderson County, Tenn. and died 1861, married Sarah Ann Douglass, dead. Both are buried near Red Mound, Tenn. They had only one child: Rhoda Flake, born Dec. 29, 1850. She lives at Jackson, Tenn. She married Elbert Stegall who is dead. Her residence is 618 East Main Street. Children:

(A) Walter Stegall, born Sept. 28, 1877, Jackson, Tenn., married Georgie Woods. No children. He travels for Hamilton Brown Shoe Company of St. Louis, Mo.

(B) Mary Flake Stegall, born Aug. 15, 1879, married A. Lawson Brown of St. Louis, Mo., president of the Hamilton Brown Shoe Co. Residence Clayton Road, St. Louis, Mo. Children:

(A) A. Lawson Brown, born about 1913.

(B) Helen Brown, born about 1914.

(C) Rhoda Brown, born about 1916.

(D) Elbert Brown, born about 1920.

(C) Lena Stegall, born Feb. 21, 1881, married Clyde Aycock, Jackson Tenn. He travels for the Hamilton Brown Shoe Co. One child: Frances Aycock, born about 1913.

(D) Arthur Stegall, born July 5, 1884, shoe merchant, Jackson, Tenn., married Ann Nelson. Three girls: Rebecca, born about 1912; Elizabeth, born about 1914; Ann, born about 1918.

(E) Roy Stegall, born 1886, died single.

(F) Daisy Stegall, born July 29, 1889, married Henry White Jr. He is a cotton buyer, Jackson, Tenn. One girl: Rhoda Flake White, born 1918.

(G) Elbert Stegall, born October 10, 1892, Huron, Tenn., farmer. He married Eleanor Hays. One son: Elbert Stegall Jr., born July, 1920.

## 316

-312-E-WILLIAM B. FLAKE-NANCY  
HOWARD TABLE

William B. Flake was born in Anson County N. C. about 1803 and with his parents moved to near Red Mound, Henderson County, Tenn. in 1818 and there lived. He died 1856. He married Nancy Howard who also came from North Carolina, she having been born about 1809. She died about 1856. Children:

(A) Lawson Flake, enlisted in the Confederate Army and was killed at the battle of Shiloh.

(B) Littleton Flake, enlisted in the Confederate army, was captured and died while a war prisoner.

(C) James Flake, died shortly after the war, single.

(D) Tibitha Flake, died when small.

(E) Savannah Flake, married William McHaney of Henderson County, Tenn., they moved to White Oak, Mo.

(F) Euphrates Flake, born in 1847, married Bina Howard.-317-

## 317

-316-F-Euphrates Flake was born in Henderson County, Tenn. in 1847, and when nine years old his father died and three years later his mother died. He then went to live with his uncle Dudley L. Flake who died three years later. He then went to Miss. and lived with his uncle James House. In 1866 at the age of nineteen he returned to Henderson County and clerked in the store of P. E. Parker at Wilderville for four years. In May 1878 he married Bina Howard, the daughter of Samuel Howard. She was born 1856 and is said to have been a most estimable woman and a member of the Methodist Church. In 1882 he purchased 640 acres of land and did a general farming business and owned and operated a cotton gin. He was a well-to-do farmer, a member of the I. O. O. F. No. 150 and a life-long Democrat. A history of Henderson County published in 1887 has a sketch of his life and from it we took the above. He and his wife have been dead many years. Children:

(A) Howard Flake, of Jackson, Tenn.

(B) Bettie Flake, married James Porterfeld, Jackson, Tenn.

## 319

-312-F-DUDLEY FLAKE-SYNTHIA  
HOWARD TABLE

Dudley L. Flake was born in Anson County, N. C. 1815, and in 1818 at the age of three, with his parents he settled near Red Mound, Henderson County, Tenn. and there died in 1853. He married Synthia Howard whose people also came from North Carolina. Children:

(A) Frances Flake.

(B) Elizabeth (Bettie) Flake.

(C) Delpha Flake, married Henry Walls and they settled in Carroll County, Tenn.

(D) Josephine Flake, married a Mr. Meals.

(E) William Flake, married Etta Burnett.

(G) Andrew Flake.

(H) James Flake.

## 320

(See 342 for other children)

-301-C-JORDAN FLAKE-MARY  
PENELOPE WILLIAMS TABLE

Jordan Flake was born in Anson County, N. C. May 15, 1764, lived and died in that county August 27, 1843 after passing the age of 79. He was a planter by occupation and the records indicate that by the time he reached the age of thirty-five or forty he had then accumulated a considerable landed estate. We frequently find his name as witness to some legal document. It seemed in the early days all papers had to be witnessed by two people instead of being acknowledged before an officer, as is now customary. This is indicative that he had the respect and confidence of those asking for this services. He first married Mary Penelope Williams-108-H-the daughter of Joseph John Williams and a cousin of Elizabeth Williams who married his brother Elijah Flake and also a cousin of Leusey Williams who married his nephew John Auld Smith. Mary Penelope Williams was born Oct. 21, 1783, most likely in Wake County, N. C. and died Oct. 1, 1813 and buried in Anson County. Children:

(A) John Wesley Flake, born Dec. 19, 1803, died Dec. 26, 1852, married Roxaline Dunn Bennett.-333-

(B) William Cameron Flake, born April 13, 1808, died Nov. 1856, married Emaline Huntly.-327-

(C) Thomas G. Flake, born Sept. 13, 1810, died April 5, 1850, married Loretta Ellen Henry-323-

(D) Nancy Ann Flake, born Sept. 29, 1806, married Charles Winfree.-321-

(E) Samuel Flake, born August 19, 1805, died Sept. 5, 1805.

## 321

-320-D-NANCY ANN FLAKE-CHARLES  
WINFREE TABLE

Nancy Ann Flake, born in Anson County, N. C. Sept. 29, 1806, married Charles Jordan Winfree, a brother of the Rev. Booker Winfree. Rev. Booker Winfree was the grandfather of Charles Winfree now of Anson County, N. C. Charles Winfree and his wife Nancy Ann Flake shortly after the marriage and about 1830 moved to Texas and there died. There are said to have been born to them:

(A) Susanna Winfree.

(B) Martha Amanda Winfree, born June 26, 1826.

(C) Charles Jordan Winfree, born Oct. 13, 1827.

(D) Isaac Winfree.

(E) Mary Melvina Winfree, born April 21, 1829.

(F) Penny Ann Winfree, born April 27, 1825

(G) Eliza Winfree, married a Mr. Capell.

(H) Gideon Winfree, married Francis Covington.-322-

## 322

-321-H-GIDEON WINFREE-FRANCIS  
COVINGTON TABLE

Born to Gideon Booker Winfree and Francis Covington, his wife:

(A) Eliza Winfree.

(B) Elijah G. Winfree.

(C) Charles Winfree, who has a son Charles B. Winfree who married Eliza Briley and lives in Anson County, N. C.

(D) James A. Winfree.

(E) Eli Perry Winfree.

(F) Mary Francis Winfree.

(G) Sarah Jane Winfree.

(H) Gideon E. Winfree.

## 323

-320-C-THOMAS G. FLAKE-LORETTA  
HENRY TABLE

Thomas G. Flake was born in Anson County N. C. Sept. 13, 1810 and died in that County in 1850. In 1833 he married Loretta Ellen Henry, daughter of Phillip Henry Sr. and Sarah Kirby, his wife, all of Anson County. Children:

(A) Sarah P. Flake, born May 8, 1834, married Francis Neal-325-

(B) Matilda Ann Flake, born January 7, 1836, married William Carter.-326-

(C) Hiram Jordan Flake, born May 17, 1838, was a Confederate soldier. One report was that he was killed in the war. Another was that he died in 1870.

(D) Samuel T. Flake, born January 19, 1841, married Margaret D. Saunders. He died Dec. 24, 1916.-324-

(E) Phillip H. Flake, born July 29, 1843, Confederate soldier, killed in 1853.

(F) William B. Flake, born January 31, 1846, died Sept. 20, 1851.

(G) Thomas M. Flake, married Margaret Saunders.

(H) Elvira Flake, born April 5, 1848, died Sept. 22, 1851.

(I) Jane Flake, died 1851. Jane, Elvira and William B. Flake all died of sore throat within a few days of each other.

## 324

## -323-D-SAMUEL T. FLAKE-MARGARET SAUNDERS TABLE

Samuel T. Flake was born January 19, 1841, in Anson County, N. C. and died Dec. 24, 1916. He married Margaret D. Saunders born January 29, 1845. Children:

(A) Thomas Jordan Flake, born Feb. 7, 1881, married Amanda C. Lindsay who was born Nov. 11, 1879. He is a farmer and lives at Lilesville, N. C. They have two children: James Thomas Flake born July 24, 1904; Eugenia Bettie Flake, born Oct. 26, 1908.

(B) Loretta Elmira Flake, born July 8, 1882, died Dec. 22, 1918, married Thomas J. Lindsay, left the following children:

(A) Sadie May Lindsay.

(B) Mary Jewel Lindsay.

(C) Marian Delany Lindsay.

(D) Virginia May Lindsay.

(E) Thomas Joseph Lindsay.

(C) Mary Jemina Flake, born July 22, 1883, married Alfred P. Johnson who was born January 13, 1874. He is a telegraph operator at Blue Ridge, Georgia. Children:

(A) Alfred P. Johnson Jr., born Feb. 23, 1914, died Feb. 25, 1914.

(B) Martha Washington Johnson, born Aug. 5, 1918.

(D) William Benjamin Flake, born Oct. 18, 1884, married Melvina Irene Kirby who was born Sept. 22, 1887. He is postmaster at Lilesville, N. C. One child: William Kirby Flake, born Sept. 30, 1917.

(E) Sarah F. P. Flake, born January 5, 1886, married James R. Goan. Children:

(A) Sarah May Goan, born July 3, 1912.

(B) James Robert Goan, born Aug. 26, 1914.

(C) Cynthia Elizabeth Goan, born Nov. 26, 1915.

(D) Margaret Goan, born May 6, 1917.

(E) Anna Goan, born January 1, 1919.

## 325

## -323-A-SARAH P. FLAKE-FRANCIS M. NEAL TABLE

Sarah P. Flake, born May 5, 1834, in Anson County, N. C., married Francis M. Neal in 1852, both died before 1870. Children:

(A) Jane Neal, born Sept. 29, 1853, married David Seago, Fayetteville, N. C.

(B) James T. F. Neal, born Feb. 2, 1856, married a Miss Biles. They live at Albermale, N. C.

(D) Benjamin Loretta Neal, born Feb. 23, 1858, married John R. Diggs. They live at Cordova, N. C.

(E) Sallie Halle Neal, born April 27, 1860, married a Mr. Morgan. They live at Albermale, N. C.

## 326

## -323-B-MATILDA ANN FLAKE-WILLIAM CARTER TABLE

Matilda Ann Flake, born January 7, 1836 in Anson County, N. C., married William Carter on Sept. 13, 1853. Both are dead. Children:

(A) Mary Carter, married W. B. Sellars. They live at Sanford, N. C.

(B) Saphronia Carter, single.

## 327

## -320-B-WILLIAM CAMERON FLAKE-EMALINE HUNTLEY TABLE

William Cameron Flake was born in Anson County, N. C. April 13, 1808 where he lived all of his life. He died in that county Nov. 1856. He married Emaline Huntly, the daughter of Robert Huntly Sr. and Jane Henry his wife. Emaline Huntly died in 1861. Children:

(A) Robert Jordan Flake, married Jane Garris in 1860. He was born 1833.

(B) William Henry Flake, born 1835, married Hellen Hufham in 1867. They then moved to eastern Carolina.

(C) James Marshall Flake, born May 5, 1837, married Rachel Huntly.-332-

(D) Sarah Elizabeth Flake, born in 1839, married Thos. J. Hardison.-331-

(E) Elijah W. Flake, born January 15, 1841, married Mary Jane Liles.-329-

(F) John Flake, born 1843, was a Confederate soldier and was killed in the battle at Gettysburg on the second day.

(G) Emaline Flake, born 1845.

(H) Benjamin Flake, born 1847.

(I) Eugenia Flake, born 1849, died 1863.

(J) Samuel T. Flake, born 1851, died May 27, 1911, married Rose Collins and later married Sarah E. Thomas.-328-

(K) Millard F. Flake, born 1853, died when small.

(L) One daughter whose name we do not know died when small.

## 328

## -327-J-SAMUEL T. FLAKE-ROSE COLLINS-SARAH E. THOMAS TABLE

Samuel T. Flake, born 1851, married Rose Collins Oct. 10, 1873, and after her death married Sarah E. Thomas Oct. 18, 1882. She was born Dec. 25, 1848. Rose Collins and Samuel T. Flake were married Oct. 10,

1873 and she died Feb. 10, 1882. Children by Rose Collins were:

(A) Jesse Emma Flake, born Sept. 16, 1874, married Adolphus Smith.

(B) Fannie May Flake, born Dec. 21, 1875, married John R. Bowman.

(C) Samuel Jefferson Flake, born June 25, 1877, married Alyne Goolsby.

(D) Rose Lilly Flake, born March 11, 1879, married Benjamin L. Robinson. Children by second wife, Sarah E. Thomas:

(E) Glennie Viola Flake, born Dec. 16, 1885, married Elisha Harsh.

(F) Rena Azilla Flake, born January 22, 1888. On Oct. 11, 1911 she married Benjamin Jones, born Nov. 18, 1882.

(G) William Henry Flake, born Dec. 8, 1889, died June 4, 1890.

### 329

#### -327-D-ELIJAH W. FLAKE-MARY JANE LILES TABLE

Elijah W. Flake, born in Anson County, N. C. January 15, 1841, enlisted in the Confederate army and was one of those who took part in the fight of the Merimac and Monitor and at his death in 1918, he was the last surviving soldier who was engaged in that battle. He spent his life in Anson County and married Mary Jane Liles who was born Sept. 3, 1841 and who died Nov. 18, 1882.

Born to them:

(A) William Jesse Flake, January 29, 1857.

(B) Eugenia Eleanor Flake, January 14, 1869, died April 22, 1909.

(C) Lucy H. Flake, born Sept. 19, 1871, died 1894, married James Gilbert, who died January 5, 1910-330.

(D) Elijah W. Flake Jr., born August 28, 1873.

(E) Mary Fannie Flake, born Dec. 21, 1875.

(F) Robert M. Flake, born January 7, 1878.

(G) James Dawson Flake, born March 3, 1880, died Nov. 10, 1881. After the death of first wife Elijah W. Flake married Eliza Hubbard but there was no issue by that marriage.

### 330

-329-C-Children of Lucy H. Flake and James Gilbert:

(A) Lora Gilbert, born Feb. 8, 1889, married Arthur Conts who is dead. One child: Arthur Conts, born March 5, 1909. She is in the insurance business, Muscogee, Okla.

(B) Mary Jane Gilbert, born January 15, 1891, married R. L. Funk. They live in Hamilton, Ohio.

(C) Carl Gilbert, born Feb. 8, 1893, Mobile, Ala., clerical with M. and O. R. R. He mar-

ried Oralie Baullemet, born Sept. 4, 1896. One child: Carl Gilbert Jr., born May 7, 1919, died Sept. 18, 1919.

### 331

#### -327-D-SARAH ELIZABETH FLAKE-THOMAS J. HARDISON TABLE

Sarah Elizabeth Flake was born in Anson County, N. C. 1839 and died 1884. She married Thomas J. Hardison who died January 1887. Children:

(A) William C. Hardison, died 1903.

(B) Mary Hardison, married T. L. Robinson, Monroe, N. C.

(C) Thomas Vance Hardison, lives at Wadesboro, N. C., married Nancy Robinson.

(D) John M. Hardison, married Anna E. Threadgill, born March 14, 1869. He is a cotton buyer at West Point, Miss. Children: Elizabeth, born Nov. 16, 1893; John M. Jr., born January 20, 1901.

(E) James A. Hardison, born Nov. 18, 1857, married Adele Schwarz.

(F) Robert L. Hardison, born Aug. 31, 1859, died Nov. 22, 1920, married Anna Gooch and lived at Wadesboro, N. C.

(G) Netta Hardison, married W. L. Little.

(H) Eliza D. Hardison, died when small.

(I) Sarah E. Hardison, married W. Edmonds, live at Memphis, Tenn.

### 332

#### -327-C-JAMES MARSHALL FLAKE-RACHEL HUNTLY TABLE

James Marshall Flake was born in Anson County, N. C. and spent his life as a farmer in that county. He was born May 5, 1837, and died June 1920. He married Rachel Huntly, born Sept. 8, 1849. She died prior to his death. Children:

(A) William Elijah Flake, born Feb. 1859, died 1872.

(B) Thomas Jefferson Flake, born 1870, died April 7, 1910., married Flora Horn.

(C) Mary Ann Flake, born Feb. 1, 1872.

(D) Sarah H. Flake, born Dec. 8, 1874, married Charles Uren Sept. 15, 1905.

(E) James A. Flake, born Dec. 9, 1876.

(F) John Bell Flake, born Aug. 17, 1878, married Lillie Dodd, March 1918.

(G) Zelpha Emaline Flake, born July 30, 1880, married Chas. Brisley May 4, 1911.

(H) Daisy Eugene Flake, born Oct. 19, 1883, married Henry C. Morton July 13, 1917.

(I) Grover C. Flake, born Sept. 8, 1884, died 1885.

(J) Henry Gullledge Flake, born June 7, 1885, married Lina Hendley Jan. 4, 1909.

(K) Frederick Flavel Flake, born July 10, 1889, married Lottie Cameron May 20, 1916.

(L) Ida Rachel Flake, born August 13, 1891.

(M) A son died in infancy.

### 333

#### -320-A-JOHN WESLEY FLAKE- ROXALINE DUNN BENNETT TABLE

John Wesley Flake was born in Anson County, N. C. on Dec. 19, 1803, and lived and died Dec. 26, 1852 in that county. He married Roxaline Dunn Bennett, the daughter of William Bennett and his wife, Susan Dunn. She also died and was buried in that county. Children:

(A) Flavel Bennett Flake, born January 9, 1829, married Mary Ann Allen and later her sister Martha Jane Allen.-338-

(B) Elizabeth Jane Flake, born May 24, 1833, died 1903, married LaFayette Douglass.-337 B-

(C) William Jordan Flake, born Oct. 12, 1830, married Lucy Liles.-236-

(D) John Carey Flake, married Lily McLendon.-335-

(E) Martha Susan Flake, died in infancy.

(F) Nancy Huchston (or Huxton) Flake, born April 10, 1835, married Dr. J. Barber Twitty.-334-

### 334

-333-F-Nancy Huchston Flake, married Dr. J. Barber Twitty and in the sixties they left Anson County, N. C. and moved to Camilla, Ga. They are said to have had children named:

(A) Laura Twitty.

(B) Lee Twitty.

(C) Lucy Twitty.

(D) Thomas Backer Twitty.

(E) Jennie Twitty.

Their descendants are thought to live in Georgia largely.

### 335

#### -333-D-JOHN CAREY FLAKE- LILY McLENDON TABLE

John Carey Flake was born in Anson County, N. C. about 1835. He married Lily McLendon and moved to Palarm, Arkansas and he died there in 1887. Children:

(A) Minnie Flake, married Alfred Joiner.

(B) Rosa Flake, born Oct. 10, 1879, married Guy J. Rencher, who is an attorney at Columbus, Miss. One son, Jack, born Feb. 5, 1905, died June 9, 1909.

(C) Robert Bennett Flake, born January 23, 1880, married Lollie Clinard. They live at 242 Main Street, Winston-Salem, N. C.

One son: William Clinard Flake, born June 24, 1917.

(D) Walter Flake, born January 23, 1881.

(E) Annie Flake, the youngest child, is dead.

(F) Sterling Flake, born 1885.

(G) Julia Flake, married Early York. Two children: Harvey and Minnie. Lily McLendon, the mother, was the daughter of Louis McLendon.

### 336

#### -333-C-WILLIAM JORDAN FLAKE- LUCY LILES TABLE

William Jordan Flake was born in Anson County, N. C. Oct. 12, 1830 and married Lucy Liles of that county. Lucy Liles was born Sept. 15, 1838 and died Oct. 28, 1920. He was a planter by occupation and engaged in that for his life. He moved to DeKalb and later to Chunkey, Miss. and there died Dec. 6, 1916. Children:

(A) Dr. Henry L. Flake, born July 15, 1857, married Lelia L. Day.-337 A-

(B) Fannie Eleanor Flake, born March 31, 1862, married W. E. Naylor.

(C) Charles C. Flake, born March 13, 1860, Chunkey, Miss., farmer.

(D) Joseph Edward Flake, born Dec. 10, 1865, died Oct. 11, 1869.

(E) Dr. John Jordan Flake, born January 29, 1870, practicing medicine at Pioneer, La.

(F) Jesse Liles Flake, born July 16, 1872, married Laura McGee.-337-

(G) Dr. William Gaines Flake, born Dec. 11, 1875, was a dentist by profession, located at Snowflake, Arizona for several years and then moved to Louisiana where he died in June 22, 1916.

### 337

-336-F-Jesse Liles Flake, Chunkey, Miss., farmer, married Laura McGee who was born Dec. 13, 1885. Children:

(A) Joseph Eugene Flake, born April 11, 1906.

(B) Wilburn Jordan Flake, born Oct. 16, 1909.

(C) John Harold Flake, born May 26, 1912.

### 337 A

-336-A-Dr. Henry L. Flake is a practicing physician and lives in Leland, Miss. where he has resided for twenty years. He married Lelia L. Day, born Aug. 28, 1872. Children:

(A) Essie Lucelle Flake, born Dec. 13, 1891, died 1901.

(B) Edwin Liles Flake, born Aug. 17, 1895.

(C) Francis Eleanor Flake, married W. M. Miller.



(D) William Henry Flake.

(E) Harry Flake.

(F) Lucy Flake.

### 337 B

-333-B-Born to Elizabeth Jane Flake and LaFayette Douglass two children: William Douglass and Conie Douglass. William Douglass married Nealy Carpenter and they had nine children as follows: Ina, Herbert, Annie Laurie, Walter, Remus, William, Bessie, Max, and Riley.

Conie Douglass married Carrie Kyle Key and they had one child: Murl Douglass.

### 338

-333-A-FLAVEL BENNETT FLAKE-MARY ANN ALLEN AND JANE ALLEN TABLE

Flavel Bennett Flake, born January 9, 1829, died Dec. 2, 1891, was born, lived and died in Anson County, N. C. He first married Mary Ann Allen, born July 6, 1834, died Oct. 5, 1867. He then married her sister, Jane Allen, who at a very old age is living in Wadesboro, N. C. Children by Mary Ann Allen:

(A) Joseph Flake, born March 2, 1854, died Aug. 31, 1854.

(B) John Flake, born Dec. 10, 1855, died in infancy.

(C) Elizabeth (Bettie) Virginia Flake, born Nov. 1857, died March 28, 1864.

(D) Nancy J. Flake, born Dec. 24, 1859, married Gen. William Alexander Smith of Ansonville, N. C. He is one of the compilers of this book-See Smith Table-631.

(E) Martha Flavel Flake, born July 6, 1862, married Jesse William Sullivan-341-A-

(F) William Thomas Flake, born July 5, 1865, died Sept. 30, 1901. Children by Martha Jane Allen were:

(G) Mary Ann Flake, born Nov. 5, 1868, married Dr. J. A. Gaddy on Dec. 23, 1890. He died Feb. 19, 1892. No issue. She later married Benjamin A. Horne.-340-

(H) Julia Hough Flake, born Oct. 9, 1870, married Charles M. Burns-339-

(I) Robert Hugh Flake, born March 23, 1873, died Oct. 8, 1874.

(J) Margie Ross Flake, born Nov. 11, 1876, married George A. Miller-341-

(K) Grace Josephine Flake, born Oct. 7, 1879, died Aug. 9, 1881.

(L) Moody Flake, died in infancy.

### 339

-338-H-JULIA HOUGH FLAKE-CHARLES N. BURNS TABLE

Julia Hough Flake, born Sept. 4, 1895, married Charles M. Burns. They live in

Wadesboro, N. C. We were entertained by them in their home in the spring of 1921. They live in a most elegant home. Mr. Burns is a cotton broker. Mrs. Burns is entitled to a large part of the credit for The Flakes Tables. She has done considerable research work on this line and it was from her data gathered that others have been enabled to pursue and gather in data for the Tables. Their children are:

(A) Margie Flake Burns, born Oct. 18, 1896.

(B) Julia Bennett Burns, born Sept. 8, 1898, married Dr. Edgar Snowden.

(C) Elizabeth Sheffield Burns, born Feb. 15, 1900, married Logan M. Eldridge.

(D) Mary Dunn Burns, born January 27, 1902.

(E) Nancy Ross Burns, born January 2, 1906.

(F) Charles May Burns Jr., born Nov. 2, 1908.

### 340

-338-G-Mary Ann Flake married Benjamin A. Horne, who was born June 1, 1859. Their post office is Monroe, N. C. He served as sheriff of that county for one term. One child: Benjamin A. Horne Jr., born Sept. 8, 1903.

### 341

-338-J-Margie Ross Flake, married George A. Miller, born June 14, 1870. They reside at 1420 South Cullom Street, Birmingham, Alabama. He is a druggist. Three children:

(A) Frederic Flake Miller, born January 8, 1900, died Dec. 26, 1920.

(B) Virginia Miller, born Dec. 9, 1906.

(C) George A. Miller, born Sept. 29, 1909.

### 341A

-338-E-Martha Flavel Flake on Dec. 23, 1885, married Jesse William Sullivan, farmer and cotton ginning, Wadesboro, N. C. Born to them six children:

(A) Rev. Eddie Flavel Sullivan, born April 20, 1887, married May Griggs, Sept. 1907. He is a Baptist Minister and located at Maxton, N. C. They have five children: (1) Elsie Vivian, born Oct. 2, 1910, died Nov. 8, 1910; (2) Bruce Meredith, born Aug. 21, 1911, died May 4, 1913; (3) George Hartwell, born March 2, 1914; (4) Ralph Harald, born August 8, 1915, died June 8, 1917; (5) Lila Ruth Sullivan, born June 13, 1920.

(B) Lee Marion Sullivan, born May 25, 1890, married Angus Marshall Scarborough July 3, 1910. He is a farmer, Wadesboro, N. C. Five children: (1) William Marshall, born April 14, 1911, died April 11, 1913; (2) Elmer

Wilson, born March 22, 1914; (3) Esther Ruth, born July 24, 1917; (4) Edna Louise, born Dec. 28, 1919; (5) Ethel Virginia, born July 16, 1921.

(C) Nellie Ross Sullivan, born Feb. 24, 1896.

(D) Lucy Flake Sullivan, born May 22, 1906.

(E) Mary Louise Sullivan, born May 16, 1893, Wadesboro, N. C.

(F) Frank Medley Sullivan, born April 14, 1890, died Oct. 27, 1902. Nellie Ross Sullivan, married Jacob Stephen Young, book-keeper and ginner, Ansonville, N. C. One child: Jacob Stephen Young Jr.

### 342

(See 320 for other children)

#### -301-C-JORDAN FLAKE-FAITHY ELIZABETH HANNA TABLE

Jordan Flake, after the death of Penelope Williams, his first wife, (See 320 for children by her) married Faithy Elizabeth Hanna, born Oct. 27, 1783, died Sept. 22, 1841, and buried on Smith's Creek in Anson County, N. C. She was born in Iredell County and her brother Robert Hanna was a man of considerable prominence in that county. In her younger days she was very fond of hunting the buffalo and on many trips she went with her husband to High Hill Lick sometimes known as Aunt Nancy Ingram's Mountain in quest of game of this character. The will of Faithy Hanna Flake is on record in Anson County and dated Nov. 28, 1833. The executors named by her are her husband, Jordan Flake and her brother Robert Hanna; and among the other items is one leaving a negro slave to be passed on to the daughter, Faithy Hanna Flake. Children of this union:

(A) Jane Elvira Flake, born March 13, 1817, married Jurden Morris.-352-

(B) James Madison Flake, born June 22, 1815, married Agnes Love Haily.-353-

(C) Alcey Flake, born January 25, 1819, died April 4, 1819.

(D) Sarah Flake, born March 19, 1820, married Peter P. Cox.-348-

(E) Faithy Hanna Flake, born Feb. 27, 1822, married James M. Flowers.-347-

(F) Francis Edward Flake, born January 6, 1828, married Mary Knotts.-343-

### 343

-342-F-Francis Edwards Flake, born in Anson County, N. C. January 6, 1828, died Dec. 2, 1912, married Mary Knotts, born 1837 and now dead. Children:

(A) John Fletcher Flake, born Oct. 28,

1857, married Elizabeth C. Master and later married R. J. Yelvington.-344-

(B) James H. Flake, born June 21, 1851, married Lydia Threadgill.-345-and later married Mattie Threadgill.-345-

(C) Elizabeth Ida Flake, born 1858, married John C. Thomas.-346-

(D) William J. Flake, born 1856.

### 344

-343-A-John Fletcher Flake, born Oct. 28, lives at Hasting, Florida. He first married Elizabeth C. Masters who was born July 24, 1873. Children:

(A) Courtland F. Flake, born August 29, 1889.

(B) Hazel H. Flake, born Aug. 14, 1890. He later married R. I. Yelvington and there was born to her:

(C) Martha A. Flake, Oct. 20, 1906.

### 345

-343-B-James H. Flake, Wadesboro, N. C., married Lydia Threadgill, and after her death married Mattie Threadgill. Born to him by the first wife:

(A) William Francis Flake, born April 5, 1881, married Elsie Barker.

(B) Joseph Fletcher Flake, born May 1882.

(C) Frederick T. Flake, born August 1884.

(E) Berta Vista Flake, married C. A. Middleton.

(E) James H. Flake, married Bara Candle.

### 346

-343-C-Elizabeth Ida Flake, married John C. Thomas. Children:

(A) Virginia Thomas, married a Mr. Rich.

(B) Frank Thomas.

(C) Fulton Thomas, married Lela Gullledge.

(D) Flora Thomas, married Josephus Lambert and later died.

(E) Mary Thomas, married Josephus Lambert after the death of her sister Flora who first married him.

(F) Stella Thomas.

(G) Lee Thomas, died single when 21 years old.

(H) Ray Thomas, died single.

### 347

#### -342-E-FAITHY HANNA FLAKE- JAMES M. FLOWERS TABLE

Faithy Hanna Flake was born in Anson County, N. C. Feb. 27, 1822. She married James M. Flowers and about 1845 moved to Black Hawk, Carroll County, Miss. and died there Oct. 2, 1885. Children:



(A) James M. Flowers Jr., born July 22, 1844, Vaiden, Miss., farmer.

(B) Sarah Elizabeth Flowers, born Dec. 13, 1845, died Aug. 29, 1847.

(C) Mary Ann Flowers, born April 24, 1847.

(D) Elijah Jane Flowers, born Nov. 19, 1848

(E) Henry Francis Flowers, born Feb. 26, 1850.

(F) John Jordan Flowers, born Sept. 17, 1852.

(G) Melcia Adeline Flowers.

(H) Isabelle Catherine Flowers.

(I) Infant daughter, died Oct. 24, 1858.

(J) George V. Flowers, born January 26, 1862.

### 348

#### -342-D-SARAH FLAKE-PETER P. COX TABLE

Sarah Flake was born in Anson County, N. C. March 19, 1820 and married Peter P. Cox. They moved to Union County, N. C. and there died. They have a great many descendants in that county. Children:

(A) William Flake Cox, died in 1863.

(B) Jesse Jordan Cox, born Oct. 9, 1840, married Mary Jane Barrett-350-

(C) Adeline Ann Cox, married Vechal Thomas Cheers-349-

(D) Eugenia Cox, married Joseph Lee.

(E) Peter M. Cox, married Elizabeth Evans and later Roxy Lowry.

(F) James B. Cox, married Narcis Huntly. -393-

(G) Della Cox, married Benjamin Parker. -394-

(H) Mary Melvina Cox, married Sanford Smith.-395-

(I) Alice Cox, married J. F. Moore.-397E-

(J) Viola Cox, married Ranford Smith.-395-

### 349

#### -348-C-ADELINE ANN COX-VECHAL THOMAS CHEARS TABLE

Adeline (Adelia) Ann Cox married Vechal Thomas Cheers, born Nov. 2, 1835. They live at Monroe, N. C. Children:

(A) Julia Cheers, born Oct. 20, 1867, married John C. Baucom.-397-

(B) Charles A. Cheers, born Nov. 30, 1869, married Elizabeth Hunt.-397A-

(C) Sarah Cheers, born Sept. 16, 1871, married J. B. Waters.-397B-

(D) William F. Cheers, born Nov. 15, 1873, married Ada Williams.-397C-

(E) Mary Cheers, born Feb. 10, 1875.

(F) Vechal Cheers, born Sept. 4, 1879, died 1900.

(G) Eugenia Cheers, born January 8, 1881, married W. F. Funderburg.-397D.

(H) Velma Cheers, born July 16, 1883, married A. R. Nisbet.

(I) Tracy Cheers, born July 1, 1889, married Effie Laney.

### 350

#### -348-B-JESSE JORDAN COX-MARY JANE BARRETT TABLE

Jesse Jordan Cox married Mary Jane Barrett, born April 3, 1843. He is dead but in 1919 she was still living at Monroe, N. C. Children:

(A) William D. Cox, born May 14, 1866, married Nancy Edwards.

(B) Pauline Cox, born May 23, 1868, married H. C. Lenard.

(C) Walter B. Cox, born April 10, 1870, married Emma Hall.

(D) Jesse Thomas Cox, born Nov. 16, 1871, married Emma Little.

(E) Anna Maud Cox, born January 20, married R. D. Smith.

(F) Luther Zeblson Cox, born April 10, 1876, married Laura Smith.

(G) Claudius C. Cox, born March 31, 1878, married Elizabeth (Bettie) Gulledge.

(H) Sarah Eleanor Cox, born Sept. 21, 1879, married Charles Baker and later B. Riggins.

(I) James B. Cox, born Sept. 24, 1881, married Myrtle Gaston.

(J) George C. Cox, born Dec. 11, 1883, married Jane Outen.-351-

(K) Mary Virginia Cox, born Dec. 23, 1885, married C. F. Moore.

### 351

-350-J-George C. Cox lives at Monroe, N. C. He married Jane Outen who was born Oct. 15, 1877. Children:

(A) Jesse Cox, born August 7, 1912.

(B) May Cox, born July 30, 1916.

(C) Four children, died in infancy.

### 352

#### -342-A-JANE ALVIRA FLAKE- JORDAN W. MORRIS TABLE

Jane Elvira Flake, born March 10, 1817, in Anson County, N. C., married Jordan W. Morris and in or about 1846 moved to Carroll County, Miss. Children so far as known to us:

(A) Thomas J. Morris, born March 7, 1833.

(B) John A. Morris, born Sept. 12, 1834.

(C) Elizabeth (Bettie) Morris.

(D) Robert Morris.

## 353

-342-B-JAMES MADISON FLAKE-  
AGNES HAILY LOVE TABLE

James Madison Flake (see 954) was born in Anson County, N. C. June 22, 1815. He married Agnes Haily Love of Richmond County, N. C. She was born Nov. 6, 1819 and died January 5, 1855. He died in 1849. She was the daughter of William (Billie) Love who was a son of John Love and Mollie Crawford, his wife. Mollie Crawford was a daughter of Thomas Crawford, a sister to Maston Crawford, William Crawford Jr., Martha (Patsy) Crawford, and Nancy Crawford. Anson and Richmond Counties joined. Shortly after they married, they emigrated to Mississippi, then to Nauvoo, Illinois and then to big Cottonwood, Utah, leaving Anson County in 1842 and reaching Utah in 1849. James Madison Flake, while on a prospecting trip to California, was kicked by a mule and from this died. His widow then located at San Bernardino, California and there died. They had six children:

- (A) Thomas Flake, born 1841, died 1844.
- (B) Richmond Flake, born 1842, died 1845.
- (C) Charles Flake, born 1840, died 1864.
- (D) William Jordan Flake, born July 3, 1839, married Lucy White-355.
- (E) Sarah James Flake, born April 4, 1847, married Joseph Levi-354.
- (F) Samuel Flake, born 1845, died 1845.

## 354

-353-E-Sarah James Flake, married Joseph Levi and after his death married Phillip Oakden. They reside at Enterprise, Utah. Children by her first husband:

- (A) Frederick Levi, Alunite, Utah.
- (B) Ida Nevada Levi, married John Moore-354A-
- (C) Lottie Levi, married James Reples. She died Nov. 11, 1920
- (D) Agnes Hala Love, married William A. Pease.
- (E) Clarence Henry Levi, born Dec. 8, 1875. Beaver City, Utah. Served in the Spanish-American War and saw active service. He also saw active service in the World War being in France for a year. His health has not been good since. He works in the mines in Carbon County, Utah. On Oct. 2, 1905 he married May Ellen Alger of Pioche, Nevada. She was born June 9, 1878. They have six children: Leslie John Levi, born March 29, 1911; Clarence Lorraine Levi, born June 28, 1906; Ireta Levi, born March 31, 1909; Idaona Levi, born May 28, 1913; Frederick Love Levi, born Dec.

13, 1916; Hal Gordon Levi, born May 28, 1920.

(F) Clara Elizabeth Levi, born Dec. 8, 1875. She and Clarence Henry Levi are twins.

## 354A

-354-B-Ida Nevada Levi was born in Bellmont, Nevada Oct. 24, 1868 and on March 30, 1885 she married John A. Moore who was born in Silver City, Colorado Nov. 14, 1863. They moved to Elsinore, Utah and now live there. He is a farmer. They are parents of thirteen children:

(A) Anna Phinora Moore, born Oct. 23, 1885, married Charles E. Hansen, farmer, on Dec. 3, 1901. He was born July 18, 1882. They live at Monroe, Utah. They have seven children: Edward C. Hansen, born May 30, 1903; Phinora Luella Hansen, born Sept. 5, 1904; Della Laverna Hansen, born March 16, 1908; Thelma Hansen, born March 10, 1910; Harold A. Hansen, born June 1, 1912; and Ruth Hansen, born August 5, 1917.

(B) Sarah Lottie Moore, born March 28, 1888, on June 23, 1907 married Henry John Mackey, born June 19, 1880. He is a farmer. They reside at Elsinore, Sevier County, Utah and have three children: D. Henry Mackey, born Sept. 25, 1908; Ida Leveda Mackey, born Feb. 18, 1912; and Amanda Mackey, born April 10, 1915.

(C) John A. Moore Jr., born Nov. 19, 1889, on Dec. 8, 1907 married Edith Hunt at Joseph, Utah, and they have seven children: Edna Moore, born March 14, 1909, died same day; Deloy Moore, born May 22, 1910, died same day; Ivan J. Moore, born April 20, 1911; Max Moore, born June 5, 1913; Olive Moore, born Dec. 29, 1916; died Feb. 5, 1917; Madge Moore, born January 29, 1919; Grant Moore, born January 25, 1921. Mrs. Moore was born Oct. 13, 1889. Mr. Moore is a farmer and dairyman.

(D) Elsie Ida Moore, born Dec. 8, 1891, on January 24, 1912, married Ransom Herring, born Dec. 11, 1889. He is a farmer, Elsinore, Utah. Two boys: Alma Herring, born Feb. 9, 1914; John Willie Herring, born Feb. 7, 1921.

(E) Eva Olive Moore, born Feb. 28, 1894, on Nov. 30, 1911 married Joseph Conder, born Feb. 7, 1888. They reside at Angle, Utah. They have five girls: Fay Conder, born Nov. 30, 1912; Ida Nell Conder, born July 15, 1914; Jossie Conder, born Nov. 17, 1917; Hope Conder, born May 11, 1919; Dean Conder, born January 26, 1921.

(F) Joseph Ray Moore, born Feb. 22, 1896, on June 19, 1919 married Vida Prince, born

June 29, 1896 at Parquick, Garfield, Utah. He is a farmer.

(G) Lenard D. Moore, born Feb. 6, 1898.

(H) Delbert D. Moore, born May 27, 1900.

(I) Vera Moore, born Oct. 12, 1902, on Oct. 4, 1920 married Merlin H. Jolley, born Feb. 22, 1897. He is a sheep herder, Antimony, Utah. One child: Opel Jolley, born June 22, 1921 at Kingston, Utah.

(J) Floyd L. Moore, born March 12, 1905.

(K) Glen D. Moore, born Sept. 7, 1907.

(L) Grace Moore, born Dec. 27, 1910.

(M) Georgia Moore, born Feb. 21, 1912.

### 355

-353-D-William Jordan Flake (see 955) was born in Anson County, N. C. July 3, 1839 and when three years old went with his parents to Mississippi, Illinois and then to Utah. He now lives at Snowflake, Arizona. He is a stockman and farmer. He first married Lucy White, born August 23, 1842, died Feb. 27, 1900. His second wife was Prudence Kartchner, born March 15, 1850, died Feb. 8, 1896. His children by his first wife were:

(A) James M. Flake, born Nov. 8, 1859, married Nancy Hall-367.

(B) William Melvin Flake, born January 20, 1861, died March 26, 1861.

(C) Charles L. Flake, born Oct. 18, 1862, married Bell Hunt-366.

(D) Samuel O. Flake, born Oct. 27, 1864, died Dec. 21, 1864.

(E) Mary Agnes Flake, born Feb. 16, 1866, married Theodore W. Turley-374.

(F) Osmer D. Flake, born March 6, 1868, married Elsie Owens-364.

(G) Lucy Jane Flake, born March 13, 1870, married Peter C. Wood-363.

(H) Wilford Flake, born Sept. 12, 1872, died Sept. 24, 1872.

(I) George Burton Flake, born April 16, 1875, died July 6, 1878.

(J) Roberta Flake, born August 19, 1877, married J. W. Clayton-362.

(K) Joel W. Flake, born July 21, 1880, married Lucy Whipple-361.

(L) John T. Flake, born Dec. 28, 1882, married Carrie Lindsay-360.

(M) Melissa Flake, born July 28, 1896, died Oct. 28, 1896.

His children by his second wife, Prudence Kartchner were:

(N) Sarah Emma Flake, born May 22, 1879, married John A. Freeman-359.

(O) Lydia Pearl Flake, born Dec. 3, 1881, married Frances McLaws-358.

(P) Wilmerth Flake, born July 7, 1887, married Joseph S. Willis-357.

Q) Anna Belle Flake, born Dec. 28, 1893, married S. Lorenzo Rogers-356.

(R) Joseph Franklin Flake, born January 7, 1884, died Oct. 3, 1885.

(S) Mark A. and Margaret Flake, twins, born June 7, 1886, died in infancy.

### 356

-355-Q-Anna Belle Flake, born Dec. 28, 1893, married S. Lorenzo Rogers, Snowflake, Arizona, farmer. Children:

(A) Inez Rogers, born April 26, 1914.

(B) Chester S. Rogers, born January 8, 1916.

(C) Lorenzo F. Rogers, born Dec. 6, 1917.

(D) Lelie Rogers, born Feb. 17, 1920.

### 357

-355-P-Wilmerth Flake, married Joseph S. Willis, Snowflake, Arizona, farmer. Children:

(A) Endora Willis, born Oct. 13, 1906.

(B) Martha Willis, born August 28, 1908.

(C) Gladys Willis, born June 25, 1910.

(D) Emabelle Willis, born May 12, 1912.

(E) Darwin Willis, born Aug. 13, 1914.

(F) Van A. Willis, born Aug. 19, 1916.

(G) Theda Willis, born May 13, 1918.

(H) Margaret Willis, born Feb. 6, 1920.

### 358

-355-O-Lydia Pearl Flake, married Francis McLaws, Snowflake, Arizona, machinist. Children:

(A) Francis E. McLaws, born Aug. 26, 1901.

(B) Prudence McLaws, born Sept. 28, 1903.

(C) Lawrence W. McLaws, born March 25, 1906, died April 1906.

(D) Marlin J. McLaws, born March 28, 1908.

(E) Emma McLaws, born Feb. 24, 1911.

(F) Harold L. McLaws, born Oct. 17, 1914.

(G) Gilbert McLaws, born Oct. 7, 1920.

### 359

-355-N-Sarah Emma Flake, married John A. Freeman, Snowflake, Arizona. Merchant. Children:

(A) John A. Freeman Jr., born March 6, 1902.

(B) Blance Freeman, born Oct. 6, 1903.

(C) Arthur J. Freeman, born March 27, 1905.

(D) Leo F. Freeman, born Nov. 9, 1906.

(E) Pearl Freeman, born July 20, 1908, died Nov. 9, 1910.

(F) Joseph W. Freeman, born April 19, 1910.

(G) LeRoy C. Freeman, born January 5, 1912.

(H) William R. Freeman, born Oct. 7, 1913.

(I) Carl G. Freeman, born Sept. 11, 1915.

(J) Marguaritte Freeman, born Nov. 18, 1917.

(K) Mable Freeman, born May 3, 1919.

### 360

-355-L-John T. Flake, Snowflake, Arizona, stockman, married Carrie Lindsay. Children:

(A) Burton T. Flake, born Aug. 18, 1911.

(B) Zona Flake, born Sept. 9, 1913.

(C) Melba Flake, born July 6, 1919.

(D) William Flake.

### 361

#### -355-K-JOEL W. FLAKE-LUCY WHIPPLE-ELSIE DEWIT TABLE

Joel W. Flake, farmer, Joppa, Arizona, first married Lucy Whipple who died in 1913 and then he married Elsie Dewit.

Children by Lucy Whipple:

(A) Roena Flake, born Nov. 10, 1904.

(B) Theodore L. Flake, born April 11, 1907.

(C) John T. Flake, born March 29, 1909.

(D) Mary Flake, born April 12, 1906, died 1906.

(E) Dennis E. Flake, born Nov. 29, 1911.

Children by Elsie Dewit:

(F) Clarok O. Flake, born Dec. 9, 1914.

(G) Robert K. Flake, born June 4, 1916.

(H) Eva Flake, born Feb. 26, 1918.

(I) Clara Flake.

### 362

-355-J-Roberta Flake, married J. W. Clayton, 604 Southern Building, Atlanta, Ga. Mining. Three children: Reginald Clayton, William Clayton, and Natelle Clayton.

### 363

-355-G-Lucy Jane Flake, born March 13, 1870, married Peter C. Wood who was born July 4, 1852. He is a fruit grower and resides at Colonia, Jaurez, Mexico. Eleven children:

(A) Enos F. Woods, born May 5, 1889, Colonia, Jaurez, Mexico, married Martha Seavey-369-

(B) Lucy Flake Wood, born Dec. 17, 1890, married Ednar J. Allred, born March 5, 1884. He resides at Colonia, Jaurez, Mexico. She died January 1, 1918. Children see-370-

(C) William F. Wood, born January 2, 1893, farmer, Colonia, Jaurez, Mexico, married Norma Knudson.

(D) Lehi F. Wood, born April 13, 1895, farmer, Colonia, Jaurez, Mexico, married Florence Neilson. One child: Lee R. Wood, born June 17, 1921.

(E) John Wood, born Sept. 2, 1897, Phoenix Arizona.

(F) Roberta Wood, born Nov. 6, 1901, married Charles Turley, farmer, Colonia, Jaurez, Mexico. One child: Roberta Turley, born Dec. 22, 1920.

(G) Rosalie Wood, born May 8, 1905, married Julius Russell Johnson on May 26, 1921. They live in Mexico.

(H) James E. Wood, born Feb. 18, 1909, died when small.

(I) Clarence F. Wood, born July 10, 1907, died May 13, 1918.

(J) Mary Wood, born August 27, 1911, died in infancy.

(K) Josephine Wood, born Nov. 7, 1914, died in infancy.

### 364

#### -355-F-OSMER D. FLAKE-ELSIE OWENS-ETHEL RAY TABLE

Osmer D. Flake, 102 N. 13 Street, Phoenix, Arizona, stockman and farmer, born March 6, 1868, is the gentleman who has furnished us more data and information as to the Flake Tables than any one else. While we have never met him personally we have formed a splendid opinion of him from correspondence. He is a member of the Latter Day Saints, commonly known as the Mormon Church. As a missionary for that church he traveled very extensively in the East. It once chanced our lot to live among the people of that denomination in Idaho for seven years and we wish to say to our Gentile relatives as distinguished from our Mormon relatives that we found them a very honorable and upright people, morally and socially the equal of people we have mingled with.

Osmer D. Flake first married Elsie Owens born Feb. 1, 1867. Children by this wife:

(A) Ada Flake, born March 31, 1892, married Erastus Frost, Snowflake, Arizona, farmer.-371-

(B) Lucretia Flake, born Feb. 24, 1894, married Noble Rogers, Snowflake, Arizona, sheep shearer.-372-

(C) George M. Flake, born March 28, 1896, served with Forest Rangers in the World War in France, married Susan Lionbarger.-373-

(D) Grace Flake, born January 8, 1898, married on Dec. 5, 1915 Bernard E. Gibson Linden, Arizona, farmer. One child: Bruce Melvin, born March 5, 1921.

(E) Lewis H. Flake, born January 8, 1901, died Feb. 27, 1902.

(F) Elsie Flake, born April 24, 1907, died Feb. 26, 1920.

After the death of his first wife, Osmer D. Flake married Ethel Ray, born August 26,

1892 at Millville, Miss. Children born to them:

(G) Ray Wallace Flake, born Aug. 6, 1912, died Aug. 11, 1912.

(H) Lester White Flake, born July 8, 1913.

(I) Horace Henry Flake, born April 2, 1915.

(J) Veoma Flake, born Nov. 28, 1916.

(K) Alma B. Flake, born Dec. 13, 1918.

### 366

-355-C-Charles L. Flake, born Oct. 8, 1862, married Belle Hunt who was born August 27, 1864. Children:

(A) Marion L. Flake, born July 23, 1886, merchant, Snowflake, Arizona, married Cynthia Morris-381-

(B) Grace Flake, born January 18, 1889, died Dec. 17, 1890.

(C) Ida Flake, born May 22, 1890, married A. T. Willis, carpenter, Chandler, Arizona-382-

(D) Marshall H. Flake, born Nov. 21, 1891, stockman, Snowflake, Arizona, married Melva Wright-383-

(E) Charles L. Flake Jr., born June 12, 1893, killed in the World War in Siberia, married Ruth Naeberg of Salt Lake City, Utah. For sketch see 380.

### 367 (see 956)

-355-A-James Madison Flake No. 2, born Nov. 8, 1859. On May 16, 1877, married Nancy Hall, resides at Snowflake, Arizona, and is a farmer and stockman. Children:

(A) William J. Flake, born January 11, 1878, Snowflake, Arizona, married Blanch Beard-384-

(B) Charles A. Flake, born May 7, 1879, farmer, Linden, Arizona.

(C) Therressa Flake, born March 10, 1881, Lakeside, Arizona, married L. E. Johnson. -385-

(D) Agnes Flake, born Sept. 1, 1883, married F. J. Beard-386-

(E) Samuel D. Flake, born July 19, 1885, died January 16, 1908.

(F) Lucy Flake, born August 3, 1887, married Alexander Shreves-387-

(G) Iris Flake, born August 28, 1890, married Joseph Tarr-388

(H) Nellie Flake, born August 2, 1892, married John Burns. One child: John Flake Burns, April 3, 1920. Ontario, Canada.

(I) Lois Flake, born Nov. 27, 1893, died January 3, 1897.

Nancy Hall Flake died April 6, 1895. Later James M. Flake married Mattie Smith. -368

### 368

Children of James Madison Flake by his second wife, Mattie Smith:

(A) Donald C. Flake, farmer, Snowflake, Arizona, born Oct. 24, 1897.

(B) August Flake, school teacher, Snowflake, Arizona, born March 4, 1899.

(C) Silas E. Flake, born Sept. 9, 1900.

(D) Virgil M. Flake, born Feb. 24, 1902.

(E) Joseph M. Flake, born Oct. 8, 1903.

(F) Thelma Flake, born January 27, 1905.

(G) Bruce M. Flake, born January 27, 1907.

(H) Vernon S. Flake, born Dec. 23, 1908.

(I) Mary Flake, born August 19, 1910, died August 27, 1910.

(J) Anna Flake, born Sept. 24, 1911.

(K) Ruth Flake, born Nov. 25, 1913.

(L) Vincent M. Flake, born July 19, 1915.

(M) Faust W. Flake, born March 12, 1918.

(N) Fern Flake, born Sept. 1921.

(O) Afton Flake, born Aug. 8, 1916.

### 369

-363-A-Children of Enos Wood and Martha Ann Seavy:

(A) Maud Wood, born Feb. 14, 1913.

(B) Hanna Laura Wood, born Aug. 24, 1914.

(C) Enos Seavy Wood, born April 24, 1920.

### 370

-363-B-Children of Lucy Wood and Ednar J. Allred:

(A) Sylva Allred, born April 23, 1912.

(B) Lillian Allred, born Feb. 1914, died June 1915.

(C) Josephine Allred, born January 1, 1916.

(D) Matilda Allred, born Dec. 29, 1917.

### 371

-364-A-Born to Ada Flake and Erastus Frost:

(A) Larry Erastus Frost, Aug. 7, 1917.

(B) Carmel Frost, born March 29, 1919.

(C) Jay Clinton Frost, born Feb. 21, 1921.

### 372

-364-B-Born to Lucretia Flake and Noble Rogers:

(A) Harald Flake Rogers, Aug. 16, 1916.

(B) Melvin Durward Rogers, May 15, 1918.

### 373

-364-C-George M. Flake as a member of the Arizona Militia was among the first to do service on the border in the late trouble with Mexico, and did duty there for a year. He later went into training at Camp Kerny, Cal., and gained the distinction of being the best shot in the Camp. With the "158" Infantry he went to France. When President Wilson made his first trip to France, George M. Flake was sent with a detachment to meet him at the wharf and was placed in charge of his per-



sonal baggage. He was the only enlisted man allowed to ride on the President's train. He remained with the President until his Co. was to sail for home, but he was retained and sent back to his Regiment. He was mustered out at El Paso, Texas, having served in the army for three years, less nine days. He returned to the farm at Snowflake and April 16, 1921 married Sue Lionburger. She was a stenographer in the Supervisor's Office of the Forest Department and formerly lived in Ky. They moved to Linden, Arizona. He has written a book of fiction. He has three patents pending in the patent office at Washington.

## 374

355-E-Mary Flake, born Feb. 16, 1866, died Dec. 19, 1909. She married Theodore W. Turley, Snowflake, Arizona. Children:

(A) James T. Turley, born Sept. 21, 1883, died Sept. 1, 1884.

(B) Pearl Turley, born March 16, 1885, married Allen Frost-379-

(C) Sarah Turley, born Dec. 16, 1886, died Sept. 19, 1887.

(D) Lucy Turley, born June 30, 1888, married Laron L. Bates-378-

(E) Ormus Flake Turley, born March 30, 1890, married Ita Hunt-377-

(F) Lowell Barr Turley, born April 21, 1892, married Grace Freeman-376

(G) Frederick A. Turley, born Aug. 4, 1895, married Wilmirth Fillerup-375-

(H) Roberta Turley, born Oct. 28, 1898, married Arthur Tanner, Feb. 12, 1917. He is a highway contractor and they live at St. Joseph. Two children: Genevieve Tanner, born January 19, 1918; and Fontella Tanner, born July 4, 1919.

(I) Harvey I. Turley and Harry W. Turley, born March 10, 1905.

## 375

-374-G-Frederick A. Turley served in the Army of the World War and was mustered out as a lieutenant, although he was never sent to France. He married Wilmirth Fillerup, June 1, 1920, and is a stockman at Joppa, Arizona. One child: Stanley F. Turley, born Feb. 27, 1921.

## 376

-374-F-Lowell B. Turley is a stockman at Joppa, Arizona and married Grace Freeman: Children:

(A) Lowell Laven Turley, born March 14, 1913.

(B) Barbara Turley, born Sept. 23, 1914, died July 22, 1919.

(C) Corrinne Turley, born Sept. 18, 1917.

(D) Jay Freeman Turley, born June 15, 1921.

## 377

-374-E-Ormus Flake Turley, stockman, Joppa, Arizona, married Ita Hunt. Children:

(A) Sheldon Ormus Turley, born May 14, 1916.

(B) Clair Sanford Turley, born Nov. 2, 1917.

(C) Keith Theodore Turley, born January 14, 1921.

## 378

-374-D-Lucy Turley on Oct. 4, 1911, married Laron L. Bates. They reside at Prescott, Arizona, where he has charge of the Experimental Farm operated in connection with the University of Arizona. Children:

(A) Carl Theodore Bates, born July 11, 1912.

(B) Licille Bates, born January 10, 1914.

(C) Myrtle Bates, born April 10, 1917.

## 379

-374-B-Pearl Turley on June 1, 1908, married Laron Frost, born Oct. 24, 1884. He is a farmer and lives at Snowflake, Arizona. Children:

(A) Mary Frost, born May 18, 1909, died January 19, 1911.

(B) Amelia Frost, born November 18, 1910.

(C) Dicy Frost, born January 14, 1913.

(D) Chester Frost, born May 12, 1915.

(E) Marjarey Frost, born January 14, 1917.

(F) Thelma Frost, born Nov. 14, 1918.

(G) Minnie Frost, born January 1, 1921.

## 380

-366-E-Charles Love Flake, born June 12, 1893, was named after his father who had been killed near six months prior to the birth of the son. He graduated from the District school in 1909, from the High school in 1912 and from the L. D. S. University of Salt Lake, Utah, in 1913. In 1913 he studied pharmacy in the University of Southern California at Los Angeles, and went to work in the drug department of Flake Brother's store. Called by the Church of Latter Day Saints, of which he was a member, he responded to the summons and gave two years of his life to the mission field, spending it in the eastern part of Tennessee. Being released he returned home, stopping at Salt Lake City on March 7, 1918 where he was then married to Miss Ruth Naeberg. He had been at home only a few weeks when his name was drawn and he was ordered to Camp Freemont, Cal. In August 1918, with Co. M. 31 Infantry, he went to Siberia, Russia. The winter was spent near the city of Vladivostok, guarding the mines and railroad. A letter received by his brother from the Captain of his Co. tells his fate. We insert a portion of it. "Early in June, I had occasion to make a list



of those who would be first to return to the United States for discharge from the Army. I interviewed private Flake and heard about his wife and the child he had never seen. I was favorably impressed with him in every way and entered his name on that list of the first ten per cent to be discharged.

"During the few days that intervened before his death, I kept an eye on him particularly, and came to know him better. His character and habits were above reproach. He was an excellent soldier in every sense of the word. He was well liked by all the officers and men of his Company. He was a credit to the service and I shall always be pleased to have been in command of the Company of which he was a member. He received the gunshot wound from which he died, in an action with the Bolsheviks at Novitskaya, Siberia, on the evening of June 22nd, 1919. The Bolsheviks had captured an officer and four enlisted men of our regiment early that morning and took them to the town of Novitskaya about six miles away. About 5:30 P.M. we heard of this and decided to go and bring them back. It was raining, muddy, and the marching was very slow. We reached Novitskaya shortly after 8 P.M.

"The First platoon formed the advance guard. Private Flake belonged to the platoon. Private Flake was wounded with the first volley, a rifle bullet passing directly through the brain. Our casualties were one officer, three enlisted men killed and two wounded. The Bolshevik loss estimated 175 killed. Respectfully. Roy F. Lynd, Capt. 312 Inf. Comdg. Co. M."

His body reached home October 18, 1919 and was buried the following day with all honor. He left a widowed mother, a wife and a babe, Margery Ruth, born April 10, 1919, after he left home and whom he had never seen.

Osmer D. Flake.

### 381

-366-A-Born to Marion F. Flake and Synthia Morris:

- (A) Maurine and Marvine Flake, born Aug. 24, 1914.
- (B) Carma Flake, born January 26, 1917.
- (C) Robert Flake.

### 382

-366-C-Ida Flake married A. Tilman Willis, Carpenter, Snowflake, Arizona. Children:

- (A) Mona Willis, born April 29, 1913.
- (B) Marshall Willis, born April 13, 1914.
- (C) Rupert Tillman Willis, born June 7, 1915, died 1919.

- (D) Max Lynn Willis, born May 4, 1916.
- (E) France Marrian Willis, born May 18, 1918.
- (F) Louise Willis, born Sept. 14, 1919.
- (G) Norma Willis, born Aug. 9, 1921.

### 383

-366-D-Marshall H. Flake enlisted in the World War with the Engineers, Co. D. 502 Battalion, and spent twenty-one months in France, and on his return landed at Newport News, Va. He was mustered out June 22, 1919, the same day his brother -380- was killed in Siberia. He married Melinda Wright and is a stockman at Snowflake, Arizona.

### 384

-367-A-William J. Flake was born January 11, 1878 in a wagon box while his parents were moving from Utah to Arizona. It was a bitter cold winter and the thermometer on that day registered 8 degrees below zero. The train was halted for a day and the journey then began again. He is a farmer by occupation and resides at Snowflake, Arizona. He married Blanch Beard. Children:

- (A) Laura Flake, born Oct. 2, 1902, died Oct. 27, 1908.
- (B) Eloise Flake, born April 19, 1906.
- (C) James Madison Flake, born Feb. 5, 1909.
- (D) Samuel Dennis Flake, born January 8, 1911.
- (E) Hate Lavon Flake, born Feb. 17, 1913.
- (F) Ludean Flake, born April 13, 1916.
- (G) Gwen Rufus Flake, born Dec. 11, 1918, died Mar. 17, 1920.

### 385

-367-C-Born to Theresa Flake and Louis E. Johnson:

- (A) Lois Johnson, July 23, 1902.
- (B) Antone L. Johnson, April 21, 1906.
- (C) Rilla Johnson, Sept. 1907.
- (D) Milton Flake Johnson, January 12, 1909.
- (E) Belle Johnson, Oct. 28, 1910.
- (F) Willie Johnson, July 3, 1912.
- (G) Gerald Johnson, March 13, 1914.
- (H) Wallace Edwin Johnson, January 28, 1916.
- (I) Lloid Magnet Johnson, May 1918.
- (J) Mary Founette Johnson, April 5, 1920.

### 386

-367-D-Agnes Flake married Frank J. Baird and lives at Walnut Springs, Arizona. Children:

- (A) William Richard Baird.
- (B) Thomas Barntley Baird.
- (C) Violet May Baird.
- (D) Peter Baird.
- (E) Louis Lamar Baird.

- (F) Nancy Ann Baird.
- (G) Albert Baird.
- (H) Orlin Flake Baird, born May 1, 1916.
- (I) Joseph Francis Baird.
- (J) Arie Baird, born Dec. 19, 1920.

## 387

-367-F-Lucy Flake married Albert O. Shreves, school teacher, Walnut Springs, Arizona. Children:

- (A) Edna Shreves, born March 14, 1909.
- (B) Iris Shreves, born June 24, 1910.
- (C) Elnore Shreves, born Dec. 22, 1911.
- (D) Clyde Flake Shreves, born March 2, 1914.
- (E) Albert Orson Shreves, born January 9, 1916.
- (F) Fern Shreves, born Feb. 10, 1918.
- (G) Nelle Curtis Shreves, born Oct. 3, 1919.

## 388

-367-G-Iris Flake married Joseph Farr, railroad fireman, Snowflake, Arizona. Children:

- (A) Marion Joseph Farr, born May 8, 1917, died Jan. 16, 1918.
- (B) Minnie Farr, born July 22, 1918.
- (C) Sanford Flake Farr, born Nov. 3, 1919, died July 27, 1920.
- (D) Herand Carl Farr, born Dec. 31, 1920.

## 389

-311-C-Samuel Flake, son of Elijah Flake, born 1799, is thought to have been the same Samuel Flake who went to Fishamingo county, Miss., and died there about the outbreak of the Civil War. This Samuel Flake had the following children:

(A) Lafayette Flake, born 1827, died 1859, was a Baptist Minister, married Perilia Bruton-390-

(B) Putman Flake, who went to California 1849 and was not heard from afterwards.

(C) Jack Flake, who died in Bell county, Miss. and who was the father of Samuel Flake and Arthur Flake. Arthur Flake is located at Nashville, Tenn. and is very prominent in Sunday School work of the Baptist Church.

(D) Fatima Flake, who first married Mr. Holly and afterwards married Mr. Williams and went to Buffalo Gap, Taylor county, Texas.

(E) Safira Flake, died single several years ago in Miss.

(F) Van Flake, who went to Coedell, Oklahoma.

## 390

-389-A-Born to Lafayette Flake and Perilia Burton, his wife:

(A) Thomas Jefferson Flake, born Nov. 22, 1857, married Willie J. Dalton, born Oct. 23,

1866. They married July 26, 1882. He is a prominent citizen of Plainview, Texas and is a member of the firm of Flake and Rushing, Real Estate-391-

(B) Laura Flake, born Nov. 1859, married J. T. Richardson, farmer. She died 1895, leaving two children: Roy and Flake Richardson.

## 391

-390-A-Born to Thomas Jefferson Flake and Willie J. Dalton, his wife:

(A) James P. Flake, born Nov. 3, 1883, married Nora L. McConnell, born April 20, 1889. He is in the real estate business, Plainview, Texas and they have two children: Elton E., born July 9, 1908 and Glen D., born Nov. 21, 1912.

(B) Solomon Clifford Flake, born August 1, 1885, died May 30, 1890.

(C) Exah L. Flake, born March 31, 1887, married T. E. Boyd, farmer, Plainview, Texas. Six children: Nevela Boyd, born 1905, died 1908; Hershall Boyd, born 1907; Thetis Boyd, born 1909; Fannie Boyd, born 1911; Ruby Boyd, born 1913; and Lavern Boyd, born 1916.

(D) Thomas E. Flake, born March 26, 1889, engineer, married Myrtle Jones. They reside at Parks, Texas. Children: Melvin Flake, born 1911; Tice Flake, born 1914; and Jack Flake, born 1920.

(E) Minatree C. Flake, born Sept. 4, 1890, Hale Center, Texas

(F) Zelma A. Flake, born July 31, 1892, married B. E. Rushing, insurance broker, Sweetwater, Texas. Three children: Cecil Rushing, born 1911; Olga Rushing, born 1913, died 1916; and Bernie E. Rushing, born 1917.

(G) Paul Rupert Flake, born Oct. 14, 1897, Plainview, Texas.

## 392

-312-G-M. J. Flake, born 1821, married James House. Children: Elizabeth House, married Mr. Clark; Martha House, married Leb. Knox; Laura House, married Mr. Sanders.

## 393

-348-F-Born to James B. Cox and Narcis Huntly, his wife:

(A) Minnie Cox, married George Smith, live R.F.D.R. 1, Monroe N. C. Children: (1) Osmond Smith; (2) Mamie Smith; (3) Alverta Smith; (4) Joseph Smith; (5) Bruner Smith; (6) Crara Smith; (7) Anna Belle Smith; (8) Vivian Smith; (9) Hubert Smith; (10) Robie Smith;.

(B) Julian Cox, married, lives at Savannah, Georgia. Children: Horace, Alma, Irene, Jewell, Lillie, and Frank Cox.

(C) Hattie Cox, married Durant Walters, R.F.D.R. 8, Monroe, N. C. Children: Madge, Roy, Willie, Herman, Wayne, and Harvey Walters.

(D) Edgar Cox, married, lives on Route 4, Monroe, N. C., and has six children: Eustice, Stanley, Dalton, Don, Fay, and Mary Belle Cox.

(E) Pearl Cox, married, lives at Allen, N. C. Children: Bert, Mary Deane, Louise and Gilbert Cox.

(F) Vernon Cox, married, lives at Monroe, N. C. Children: Bernice, Ruth, Ney, Joe and Louis Cox.

(G) Eula Cox, married Mr. Hill, lives at Monroe, N. C. Children: Craig Hill and Dennis Hill.

(H) Rufus Cox, married, lives at Monroe, N. C. Children: Leo, Georgia, Gertrude, and Warren Cox.

## 394

-348-G-Della Cox married Benjamin F. Parker, lived and died in Union County, N. C. Six children:

(A) Lester L. Parker, who is a banker, Pageland, S. C., and who has four children: Mary Welsh Parker, Harriet Elizabeth Parker, Lester L. Parker, and Thomas Jennings Parker. Lester L. Parker, Sr. was born Oct. 5, 1877.

(B) J. Luke Parker, born Feb. 22, 1879, Douglass, Georgia, is a farmer, a man of considerable prominence, and has four children now living: Jennie Lee, Orie, Estelle, and Nettie Parker.

(C) E. Clyde Parker, born June 16, 1880, married C. L. Gullede. They have nine children living, one dead. Those living are: Ethel, Emmett, Doyle, Frank, Lee, Herman, Benjamin, Lucy, and Harry.

(D) Annie Parker, born Sept. 2, 1894.

(E) John Peter Parker, born Sept. 2, 1896.

(F) William Van Parker.

## 395

-348-H-J-Mary Melvina Cox married Sanford Smith. She was born, raised and died in Union County, N. C. Sanford Smith, after her death, married her sister, Viola Cox.-348-J-Children by Mary Cox were:

(A) Ada Smith, who married Felix Griffin, farmer, Marshville, N. C., and they have four children: Kate Griffin, Free Griffin, Georgia Griffin, and Jean Smith Griffin.

(B) Mark Smith, hardware dealer, Chesterfield, S. C., married and has two children, one is named Burl.

(C) Cyrus Smith.

(D) Roy Smith.

(E) Eva Smith.

(F) Kate Smith.

(G) Alma Smith, married Thomas Baker, Pageland, S. C. Two children: Thomas Baker Jr. and Carroll Baker.

Children of Sanford Smith and Viola Cox, second wife:

(H) Clayton Smith; (I) Bertha Smith; (J) Francis Smith; (K) Ovia Smith; (L) Robert Smith, deceased; (M) Zeb Smith, killed in World War; (N) Mayme Smith; (O) Cecil Smith; (P) Maggie Smith; (Q) Henry Smith.-396-

## 396

-395-H-Clayton Smith, Monroe, N. C. is married and has two children: Elizabeth and Clayton, Jr. Bertha Smith married G. R. Thomas of Monroe, N. C., R.F.D.R. 1, and has six children: Vivian, Marjorie, James, Viola Mae, Sarah Lee, and Zeb Maurice Thomas. Francis Smith married James Eubanks, R.F.D.R. 8, Monroe, N. C. Two children: Ovie Lee and Robert Eubanks. Mayme Smith married Lonie Knight and lives at Columbus, S. C. Cecil Smith, merchant, Pageland, S. C., has three children: Catherine, Zeb Joseph and Cecil, Jr.

## 397

-349-A-Julia Cheers, born Oct. 20, 1867, was born and all her life lived in Monroe, N. C. She married John C. Baucom, and they have eleven children:

(A) Eugene Baucom, born July 19, 1889, died May 23, 1918.

(B) Blanch Baucom, born Dec. 1, 1890, married Carl Baker and they have seven children, as follows: Jewel, Vachel, Byron, Mable, Carlston, Louise and Lura. The last are twins.

(C) Mary Baucom, born May 24, 1892, married Fred Harrell.

(D) Beulah Baucom, born August 27, 1893, married Frank Walters and they have three children, as follows: Van, Roy Lee and Bruce Walters.

(E) Henry Baucom, born Sept. 28, 1895, married Mayme Rollins.

(F) Eura Baucom, born Nov. 27, 1897.

(G) Annie Baucom, born March 31, 1900.

(H) William Baucom, born Feb. 23, 1902.

(I) Merton Baucom, born Nov. 25, 1906.

(J) Loma Baucom, born May 7, 1905.

(K) Livingston Baucom, born July 10, 1909.

## 397A

-349-B-Charles A. Cheers and his wife, Elizabeth Hunt have four children, as follows: Mary, Vachel, Bonnie, and Charles, Jr.

## 397B

-349-C-Sarah Chears married G. B. Walters, farmer, R. 1, Marshville, N. C. and they have six children: Otis, Gladys, Heath, Mott, Mabel, and Alline Walter.

## 397C

-349-D-William F. Chears married Ada Williams. He resides at Sanford, N. C., and is in the jewelry business. They have four children: Annie, Lynn, Crocket, and James Chears.

## 397D

-349-G-Eugenia Chears married W. F. Funderburg. They live at Marshville, N. C. Four children: Albert, Hemp, Vivian and Frank Funderburg.

## 397E

-348-I-Alice Cox married J. Fletcher Moore. They lived and died in Union County, N. C. Children:

(A) Leone Moore, married William Meigs, Charlotte, S. C., and had one child, Ollie Meigs

(B) Earnest Moore.

(C) May Moore, married Lloyd Little.

(D) Preston Moore.

(E) Jesse Moore.

(F) Blanch Moore.

## 500 (See 900, 901)

## THE SMITH FAMILY

One writer says "The word Smith is a noun, coming from the words 'to smite'." Professor Mahaffy made an extraordinary discovery in the Egyptian Petrie papyri. These contain a list of names and he says: "There is one which appears regularly in the same form and of which we can give no further explanation. It is the name Smith—unmistakably written. We have never found anything like it before, and it is surely worth telling the many distinguished bearers of the name, that there was a man known as Smith in the twentieth year of the third Ptolemy (227 B. C.) and that he was occupied in brewing beer or in selling it. Is there any other English name comparable in antiquity?"

The earliest records in England, of the Landed Gentry as distinguished from Norman Nobility, are furnished in reports by Commissioners appointed by Henry the Sixth, and returned in 1433. Twelve of the counties are wholly missing and the others are incomplete. In these there were then twenty-one Landed Gentry of this name in England.

In 1902, Compton Reade, M. A., of Magdalen College, Oxford, published a book entitled "The Smith Family". He says that he does not know of any relative of his by that name. His book is an account of the more prominent branches of these families, containing the Genealogical Tables that have been published from time to time. He says: "In the days when the Norsemen wielded the hammer of Thor, which none but the strongest could handle, in the romantic period when physical force meant moral superiority, he (Smith) was a cynosure. Presently, when mind—thanks to the influence of the Church in the first instance—had begun to assert itself over matter, the artificer was awarded the second place. Once in a way, a genius like Quentin Matsys arose to deify his craft, but he, like our own Grinling Gibbons, in another department of Art, stood alone. The Smith in the lapse of centuries became a mechanic pure and simple, while a world prone to look at the present rather than at the past has forgotten his high estate in primeval ages."

"The aims of society have always been more or less hedonistic; and a refined aestheticism, almost as much as luxury, ostentation, and the gambling craze, has proved, in effect, a leakage. Where there existed neither the desire, nor indeed the temptation, to spend even the surplus of a penuriously-earned increment, saving, and hoarding, and re-duplication have followed as the necessary corollary of industry and a quickened commercial intelligence. These tradesmen Smiths, whose patient labour and wiling self-denial so largely assisted in the creation of a reserve of national wealth, have often been accused of serving mammon rather than God, while their phase of religion has been denounced as hypocrisy. Consistent lives, philanthropic zeal, above all, the blessing which has attended them to the third and fourth generation, afford a rejoinder to such calumnies. So far as the Smiths represent a type, one may affirm, that without them England would have been small indeed." Speaking especially of our family he says: "That no family has so prospered as the Nottingham Smiths, during the past two centuries, cannot be controverted. That this phenomenon must be referred to a higher power, every man who respects religion will affirm. Force of character, practical talent, plus the favour of God have combined to make the Smiths; and so long as they retain their ancestral virtues, it may be safely prophesied that they will not be unmade."

Cropwell Boteler, or Cropwell, as at times designated, is a hamlet in the parish of Titheby, and nine miles east of Nottingham. It was

here first our family lived, and here Thomas Smith Sr. was born. He later located at Nottingham, became known in history as Thomas Smith of Nottingham and Gaddesby, and to his male descendants was granted the Coat of Arms as shown in paragraph 900.

The Subsidy Rolls of 1523, 1524, and 1525, at Cropwell show one Jeffrey Smith as being taxed for goods. In 1525 the name of Godfrey Smith also appears. His will was proved at York in 1543, the executors being his wife, Alice, and his son, William Smith. There are numerous other references to the Smith family in the parish of Titheby and Plumtree, dating from 1561. They were substantial yeomen, a race that has produced innumerable numbers of the highest type of English and American citizens.

John Smith Sr., our first known ancestor of the Smith line, died in 1602 and his will is recorded at Titheby. He lived at Cropwell. We only know the name of one child, John Smith Jr., who was baptised October 2, 1593. He was a yeoman, a tiller of the soil, and was nine years old when his father died. He perhaps tilled the lands of Sir Thomas Hutchinson, and in 1622, for 185 pounds, purchased of him 62 acres of land. In 1630 he married Elizabeth Garton, daughter of Thomas Garton, and settled on her this land he purchased in 1622. She died of childbirth in 1633 and was buried at Titheby. He later married Francis Wilcocke of Cropwell. His will is dated Dec. 30, 1641, and was proved January 1642. Her will is dated May 12, 1643, and was proved July 21, 1643.

There were born to him several children but we only know the names of two:

(A) Thomas Smith Sr., (901); born 1631, by his first wife, Elizabeth Garton. (Burke gives him as son of second wife, but he is in error)

(B) Mamie Smith; we do not know whether she was by first or second wife. She married Daniel Wilcocke, son of William Wilcocke, who was a brother of Frances, the second wife.

#### 501 (See 901)

-500-A-Thomas Smith Sr., born at Cropwell, 1631, (see 901) left an orphan at the age of eleven, then lived with his mother's people, the Gartons, and is thought to have gone to Nottingham, there attended school and lived with Mr. Robert Burrows. He became a mercer, and by 1688 was a private banker, the only kind of bankers then in England. He died July 14, 1699, and was buried in the south transept of St. Mary's Church, Nottingham. He left a large fortune, for his generation. He first married Mary Hooper, the daughter

of John Hooper. After her death, he married, on Feb. 27, 1681, Fortune Collin, daughter of Laurence Collin. She died March 1716. Laurence Collin was a "Roundhead", which was a name applied in derision to the members of the Sir Oliver Cromwell faction, or Parliamentary party in England, at the outbreak of the Civil War in 1642, because they insisted on having their hair cut close to their heads. Their opponents, the Cavaliers, or Royalists, followers of Charles I, wore long flowing curls. The "Roundheads" later developed into the party known as the Whigs and Liberals, as opposed to the Tories, Cavaliers and Conservatives, and were the Puritans as opposed to Roman Catholics. Laurence Collin was the Master Gunner of the Cromwellians or Parliamentarians, and held the Nottingham Castle against the forces of King Charles I. He was a wool buyer and jersey comber by occupation. In 1654, the Officials of Nottingham undertook to prevent him from following his occupation there. He personally appealed to Sir. Oliver Cromwell who then was called the Lord Protector, but in reality was the Dictator of England with all its Kingly powers. A letter was sent to Captain Poulton, as follows: "Sir: His Highness the Lord Protector (Oliver Cromwell) having heard the petition of Laurence Collin, which is here enclosed, is pleased to recommend it unto you to speak to the Mayor and other Magistrates of Nottingham, to know the reason why they will not suffer the petitioner to set up his trade in the town. And if there be no other cause of exception but that he is not a freeman, in regard he has faithfully served the Commonwealth his Highness does think it fit that he should continue in the town and be admitted to follow his calling for the maintenance of himself and family, which of all I am commanded to communicate to you from his Highness by the hands of,

"Sir,

"Your very humble and faithful Servant,  
"Lisle Long

"Whitehall, this 17th July"

In consequence of this letter, the Corporation held a meeting Aug. 9, 1654 and resolved that: "Laurence Collin to have free liberty to use his trade of a wool-buyer and jersey comber in the town of Nottingham". He had no further difficulty, and died August 9, 1704, on the fiftieth anniversary of the above order, aged ninety-one years.

This civil war in England, from 1642 to 1648, when King Charles I was beheaded by order of Parliament and Sir Oliver Cromwell, was none more or less than a religious war.



As Laurence Collin was the ancestor of all of the American branch of the Smith family, the reading of the life of Sir Oliver Cromwell might be of some interest to his posterity.

Laurence Collin accumulated some property and with his son-in-law, Thomas Smith Sr., purchased 1400 acres of land known as "The lordship of Gaddesby". His son Abel Collin was a mercer and also banker in Nottingham, and his will is dated Feb. 4, 1704. He left the residue of his personal property for the building of some houses which are known as the Collin's Hospital. A commodious structure it is and stands in Moothal Gate, Nottingham. The inscription in the north entrance is as follows: "This Hospital, by the appointment of Abel Collin, late of Nottingham, Mercer, deceased, who in his life was of extensive charity to the Poor of all Societies, and at his death by his last will and testament left a competent estate for erecting and endowing the same, was, by his nephew and executor, Thomas Smith, (This was Thomas Smith Jr.) begun and finished in the year 1709". There was born to Thomas Smith Sr. by Mary Hooper, his first wife:

(A) Mary Smith, born 1665, died 1720, married John Eggleton.

(B) Fortune Smith, born 1669, died 1691, single.

By his second wife, Fortune Collin, he had children:

(C) Thomas Smith Jr., born 1682, died 1727, married Mary Manley.

(D) John Smith No. 3, died when young and was buried at St. Mary Church, Nottingham.

(E) Samuel Smith Sr., who married Elizabeth Cartlitch and died 1751-501B-

(F) Abel Smith, married Jane Beaumont and died 1757.

(G) Jane Smith.

(H) Anne Smith.

### 501A

-501-A- Thomas Smith Jr. was left by his father, the 1400 acres estate at Gaddesby, and the Bank. He added to his fortune and in 1717-18 was High Sheriff of Nottingham County, and when he died his deposits in the Bank were over 44,000 pounds or \$200,000.00 and his assets above liabilities over 5,000 pounds or over \$25,000.00, besides considerable landed estate. He left five daughters. His rents on his lands were bringing him then 900 pounds a year. His daughter, Mary, married Thomas Tennison, D. D.; Elizabeth married Giles Eyre, Esquire; Catherine married William Ring, Esquire; Annie married Henry Walters, Esquire; Harriet died single.

### 501B

-500-E- Samuel Smith Sr., third son of Thomas Smith Sr., born about 1684, was left by his father the lands at Keyworth. We do not know whether or not this estate was located in Hertfordshire, but are of the opinion that it was or that his wife's people lived in Hereford County, as there is a tradition that his son, John Smith, the Emigrant to America, was born in Hertford County. He sold his lands and moved to London and was there a merchant (Goldsmith). He was afterwards known as Samuel Smith, of Gaddesby, Leicester County. He probably came into possession of this estate after the death of his brother, Thomas Smith Jr., with whom he had business dealings and to whom he was indebted in the sum of 4,000 pounds at his death in 1727. He first started to loaning money in London in partnership with his brother, Thomas Smith Jr., who ran the Nottingham end of it. After the death of Thomas Smith Jr. in 1727, this end in London was taken over by the younger brother, Abel Smith Sr., and from this came Smith and Payne, and then Smith, Payne, and Smith, now one of the large Banks of London. Samuel Smith Sr. died intestate in London in 1751, and when his estate was wound up, it was found then to be practically all personal property, and when divided among his six surviving children, each received as much as 40,000 pounds, so says Harry Tucker Easton in his book, "The History of A Banking House (Smith, Payne, and Smiths)". We suspect that an error was made and it should have been 4,000 pounds, as six times that or 24,000 pounds or \$120,000.00, was a large fortune in that day. Gen. Smith, who knows more than we of English traditions, thinks 40,000 pounds is correct. Samuel Smith Sr. married Elizabeth Cartlitch, the daughter of John Cartlitch.

Of the children born to Samuel Smith Sr. and Elizabeth Cartlitch we only know of the following:

(A) John Smith No. 4, born 1716, died 1717.

(B) Anne Smith, born 1718.

(C) John Smith No. 5, born 1719, who perhaps ran away from home, came to America about 1735, and to whom we shall hereafter refer as John Smith, No. 1, the Emigrant to America.-502-

(D) Thomas Smith No. 3, of Nottingham and Keyworth, born 1720, died 1765, married Dorothy Lister.

(E) Samuel Smith Jr., born 1722, died 1789, married Elizabeth Watson.

There were evidently more children, as nine shared in the division of the estate in 1751; one



of the above five had died in infancy. We have some doubt as to whether or not John Smith No. 5, the Emigrant to America, had kept in correspondence with his parents, and we suspect that the estate was settled up without his ever sharing in it. The only reason for this presumption is that English historians do not seem to know anything of him after his birth in 1719. We shall give more of the history of these, our ancestors and their descendants, in our historical part of the book. (901) To those who wish more data, you can find considerable in Burke's *Landed Gentry* under the titles as follows: "Smith of Woodhall Park, Smith of Goldings, Smith of Bramcote, Smith of Duffield, Smith of Wilford House, Smith of Shottesbroke Park, Smith of Midhurst, Smith of Mount Clare and Dorrien-Smith of Tresco Abbey." Also in Burke's 1921 Edition of *Peerage and Baronetage*, page 1378 "The Marquis of Lincolshire," Sir Charles Carrington, whose ancestor Robert Smith took the name of Carrington on being elevated to peerage; page 2297, Sir Maurice Bromley-Wilson, whose ancestor took the name of Bromley upon being elevated to peerage and subsequently it was changed to Bromley-Wilson; also page 2049, Earl Stanhope, whose ancestor the 4th Lord Stanhope married Catherine Smith. These books can be found in nearly all of the larger libraries in large cities. Burke's *Tables* do not profess to be complete, or more than a skeleton sufficient to connect the now living with the early ancestors and give their branches. It is inaccurate in that it gives Thomas Smith Sr. as the son of John Smith and Frances Wilcocke, when in fact he was the son of John Smith by Elizabeth Garton, the first wife. He only mentions three children of Samuel Smith Sr. when in fact he had as many as seven. A more complete and correct Genealogical Table can be found in "The Smith Family" by Compton Reade, with some other information. "History of A Banking House (Smith, Payne, and Smiths)" by Harry Tucker Easton, published in 1903, also gives us some interesting information. We were able to procure the last two books from Frank Moore, Antiquarian Bookseller, 9 Wheeler Gate, Nottingham, England. The data in these books was taken largely from a book entitled "Stemmata Smithiana Ferraria", compiled by John Augustus Smith in 1865. These words translated mean: "A True, Faithful History of the Smith Family." He was a great grandson of Samuel Smith Sr. and Elizabeth Cartlitch. We will refer to him in the historical part of the book. (901)

## 502 (See 902)

-501B-C-John Smith No. 5, son of Samuel Smith Sr., and Elizabeth Cartlitch, born 1719, about 1735 emigrated to Virginia and shortly afterwards plunged into the forests where few white men and many Indians lived, and settled in what was then Bertie County, N. C., but territory which later became Johnson County, and in 1770 became Wake County, N. C., and there lived the life of a farmer. He perhaps married about 1739, as his son, John Smith, whom we shall hereafter speak of as John Smith No. 2, was born in 1740. We regret that in the spring of 1921 when in North Carolina, our time was so limited that we could make little research as to this ancestor and learn if he had more children, and just where he had lived. We know he was a grandson of Thomas Smith Sr. and his wife Fortune Collin, and that he used the same Coat of Arms as is described in paragraph 900, and which was granted to all the "male issue alike of Thomas Smith Sr., deceased, of Nottingham and Gaddesby" when granted to Thomas Smith Jr. in 1717, as representative of his father's family. John Smith No. 2 born in 1740, married Mary Flake. -503-

## 503 (See 902)

-502-John Smith No. 2, born in territory now known as Wake County, N. C., in 1740, at an early date emigrated to Anson County, N. C., and located near Lilesville, N. C. on Smith's Creek, it taking its name from him. He married Mary Flake, the daughter of Samuel Flake by his first wife. See Flake Table-301-A-Children:

(A) Thomas Smith, born 1768, died after 1820, married Jane Goff. -504-

(B) John Smith No. 3, born 1770, married Mary Bellew. (also spelled Bellyew). -600-

(C) Eli Smith No. 1, married Sarah (Sallie) Hicks. -710-

(D) Samuel Smith, married Margaret (Peggy) Hutchinson. -750-

(E) James Smith, married Mary Gathings. -550-

(F) Jessie Smith, married Mary Seago. -700-

(G) Sarah Smith, married George Lindsay. -711-

(H) Mary Smith, born, lived and died in Anson County, N. C., single.

## 504 (See 912)

-503-A-Thomas Smith was born near Lilesville, N. C., lived and died there. Jane Goff lived and died there. We know nothing of her ancestry. Children were:

(A) John Auld Smith, born 1794, died 1847, married Leusey Williams, born Aug. 23, 1803, died 1852. -505-

- (B) Naomi Smith, married James Capel.-540-  
 (C) A third child, died small. This was a girl.

## 505 (See 912)

-504-A-John Auld Smith and Leusey Williams, his wife, born near Lilesville, N. C., in the spring of 1838, moved to and located about seven miles northwest of Lexington, Tenn., and there died. Children:

(A) William Thomas Smith, married Susan Williams and after her death married Arstalia Hoy.-525-

(B) Elizabeth Smith, married Burrell Stewart, died one year later, leaving no issue.

(C) Susan Smith, married William Rhodes.-533-

(D) John Devergie Smith, married Veturia White.-506-

(E) Martha Jane Smith, married Park Rhodes.-537-A-

(F) Nancy Ellen Smith, married James Fessmire.-526-

(G) Eli Tyre Smith, married Elizabeth York.-530-

(H) Elijah Flake Smith, married Lydia Argo, and after her death married Mary McGrow.-538-

(I) Omy Smith, died single.

(J) Jemimah Smith, died when about 14 years old and was buried in Henderson County, Tenn.

## 506 (See 912, 913)

-505-D-Dr. John Devergie Smith, born March 18, 1829, at Lilesville, N. C., moved to Henderson County, Tenn., 1838, to Sugar Tree, Benton County, Tenn., 1849, there married Veturia White, born January 4, 1833, (See James White Table-50-). In 1854 they moved to Friendship, Tenn., to Dyersburg, Tenn., in 1882, to Paducah, Ky., in 1887, lived at 902 Jefferson Street until death; she, dying June 8, 1906, and he, Dec. 29, 1906. Both are buried at Oak Grove cemetery, Paducah, Ky. Children:

(A) Dr. Millard McFarland Smith, born Sept. 15, 1851, died Oct. 4, 1908. Married Alabama Hinkle-507-

(B) Chelius Cortes Smith, born Feb. 21, 1855, died July 3, 1855.

(C) James Robley Smith, born April 8, 1856, died July 12, 1856.

(D) Dr. Richard Filmore Smith, married Alice Hettie Lang Buckley of Mifflin, Henderson County, Tenn.-515-

(E) Prof. John Devergie Smith Jr., married Lina Warren and after her death, married Laura Lee Allard.-519-

(F) Benjamin Franklin Smith, married Izora Bond.-520-

(G) Dr. Julius Alexander Smith, married Nettie (Warden) Wilson of Paducah, Ky.-521-

(H) William Thomas Smith, who has never married.-522-

(I) Lucy Elizabeth (Bettie) Smith, married Kern Hughes.-523-

(J) Josiah Weightman (Weightman) Smith, married May Hawkins.-524-

(K) Walter Scott Smith, born Feb. 20, 1875, died 1877., buried at Mt. Zion, Friendship, Tenn.

## 507 (See 915, 916, 917)

-506-A- Dr. Millard McFarland Smith, born Sept. 15, 1851 at Sugar Tree, Tenn., died October 4, 1908, married Alabama (Allie) Hinkle, born Jan. 20, 1851, at Dyersburg, Tenn., died Feb. 4, 1903. Both are buried at Whiteville, Tenn. Children:

(A) George D. Lothair Smith, married Anne Lindsay Kale.-508-

(B) Valeix Smith, born Oct. 12, 1875, died Aug. 15, 1885.

(C) Almonta A Smith, married Augusta May (Gussie) Stairwalt of Marked Tree, Ark.-509-

(D) Esther Veturia Smith, married Albert D. Dickerson.-510-

(E) Auber Smith, married Virgie Kinney.-511-

(F) Lebert Smith, married Edna Chambers.-512-

(G) Colice Smith, married Frederick McConkey.-513-

(H) Millard McFarland Smith Jr., married Elizabeth (Betsy) Turner.-514-

## 508 (See 917)

-507-A-George D. Lothair (Lothair) Smith, born at Cedar Chapel, Tenn., August 19, 1873, married Anne Lindsay Kale, daughter of John Sanders Lindsay and his wife, Margaret (Rice) Lindsay. She was born July 26, 1877, and lived at Louisville, Ky. Home address: First and Warburton Streets, Bayside, Long Island, N. Y., business address: Equitable Building, New York, N. Y. Mrs. Smith has a daughter, Mary Margaret Kale, born June 24, 1901, by her former husband.

## 509 (See 917)

-507-C-Almonta A. Smith, born Dec. 8, 1877, at Cedar Chapel, Tenn., married Augusta May (Gussie) Stairwalt, born July 11, 1883, at Timothy, Ill., daughter of Nancy Emmaline Wright Stairwalt and Joseph Stairwalt, Marked Tree, Arkansas. Manager of Chapman-Dewey Lumber Company. Children:

(A) Alta Ardene Smith, born July 1, 1902.

(B) Alice Ethelyne Smith, born July 21, 1904

**510 (See 917)**

-507-D-Esther Veturia Smith, born June 13, 1880, Cedar Chapel, Tenn., married Albert D. Dickerson, Dec. 28, 1906. He was born at Lynchburg, Va., manager of A. D. Dickerson Tobacco Co., Paducah Ky. Children: Ann- Alice Dickerson, born Sept. 24, 1908, died the same day.

**511 (See 917)**

-507-F-Auber Smith, born March 15, 1882, Cedar Chapel, Tenn., married Virgie Kinney of Bolivar, Tenn. Insurance and with A. B. Smith Lumber Company, Jefferson Street, Paducah, Ky. Children:

(A) Eleanor Smith, October 12, 1907.

(B) David Smith, Nov. 15, 1910.

**512 (See 917)**

-507-G-Lebert Smith, born March 7, 1884, Cedar Chapel, Tenn., married Alice Edna Chambers, born April 23, 1885, Boonville, Miss., daughter of Joseph Daniel Chambers and Josephine Kramer Chambers, his wife. Travels for Shopleigh Hardware Co. of St. Louis, Mo. They reside at Boonville, Miss. Children:

(A) Rubert Taylor Chambers Smith, born March 30, 1909.

(B) Hummel E. Smith, born December 16, 1910.

**513 (See 917)**

-507-H-Collice Smith, born May 15, 1887, Cedar Chapel, Tenn., married Frederick McConkey, son of George S. and Mary Jane McConkey, merchant tailor, 30 Victoria street, Toronto, Canada. Children: twin girls, Collice Eilene and Esther Jane McConkey, born February, 1915. Residence, 34 Glenrose Avenue, Toronto, Canada.

**514 (See 917)**

-507-I-Lieutenant Millard McFarland Smith, born Cedar Chapel, Tenn., June 30, 1892, World War Veteran, Land Department, Chicago Lumber and Mills Company, 1518 Bank of Commerce Building, Memphis, Tenn., married Elizabeth (Betsy) Turner of Ashburn Tenn, on April 28, 1921.

**515 (See 918)**

-506-D-DR. RICHARD FILMORE SMITH-  
ALICE HETTIE LANG BUCKLY TABLE

Dr. Richard Filmore Smith, born Oct. 4, 1856, Friendship, Tenn., died January 19, 1896, buried Deport, Texas, married Alice Buckley, daughter of John Harris Buckley and

Mary Coleman Terry Buckley, died March 19, 1922, buried at San Antonio, Texas. Children:

(A) Alice Irene Smith, born Friendship, Tenn., August 3, 1879, married Alvin Priestly Bradford, traveling salesman, 320 Baltimore Ave., San Antonio, Texas. Children: Alvin Priestly Bradford Jr., born July 1, 1906; William Richard Bradford, born July 17, 1908; James Edwin Bradford, Dec. 4, 1912.

(B) Mary Gertrude Smith, born Oct. 20, 1882, Friendship, Tenn., single, nurse, Delhi, California.

(C) Richard Buckley Smith, born July 16, 1885, married Leta Ford, born Graves County, Ky., April 17, 1887, daughter of Tolbert Emerson Ford and Julia Sturman Ford. City salesman for T. E. Ford Wholesale Grocery, Paducah, Ky. Children: Richard Tolbert Smith, born May 24, 1905; Daisy Maurine Smith, born July 2, 1910, Leta June Smith, born June 18, 1917.

(D) Dr. Smith and wife had five children who died in infancy and John Orion Smith, born Oct. 19, 1882, died at Trinity, Texas, 1912, single.

**519 (See 920)**

-506-E-Prof. John Devergie Smith, Jr., born at Friendship, Tenn., Feb. 4, 1858, married Lina Warren, daughter of Newton C. Warren and Susan G. Mitchel Warren, his wife, grand-daughter of Major Thos. Mitchel, who held the rank of Major in the war of 1812. Lina Warren was born, lived and died near Friendship, Tenn. One child Lina Smith, born Jan. 6, 1884, died Oct. 21, 1884. Lina died a few days after birth of child.

Prof. Smith in 1889 moved to Paducah, Ky., and there married Laura Lee Allard (see sketch for her ancestors (920)). They reside at 408 North Third Street. He is a book-keeper.

**520 (See 921)**

-506-F-BENJAMIN FRANKLIN SMITH-  
IZORA BOND TABLE

Benjamin Franklin Smith, born July 12, 1851, at Friendship, Tenn., died October 5, 1919, at Birmingham, Alabama, and was buried there. He had been for years locomotive engineer of the Frisco Railroad. He married Izora Bond of Bells Depot, Tenn., in 1881, moved to Bells Depot in 1882, later to Paducah, Kentucky, and about 1898, moved to Birmingham, Alabama. In the fall of 1921 his wife wrote us that she was moving to Canada at that time. Children are:

(A) Lavelle Smith, born in Paducah, Ky., about 1885, lives at 430 North Street, Bir-

mingham, Alabama. She married Mr. Fitzpatrick, a very high-toned gentleman. He is connected with the fire department of Birmingham. They have a son and daughter.

(B) Orea Mea Smith, Larimie, Wyoming, married William R. Fisher. His people lived at Louisville, Ky. We have never met him. His father-in-law, our brother, spoke very highly of him to us. He owns and operates the railroad restaurant at Larimie, Wyoming. They have one son: Wade Franklin Fisher, born Dec. 26, 1904. He will be graduated from College at Denver, Colorado, in June and will then take Civil Engineering in University of Wyoming. Orea Mea is very devoted to her father and in her letters always makes mention of him.

(C) Allie L. Smith was born in Paducah, Ky. She married Mr. Peacock who then was a railroad conductor in Birmingham. There was one child, Mildred Peacock, born about 1915. She is a widow and for some years has been bookkeeper for Armour and Co., Birmingham, Ala., and lived with her mother at 104 North Pearl St., Birmingham, Ala. She probably went with her mother to Canada if she moved.

(D) Benjamin Franklin Smith Jr. born in Paducah, Ky., went to Canada a few years ago. He is married and is said to be in the Secret Service Department.

(E) Gilbert Dobbs Smith, lived at 104 North Pearl Street, Birmingham, but is probably with the mother.

(F) Boyd Smith, lived at 104 North Pearl Street, Birmingham, Ala., but is probably with the mother. Benjamin Franklin Smith, Sr., at the time of his death was making his home with his daughter, Mrs. Lavelle (Smith) Fitzpatrick, at 430 North Street, Birmingham, Alabama.

#### 521 (See 922)

-506-G-DR. JULIUS ALEXANDER SMITH  
-NETTIE WARDEN WILSON TABLE

Dr. Julius Alexander Smith, born Friendship, Tenn., January 19, 1866. Physician and Surgeon, 1230 N. King St., Greenville, Texas. Married Nettie Warden Wilson of Paducah, Ky., daughter of Henry Clay Warden and the widow of Dr. Wilson, deceased. Her grandfather, Charles Claiborn Collier, born in Richmond, Va., about 1825, married Nancy Bennie Stokes of Pittsburg, Pa., the daughter of a wealthy furniture manufacturer. To this union there were six daughters, the second one was named Virginia Collier, born May 15, 1848, who married Henry Clay Warden of Paducah, Ky., born Feb. 28, 1844. He was the son of Lewis Warden and Ruth

Peters, his wife. Charles Claiborn Collier came to Paducah, Ky., early in its history, was a merchant and operated a mill. He was one of the organizers of the First National Bank at Paducah, Ky., a man of temperate habits, firm in his conviction of right and wrong, and ever ready to do the right. See Historical No. 922 Children:

(A) Vina Smith, born Nov. 7, 1891, died in infancy, buried at Deport, Texas.

(B) Julius Alexander Smith, Jr., born July 7, 1893, died Dec. 25, 1895, buried at Colorado Springs, Colorado.

(C) Ruby Ruth Smith, born January 11, 1894, resides at 727 Paseo Boulevard, Kansas City, Mo., married Frank J. Dickinson, clerical, grandson of Judge Charles Nowland of St. Joseph, Mo. He was born 1891 and was with the Ammunition Department of the Rainbow Division in France for two years. They were married in fall of 1921.

(D) William Jennings Bryan Smith was born Dec. 6, 1896, Tyler, Texas. He is a traveling salesman (Swift and Co.). He married Leslie Earl. One daughter, Helen Earl Smith, born Sept. 9, 1921. Bryan Smith enlisted in the World War. (See sketch No. 922.)

(E) John Devergie Clifford (Clifford) Smith, born July 5, 1896, World War veteran, (see 922) and is now working his way through College.

(F) Cecil Clay Smith, (see 922) born January 17, 1900, World War veteran, after leaving the public schools of Greenville for one year attended Wesley College. In the winter of 1921 he married Gussie Othell Cox. She was born May 23, 1882, in Milner County, Texas. She graduated from Wesley College, Greenville, Texas, and taught school one year at Ranger, Texas. Her father, John W. A. Cox, was born April 5, 1880, at Athens, Tenn. We think he runs a Business College at Granger, Texas. His wife, Fannie Spence, was born May 23, 1882. She is a descendant of Daniel Boone. Othell is the oldest child of four girls and one boy.

(G) Esther May Smith, born January 30, 1901, died Feb. 1, 1901.

(H) Dwight Moody Smith, born May 11, 1906.

(I) Virginia Veturia Smith, born about 1904.

(J) Lucy Elizabeth Smith, born June 11, 1907.

#### 522 (See 923)

-506-H-William Thomas Smith, born Friendship, Tenn., Dec. 26, 1868, Compiler of this book, traveling adjuster, International Harvester Company of America, personal mail, Imperial Hotel, Evansville, Indiana.

## 523 (See 924)

-506-I-Lucy Elizabeth (Bettie) Smith, born July 24, 1870, Friendship, Tenn. Married Kern Hughes, from whom she separated. Residence, 102 North Gramercy Street, Los Angeles California. Bookkeeper.

## 524 (See 925)

-506-J-Weightman Smith, born Friendship, Tenn., May 7, 1873. Married May Hawkins, born Nov. 15, 1877, daughter of Hiram and Lucy Hawkins, Paducah, Ky. Residence, 959 Indian Rock Road, Berkley, California. sales manager, California Canning Company. They have one son, Weightman Smith, Jr., born May 12, 1912.

## 525 (See 926)

## -505-A-WILLIAM THOMAS SMITH-SUSAN WILLIAMS-ARSTALIA HOY TABLE

William Thomas Smith, born July 8, 1820, Lilesville, N. C., with parents moved seven miles northwest of Lexington, Tenn., reaching there April 27, 1838. He died on adjoining farm, March 16, 1897, engaged in farming all of his life. Susan Williams, his first wife, was born in N. C., daughter of John R. Williams, who went to Henderson County, Tenn., from N. C. After her death he married Arstalia Hoy, daughter of William and Millie Hoy, who came from near Lexington, Ky. All buried at Ridge Grove, Henderson County, Tenn. Children by Susan Williams:

(A) Geneva Smith, died in infancy.

(B) Ellen Smith, born 1846, married Lemuel Douglass. Both dead. Born to them: Nancy Douglass, about 1885, married John Hemphill, farmer, Lexington, Tenn.; twins, Dora Douglass who died in infancy, and Maggie Douglass, Lexington, Tenn.

Children by Arstalia Hoy:

(C) Susan Arthusia Smith, born January 31, 1845, married Benjamin Anderson, moved to Comancie, Comancie County, Texas. She died about 1895. Children: William Henry Anderson, born April 15, 1870, dead; Mary Arstalia Anderson, born Oct. 20, 1873, died in infancy; Joan Anderson, born March 20, 1877, went to Texas; Leona Anderson, born Feb. 5, 1880, went to Texas; James Hester Anderson, born March 16, 1883, went to Texas; Luther Anderson, born June 20, 1885, died about 1910. No issue.

(D) William Thomas Smith, Jr., born Dec. 20, 1851, married twice. No issue. Last wife, Florence Bollen Smith, Camden, Tenn.

(E) John Tyre Smith, born July 1, 1848, lived and died in Henderson County, Tenn., died 1916; farmer, married Nancy Beal, born

Feb. 23, 1855, Lexington, Tenn. Children: Charles Thomas Smith, born Oct. 8, 1877, R.R. 5, Lexington, Tenn., married Dolly Dew. Issue: Birdie Smith, Oct. 1905, and Thomas Smith, March, 1911. Montie Lee Smith, second child of John Tyre Smith, born Feb. 7, 1886, died Sept. 8, 1888.

(F) James Samuel Smith, born March 13, 1858, farmer, R.R. 5, Lexington, Tenn., married Francis Adams, granddaughter of Levi Adams, one of the earliest settlers of that county. Children: E. G. W. Smith, born Sept. 11, 1911, died Nov. 6, 1911; Van Christopher Smith, Feb. 12, 1913; and Bonney Elizabeth Smith, born Dec. 5, 1913.

## 525 B

Born to Ellen Smith and Lemuel B. Douglass (in addition to the above Nancy Douglass) three children: Mattie Douglass, born about 1870, married Pat Wilson, R.R. 5, Lexington, Tenn., farmer. She is dead. One son, Samuel Wilson, born about 1900, R.R. 5, Lexington, Tenn., William Douglass, dead, married Mary Fuller, born about 1881, Juno, Tenn. Three children: the oldest is a school teacher. Emma Douglass, born about 1861, married first Dis McClerkin, dead. Issue: Samuel McClerkin, born about 1886, farmer, Juno, Tenn. Second husband, William Johnson. One child and husband died. Third husband, Benjamin King, dead. She lives with son, Samuel McClerkin.

## 526

## -505-F-NANCY ELLEN SMITH-JAMES ROBERTSON FESSMIRE TABLE

Nancy Ellen Smith, born Lilesville, N. C., January 5, 1833. With parents, moved to Henderson County, Tenn., April, 1838, died 1884. Married James Robertson Fessmire, born 1830, died, July 18, 1912, both buried at Antioch graveyard, Henderson County, Tenn. Lived at Huron, farmer. Children:

(A) Milton Hartwell Fessmire, married Elizabeth Threadgill.-527-

(B) Lucy Ellen Fessmire, married Wyatt Taylor Threadgill.-528-

(C) Mary Caroline Fessmire, married William George Wallace.-529-

## 527

-526-A-Milton Hartwell Fessmire, born March 19, 1853, farmer, Huron, Tenn. On Dec. 5, 1875, married Elizabeth Threadgill, born 1852, died 1905. Children:

(A) Lonie Burton Fessmire, died at age of three.

(B) Joseph Waller Fessmire, killed in a railroad accident in Texas in 1911, while on



duty as conductor, leaving a wife but no issue.

(C) William Duncan Fessmire, born about 1890, railroad fireman, Jackson, Tenn., married Della Usery. Three children:

(D) Claud Fessmire, Jackson, Tenn., married Alice Oconlery. Two children; Luray, 1916; Milton, 1918.

(E) Jacen Allen Fessmire, married Girty Odell, Jackson, Tenn.

## 528

-526-B-Lucy Ellen Fessmire, born, lived and died in Henderson County, Tenn. Born April 1, 1857, died Nov. 28, 1916, married Dec. 30, 1875, to Wyatt Taylor Threadgill, Lexington, Tenn. Lumber. Children:

(A) Newton Swift Threadgill, married Callie Kennedy-A-

(B) James Washington Threadgill, married Ella Mullins-B-

(C) Holland Threadgill, married Lala Brown -C-

## A

-A-A-Newton Swift Threadgill, railroad, Lexington, Tenn., born January 30, 1878, married Callie Kennedy. Children:

Clara Evangeline Threadgill, born May 31, 1899, married Roy Holmes, Pressing Club, Lexington, Tenn.; Stella Blanch Threadgill, born March 23, 1901, clerical in Post Office; Mary Lou Ellen Threadgill, born March 2, 1903; Wyatt Taylor Threadgill born April 24, 1905; and Catherine Threadgill, born January 10, 1908.

## B

-B-B-James Washington Threadgill, born Dec. 24, 1879, lumber and building material, Lexington, Tenn., married Ella Mullins. Five children: Mary Ellen Threadgill, 1906; Coda Lou Threadgill, born 1908; Paul Reed Threadgill, born 1912; James Elton Threadgill, born 1914; and John Wyatt Threadgill, born January 30, 1917.

## C

-C-C-Holland Threadgill, lumber & building material, Lexington Tenn., born August 26, 1882, married Lala Brown of Jackson, Tenn. Children: Ruth Elizabeth Threadgill, born about 1910; Evaline Angeline Threadgill, born about 1914.

## 529

-526-C-Mary Caroline Fessmire, now an invalid since 1904, born Dec. 2, 1861, married in 1880, William George Wallace, Life, Tenn., farmer. Children:

(A) Sudie Lee Wallace, born 1881, married Manly W. Ross, farmer, Life, Tenn. Three children: one dead; Joe Wallace Ross, dead;

Rubie Ross, born about 1898, married Edward Smith, farmer, Vilda, Tenn.

(B) Daisy Belle Wallace, born 1883, married Leondas Gilliam, farmer, Life, Tenn. Children: Eunice Gilliam, born about 1904; Louise Gilliam, born about 1906; Lee Gilliam, born about 1908; and Lula May Gilliam, born about 1915.

(C) Wm. George Wallace, born about 1885, married Lizzie Morgan, Pinson, Tenn., farmer.

## 530 (See 927)

## -505-G-ELI TYRE SMITH-FRANCIS ELIZABETH YORK TABLE

Eli Tyre Smith, born, Anson County, N. C., April 13, 1831, died August 13, 1885, buried, Friendship, Tenn., farmer, married on Nov. 25, 1857, Francis Elizabeth York, born in Dyer County, Tenn., Nov. 27, 1840, daughter of John H. York. John H. York, the father, was born in Edgecombe County, N. C., Sept. 16, 1816; was one of two children of John York and his wife Mary (Walker) York. W. E. York, brother of John H. York, settled at Athen, Georgia. John York Sr. was born in Nash County, N. C. about 1773, and was first married to Mary Walker, who was born in Edgecombe County, N. C. The mother of Francis Elizabeth York was, before her marriage, Sara A. Feilder, born in Caswell County, N. C., 1818. Francis Elizabeth York Smith resides at Friendship, Tenn. Children:

(A) Sarah Ellen Smith, born Aug. 5, 1858, died June 8, 1860.

(B) Mary Etter Smith, born Nov. 28, 1859, married James Harvey Bessent.-532-

(C) Lucy Ann Smith, born Feb. 2, 1863, died Aug. 22, 1898, married James VanDyke.-531-

## 531

-530-C-Some two or three years after the marriage of Lucy Ann Smith and James VanDyke there was born a daughter, May. Some few years later there was an estrangement and finally a separation of the parents. May went with her mother and sided with her mother in the controversy. She refused to answer to the name of VanDyke and has ever since been called May Smith. She lives with her grandmother at Friendship, Tenn. She is single.

## 532

## -530-B-MARY ETTER SMITH-JAMES HARVEY BESSENT TABLE

Mary Etter Smith was born and has always lived in Dyer County, Tenn., near Tygret, her present address. On Nov. 30, 1880, she married James Harvey Bessent, born June 9,



1858, in Dyer County, farmer, and killed in an automobile accident March 20, 1919, at Nashville, Tenn., while on business as a member of the Legislature. He was buried at Mt. Zion, Friendship, Tenn. Children:

(A) James Harvey Bessent, born Feb. 28, 1886, died Sept. 1886.

(B) James F. Bessent, born Jan. 3, 1884, died Aug. 1, 1884.

(C) William D. Bessent, born July 18, 1888, died Sept. 8, 1892.

(D) Fannie Bessent, born Dec. 11, 1881, died Sept. 4, 1889.

(E) Pleasant Eli Bessent, born June 5, 1882, married Lizzie Harville.-E-

(F) Seaborn Y. Bessent, born Dec. 11, 1893, married Willie Green.-F

(G) Martha Elizabeth Bessent, born Feb. 28, 1895.

(H) Flake Smith Bessent, born October 22, 1898, farmer, at home.

(I) Mary Lou Bessent, born January 31, 1902

## E

-E-E-Pleasant Eli Bessent, merchant, Friendship, Tenn., married Lizzie Harville, daughter of Joseph Harville and Kate Young Harville, and granddaughter of Rev. Thomas Harville, and Rev. Clint Young, both Methodist ministers, both very devout and of the highest type of citizens who lived in that community in their lifetime. Children: Ewell E. Bessent; Lucille Bessent, born Aug. 1, 1912; Thomas Eli Bessent, born 1914.

## F

-F-F-Seaborn Y. Bessent resides at Senneth, Mo., married Willie Green of Dyer County, Tenn. Children: James T. Bessent, born March 30, 1915; George Bessent, born Sept. 1, 1916, died at birth; Martha Elizabeth Bessent, born Sept. 20, 1917.

## 533

### -505-C-SUSAN SMITH- WILLIAM RHODES TABLE

They were perhaps born between 1830 and 1840, married in Henderson County, Tenn., moved to Cuba, Graves County, Ky., and died there about 1880 or 1890. Children:

(A) Neal S. Brown Rhodes, married Susan Graves.-534-

(B) Pyles Rhodes, married Manerva Chambers, and, if living, they are perhaps in Graves County, Ky.

(C) Holland Smith Rhodes, dead. No issue.

(D) Benjamin Rhodes, said to have married and later died.

(E) Millard Rhodes, said to have married and later died.

(F) Elijah Rhodes, said to have died single.

(G) Homer Rhodes, said to have died single.

(H) Newton Rhodes, said to have married and left several children in Graves County, Ky.

## 534

-533-A-Neal S. Brown Rhodes, born about 1848, in Henderson County, Tenn., died Feb. 28, 1919, buried Lexington, Tenn., married Susan Graves, born about 1848, died about 1895. Children:

(A) William Rhodes, married, died about 1895, leaving one son, Fielder Rhodes, born about 1898, veteran in the World War, residence, Avery, Texas.

(B) Molly Rhodes, married Chris Harden, farmer, Lexington, Tenn. She died about 1813.-535-

(C) Charles Abraham Rhodes, born Dec. 4, 1876, married Lou Annie Ringo.-536-

(D) Lizzie Rhodes, married John Fessmire.-537-

## 535

-534-B-Molly Rhodes, born about 1875, married Chris. Harden, farmer, Lexington, Tenn. She died about 1913. Children:

(A) William Harden, farmer, Jackson, Tenn.

(B) Walter Harden, born about 1898, farmer, Jackson, Tenn.

(C) Thomas Harden, born about 1900, farmer, Jackson, Tenn., married Esther Harden and have one child: Jefferson Davis Harden.

(D) Rose Harden, born about 1903, R.R. Lexington, Tenn.

(E) Dollie Harden, born about 1908, R.R. 5, Lexington, Tenn.

(G) Sudie Harden, born about 1911, R.R. 5, Lexington, Tenn.

## 536

-534-C-Charles Abraham Rhodes, R.R. 5, Lexington, Tenn., married Lou Annie Ringo, born 1871, farmer. Children:

(A) Lula May Rhodes, born Aug. 1897, died Aug. 28, 1897.

(B) Jesse Rhodes, born Sept. 10, 1899, R.R. 5, Lexington, Tenn., farmer.

(C) Modie Rhodes, born July 10, 1902, died Aug. 18, 1903.

(D) Cecil Rhodes, born Aug. 10, 1904.

## 537

-534-D-Lizzie Rhodes, born about 1881, Lexington, Tenn., married John Fessmire, farmer. Five children:

(A) Elvis Fessmire, born about 1898, married Lila McDaniel.

(B) Dee Fessmire, born about 1900, single.

(C) Margary Fessmire, born about 1903,

married Jesse Cody, farmer, Wilderville, Tenn.  
(D) Pastell Fessmire, born about 1911.  
(E) Edward Fessmire, born about 1913.

**537A**

-505-E-Martha Jane Smith, born about 1831, married Park Rhodes of Henderson County, Tenn. She died in Henderson County a good many years ago. Park Rhodes then went to Deport, Texas, thence to Oklahoma and is probably dead. They are said to have had sons by the name of Thomas Rhodes, now dead; Ehridge Rhodes, now dead, and John Rhodes, who is thought to have settled near Cunningham, Texas, and there died. Lucy Rhodes, a daughter of Martha Jane Smith and Park Rhodes was about three weeks old when her mother died. She is thought to have gone to Oklahoma and married but we do not know the name of her husband. Her daughter, Mary is thought to have married a Mr. Williamson and moved to near Aberdeen, Texas.

**538 (See 928)****-505-H-ELIJAH FLAKE SMITH-LYDIA ARGO TABLE.**

Elijah Flake Smith, born in Anson County, N. C., July 5, 1837, died June 2, 1920, was buried at Deport, Texas. He married Lydia Argo, who died in 1892. He later married Mary McGrow but had no children by her.

**539**

-538-Born to Elijah Flake Smith and Lydia Argo:

(A) Sarah E. Smith, married James Cullen Loven.-539C-

(B) Eliza A. Smith, married W. R. Pertle.-539B-

(C) Lucy A. Smith, married Wake Grant.-539A-

**539A**

-539-A-Lucy A. Smith, born in Henderson County, Tenn., Nov. 8, 1866, died and was buried in Deport, Texas. She married Wake Grant who now lives at Phoenix, Arizona. Children: Magie Grant, dead; Oinine Grant; and Autry Grant, who married a Mr. Rogers. They live with the father.

**539B**

-539-B-Eliza A. Smith was born in Henderson County, Tenn., January 22, 1861, died and was buried at Deport, Texas. She married W. R. Pertle who now lives in California. Two children, Ollie Pertle, and Rose Pertle, who married a Mr. Woodard, live with him.

**539C**

-539-C-Sarah A. Smith was born in Henderson County, Tenn., May 3, 1859, and married

James Cullen Loven who was born 1855. He is a wealthy planter and they live about one mile from Deport, Texas. Born to them:

(A) Ora Loven, married Pullum Loven.-539H-

(B) Roby Loven, married Oma Bean.-539G-

(C) Lou Loven, married Sid Parks.-539F-

(D) Otto Loven, married Mary Bean.-539E-

(E) Maxie Loven, married Tomie Cherry.-539D-

(F) Ethel Loven, born Feb. 16, 1897, married Cyril Creecy on Sept. 12, 1920. He is a telegraph operator.

(G) Minnie Loven, died at age of 11.

(H) Ruby Loven, died at age of 7

**539D**

539 C-E-Maxie Loven, born Nov. 2, 1892, farmer, Deport, Texas, married Tomie Cherry, daughter of Mr. and Mrs. Cem Cherry. Children:

(A) Ora Catherine Loven, born Aug. 25, 1915.

(B) C. F. Loven, born March 26, 1917.

(C) Robie Doris Loven, born July 30, 1919.

**539E**

539 C-D-Otto Loven, born March 5, 1894, telegraph operator, Newline, Texas, on Sept. 18, 1910 married Mary Bean, daughter of Mr. and Mrs. Sam Bean of Deport, Texas. Children:

(A) Julian Loven, born April 14, 1912.

(B) Francis Loven, born Dec. 14, 1918.

(C) William J. W. Loven.

**539F**

539 C-C-Lou Loven, born Feb. 22, 1887, married Sid Parks, born Oct. 12, 1887, son of Mr. and Mrs. John Parks. He owns a 160 acre farm on which they live near Deport, Texas. Children:

(A) Randall Parks and (B) Frankie Parks, both small in 1921.

**539G**

-539 C-B-Roby Loven, born July 6, 1885, architect, Deport, Texas, married Oma Bean, April 18, 1909. She was born June 22, 1889, daughter of Mr. and Mrs. Samuel Bean of Deport, Texas. Children:

(A) James Loven, born June 18, 1915,

(B) Aline Loven, born March 7, 1911.

(C) Hobolt Loven, born April 28, 1914.

**539H**

-539 C-A-Ora Loven was born Feb. 2, 1882, married Pullum Wallace, cotton broker, 92 South 25th Street, Paris, Texas. He was born July 4, 1879, son of W. J. and Bettie Wallace. Children:

(A) Edna Wallace, born August, 1903, who in 1920, attended Burleson College in Greenville, Texas, is now, 1921, attending school in Boston, Mass. She expects to graduate from Curry School of Expression and from New England Conservatory of Music.

(B) Morris Wallace, born June 16, 1905; student.

## 540

-504-B-NAOMI ELIZABETH SMITH-  
JAMES CAPEL TABLE

Naomi Elizabeth Smith, born about 1796 in Anson County, N. C., lived, died and was buried in that county. She married James Capel, farmer, sometime during or prior to 1820. In that year her father, Thomas Smith, gave her two tracts of land, and probably gave her some slaves as he did to his son. Children:

(A) Naomi Capel, married Andrew Thomas and went to Alabama, Oct. 26, 1884. Bettie Thomas wrote a letter for her father, G. W. Thomas, who was a son of Naomi Capel Thomas. The letter was dated Loffin, Russell County, Alabama.

(B) Nancy Capel, married William Bird. -548-

(C) Martha (Patsy) Capel, married Burrell Henly of Anson County. -541-

## 541

-540-C-MARTHA (PATSY) CAPEL-  
BURRELL HENLY TABLE

Martha (Patsy) Capel, born Sept. 20, 1820, died Nov. 1, 1905, married Burrell Henly, who died in Anson County, N. C., 1856. Children:

(A) Elizabeth Henly, born Feb. 1841, died 1919, married William Eason. Johnson Eason, a son, born 1861, lives at Hamlet, N. C., married Addie Aegleton, have four children: Chester Eason, married; Charlton Eason; James Eason; and daughter, Rossie Eason.

(B) James Thomas Henly, born Nov. 3, 1843, died March 1, 1918, buried in Anson County, married Martha Briely, born Nov. 12, 1846. -543-

(C) Mattie Henly, born May 10, 1856, married Robert Biles. -542-

(D) Clay Henly, born April 12, 1845, died single about 1860.

## 542

-541-C-MATTIE HENLY-  
ROBERT BILES TABLE

Mattie Henly, Wadesboro, N. C., married Robert Biles, born 1856, died Oct. 5, 1919. Children:

(A) Etta Biles, born Sept. 22, 1882, on

Nov. 4, 1905, married Alonzo Redfern, merchant, Rowland, N. C. Three children: Mary V. Redfern, born August 15, 1906; Gertrude Redfern, born April 19, 1908; Robert Redfern, born March 16, 1910.

(B) James Clark Biles, born Oct. 24, 1888, married Rebecca Shurtleffe. They have two children: James Jr., born Feb. 14, 1915; Robert, born Nov. 3, 1919.

(C) Henry Alexander Biles, born Sept. 20, 1884, locomotive engineer, Minden, La., married Fay Drury.

(D) Mira Biles, born Nov. 6, 1886, married Fisher Lockhart, farmer, Polkton, N. C. One child: Kenneth Lockhart, born Oct. 4, 1911.

(E) Annie Biles, born Dec. 26, 1890, married Clyde Martin, railroad, Minden, La.

(F) Bessie Biles, born Feb. 11, 1893, married John B. Martin, farmer, Morvan, N. C. Children: Laura May Martin, born May 11, 1911; Haywood Martin, born Dec. 16, 1913; Annie Louise Martin, born June 12, 1915.

## 543

-541-B-JAMES THOMAS HENLY-  
MARTHA BRIELY TABLE

James Thomas Henly, born, lived, and died in Anson County, married Martha Briely. Children:

(A) Robert Franklin Henly, born May 3, 1868, married Alice Woollen, born Dec. 14, 1888. -547-

(B) Henry Henly, born Aug. 27, 1873, hardware store, Spartenburg, S. C. Single.

(C) Susanna Henly, born Oct. 9, 1870, married Frank Grady. -545-

(D) Irene Henly, born January 24, 1876, married Thomas Gandy. -546-

(E) James Jordan Henly, born Nov. 11, 1878, married Kate Hemby. -544-

(F) Burrell Edfar Henly, born Nov. 11, 1881, farmer, Wadesboro, N. C., married Euzelia Gullede.

(G) Caroline Henly, born June 6, 1884, married Henry Gullede Flake, Wadesboro, N. C., farmer. Children: Henry Clay Flake, born Nov. 1909; Thomas Marshall Flake, born Aug. 27, 1912; James Henly Flake, born Dec. 29, 1914; Frank Holmes Flake, born Dec. 25, 1916; Paul Flake, born June 1, 1920.

(H) Paul Huffman Henly, born June 24, 1887, automobile, Miami, Florida.

## 544

-543-E-James Jordan Henly, insurance, Marion, N. C., married Kate Henly. Children:

(A) James Everett Henly, born Dec. 25, 1907.

(B) William Dorsey Henly, born January 2, 1920.

## 546

-543-D-Irene Henly on Oct. 1, 1918 married Thomas Abel Gandy, born Oct. 10, 1876, car inspector, Wadesboro, N. C. He is a son of James LaFayette Gandy and Elizabeth (Bettie) Smoot, his wife, and a grandson of Abel Gandy and Louvina Johnson, his wife, and of Thomas Smoot and Sarah Thomas, his wife. One child: Thomas Ena Gandy, born Dec. 1, 1920.

## 547

-543-A-Robert Franklin Henly, merchant, Hickory, N. C., married Alice Woollen. Three children:

(A) Alene Henly, born Sept. 5, 1890, on Oct. 1, 1919, married Rev. Cleide Walsh, a Presbyterian minister.

(B) Mary Shaw Henly, born March 28, 1892, on Dec. 27, 1915, married Lawrence Cline of Hickory, N. C. Children: Lawrence Cline, born Dec. 5, 1916; John Thomas Cline, born January 24, 1920.

(C) Hester Henly, born Dec. 7, 1895, married Charles Ellington, baker, Hickory, N. C. One child, Charles Henly Ellington, born January 14, 1918.

## 548

-540-B-NANCY CAPEL-  
WILLIAM BYRD TABLE

Nancy Capel, born, lived, died and was buried in Anson County, N. C., married William Byrd. Children:

(A) William Byrd, Jr., born 1846, married Roxie Livingston.-549-

(B) Fannie Byrd, married Charles West and moved to Atlanta, Ga.

(C) Saphronia Byrd, born 1854, died 1911, married George Smith, who lives in Moore County, N. C.

(D) Charles Byrd, born 1858, Gilead, Montgomery County, N. C., married Maggie Green.

(E) Sallie Byrd, born 1852, married Albert Boggan, Rockingham, N. C.

(F) Mattie Byrd, born 1848, Mount Gilead, Montgomery County, N. C.

(G) Ann Byrd, born 1839, married James Parker, dead; moved to Ocala, Florida.

## 549

-547-A-William Byrd, Jr., died 1918, buried in Anson County, N. C., married Roxie Livingston, Lilesville, N. C. Children:

(A) Minnie Elizabeth Byrd, Lilesville, N. C.

(B) Lela Byrd, married Charles Henry who died. She is manager of Southern Adjustment Insurance Co. at Charlotte, N. C. Agency.

(C) Roxie Corinna Byrd, married Albert Agerton, Pageland, S. C.

(D) Daisy Byrd, married John Jerrell, Mount Gilead, N. C. Five children: Frederick, John Rubert, Claud, Dougan, and Daisy Bell Jarrel.

(E) Eugenia Byrd, teacher, Lilesville, N. C.

(F) Kinnis Byrd, married William Adams, Morven, N. C. One child: William Rubert Adams.

(G) Rupert Byrd, born 1899, mechanic, Lilesville, N. C.

(H) Charles Maning Byrd, born 1900, mechanic, Lilesville, N. C.

(I) Julia Byrd in 1911 married William J. Lindsay, Lilesville, N. C. Children: Florence Capel Lindsay, Billy Boy Lindsay, Helen Byrd Lindsay.

## 550

-503-E-JAMES SMITH-  
MARY GATHINGS TABLE

James Smith, the son of John Smith, No. 2, soldier in the Revolutionary war, and of Mary Flake, his wife, and grandson of John Smith, No. 1, the Emigrant, and of Samuel Flake, the Emigrant, was born in Anson County, N. C., October 9, 1777, and died May 22, 1852 and was buried in that County. Like his brother, John Smith, he was a planter, and became a very large land holder and at his death was one of the wealthiest men in the county. Our father well remembered this uncle and had a good opinion of him. He married Mary Gathings, who was born on Dec. 6, 1787 and died January 17, 1859. Children were:

(A) Thomas Jefferson Smith, born July 17, 1810, married Mary W. Ledbetter.-551-

(B) Philip G. Smith, born March 28, 1806, married Ann E. Cheairs (also spelled Cheers in North Carolina).-578-

(C) Sarah Smith, born May 14, 1815, married Major James Bogan.-586-

(D) Eliza Smith, married Albert Thomas.-

(E) Mary Smith, born August 1, 1802, married Lemuel Kirby.-575

(F) Ellen Smith, married Winifree (also spelled Winfree) Meachum and went to Texas.-

(G) Winifred Smith, born Feb. 5, 1828, married Col. James C. Caraway.-580-

(H) William C. Smith, born April 25, 1824, married Mary Tillman.-583-

(I) John Smith, born June, 1808, died single.

(J) Harriette Jane Smith, married Henry Winston DeBerry.-569-

(K) James Smith, born Sept. 20, 1818, died single.

(L) Lewis Smith, born April 13, 1804, married Winifred (Wincie) Ingram. After his death, she married Martin Picket. One child.

She then married Absolum Ely. One child.  
She then married Young Allen. No issue.

#### 551 (See 938, 939)

-550-A-Thomas Jefferson Smith, born in Anson County, N. C., July 17, 1810, died January 18, 1887, buried at Mexia, Texas. On Dec. 21, 1832 he married Mary Washington Ledbetter, born Oct. 28, 1808, of Montgomery County, N. C., died July 14, 1882, at Plantersville, and is buried at Mexia, Texas. Children:

(A) Mary A. Smith, born Oct. 2, 1833, married Gen. Thomas Blake.-552-

(B) James Ledbetter Smith, born Oct. 15, 1840, married Eugenia Womack.-554- (See 941)

(C) Sallie Eliza Smith, married Sanford Gibbs.-558-

(D) Lewis Philip Smith, married Aurelia Walton.-556-

(E) William Charles Smith, born Dec. 19, 1848, in Anson County, N. C., died, January 7, 1849, buried in Anson County.

(F) Thomas Jefferson Smith, Jr., born Nov. 20, 1849, Anson County, N. C., died January 12, 1860, buried Plantersville, Texas.

(G) Henry Ledbetter Smith, born Oct. 2, 1842, died January 23, 1844.

#### 552

-551-A-Mary A. Smith, born Oct. 2, 1833, in Anson County, N. C., died Feb. 8, 1912, and was buried at Plantersville, Texas. She married Gen. Thomas Walter Blake, born at Fayetteville, N. C., about 1822, died January 14, 1905, buried at Plantersville, Texas. Children:

(A) Mary C. Blake, Feb. 18, 1872, died Nov. 6, 1915, single.

(B) Thomas Smith Blake, born Dec. 25, 1874, married Annie M. Harper, born July 14, 1888. They reside at Avenue P, Galveston, Texas and have one child: Thomas Smith Blake, Jr., born Feb. 17, 1919.

(C) Sallie Eugenia Blake, born, Nov. 3, 1876, single, Plantersville, Texas.

(D) James Philip Blake, born Aug. 31, 1873, died 1917, single.

#### 554 (See 941)

-551-B-James Ledbetter Smith, born Oct. 15, 1840, Anson County, N. C., died May 13, 1906, buried at Mexia, Texas; in 1868, married Eugenia (Genia) Womack, born July 2, 1851, of Plantersville, Texas. She resides in Mexia, Texas. Children:

(A) James Sanford Smith, born January 31, 1870, married Ruby Fay Kelly.-555-

(B) Mary Eugenia Smith, born Nov. 10, 1873, married James H. Steedman, born 1867, Norwood, Warren County, Georgia.

(C) Jesse Phillip Smith, born Feb. 4, 1878, married George Duffield, born Nov. 3, 1883, Mexia, Texas.-559-

(D) Sallie Fanny Smith, born Feb. 4, 1876, married Dr. J. L. Metcalf, dentist, born Sept. 29, 1875, Mexia, Texas.

(E) Benjamin Shaw Smith, born March 29, 1880, Mexia, Texas, married Natalie Machow.-560-

(F) William Blake Smith, born Feb. 22, 1882, Mexia, Texas, married LaNere Camp, born Oct. 29, 1887. (LaNere we take it is from that family in North Carolina. We find LaNere, LaNiere, and Lanier) There has been considerable said of Mr. Smith in the papers recently in the Oil world. From a clipping we took, we learn that he was the discoverer of oil in the Mexia field where that village grew in three years from 3000 to 30,000 people. That in 1912, nine tests were made and no oil found. With the Nottingham banker's blood in his veins, he was game and down went the tenth. Gas was then struck which was piped to Waco, Corisana, and to other cities.

He subsequently developed other properties and is one of the largest stockholders in the E. L. Smith Oil Company, which, in January, 1922, was producing 10,000 barrels daily, and was at that date drilling ten others. William Blake Smith also at that time had a royalty interest in fifty other wells. He is President of The City National Bank of Mexia, director in the Bank of Prendergrast, Smith and Co. organized by his father forty years ago. In January, 1922, he was devoting considerable of his time to the erection of a Y.M.C.A. building in Mexia. The paper says: "An odd fact about Mr. Smith is that none of the wealth of the usual newly made millionaire is evident. He is known about Mexia as "Blake" Smith and has no decorated mansion, merely occupying a bungalow on a quiet street. He refuses to think of moving to some city where he can live in more comfort, but explains that he was raised in Mexia and sees no reason for moving." One son, William Blake Smith Jr., born Feb. 18, 1912.

#### 555

-554-A-James Sanford Smith, Mexia, Texas, married Ruby Fay Kelly, born April 22, 1871. Children:

(A) James Fort Smith, born May 20, 1895, Mexia, Texas, married Lucie Garley, born June 19, 1889.

(B) Virginia Smith, born Dec. 19, 1899, Mexia, Texas, married Peter W. Cawthon, born 1898, Oak Cliff, Dallas, Texas. One son, Peter Jr., born Aug. 2, 1921.



(C) Emma Jean Smith, born July 22, 1909, Mexia, Texas.

### 556 (See 942)

-551-D-Lewis Philip Smith, born in Anson County, N. C., January 3, 1847, died Oct. 24, 1886, buried, Mexia, Texas. First he married Aurelia Walton, born July 18, 1751, died August 31, 1873. After her death he married Mattie Beeson, born January 24, 1855. She lives at Mexia, Texas. Children:

(A) Mary Walton Smith, born Sept. 12, 1870, married Dr. Robt. Lee Long. After his death she married Thomas A. White.-557-

(B) Thomas Frank Smith, Mexia, Texas, born Feb. 12, 1873, married Jasper Kate Gibbs, born April 8, 1878. They have two children: Maxwell Chandler Smith, born January 24, 1904, and Mary Ann Smith born Dec. 17, 1906.

Born to Lewis Philip Smith by his second wife, Mattie Beeson:

(C) Emma Aurelia Smith born Feb. 24, 1878, married Dr. Perry C. Baird and they have four children: Perry C. Baird, born July 8, 1903; James Garrity Baird, born Oct. 31, 1905; Martha Catherine Baird, born January 13, 1908; Lewis Philip Baird, born Feb. 28, 1920. They reside at 4603 Munger Ave., Dallas, Texas.

(D) Sallie Eugenia Smith, born Feb. 15, 1880, married Fred S. Torley Karner, born Sept. 24, 1878. One child, Frederika Stanley Karner, born Sept. 28, 1901., Mexia, Texas. (See 561)

(E) Luella Ross Smith, born June 7, 1885, died July 21, 1904.

(F) Philip Smith, now deceased and buried in Mexia, Texas.

### 557

-556-A-Mary Walton Smith, Mexia, Texas, by her first husband, Dr. Robt. Lee Long, deceased, has one child, Robert Lee Long Jr., born April 2, 1895, died Oct. 24, 1917. Thomas A. White, her present husband, merchant, Mexia, Texas, born July 24, 1865. One son by him, Leonard Philip White, born Sept. 16, 1900, Mexia, Texas.

### 558 (See 943, 944)

-551-C-Sallie Eliza Smith, born Oct. 18, 1844, Anson County, N. C., died May 27, 1913, buried Huntsville, Texas. January 31 1866 she married Sanford Gibbs, born July 7, 1819, Union District, S. C., died Sept. 30, 1886, buried Huntsville, Texas. They had seven children:

(A) Wilbourn Smith Gibbs, (See 945) born Nov. 12, 1866, died Sept. 17, 1921, buried Huntsville, Texas. June 26, 1900 at Jackson,

Miss. he married Annie Nugent, born May 10 \_\_\_\_\_, now residing at New Orleans, La. Three children: infant son, born June 30, 1904, died the same day; infant son, born March 28, 1906, died the same day; Wilbourn Sanford Gibbs, born Feb. 28, 1909, New Orleans, La.

(B) Mary Alla Gibbs (see 946), born August 11, 1868, at Huntsville, Texas, married Henderson Yoakum Robinson, Huntsville, Texas, real estate and investments, born July 8, 1864. They have two sons: Herndon Yoakum Robinson, born Oct. 28, 1904; Wilbourn Thomas Robinson, born Dec. 26, 1898.

(C) Thomas Clifton Gibbs, real estate and investments, Huntsville, Texas, born Feb. 7, 1870, on Sept. 20, 1893, married Jamesetta Hunt of Caldwell, Texas. (see 947) Five children: Thomas Clifton Gibbs Jr., born June 7, 1894, died June 7, 1894; Pauline Gibbs, born Oct. 14, 1896, on Nov. 19, 1919, married Jesse Vernon Butler, born Sept. 21, 1894; Cecile Gibbs, born Nov. 20, 1898; Edith Gibbs, born August 7, 1902; and Anne Kathleen Gibbs, born January 18, 1908. Pauline Gibbs Butler has one child, Pauline Butler.

(D) Sarah Sanford Gibbs (see 950), born Sept. 6, 1873, on Nov. 30, 1910, married Dr. Oscar Laertius Norsworthy, born Feb. 26, 1871, on Indian Creek Farm, Jasper, Texas. They reside at 3015 Main Street, Houston, Texas. Oscar Laertius Norsworthy Jr. was born Oct. 7, 1913, at Huntsville, Texas and died the following day.

(E) Dr. James Philip Gibbs, Huntsville, Texas, born April 3, 1875, Oct. 18, 1905 married Mary Brent McAshan, born Dec. 1, 1883, (see 948) and they have three children: Virginia Sanford Gibbs, born Nov. 23, 1906; Sarah Elizabeth Gibbs, born Oct. 1, 1910; James Philip Gibbs, born Oct. 9, 1916.

(F) Luteola Gibbs, born June 10, 1878, at Huntsville, Texas, on Nov. 18, 1903, married Henry Houston Hawley, born January 6, 1868, at Walla Walla, Washington, (see 949). He is a wholesale jeweler, Dallas, Texas. They reside at 5701 Gaston Avenue, Munger Place, Dallas Texas. Two children: Henry Houston Hawley Jr., born July 14, 1906; Sarah Alla Hawley, born March 30, 1918.

(G) Annie Ledbetter Gibbs, born July 10, 1883, died July 12, 1883, buried at Huntsville, Texas.

### 559

-554-C-Jesse Philip Smith, born Feb. 4, 1878, on Dec. 31, 1902 married George Duffield, born Nov. 5, 1883, at Franklyn, Penn. They reside at 5022 San Jacinto Street, Dallas, Texas. Children:



(A) Philip Duffield Smith, born March 20, 1905, died Sept. 11, 1907, buried at Dallas, Texas.

(B) George Duffield Smith, born Dec. 6, 1908, Dallas, Texas.

(C) Jack Womack Smith, born July 2, 1910, Dallas, Texas.

(D) Helen Frances Smith, born January 29, 1914, Dallas, Texas.

## 560

-554-E-Born to Benjamin Shaw Smith and Natalie Machon, his wife:

(A) James Ledbetter Smith, born August 19, 1905.

(B) Margaret Machon Smith, born Nov. 28, 1910.

(C) Benjamin Shaw Smith, born January 23, 1917.

## 561

-556-D-Frederika Starley Karner, born Sept. 28, 1901, graduated from the High School of Mexia, Texas, in 1919, as valedictorian of her class. She will finish in May, 1922 at the Colonial School for Girls, in Washington, D. C. In 1921 she won the scholarship prize in that school by reason of her high average. She is president of the senior class and in recognition of her worth, the faculty gave her the additional honor of a membership of the President's Council of that school.

## 569

-550-J-HARRIET JANE SMITH-  
HENRY WINSTON DEBERRY TABLE

Harriet Jane Smith, born July 22, 1817, Anson County, N. C., died April 16, 1862, married Henry Winston DeBerry, born Feb. 22, 1807, died Nov. 19, 1881, both buried in Anson County. Children:

(A) Edmond Jones DeBerry, born April 22, 1838, married Cornelia Ann Gains.-570-

(B) Mary Temperance DeBerry, born Dec. 12, 1840, married Thos. Diggs on Sept. 26, 1856.-

(C) Harriet Evelyn DeBerry, born Nov. 11, 1837, married Joseph Diggs.-572-

(D) Henry Preston DeBerry, married Sarah Ashe Spencer.-574-

(E) Alice Eleanor DeBerry, married Samuel Spencer.-573-

(F) James DeBerry, was killed as a Confederate soldier in the war.

(G) William DeBerry, was killed as a Confederate soldier in the war.

(H) Minnie and Sallie DeBerry, both died single.

## 570

-569-A-EDMOND JONES DEBERRY-  
CORNELIA ANN GAINES TABLE

Edmond Jones DeBerry, farmer, Pee Dee, N. C., married Cornelia Ann Gaines, born July 23, 1848. Children:

(A) William Henry DeBerry, born June, 1874, died 1893.

(B) James Gaines DeBerry, born April, 1878, farmer, Pee Dee, North Carolina.

(C) Edmond Jones DeBerry Jr., born January, 1882, railroad contractor, Pee Dee, N. C.

(D) Catherine Smith DeBerry, born Aug. 9, 1886, died March 29, 1905.

(E) Cornelia Marshall DeBerry, born March 29, 1888, school teacher, Salisbury, N. C.

(F) Julian Lamar DeBerry, born July, 1889, railroad, Pee Dee, N. C.

(G) Walter Montgomery DeBerry, born May, 1891, Pee Dee, N. C.

(H) Harriet Lillie DeBerry, born January, 1893, teller in bank, Charlotte, N. C.

(I) Mary Lightfoot DeBerry, born May 13, 1876, married George Alexander Fisher.-571-

## 571

-570-I-Mary Lightfoot DeBerry married George Alexander Fisher, born May 20, 1870, real estate, Salisbury, N. C. Children:

(A) Margaret DeBerry Fisher, born April 21, 1893, died Sept. 8, 1904.

(B) Catherine DeBerry Fisher, born March 9, 1905.

(C) George Alexander DeBerry, born Sept. 9, 1908.

## 572

-569-C-HARRIET EVELYN DEBERRY-  
JOSEPH DIGGS TABLE.

Joseph Diggs is dead. Children: Wayne Diggs, born about 1884, stockman, Rockingham, N. C., married Miss Covington. June Diggs, stockman, Rockingham, N. C., married and has children; Hattie Diggs, born about 1888, married Daniel McCall of Rockingham, N. C. Her husband travels out of Baltimore. Two boys, Churchill McCall and Daniel McCall; Addie Diggs, born about 1890, single; Evelyn Diggs, born about 1892, married Robert Steel, automobile salesman, Rockingham, N. C.

After the death of Joseph Diggs, Harriet Evelyn Diggs married Mr. Williams and he died. She lives with her children at Rockingham, N. C.

## 573

-569-E-ALICE ELEANOR DEBERRY-  
SAMUEL SPENCER TABLE.

Alice Eleanor DeBerry, born about 1852, dead. Married Samuel Spencer, born about 1849, also dead. Buried in Anson County, N.C. Children:

(A) John Spencer, born about 1883, farmer, Pee Dee, N.C., married Elizabeth Massemore.

(B) Vernona Spencer, born about 1887, machinist, Wadesboro, N. C.

(C) Alice May Spencer, born about 1892, school teacher, Pee Dee, N. C.

## 574

-569-D-Henry Preston DeBerry, born about 1850, farmer, Pee Dee, married Sarah Ashe Spencer. Two boys:

(A) John DeBerry, born about 1883, farmer Pee Dee, N. C.

(B) Henry DeBerry, born about 1885, Columbia, S. C.

## 575

-550-E-MARY SMITH-LEMUEL  
KIRBY TABLE.

Both dead. Lived in Anson County, N. C. Children:

(A) Milton Kirby, oldest son, was killed in the Mexican war and is thought to have been killed in battle.

(B) Sarah Smith Kirby, died single at an old age.

(C) William Kirby, was a Confederate soldier, captured and died in prison. No issue.

(D) Julia Ann Kirby, married John Fort. Both dead. No issue.

(E) Charlotte Kirby, married James McBride. Both dead. Julia McBride, the oldest child, married Joseph Watkins. Both dead. Margaret McBride died single. John McBride died without issue. A daughter of Joseph Watkins is said to have married Mr. Arat, a Baptist minister and gone to Texas. William Watkins married and went west. Robert Watkins lives in Anson County, N. C.

Sarah McBride, daughter of James McBride, married Calvin Covington, R. R. Wadesboro, N. C. She is dead. Children: Brack Covington born about 1887, out West, Sarah Covington, born about 1891, single, at home; Hampton Covington, born about 1899, single, at home; Calvin Covington, born about 1897, Wadesboro, N. C.

(F) Christopher Kirby, married Mary Fort. Both dead.

## 576

-575-F-CHRISTOPHER KIRBY-  
MARY FORT TABLE.

Children:

(A) Lemuel Kirby, dead, no issue.

(B) William Kirby, farmer, R. R. Lilesville, N. C., married Melvona Colson.-577-

(C) Temperance Kirby, born about 1859, dead. Married George Fort, farmer, Wadesboro, N. C. One daughter, Daisy Kirby Fort, born 1881. She married Julian A. Colson, carpenter, Ansonville, N. C. and has seven children: Gladdis Colson, born about 1900, telephone operator, Albermale, N. C.; Joseph Colson, born about 1902, Norfolk, Va.; Minnie Colson, born about 1904; Mary Colson, born about 1912; three small children.

## 577

-576-B-William Kirby, farmer, Lilesville, N. C., married Melvina Colson. Six children:

(A) John Kirby, married Helen Hough. He is a barber, Lilesville, N. C.

(B) Melvina Kirby, married William B. Flake, Hawkinsville, Georgia. One child: Kirby Flake, born, 1918.

(C) Mary Kirby, married Arthur Smith March 20, 1921, Hawkinsville, Georgia.

(D) Julian Kirby, postmaster, Lilesville, N. C. In the World War, went through the Argonne fight.

(E) Sarah Kirby, telephone operator, Rockingham, N. C.

(F) Clara Kirby, born about 1904.

## 578

-503-B-Philip Gathing Smith was born in Anson County, N. C., March 28, 1806. He there was elected and served a term in the Legislature. He married Ann E. Chairs, born Dec. 28, 1819. They moved to Chappel Hill, Texas. He died Sept. 7, 1867 and she died Nov. 18, 1866. They are buried at Chappel Hill. Children:

(A) Mary Smith, born Dec. 4, 1830, died Nov. 11, 1860, married George Gathings.

(B) James M. Smith, born April 26, 1833, married Pauline Burnett.

(C) Benjamin Smith, born April 25, 1853, died of yellow fever Oct. 8, 1867, single.

(D) Melissa Smith, born January 11, 1837, died of yellow fever in Sept. 1867.

(E) Thomas Smith, born March 3, 1839, in Anson County, N. C., on July 24, 1867 married Mattie Randle, born June 13, 1849. He died January 1904 and she died January 13, 1879. Both buried at Brenham, Texas. (See sketch of them 940). (See 579).

(F) Sarah Ann Smith, born Nov. 29, 1841. Single and living.

(G) Philip A. Smith, born June 1, 1845, died of yellow fever Sept. 1867, single.

(H) Henry C. Smith, born May 13, 1847, died Sept. 1867 of yellow fever.

(I) Helen Smith, born Feb. 15, 1850, died of yellow fever, 1867.

## 579

-578-E-Ileane Marvin Smith, daughter of Thomas Smith and Mattie Randle, born July 29, 1877, married Robert E. L. Saner, born Aug. 9, 1871 in Hemstead County, Arkansas. They reside at 4625 Bryan Street, Texas. One child, Dorothy Lee Saner, born January 25, 1904.

## 580

-550-G-WINFREED ANN SMITH-  
JAMES CLOTHIER CARAWAY TABLE

The ancestry of Col. Caraway is as follows: Arch Caraway, born Feb. 19, 1766, married Elizabeth, the daughter of Rev. William Taylor, Jan. 3rd, 1793. Children: Laban, Wm. T., Sarah, Colin, Calvin, Edwin, Taylor, Ellis, Elizabeth, Lucretia, John, Louisa and Thetis.

Sarah married Joseph Boggan, Aug. 19, 1813. Laban married Sarah Dabbs, daughter of Lawrence Moore, Esq., Sept. 19, 1816. Colin married Andrew Polk, Dec. 4, 1817. Taylor married Katherine, daughter of John Smith, Esq., Oct. 17, 1822. Elizabeth married William Henry Benton, Aug. 23, 1823. Calvin married Frances Ledbetter, Nov. 13, 1823. Louisa married Noah Henby, June 14, 1827. Ellis married Martha McCain, March 19, 1830. Thetis married Moses W. Barber, Nov. 17, 1831. Lucretia married Ben Pond, April 19, 1832.

Arch Caraway died Sept. 15, 1835 His wife, Elizabeth, was born Sept. 1, 1877.

Arch Caraway was married the second time to Elizabeth, the widow of Joseph Burch, daughter of General Tristram Thomas. This last marriage was Dec. 15, 1822. Children:

Tristram Caraway, Dec. 8, 1823, died Aug. 1, 1841.

Thomas Caraway and James Clothier Caraway.

Winifred Ann Smith, born Feb. 5, 1828, in 1843 married Col. James Clothier Caraway, born Aug. 3, 1825, she being 16 and he 18 years old. She died Sept. 18, 1880. He died July 6, 1905. After the death of his first wife, Col. Caraway married in 1883, Mrs. Emma Boston Gardiner of Philadelphia. She died March 24, 1905 without issue.

## 581

-580-Children of Winifred Ann Smith and Col. James C. Caraway:

(A) Mary Elizabeth Caraway, born April 7, 1845, died June 19, 1892, married Captain John C. McLauchlin.-582-

(B) Tristram Thomas Caraway, born Aug. 3, 1847, died April 19, 1919, married Sarah Ann Horne and later married Sarah Elinor Barrett.-582-A

(C) James Manly Caraway, born Dec. 29, 1849, died Oct. 12, 1853.

(D) William Alexander Caraway, born Oct. 4, 1852, married Nancy Leak.-582-B-

(E) Cora Carolina Caraway, born Aug. 3, 1856, died Feb. 1919, married John C. McLauchlin.-582-C

## 582

-581-A-MARY ELIZABETH CARAWAY-  
CAPT. JOHN C. MCLAUCHLIN TABLE

Children:

(A) Dr. James A. McLauchlin, Weatherford, Okla., married Frances Tilman, daughter of Dr. D. C. Tilman. Six children: Ann Elizabeth, Katherine, Frances, James A. Jr. and Rosamond McLauchlin.

(B) Mrs. B. C. Covington. Children: Hattie, May, Kathleen, Andrea Benjamin, Mary, Lena, and John Calvin Covington.

(C) Duncan Tristram McLauchlin, married Minnie, daughter of James T. Caple. Children: Mary G., James Caple, Duncan Tristram Jr., and John Calvin McLauchlin.

(D) John Edmund McLauchlin, married Daisy, the daughter of Capt. H. H. McKeithan.

(E) Wilfred Campbell McLauchlin, missionary to China, married Elizabeth Trent Wilson of Richmond, Va. Two children: Elizabeth Trent and Annie McLauchlin.

(F) Four other children, died when small.

## 582-A-

-581-B-Tristram Thomas Caraway married first Sarah Ann Horne, daughter of William Horne: three children:

(A) Minnie Viola Caraway, married R. G. Austin. Children: William Black Austin, Mary Anna Austin, Sarah Austin, Robert Austin, Ethal Austin, and Glenn Austin. Mary Ann Austin married William Cecil Hancock: one child, William Cecil Hancock Jr.

(B) Mary Anna Caraway, married James Philip Caraway.

(C) Hattie Thomas Caraway, married Benjamin Henry Hutchinson. Children: James Hutchinson, Henry Hutchinson, Benjamin DeBerry Hutchinson, Fanny Hutchinson Mary V. Hutchinson and Richard Hutchinson.

Tristram Thomas Caraway's second wife was Sarah Elinor Barrett. Children: Virginia Caraway, died in infancy: Margaret Caraway

died in infancy; Winifred Caraway; Jane Caraway; and Thomas Philip Caraway who married Mabel, the daughter of Rev. George Dand. Alice Deal Herman. One child: Sarah Hermine Caraway.

### 582-B-

-581-D-William Alexander Caraway married Nancy Leak. One child: James Leak Caraway. His children: Francis Caraway; James Caraway; and William Caraway who married a Miss Root of Kentucky.

### 582-C-

-581-E-Cora Carolina Caraway married Captain John C. McLaughlin. One child, Neal, died in infancy.

### 583 (See 935)

#### -550-H-WILLIAM CALVIN SMITH- MARY TILLMAN TABLE

William Calvin Smith, born March 25, 1824, died March 9, 1886. On Oct. 15, 1842, married Mary Ann Tillman, born Oct. 14, 1822, died Dec. 14, 1900. Born, lived and died in Anson County, N. C. Children:

(A) James Tillman Smith, born Sept. 8, 1843, died January 30, 1908, married Ellen Pegus, later Emma Adela DeMaret.-585-

(B) Mary Francis Smith, born March 9, 1846, married John William McGregor.-584-

(C) Martha Cornelia (Pattie) Smith, born March 9, 1848. (935)

(D) Ann Eliza (Ida) Smith, born January 21, 1850. (935)

### 584 (See 937)

#### -583-B-MARY FRANCES SMITH- JOHN WILLIAM MCGREGOR TABLE

Mary Francis Smith, Dec. 15, 1868 married John William McGregor, born August 8, 1840, now dead. She lives near Wadesboro, N. C. Children:

(A) William Smith McGregor, born Sept. 18, 1869, died June 8, 1914. On January 7, 1903 married Annie Estelle Folsom. No issue.

(B) John Duncan McGregor, born August 28, 1872, on Aug. 24, 1904 married Georgia Steele McMurray, born June 30, 1876. To them were born two children: Julia Little McGregor, May 21, 1905; Francis Smith McGregor, August 22, 1909.

(C) James Tilman McGregor, born Oct. 2, 1874, married Feb. 1, 1906, Tommie Ethel Culp. Children: James Tilman McGregor Jr., Nov. 1906; Mary Augusta McGregor, Oct. 1913.

(D) Philip Archibald McGregor, married Verna May McSwain, April 20, 1910. Children: John Williamson McGregor, April 4, 1911; Teresa McGregor, June 2, 1915.

### 585 (See 936)

#### -583-8-JAMES TILLMAN SMITH-ELLEN PEGUES-EMMA ADELA DEMARTE TABLE

James Tillman Smith married Ellen Pegues, Nov. 27, 1867, died March 3, 1870. One child: Ellen Pegues Smith, married Pickens T. Bookman, Navasota, Texas. One child: Ellen Pegues Bookman, born Oct. 5, 1911.

After death of first wife, James Tillman Smith married Emma Adela DeMaret, born Nov. 18, 1842, married June 27, 1874. Children:

(A) William Calvin Smith, attorney, Ft. Worth, Texas, born July 7, 1879.

(B) DeMaret Smith, railroad attorney, Ft. Worth, Texas, born July 21, 1881.

(C) Selwyn Smith, electrician, Ft. Worth, Texas, born Feb. 20, 1883.

(D) Felix Carson Smith, garage, Ft. Worth, Texas, born July, 1887.

James Tillman Smith died January 30, 1908.

### 586

-550-C-Sarah Smith, born Dec. 22, 1831 in Anson County, N. C., married James Boggan who was born in 1802, died 1882.

James Boggan was descended from Sir Walter Boggan of Ireland.

Sir Walter Boggan had three sons and one daughter:

(A) Jane Boggan, born 1720, died 1786. She married Col. Thomas Wade who was a Patriot and Anson County's most noted citizen during the Revolution. They left six children.

(B) James Boggan.

(C) Benjamin Boggan.

(D) Captain Patrick Boggan, born 1739, died 1861, married Mary Dob and they had nine children: Patrick Boggan Jr.; Richard Boggan; Jane Boggan; Mary Boggan; Fannie Boggan; Margaret (Peggy) Boggan; Nettie Boggan; Flora Boggan; and Loydia Boggan.

There were eight children born to Sarah Smith and her husband, James Boggan:

(A) Mary Susanah Boggan, born January, 1833, married Marshall A. Polk.-587-

(B) Jane Thomas Boggan, born 1834, died in infancy.

(C) Harriet Lavinia Boggan, born April 9, 1837, died Nov. 11, 1909.-591-

(D) Louise La Fayette Boggan, born May 20, 1839, died Oct. 22, 1917.-592-

(E) William Wellington Boggan, born Nov. 15, 1841, died July 2, 1863.

(F) John Albert Boggan, born January 7, 1844.-594-

(G) Eliza Eleanor Boggan, born Dec. 3, 1846, died 1904.-595-

(H) Sara Ashe Boggan, born May 26, 1852.-596-

### 587

-586-A-Mary Susanna Smith, born 1833, died May, 1870, married Marshall A. Polk. Children:

(A) Florence Lavinia Polk, born May 16, 1855, died July 15, 1856.

(B) William Ashe Polk, born March 30, 1857, died July 12, 1902.-588-

(C) Sarah Colon Polk, born March 30, 1858, single.

(D) James Peonidas Polk, born 1859, died in infancy.

(E) Lillian Leonidas Polk, born 1862, died in infancy.

(F) Minnie Marshall Polk, born Oct. 20, 1865.-589-

(G) Ida Ashe Polk, born 1866, died in infancy.

(H) Mary Susannah Polk, born May 28, 1869.

### 588

-587-B-William Ashe Polk, born March 3, 1837, died July 12, 1902. On Dec. 12, 1877, he married Ella Preston Huntley. Children:

(A) First and second child died in infancy.

(B) Earl Polk, born January 25, 1883.

(C) Juanit A. Polk, born Oct. 3, 1885.

(D) Mamie Polk, died Sept. 10, 1887.

(E) Daisy Polk, born Feb. 26, 1889.

(F) Orville Polk, born Dec. 11, 1893, died Feb. 4, 1903.

(G) Grace B. Polk, born April 29, 1895.

(H) William Polk, born April 20, 1899.

### 589

-587-F-Minnie Marshall Polk married Purcell McFadden. They live in Maxton, N. C. Four children:

(A) Arvin McFadin.

(B) Gladys McFadin.

(C) Clyde McFadin.

(D) Harlton McFadin.

### 590

-587-H-Mary Susannah Polk married E. C. McQueen. Four children: Marshall McQueen, only one living, is at Fort Worth, Texas. The first husband died. She then married P. O. Hubbs. They live at Clarkton, N. C.

### 591

-586-C-Harriet Lavinia Boggan, born April 9, 1837, died Nov. 11, 1909, married Dr. John M. McRea, born March 4, 1830, died Nov. 11, 1904. They married 1865. Four children:

(A) Edward Eugene McRea, born 1866, in

1892 married Rowena Redfern. They live at White Store, N. C. Nine children: (1) Christine McRea; (2) Rena McRea; (3) Mary McRea; (4) Mary McRea; (5) John A. McRea, married Myrtle Ham; (6) Baxter McRea; (7) Edgar McRea, now dead; (8) Donald McRea; and (9) Edward McRea.

To John A. McRea and Myrtle Ham, his wife were born: Martha McRea, Nov. 11, 1917; John A. McRea Jr., Nov. 27, 1918; and William McRea, Dec. 1921.

### 592

-586-D-Louise LaFayette Boggan, born May 20, 1839, died Oct. 22, 1917. May 20, 1869 he married Mary Eva Hammond, born May 15, 1847. Nine children:

(A) Sarah Jane Boggan, born March 3, 1869, died May 5, 1871.

(B) Rosa May Boggan, born August 9, 1871, lives in Wadesboro, N. C., and married Frank T. Huntly.-593-

(C) Hampton Hammond Boggan, born August 30, 1872.

(D) Mary Eleanor Boggan, born Feb. 6, 1877.

(E) Eva Louis Boggan, born June 28, 1880.

(F) Nora Jane Boggan, born Feb. 13, 1883.

(G) James Thomas Boggan, born Oct. 18, 1890.

(H) Fannie Hammond Boggan, born April 17, 1890, on April 30, 1910, married Sidney Richmond Moore, born Feb. 17, 1884. One daughter, Eva Elizabeth Moore, born Feb. 16, 1911.

(I) Harriet Lavania Boggan, born May 6, 1895.

### 593

-592-B-Rosa May Boggan, married Frank T. Huntly, born January 22, 1854, died January 22, 1917. Six children:

(A) Frank T. Huntley, born May 2, 1889.

(B) John Huntley, born March 20, 1892.

(C) Julia Huntley, born Oct. 20, 1894.

(D) William Hammond Huntley, born July 14, 1900.

(E) Louis LaFayette Huntley, born August 22, 1905.

(F) Joe Crowder Huntley, born Oct. 18, 1910.

### 594

-586-F-John Albert Boggan, born January 7, 1844, on January 17, 1856, married Melvina Marshall Kendall. She died Oct. 4, 1920. Six children:

(A) William Kendall Boggan, born July 12, 1867, married Virginia McMury. Two children: William Kendall Boggan Jr. and George Boggan.



(B) Alice Julian Boggan, born March, 1869.

(C) James Wellington Boggan, born Feb. 3, 1871, married Nora Henley. Three children: Melvin Boggan, James Boggan, and Annie Boggan.

(D) John Albert Boggan, born Dec. 14, 1872.

(E) Tyler Bennett, born August 18, 1879.

(F) Henry Smith Boggan, born Nov. 11, 1882.

### 595

-586-G-Eliza Eleanor Boggan, born Dec. 31, 1846, died 1904, on Dec. 2, 1863, married Henry W. Buchanan. Nine children:

(A) Lelia Buchanan married W. A. Parson and went to Texas. Two children: Margaret Parsons and Lillie Parsons.

(B) Eleanor Buchanan.

(C) Margaret Ashe Buchanan, married Oscar Kenney and they moved to Portland, Oregon. Four children. Margaret Kenney is one.

(D) Leona Buchanan, married R. Lowery.

(E) Ray Buchanan.

(F) Fred Buchanan.

(G) Walter Buchanan.

(H) Henry Buchanan.

(I) James Buchanan.

### 596

-589-H-Sarah Ashe Boggan, born May 26, 1852, on January 20, 1872, married Marshall Kendall. Two children:

(A) Eliza Randall Kendall, born March 18, 1874.

(B) Thomas Marshall Kendall, born Feb. 18, 1877.

Eliza Randall Kendall, married August Raub. They live in Richmond, Virginia.

### 600 (See 907)

#### -503-B-JOHN SMITH NO. 3- MARY BELLEW TABLE

John Smith No. 3, son of John Smith No. 2, and Mary Flake, his wife, grandson of John Smith, No. 1, the Emigrant, and of Samuel Flake, the Emigrant, born, lived and died in Anson County, N. C. Was born 1772, died 1854, married Mary Bellew, -800- born 1775, died 1872. Children:

(A) Catherine Smith, married Taylor Caraway.-649-

(B) William Gaston Smith, married Eliza Sydnor Nelme.-619-

(C) John Culpepper Smith, died single.

(D) James Marshall Smith, died single.

(E) Samuel Smith, married Jane Meacham. 617-

(F) Joseph Pearson Smith, married Mary Aleff Cooper.-607-

(G) Jane Smith, married Berry Lindsay.-601-

### 601

-600-G-Mary Jane Smith, Feb. 8, 1832 married James Berry Grove Lindsay, born May 18, 1802, died May 18, 1843. She died Feb. 9, 1895. Born, lived and died in Anson County, N. C. Children:

(A) Charles Berry Grove Lindsay, married Lucy Anna Liles.-602-

(B) James Berry Grove Lindsay Jr., married Winifred (Wincie) Crump.-603-

(C) Sothronia Ann Lindsay, born January 15, 1841, died Feb. 9, 1905, married Dr. William Horne Battle.-604-

### 602

-601-A-Captain Charles Berry Grove Lindsay, born in Anson County, N. C., was Captain of Company B, 31 Regiment of N. C. Vol. in the Confederate army and married Anna Liles of Lilesville, N. C., and moved to Bennettsville, S. C. Children:

(A) Junius Joseph Lindsay born May 18, 1867, married Elizabeth Crawford of Atlanta, Ga. No issue.

(B) Bright Alice Lindsay, born Aug. 7, 1869, married John T. Douglass, Bennettsville, S. C. Pharmacist.

(C) Daisy Lindsay, died single.

(D) Ruth Cannon Lindsay, married Rev. L. M. Hobbs, Baptist. One child.

### 603

-601-B-Captain James Berry Grove Lindsay, born in Anson County, N. C., was Captain of Company B 31 North Carolina Regiment of the Confederate army, was wounded twice, was one of the immortal prisoners who was exposed by the Federals to the fire of the Confederate guns at Charleston, S. C. He eventually died from these wounds. He married Winifred (Wincie) Crump, who survives him and lives at Morven, N. C. Born to them, six children.

### 604

-601-C-Sothronia Ann Lindsay married Dr. William Horne Battle, born Dec. 14, 1833, died April 29, 1883. They were married April 14, 1854. They lived and died near Lilesville, N. C. Dr. Battle was a son of Judge William Horne Battle, Judge of the Superior Court of North Carolina and a nephew of Dr. Kemp Plummer Battle, President of the University of North Carolina. Children:

(A) Mary Lindsay Battle, born Dec. 26, 1854, married Prof. Collier Cobb.-605-



(B) Lucy Martin Battle, born Sept. 8, 1866, married John Thomas Wall.-606-

(C) Patty Viola Battle, born Oct. 28, 1869, single, Nashville, N. C., teacher.

(D) Kemp Plummer Battle, born Oct. 28, 1872, merchant, Pee Dee, N. C., married June 28, 1911, Jessie Scoot of Charlotte, N. C.

(E) Susan Catherine Battle, born Oct. 13, 1874, died Oct. 1877.

(F) William Horen Battle Jr., born August 27, 1879, single, Pee Dee, N. C.

## 605

-604-A-Mary Lindsay Battle married Prof. Collier Cobb, who is Professor of Geology at University of North Carolina, at Chapel Hill, N. C. He is a graduate of Wake Forest College and of Harvard University. She died Nov. 27, 1900. Children:

(A) Prof. William Battle Cobb, born Nov. 18, 1891, Prof. of Agronomy at Tulane University, Baton Rouge, La., married Eva Cahoon of Columbia, S. C.

(B) Collier Cobb Jr., born Dec. 1893.

(C) Mary Cobb, born January 9, 1899.

## 606

-604-B-Lucy Martin Battle married John Thomas Wall, born March 11, 1866, died April 12, 1908. She resides at Pee Dee, N. C. Children:

(A) Martha Adele Wall, born May 20, 1896, on Nov. 21, 1917, married George Washington Bacon, born January 15, 1893, Superintendent of Carolina Light and Power Company, Raleigh, N. C.

(B) Lucy Martin Wall and John Thomas Wall, twins, born Dec. 23, 1899.

(C) Stephen Graham Wall, born Feb. 25, 1902.

(D) Charles Lindsay Wall, born May 17, 1905.

## 607 (See 930)

-600-F-JOSEPH PEARSON SMITH-  
MARY ALEFF COOPER TABLE

Joseph Pearson Smith, born, lived, died and buried in Anson County, N. C., was born August 10, 1815, died 1852, married Mary Aleff Cooper, born August 7, 1822, died Feb. 10, 1893. They were married May 1, 1836. She was the daughter of John and Mary Williams Cooper and a sister of Richard Franklin Cooper, Elizabeth Cooper and William Cooper, all of Duplin County, N. C. Mary Williams Cooper was a daughter of Robert Williams who married a Best and came from Va. and located at Snow Hill, N. C.

Children of Joseph Pearson Smith and Mary Aleff Cooper:

(A) Mary Elizabeth Smith, born Feb. 16, 1839, died July 11, 1917, married March 4, 1854 Captain John Blassingame of Columbia, S. C. Both dead and no issue.

(B) Eliza Jane Smith, born January 11, 1840, died Oct. 23, 1840.

(C) John James Smith, born January 22, 1843, died about 1858.

(D) Cornelia Ann Smith, born Dec. 10, 1845, on Dec. 19, 1851 married Preston Cornelius Johnston.-608-

(E) Joseph Pearson Smith Jr., born Nov. 5, 1846, on Dec. 5, 1895 married Ella McAlhany. -St. George, S. C.

(F) Carolina Smith, born January 6, 1849, on Sept. 27, 1877 married David G. McRea. They reside at 428 Peachtree Street, Atlanta, Ga.

(G) William L. Smith, born 1858, killed by accident.

(H) Bright Dearwell Smith, born Dec. 26, 1855, died Dec. 9, 1916, and on March 29, 1880 married Lewis C. Cannon.-751-

(I) Frances Eulalia Smith, born June 6, 1858, married Nov. 9, 1897 to John A. Redhead.-St. George, S. C.

## 608

-607-D-CORNELIA ANN SMITH-  
PRESTON CORNELIUS JOHNSTON  
TABLE

Spartenburg, S. C. Children:

(A) Preston Cornelius Johnston Jr., born Nov. 2, 1863, married Talula Ann Minus.-615-

(B) Joseph Pearson Johnston, born April 16, 1865, married Mamie Carr.-614-

(C) Nellie Johnston, born January 5, 1867, married William Adolphus Fowler.-613-

(D) William Charles Cooper Johnston, born June 6, 1869, married Nellie Gertrude Minus.-612-

(E) Richard Aquilla Johnston, born July 27, 1871, married Mary Porche Gelzer.-611-

(F) Smith Legare Johnston, born June 4, 1875, married Bessie Shingler.-610-, then married Julie Hard.-610-

(G) Lela Bessie Johnston, born Feb. 26, 1877, on May 9, 1898 married John Earl Bomar, Spartenburg, S. C. She died March 4, 1903. No issue.

(H) John Blassingame Johnston, born Feb. 20, 1879, married Alma Ethel McCoy.-609-

(I) Carlisle Johnston, born July 5, 1881, married Bessie Price.-616-

(J) Mary Cooper Johnston, born May 2, 1884, married Leon Alston Reed of St. George, S. C. on Dec. 9, 1908.

(K) McRea Bright Johnston, born April 14, 1885, married Sarah Brennan of Columbia,

S. C., Aug. 8, 1908. Children: Mary Prin Rose Johnston, born Feb. 17, 1910; Sarah Allen Johnston, born June 16, 1912; McRea Bright Johnston Jr., born Jan. 10, 1914; Preston Cornelius Johnston, born Sept. 2, 1915.

(L) Annie Cornelius Johnston, born June 30, 1890, married Nov. 15, 1915, Claud Cannon, Spartensburg, N. C. One child, Richard Cannon, January 6, 1919.

## 609

-608-H-John Blassingame Johnston, on May 11, 1908 married Alma Ethel McCoy of Holly Hill, S. C. Children:

(A) McCoy Johnston, born March 18, 1909.

(B) Preston Cornelius Johnston, May 23, 1911, died Jan. 14, 1912.

(C) John Blassingame Johnston Jr., born Feb. 21, 1913.

(D) Richard Aquilla Johnston, born Feb. 10, 1914.

(E) Howard Cooper Johnston, born March 27, 1915.

(F) Alme Ethel Johnston, born Aug. 9, 1917.

(G) Olive Virginia Johnston, born July 2, 1919.

## 610

-608-F-Smith Legare Johnston, Oct. 25, 1904, married Bessie Shingler of Holly Hill, S. C. She died Aug. 2, 1906. One child, Bessie Shingler Johnston, April 17, 1906. Then on July 7, 1907 he married Julia Hard. One child, Julia Johnston, Oct. 6, 1909.

## 611

-608-E-Richard Aquilla Johnston, on Dec. 2, 1898, married Mary Porche Gelzer of Charleston, S. C. Children: May Louisa Johnston, July 27, 1900; Evylene Johnston, Oct. 10, 1910.

## 612

-608-D-William Charles Cooper Johnston on Aug. 20, 1897, married Nellie Gertrude Minus, Branchville, S. C. He died March 12, 1902. Children: Lula Gertrude Johnston, Nov. 5, 1899; William Cooper Johnston, Oct. 4, 1901.

## 613

-608-C-Nellie Johnston on June 3, 1892 married William Adolphus Fowler, Spartenburg, S. C. Children:

(A) Mary Aleff, Cooper Fowler, born July 6, 1894, married Al. Weisburg, Durham, N. C., on June 14, 1917. One child, Mary Aleff Cooper Weisburg.

(B) Nancy Belle Fowler, born April 30, 1896.

(C) James Fowler, born March 4, 1898.

(D) Ann Fowler, born June 24, 1900.

(E) Adolphus Fowler, born August 4, 1904.

## 614

-608-B-Joseph Pearson Johnston, on May 7, 1893 married Mamie Carr of Grover, S. C. They live at St. George, S. C. Children:

(A) Mamie Carr Johnston, born June 11, 1894, on April 19, 1913, married John Henry Behlinge. One child, John Henry Behlinge Jr., born March 2, 1914.

(B) Annie Rel Johnston, born June 8, 1896.

(C) Frances Eulalia Johnston, born June 2, 1897, married Nov. 17, 1913, Isaac Max Minus, St. George, S. C. Children: Frances Eulalia Minus, January 4, 1915; Maxwell Minus, June 15, 1917; Laura Minus, June 15, 1919.

(D) Joseph Pearson Johnston, Jr., born April 5, 1899.

(E) Vera Johnston.

## 615

-608-B-Preston Cornelius Johnston, Nov. 6, 1889, married Talula Ann Minus; he died January 9, 1913. Children

(A) Joseph Preston Johnston, born June 3, 1892, on May 2, 1914, married Carrie Lou Rucker of St. George, S. C.

(B) William Edward Johnston, born July 3, 1894, on Nov. 1, 1920, married Annie Lee Myers, St. George, S. C.

(C) Preston Cornelius Johnston, Oct. 4, 1898 married Louise King of Grover, S. C. Children:

(C) Floyd Johnston, born Nov. 2, 1899.

(D) Ray Johnston, born June 5, 1902.

(E) Margaret Johnston, born Dec. 2 1904.

(F) Anne Lee Johnston, born June 17, 1907.

(G) Virginia Johnston, born May 22, 1909.

## 616

-608-I-Carlisle Johnston, Oct. 6, 1905, married Bessie Price. Children:

(A) Carlisle Johnston Jr., born July 26, 1906.

(B) Bessie Leora Johnston, born Feb. 18, 1908.

(C) Sabie Johnston, born March 6, 1910.

(D) Laverne Johnston, born January 30, 1912.

(E) William Price Johnston, born June 16, 1914.

(F) Mabel Clare Johnston, born June 16, 1915.

(G) Guyndolin Johnston, born August 4, 1817.

## 617 (See 932)

-600-E-SAMUEL SMITH-JANE  
HENDERSON MEACHAM TABLE

Samuel Smith, born Nov. 5, 1809, died Sept. 9, 1879, married Jane Henderson Meacham, born 1819, died 1863. Samuel Smith was born in Anson County, N. C., and there spent the most of his life. Early in life he became a member of the church and was ever afterwards a consistent member. He was a planter by occupation and devoted the whole of his life to it. He cared nothing for politics and never sought any political honors of any character. Settled his troubles with his neighbors in a friendly way. He was a slave-owner but after the war accepted conditions and in old age went to the field and did his part in the cultivation and gathering of crops. He was an upright and high-minded citizen of the old ante-bellum days, a defender of Southern rights, and lost not only property as the result of the rebellion, but was the grief-stricken father of two boys who died on the battlefield in the defense of the cause the father loved. In 1858 he moved from N. C. to Miss. and purchased a farm in Holmes County, and land adjoining the plantation of the father of Gov. Neele. He died and was buried in that county. Children:

(A) James Marshall Smith, born April 9, 1840, enlisted as a Confederate in Co. C, 14th. Regiment, N. C. Volunteers; was wounded at Williamsburg, Va. on the battlefield and returned to Anson County and in 1862 died from the wound and was buried in Smith-Nelme Cemetery, Anson County.

(B) Ann Elizabeth Smith, born Oct. 9, 1842, died April 17, 1859.

(C) William Joseph Smith, born January 6, 1845, killed on the battlefield as a Confederate soldier.

(D) Martha Aleff Smith, born June 19, 1847, died Nov. 9, 1919, married Martin Luther Ray, who died 1920. Children: William Ray, Halbert Ray, Jasper Tenn.; Jesse Ray, Florala, Ala.; Luther Ray, Florala, Ala.; Margaret Ray married and lives at Andalusia, Ala.; Annie Ray, Florala, Ala.; John Ray, died 1899; Mary Ray.

(E) Mary Jane Smith, born Oct. 13, 1849, on January 9, 1873 married John Calhoun Cooper, born 1849, died 1908. She lives at New Hebron, Miss. Eight children, three of whom are living.

(I) Caroline Bell Cooper, born Dec. 17, 1873, on Oct. 27, 1892, married Thomas Edgar Spell, foreman construction gang on railroad between Memphis and New Orleans. Children: Eva Ola Spell, Dec. 12, 1893; Edna

Irene Spell, July 26, 1895; Annie Vivine Spell, July 22, 1920.

(2) Edith Ola Cooper, born Dec. 4, 1893 married David Corum on Dec. 23, 1914. Duncan, Miss.

(3) Irene Cooper, born July 23, 1895, on Feb. 2, 1910 married Luther Bush, Lawrence, Miss.

(F) Rufus Alexander Smith, born Nov. 18, 1855, died Oct. 12, 1855.

(G) Azalia Flake Smith, born June 7, 1857, died July 2, 1904, married in 1879 to Blanchard Harper Cooper, Lexington, Miss. One child, Mary Ray Cooper, July 2, 1904.

(H) John Gaston Smith, born Dec. 18, 1851, married Ella Rosalie Dawson.-618-

## 618

-617-H-JOHN GASTON SMITH-  
ELLA ROSALIE DAWSON TABLE

John Gaston Smith, No. 1302 Carondelet Street, New Orleans, La., on Dec. 2, 1881 married Ella Rosalie Dawson, born Feb. 8, 1860, daughter of John Wilson Dawson and Georgia Virginia Sanders, his wife. Children:

(A) James Marshall Smith, born Aug. 13, 1887, married June 17, 1919 to Katherine Stumpf, born 1892.

(B) Preston Lamar Smith, born Oct. 2, 1889, married Sept. 28, 1915 to Elvira Norton, born Feb. 23, 1897.

(C) Jennie Lynn Smith, born Oct. 13, 1894.

(D) Alen Olivia Smith, born July 25, 1897.

(E) Bryan Thomas Smith, born July 14, 1900.

(F) John Denson Smith, born July 19, 1903.

## 619 (See 908)

-600-B-WILLIAM GASTON SMITH-  
ELIZA SYDNOR NELME TABLE.

William Gaston Smith, born 1802, lived and died in Anson County, N. C., 1879, married Eliza Sydnor Nelme, (806) Sept. 29, 1831.

She was born 1814, died-1873, Children:

(A) Ann Eugenia Smith, born Sept. 23, 1832, married Dr. John Guynn Smith.-620-

(B) Presley Nelme Smith, married Sarah Leak Cole.-642-

(C) John Gaston Smith, died when a child.

(D) Mary Jane Smith, married Oliver Berry Bennett.-635-

(E) Charles Eben Smith, married Sarah Ann Brown.-636-

(F) Eliza Catherine Smith, married Henry W. Robinson.-632-

(G) William Alexander Smith, married Mary Jane Bennett.-631-and after her death, married Nancy Jane Flake.

(H) Sarah Aleff Smith, married Lewis Williams and after his death married Nicholas William Lillington.-(See 934 and 847)

## 620 (See 933)

### -619-A-ANN EUGENIA SMITH- DR. JOHN GUYNN SMITH TABLE.

Ann Eugenia Smith, married Dr. John Guynn Smith, son of Eli Smith and Sarah Hicks. (See 710-6) He was born in 1822 and both died in 1894. Children:

(A) Ida Nelme Smith, born April 17, 1856, married James Burdette Gillis.-630-

(B) Lina Hicks Smith, born Oct. 13, 1857, married Pickney Edmus Shofner.-629-

(C) William Gaston Smith, born May 3, 1859, married Minnie Jackson Freeman.-628-

(D) Charles Clifton Smith, born Feb. 27, 1862, married Lavonia Matilda Woodruff.-623-

(E) Joseph Presly Smith, born July 9, 1864, superintendent of Light Plant, Fairland, Okla., married Minta Amelia Hill.

(F) Walter Lee Smith, born Feb. 23, 1866, married Minnie Ola Burlingame.-622-

(G) Anne Eliza Smith, born Dec. 7, 1868, married James Elmley Farmer.-621-

## 621

-620-G-Annie Eliza Smith, on Nov. 10, 1898, married James Elmley Warner, Newberry, Oregon. He was born Aug. 11, 1879.

Children: Clyde Guynn Warner, July 21, 1899; Percy James Warner, May 4, 1902; Edna Eugenia Warner.

## 622

-620-F-Walter Lee Smith, Gravatee, Arkansas, June 16, 1896, married Minnie Ola Burlingame. Children: Zeta Lee Smith, March 29, 1898; Ross Ray Smith, July 7, 1900; Lora Selma Smith, Oct. 24, 1902.

## 623

### -620-D-CHARLES CLIFTON SMITH- LAVONIA MATILDA WOODRUFF TABLE.

Charles Clifton Smith, Afton, Okla., on May 3, 1882, married Lavonia Matilda Woodruff, born January 14, 1864. Children:

(A) John Laster Smith, born Feb. 24, 1883, married Myrtle Marie Bruce.-627-

(B) Minnie Kellum Smith, born March 25, 1885, married Henry Flake.-626-

(C) James Clifton Smith, born Sept. 19, 1887, married Tilla Rosaline Bennett.-625-

(D) Eugene Jasper Smith, born May 28, 1889, married Katherine Collins.-624-

(E) Mary Catherine (Kate) Smith, born Feb 20, 1890, married Charles Gandy, born

May 14, 1885, Tulsa, Okla. They were married Feb. 10, 1919. One child.

(F) Frank Charles Smith, born Nov. 7, 1900, married Gertrude-----.

(G) Ida May Belle Smith, born January 25, 1906.

(H) Myrtle Elizabeth Smith, born July 18, 1898, married on Dec. 24, 1915 to Ralph Finton Lowe, born Dec. 25, 1894. Kansas City, Mo.

## 624

-623-D-Eugene Jasper Smith, married Catherine (Kate) Ann Collins, born Nov. 20, 1889, R. R. 10, Vinton, Okla. Children:

(A) Mattie Duffin Smith, born Oct. 8, 1909.

(B) Dora Tate Smith, born Sept. 20, 1911.

(C) Pauline Ruth Smith, born Aug. 9, 1914.

(D) Bettie Emaline Smith, born July 15, 1920.

## 625

-623-C-James Clifton Smith, January 10, 1900, married Tilla Rosaline Bennett, born Dec. 12, 1885. Kansas City, Mo. Children:

(A) Leola Matilda Smith, born Oct. 24, 1910.

(B) Nola Lavinia Smith, born Sept. 1, 1915.

## 626

-623-B-Minnie Kellum Smith, on June 9, 1900 married Henry Flake, born June 9, 1883, Vinta, Okla. Children:

(A) Lula May Flake, born June 10, 1901.

(B) Susan Adeline Flake, born Oct. 7, 1903.

(C) Albert Flake, born Oct. 20, 1905.

## 627

-623-A-John Laster Smith, on Oct. 13, 1903, married Myrtle Marie Bruce, born Dec. 24, 1885. Pryor, Okla. Children:

(A) Ethel Irene Smith, born Sept. 26, 1904.

(B) Lester Lloyd Smith, born Nov. 11, 1908.

(C) Emmat Smith, born January 2, 1912.

(D) Vada Nadine Smith, born Feb. 22, 1914.

(E) John LeRoy Smith, born April 5, 1916.

(F) David Bruce Smith, born Dec. 12, 1919.

## 628

### -620-C-WILLIAM GASTON SMITH-MIN- NIE JACKSON FREEMAN TABLE

William Gaston Smith, on January 14, 1886, married Minnie Jackson Freeman. Cleora, Okla. Children:

(A) Minnie Alice Smith, born January 1, 1889, died June 12, 1898.

(B) William Eugene Smith, born Sept. 16, 1895, married Elsie Mary Woods. Children: Freeman William Smith, July 6, 1915; Zola Margarite Smith, Aug. 12, 1918.

(C) Sidney Lee Smith, born May 22, 1898, married Savora Blanch.

(D) Earl Freeman Smith, born Sept. 26, 1902.

(E) Emon May Smith, born Oct. 9, 1906.

(F) Vada Smith.

(G) Hugh Edgar Smith, born January 11, 1887, married Dollie Ernstine Fortner. Children: Pennie Maxine Smith, Feb. 17, 1921.

## 629

-620-B-LINA HICKS SMITH-PICKNEY  
EDMUS SHOFNER TABLE

Lina Hicks Smith married Pickney Edmus Shofner, born Oct. 23, 1854. Prairie Grove, Arkansas, farmer. Children:

(A) Eugene McGill Shofner, born 1884, died 1886.

(B) James Augustus Shofner, born April 10, 1886, married Mabel Geneva Alderman on Oct. 20, 1920. Gigheart, Okla.

(C) Elmus Manning Shofner, born Oct. 3, 1887, married Mabel Hatcher, born May 11, 1892. Twins, Edna May and Elmus Shofner, Dec. 12, 1913. Elmus died Feb. 2, 1914.

(D) Martin Frederick Shofner, born 1890, died 1919.

(E) Mary Nelme Shofner, born Sept. 26, 1892, on Sept. 29, 1912, married LeRoy Wentworth Dyer, born July 10, 1888-630.

(F) John Wesley Shofner, born January 1, 1895.

(G) Pinkney Burdette Shofner, born May 24, 1897, married Martha E. Hartly. Two children: Una Inez, Aug. 18, 1919, Mary Elizabeth, Feb. 5, 1920.

(H) Virginia Shofner, born April 3, 1900.

## 630

-620-A-IDA NELME SMITH-JAMES BURDETTE GILLIS TABLE

Ida Nelme Smith, on June 20, 1884, married James Burdette Gillis, merchant, Prairie Grove, Arkansas. He was the son of James Burdette Gillis and Temperance Sadbury, his wife, and was a Confederate soldier, member of 4th Regiment, N. C. Cavalry, Captain Johnson Company, Ferebee Brigade. Enlisted 1861. Mrs. Gillis died June 15, 1912. Children:

(A) Frances Alice Gillis, born Feb. 23, 1885, on Dec. 23, 1906, married Frederick Ewing Mathews, Vina Grove, Arkansas. He is manager of a broom factory, member of School Board, a Justice of the Peace, Steward in the M. E. Church, and a Master Mason. Children: Roderick Gaston Mathews, born Feb. 24, 1912; Frances May Mathews, born Dec. 18, 1914; Mary Frederick Mathews, born Feb. 15, 1917.

(B) Jennie Etta Gillis, born Dec. 15, 1887, died Aug., 1888.

(C) James Burdette Gillis, born Feb. 7, 1889, and on Aug. 15, 1909, married Catherine Nuse, born August 2, 1889. Gumright, Okla. Children: Irene Gillis, Nov. 30, 1910; Mary Ida Gillis, January 17, 1912; James William Gillis, May 17, 1913; Elton H. Gillis, Sept. 18, 1915; Vada Frances Gillis, April 2, 1920.

## 631 (See 969-969-970)

-619-G-GEN. WILLIAM ALEXANDER  
SMITH-MARY JANE BENNETT-NANCY  
JANE FLAKE TABLE

Gen. William Alexander Smith, who has gathered and compiled a very large part of this matter, and written numerous sketches of this volume, Ansonville, N. C., was born January 11, 1843, near to the home where he now lives. He married Mary Jane Bennett on Dec. 23, 1869. She was born Feb. 21, 1842, died June 20, 1914. (See Table-806 H-F) Children:

(A) Etta Smith, born Nov. 25, 1870, died Jan. 11, 1888.

(B) Nona Smith, born Dec. 24, 1872, died Nov. 14, 1877.

(C) Infant, born Aug. 11, 1875, died the same day.

August 29, 1916, Gen. Smith married Nancy Jane Flake, born Dec. 24, 1859, of Lilesville, N. C. (See-338-) (See 911).

## 632 (See 931)

-619-F-ELIZA CATHERINE SMITH-  
HENRY W. ROBINSON TABLE

Eliza Catherine Smith, born Nov. 22, 1839, on Dec. 7, 1862, married Henry W. Robinson, born 1833, died 1885. He was a member of Company C., Anson County Guards, 14th Regiment, Confederate army. He was a son of Thomas Robinson and Elizabeth Aulds. Children:

(A) Annie Elizabeth Robinson, born January 21, 1864, died Sept. 22, 1866.

(B) Edgar Smith Robinson, born Oct. 21, 1866, died Aug. 4, 1911.

(C) William Aulds Robinson, born April 12, 1869, on Aug. 10, 1904, married Sarah Lizzie Bean.-633-

(D) Thomas Nelme Smith, born January 21, 1871, married a Miss Gaddy.-

(E) Henry Eugene Smith, born May 27, 1873, married Mary Timmons.-634-

(F) John Elwyn Robinson, born July 12, 1875, died March 1, 1876.

(G) Charles Oscar Robinson, born Nov. 16, 1882, died Nov. 12, 1911.



## 633

-632-C-WILLIAM AULD ROBINSON-  
SARAH LIZZIE BEAN TABLE.

William Auld Robinson, married Sarah Lizzie Bean, born Feb. 22, 1883, daughter of Andrew Jesse Bean, who was born Oct. 8, 1856, died Sept. 1, 1908. Children:

- (A) Ethel Kate Robinson, born Oct. 14, 1907.
- (B) Mary Smith Robinson, born Sept. 1 1909.
- (C) Sarah Louise Robinson, born Oct. 5, 1911.
- (D) Willie May Robinson, born January 24, 1915.

## 634

-632-E-Henry Eugene Robinson, in 1897 married Mary Timmons, who is descended from Major Sam Timmons and Sarah Hendrix, early arrivals from England, and from Thomas Streater of Scotland, and Mary Jernigan from Ireland, early arrivals in South Carolina. Children:

- (A) Leon Robinson, born 1899.
- (B) Myrtle Robinson, born 1901. Stenographer.
- (C) Fay Robinson, born 1903.
- (D) James Robinson, born 1905, killed by lightning.
- (E) William Robinson, died 1906.

## 635

-619-D-MARY JANE SMITH-  
OLIVER BERRY BENNETT TABLE.

Mary Jane Smith, born Nov. 12, 1836, in Anson County, N. C., died about 1906, married on October 2, 1856 to Oliver Berry Bennett now dead. Buried at Thomasville, Georgia. No issue.

## 636

-619-E-CHARLES EBENEZER SMITH-  
SARAH ANN BROWN TABLE.

Charles Ebenezer Smith, born March 5, 1838, Anson County, N.C., died 1898. On March 31, 1858 he married Sarah Ann Brown, born 1839, died 1898. Children:

- (A) Anna Smith, born 1859, died 1860.
- (B) William Hamet Smith, born July 31, 1860, married Minnie Maud Montana.
- (C) Eliza Indie Nelme Smith, born Nov. 25, 1862, married Walter C. Stevenson, and then Milton A. Bell.-639-
- (D) Charles Nelme Smith, born January 29, 1865, died Oct. 11, 1873.
- (E) Henry Robinson Smith, born Feb. 7, 1868, married Margaret McEachern.-638-

(F) Ebenezer Alexander Smith, born April 7, 1870, died July 27, 1881.

(G) Mattie Sydnor Smith, born Nov. 27, 1873, died Nov. 28, 1873.

(H) Robert Weaver Smith, born Nov. 23, 1875, died Feb. 23, 1900.

(I) Charles Herbert Smith, born April 23, 1877 married Lena Fletcher.-637-

## 637

-636-I-Charles Herbert Smith on Sept. 1, 1901, married Lena Fletcher, born January 9, 1882. Farmer and R. F. D. mail carrier, R. 4. Memphis, Tenn. Children:

- (A) Ada Lee Smith, born April 16, 1903. In college 1920.
- (B) Charles Herbert Smith, born Aug. 8, 1905, died Dec. 12, 1907.
- (C) Clarence Earl Smith, born January 18, 1908.
- (D) John Thomas Smith, born Sept. 6, 1912.
- (E) Herbert Fletcher Smith, born May 15, 1915.
- (F) Lena Margaret Smith, born January 23, 1918.

## 638

-636-E-Henry Robinson Smith, on January 18, 1890 married Margaret McEachern. He died Dec. 12, 1912. She lives near Memphis, Tenn. Children:

- (A) John Harvey Smith, born Dec. 31, 1893.
- (B) Henry Robinson Smith, born March 14, 1895.

## 639

-636-C-ELIZA INDIE NELME SMITH-  
WALTER C. STEVENSON-MILTON A.  
BELL TABLE.

Eliza Indie Nelme Smith, married Walter C. Stevenson, who died in 1897. Children:

(A) Ebenezer Franklin Stevenson, born August 2, 1885, married Nellie Fisher in 1904. One child: Mary Nelle Stevenson, 1909.

(B) Lovie Indie Stevenson, born January 1, 1888, married in 1908 to Frederick Kemp Turner, 1605, East Moreland Avenue, Memphis, Tenn. He is dead. She is a book-keeper.

Children: Frederick Kemp Turner, 1913; Stevenson Smith Turner, 1917.

After the death of her first husband, Eliza Indie Nelme Smith Stevenson married Milton A. Bell, civil engineer, 1605 East Moreland Avenue, Memphis, Tenn. Mr. Bell enlisted in the World War and became Adj. to Col. E. C. Huber, Commanding Officer of Hospital Center, and held that position until the abandonment in 1919. He was discharged June 17, 1919. He was in the Government service on Panama canal as civil engineer in 1909-10.



## 640

-639-A-Ebenezer Franklin Stevenson, after the death of his first wife, Nellie Fisher, married in 1919 Bertha Long of Tupelo, Miss. He enlisted in 1917 in the World War in Company C. 28th. engineers, received training as a soldier at Camp Meade, near Baltimore, was in two years, was in the Argonne engagement. Is traffic manager, Phoenix Branch of Southern Pacific Railroad and located at Tucson, Arizona.

## 641

-636-B-WILLIAM HAMET SMITH-  
MINNIE MAUD MONTANA TABLE.

William Hamet Smith, farmer, Desmond, Arkansas, married Minnie Maud Montana. Children:

(A) William Hamet Smith Jr, born June 23, 1887, married Elizabeth Latham, born Oct. 6, 1888. They were married Feb. 23, 1906.

(B) Walter Carlton Smith, born Sept. 15, 1889, married Nellie Sloan Presley, born March 29, 1889. Married March 29, 1911. Children: Minnie Maud Smith, August 15, 1912; Walter Carlton Smith, Dec. 20, 1914.

(C) Francis Morgan Smith, born January 25, 1892, died Nov. 1893.

(D) Indie Alida Smith, born Feb. 23, 1893, died April 1, 1898.

(E) Miner Francis Smith, born Sept. 14, 1896, married on Aug. 25, 1919 to Bennie Belle Jaco. One child, Dorothy Elizabeth, born Feb. 4, 1921. Bennie Belle Jaco was born March 20, 1902. They live 410 West Franklin Street, Forest City, Arkansas.

(F) Minnie Maud Smith, born Sept. 4, 1899, married Oct. 14, 1917, Herbert Mazwel Nelson, born March 29, 1896. One child: Rubie Maud Nelson, June 30, 1920.

(G) Jane Pet Smith, born Oct. 19, 1902. In college in 1920, Desmond, Arkansas.

## 642

-619-B-PRESLEY NELME SMITH-  
SARAH STEEL LEAK COLE TABLE.

Presley Nelme Smith, born July 26, 1835, died January 11, 1900, was born in Anson County, N. C., and married Sarah Steel Leak Cole, born June 12, 1838, died January 12, 1915. She was the daughter of Steven William Cole, born January 1, 1813, died Sept. 19, 1889, married Tabitha Randall Ledbetter, born July 4, 1811, died Sept. 17, 1858. Steven William Cole was son of William Tery Cole, born 1785, died 1814, married Judith Mosely Leak, born 1789, died 1868. His father Steven Cole, born 1760, died 1820, married in

1782, Nancy Terry, born 1762, died 1810. His father, John Cole, born Nov. 9, 1738, died 1797, married Jane Rounds. John Cole was commissioned as Ensign, Dec. 4, 1776, and is last reported on the return of officers of the 10th. Penna. Reg. for the period from January 1777 to June 24, 1778 with the remarks: "That he was rendered supernumerary on the consolidation of the 10 with the 11 Penna. Regiment" and that he was: "To be especially recommended". The above is a portion of John Cole's record, copied from the record and pension office, Washington, D. C.

Children of Presley Nelme Smith and Sarah Steel Leak Cole:

(A) Annie Cole Smith, born Dec. 12, 1869 married William Alfred Winburn.-644-

(B) Mary Ledbetter Smith, born June 15, 1871, teacher, No. 5 East 35th. Street, Savannah, Georgia.-648-

(C) Sallie Shelton Smith, born Sept. 30, 1875, married Peter Frank Down.-643-

## 643

-642-B-Sallie Shelton Smith, on Oct. 11, 1902 married Peter Frank Down, born May 26, 1872, No. 197, Milledge Avenue, Athens, Georgia. Child:

(A) Raiford Franklin Down, Oct. 11, 1902.

## 644

-642-A-Annie Cole Smith, on July 11, 1888 married William Alfred Winburn, born Oct. 19, 1863, railroad, Savannah, Georgia. Children:

(A) William Alfred Winburn Jr., born May 17, 1889, railroad, Savannah, Georgia.-647-

(B) Susan Cole Winburn, born April 11, 1891.-646-

(C) James Randall Winburn, born Nov. 29, 1898, married Virginia Van Giesen.-645-

## 645

-644-C-James Randall Winburn was educated in the Savannah Public Schools and on May 5, 1918, married Virginia Van Giesen, born, Oct. 28, 1899 at Savannah, Georgia.

## 646

-644-B-Susan Cole Winburn was educated at the National Cathedral School of Washington, D. C., and is a very gifted violinist. Dec. 9, 1914, she married Dr. Antonio Johnston Waring Jr., of Savannah, Georgia. He was born Nov. 28, 1881, graduated in medicine at Yale University, practiced his profession in Savannah. He enlisted in the World War, was later given the rank of Captain and served in the hospital in Lake-wood, New Jersey. He is a baby specialist

and follows his profession in Savannah. Children: Antonio Johnston Waring, Aug. 17, 1915; Anne Waring March 16, 1918.

## 647

-644-A-William Alfred Winburn Jr., was educated in the Savannah High School and the University of Georgia, went into the service of the Central Railroad of Georgia. He entered in the service of the government at the beginning of the World War as a private in the quartermaster's corps. He served two months and was made a lieutenant, transferred to the transportation department and sent to France. After serving a year, he was promoted to captain and served in France twenty two months. He is now soliciting freight agent of Central Georgia Railroad.

## 648

-642-B-Mary Ledbetter Smith was educated at Ashville Female College, North Carolina and is teacher of Domestic Science in Junior High School, Savannah, Georgia.

## 649

-600-A-Catherine Smith, born 1800, married Taylor Caraway and they moved to Miss. Three children then:

- (A) John Caraway.
- (B) Labon Caraway.
- (C) Taylor Caraway.

## 700

### -505-F-JESSE SMITH-MARY SEAGO TABLE

Jesse Smith, born in Anson County, N. C., about 1780, married Mary Seago and lived, died and was buried in that County. Children:

- (A) Mary Smith, born Nov. 12, 1810, married Jerry Henry.-701-
- (B) Elizabeth Smith, married Harrison Eason and moved to Byhalia, Miss.

## 701

### -700-A- MARY SMITH-JERRY HENRY TABLE

Mary Smith, born Nov. 12, 1810, died January 23, 1882, on April 3, 1825, married Jerry Henry, farmer, Lilesville, N. C. They lived, died and were buried in Anson County, N. C. Children:

- (A) Jesse Tolly Henry, born Feb. 17, 1828, died 1864.-705-
- (B) Mary Ann Henry, born April 7, 1830, married Jesse Cox.-704-
- (C) Burdette Smith Henry, born July 10, 1835, died Sept. 26, 1898, single.

(D) Elizabeth Jane Henry, born Sept. 18, 1843, died July 27, 1898, single.

(E) Tidal Beecher Henry, born Feb. 22, 1846, married Lila Lucas.-703-

(F) Victoria Henry, born June 7, 1849, died June 10, 1913, single.

(G) Byron Bivassor Henry, born June 7, 1852, married Amanda Carroll.-702-

## 702

-701-G-Byron Bivassor Henry, born May 18, 1852, died January 18, 1914, married Amanda Carroll of Thomasville, Georgia, born Nov. 22, 1897, dead. Was a farmer, lived and died in Anson County, N. C. Children,

(A) Jesse Carroll Henry, born April 19, 1881: farmer, Lilesville, N. C.

(B) Tidal Ray Henry, born Dec. 30, 1882, attorney, Boston, Mass., on August 2, 1912, married Frances Louise Ware of Richmond, Va. Children: Frances Carroll Henry, Nov. 22, 1917; Elizabeth Ware Henry, Oct. 5, 1920.

(C) Jewell Mary Henry, born May 11, 1885, on Dec. 16, 1916, married Benjamin Furman Reynolds, Clerk of Court, Rockingham, N. C. One child: Benjamin Furman Reynolds Jr., Nov. 16, 1916

(D) Jerry Smith Henry, born April 28, 1889, farmer, Lilesville, N. C., on Dec. 15, 1920, married Elizabeth Logan French of Houston, Va.

(E) Byron Vance Henry, born March 15, 1889, attorney, Wadesboro, N. C.

(F) Bright Amanda Henry, born January 11, 1891, Lilesville, N. C.

## 703

-701-E-Tidal Beecher Henry, born Feb. 22, 1846, died July 29, 1910, was a Confederate veteran, farmer and furniture dealer, born, lived and died in Anson County, N. C., married Lila Lucas of Chester, S. C., also dead. Children:

(A) Dr. Tidal Boyce Henry, born July 9, 1890, Greensboro, N. C., single.

(B) Osmer L. Henry, born March 31, 1894, attorney, Rockingham, N. C.

## 704

### -701-B-MARY ANN HENRY-JESSE COX TABLE

Mary Ann Henry, born April 7, 1830, dead, married Jesse Cox, dead. Lived, died and was buried in Anson County, N. C. Children:

- (A) Wellie Raynor Cox, born Dec. 16, 1852, merchant, Lilesville, N. C., married Rosa Hough. She died. Then married Addie Fry. No issue.

(B) Wilder Smith Cox, born Sept. 8, 1854, lived, died and was buried at Lilesville, N. C., married Alice Livingston. One daughter, married William Henry of Lilesville, N. C.

(C) Herndon Hall Cox, born August 20, 1856, married Ida Hough. He is a cotton buyer, Wadesboro, N. C.

(D) Mary Cox, born April 25, 1862, married G. Radcliff of Florence, S. C. He is dead.

## 705

-701-A-Jesse Tolly Henry, enlisted in the Confederate army, was made lieutenant in Co. K, 26 N. C. Regiment, was wounded at Gettysburg July 3, 1863, and killed in a skirmish at Burgess Hill in Va. on the Boynton plank road, near Boynton, Va., and buried there. He left no issue.

## 710

## -503-C-ELI SMITH-SARAH (SALLIE) HICKS TABLE

Eli Smith, born in Anson County about 1778, married Sarah Hicks and perhaps lived and died in that county. Children:

(A) Julia Smith, married Ned Hicks.

(B) Samuel Smith, left Anson County, N. C., and went west.

(C) Dr. John Guyn Smith, married Eugenia Smith.-620-(See 933).

(D) Thomas Smith, went to California and died there.

## 711

## -503-G-SARAH (SALLIE) SMITH-GEORGE LINDSAY TABLE

Sarah (Sallie) Smith, born in Anson County, N. C., about 1778, married George Lindsay. Children:

(A) Hampton L. Lindsay, married Elizabeth (Bettie) Bellew.

(B) Jane Lindsay, married Axum Saunders.

(C) Margaret Lindsay, married Robbie May.

(D) Margery Lindsay, married Wiley Harrington.

## 750

## -503-D-SAMUEL SMITH-MARGARET (PEGGY) HUTCHINSON TABLE

Samuel Smith, son of John Smith No. 2, and Mary Flake, his wife, grandson of John Smith No. 1, and Samuel Flake, the Emigrants, was born in Anson County, N. C. about 1780 and died in the County about 1873, married Margaret (Peggy) Hutchinson, born about 1793, died about 1875, he dying at the age of 93 and she dying at the age of 83. They lived and died in Anson County.

They were married March 24, 1816. Children:

(A) Jemina Smith, born Feb. 1, 1817, married Rev. Benjamin Saunders.-760-

(B) Eli Smith, born March 29, 1818, died Sept. 29, 1819.

(C) Nancy Smith, born February 16, 1820, married Sydney Luther.-

(D) Thomas Flake Smith, born January 26, 1822, married Martha Eason.-759-

(E) Mary Smith, born Nov. 22, 1823, married Jesse Lindsay. (906)

(F) Elizabeth Smith, born January 8, 1826, married Alfred Dawkins.-755-

(G) Sarah Margaret Smith, born January 17, 1828, married Benjamin Garriss.-754-

(H) William Hutchinson Smith, born Dec. 2, 1830, Confederate soldier, killed at the battle of Gettysburg, single.

(I) Martha Hannah Smith, born Nov. 5, 1832, married William Cox.-753-

(J) John Culpepper Smith, born January 31, 1835, married Elizabeth Livingston.-752-

(K) Jesse Mercer Smith and Eliza Jane Smith, (twins) born Oct. 8, 1837. Eliza Jane Smith died single June 16, 1881. Jesse Mercer Smith married Agnes Jane Diggs.-751-

## 751

## -750-K-JESSE MERCER SMITH-AGNES JANE DIGGS TABLE.

Jesse Mercer Smith died Dec. 27, 1913, at the home of his daughter, Florence Smith Cannon, Atlanta, Ga. He married Agnes Jane Diggs, who died Feb. 18, 1920. Four Children:

(A) Florence Diggs Smith, born Dec. 29, 1878. In 1895 she moved to Atlanta, Ga., and entered the business world. On Sept. 26, 1908 she married Joseph Pearson Cannon and in 1909 moved to Douglass County, 23 miles from Atlanta where they now reside. Joseph Pearson Cannon is a son of Bright Dearwell Smith and Lewis C. Cannon.-607-H-

(B) William Henry Smith, born Nov. 22, 1880, died Dec. 22, 1880.

(C) Charles Jesse Smith, born August 15, 1882, an invalid from childhood, lives with his sister Florence Smith Cannon.

(D) Samuel Thomas Smith, born Dec. 12, 1884, died Oct. 1, 1911 single.

## 752

## -750-J-JOHN CULPEPPER SMITH-ELIZABETH LIVINGSTON TABLE.

John Culpepper Smith, born in Anson County, January 31, 1835, married Elizabeth Livingston and moved to Byhalia, Miss., and there both died. He is said to have died January 11, 1863 of typhoid pneumonia in Richmond, Va. Was probably a soldier in the Confederate army. There are two daughters, one, Lizzie

Smith married Calvin T. Lynch and in 1909 received mail, Box 53, R. F. D. R. 3, Byhalia, Miss.

## 753

-750-I-Martha Jane Smith married William Cox and lived at Lilesville, N. C. One child was born. Mother and child both dead.

## 754

-750-G-SARAH MARGARET SMITH-BENJAMIN GARRIS TABLE.

Sarah Margaret Smith was born, lived and died at Lilesville, N. C., married Benjamin Garriss, Children:

- (A) One girl, who died when small.
- (B) John Thomas Garriss, who lives in Lilesville, N. C.

## 755

-750-F-ELIZABETH SMITH-ALFRED DAWKINS TABLE.

Elizabeth Smith was born, lived and died near Lilesville, N. C., married Alfred Dawkins, dead. Children:

- (A) Sarah Jane (Sallie) Dawkins, born April 11, 1850, single Lilesville, N. C.
- (B) William Thomas Dawkins, born Sept. 29, 1861, married Sallie Morton.-756-
- (C) Margaret Corrinna Dawkins, born January 5, 1864, married William Rufus Hatcher.-758-
- (D) Anne Elizabeth Dawkins, born Aug. 31, 1866, single, Lilesville.
- (E) Samuel Smith Dawkins, born Dec. 26, 1870, single, farmer, Lilesville, N. C.

## 756

-755-B-William Thomas Dawkins married Sallie Morton. He is a carpenter, Lilesville, N. C. Children:

- (A) Elizabeth (Bettie) Dawkins, single, Lilesville, N. C.
- (B) Ellis Dawkins, married Mattie Dawkins, Alando, S. C.-757-
- (C) Lucy Dawkins.
- (D) Edward Dawkins.
- (E) Dumas Dawkins.
- (F) Annie Dawkins.
- (G) Sidney Dawkins.
- (H) Mary Dawkins.
- (I) William Dawkins.

## 757

-756-B-Born to Ellis Dawkins and Mattie Dawkins:

- (A) Goldie Dawkins, born about 1918.
- (B) Elizabeth (Puss) Dawkins, born 1920.

## 758

-755-C-MARGARET CORRINNA DAWKINS-WILLIAM RUFUS HATCHER TABLE.

Farmer, Lilesville, N. C. Children:  
(A) William Claud Hatcher, married Cleo Adams, Bleaker, Ala., plumber. Children: Helen Hatcher born about 1917; Rose Hatcher born about 1919.

(B) Floy May Hatcher, stenographer, Atlanta, Ga.

(C) John Harrison Hatcher, machinist, Lilesville, N. C.

(D) Vernon Liles Hatcher, farmer, Lilesville, N. C.

(E) Alfred (Fred) Hatcher, farmer, Lilesville, N. C.

(F) Kate Hatcher, teacher, Lilesville, N. C.

(G) Elizabeth Hatcher.

(H) Margaret Kerr Hatcher.

## 759

-750-D-Thomas Flake Smith, born January 26, 1822, in Anson County, N. C., married Martha Eason of that place and they moved to Byhalia, Miss.

## 760

-750-A-JEMINA SMITH-REV. BENJAMIN SAUNDERS TABLE.

Jemina Smith, born Feb. 1, 1817, at Lilesville, N. C. lived and died in that county. She married Rev Benjamin Saunders and there were born to them fourteen children:

We tried to get the data but were not able to do so.

RELATIVES OF GEN. W. A. SMITH NOT RELATED TO W. THOS. SMITH.

800 (See 840)

Abraham Bellew, born about 1746, son of Isaac Bellew, (see 840) settled in Anson County, N. C., married Catherine (Katie) Smith, daughter of Phillip Smith. Born to them about 1775, Mary Bellew who married John Smith No. 3. See Tables 600 to 700 for descendants.

801 (See 839)

Col. Hugh Montgomery, a native of Ireland, closely related to General Richard Montgomery who fell at the battle of Quebec in 1775, married Lady Moore of the nobility. He emigrated to America, settled in Pennsylvania, then moved to Salisbury, N. C., and there died Dec. 23, 1779. In the sketch of him can be found many of his descendants.

Nancy Montgomery, their daughter, married Edwin Ingram, who was in the Revolutionary army. (see Wheeler's Reminiscence, Page



*Delme*





396) To them was born Joseph Ingram, also called "Red Head" Ingram because his hair was red. Tradition is that Joseph Ingram, when a boy accompanied Col. Joseph Williams in his campaign against the Cherokee Indians. This lacks authentic proof and is only traditional.

Joseph ("Red Head") Ingram married Catherine (Katie) McCaskill. To them was born Ann (Nancy) Montgomery Ingram. She married Presly Nelme Jr.-804-

## 802

Malcolm McCaskill, born on the Isle of Skye, Scotland, emigrated to North Carolina and settled near Grassy Islands, Anson County. He had seven children we know of, as follows:

(A) Catherine (Katie) McCaskill, married Joseph ("Red Head") Ingram of Anson County as mentioned in 801.

(B) Effie McCaskill, came to Anson County.

(D) David McCaskill, came to Anson County.

(E) Nancy McCaskill, came to Anson County.

(F) Sarah (Sallie) McCaskill, came to Anson County.

(G) John McCaskill, went to West Indies.

(H) Alexander McCaskill, went to West Indies.

Alexander McCaskill was a graduate of the University of Glasgow, Scotland. He became a Barrister at Law, went to West Indies, and there accumulated a large fortune, and died without issue.

John McCaskill also went to West Indies as steward to a British nobleman, acquired a considerable estate and died a victim of the climate and had no issue. Joseph ("Red Head") Ingram and a Mr. McGuinn, with Catherine McCaskill Ingram were commissioned to administer the estates of Alexander and John McCaskill. McGuinn went abroad to look after the estate but tradition is that he never returned to make a report, but located in Scotland and is said to have then there lived like a prince. In those days it was a "far cry" to Scotland, requiring weeks, at times, months to cross the Atlantic. These fortunes were not necessary, for Joseph Ingram and his wife had plenty for all comforts without them. They never went to investigate the matter. Eben Nelme, the grandson of Joseph Ingram made a minute of them. He was an uncle of the writer and gave the facts to him.

W. A. Smith.

## 803 (See 841)

The Family of Nelme, originally of Norway, were there known as Nemj. An emigrant to

Wales there changed the name to Nelme. From there one emigrated to the Isle of Skye, Scotland. From there Charles and John emigrated to America. Charles Nelme went west. John Nelme located in New York. A son of John, named Charles, moved to Virginia and there spelt the name Nelms. He married Eliza Sydnor. There was born to them, a son Presly Nelme-804-

## 804 (See 841)

-803-Presly Nelme, born in Virginia, moved to Franklin Precinct, Province of North Carolina. Born to him and his wife, Winifred Nelme:

(A) Presly Ne'lme, Jr., who married (see 801) Ann (Nancy) Montgomery Ingram-806-

(B) Elizabeth Nelme, born Dec. 19, 1774, married Mr. Davis.-805-

## 805

-804-B-Elizabeth, died August 19, 1842. The given name of Mr Davis is thought to have been William J. One child of this union was Eben Davis, born June 22, 1802, died January 14, 1881. He married twice First Susan Martha Sell, on Feb. 13, 1830. After her death he married Martha Trimble Greenlee. Children were:

(A) David Lee Davis, born March 12, 1838, died Sept 3, 1838 He was by the first wife. Children by the second wife were:

(A) William Greenlee Davis, born January 1, 1846, died July 13, 1847.

(B) Eben Nelme Davis Jr., born July 18, 1847.

(C) Robert Charles Davis, born Sept. 14, 1849, died Aug. 6, 1850.

(D) Jonathan Presly Davis, born Oct. 23, 1851.

(E) Mary Elizabeth Davis, born July 28, 1853, died Feb. 19, 1917, married Feb. 11, 1889, Charles Palark Mosely, grandson of George Mosely who emigrated from North Carolina to Miss. Their only child, Martha Virginia Mosely lives at Holly Springs, Miss.

(F) Ann Winfred (Nancy) Davis, born August 20, 1858, in 1872 or 1873 married Presly Starback.

(G) Emma Frances Davis, born July 18, 1859, married three times. First married Demps E. Britlemun. One child: Ferdinand Britlemun, born January, 1878, on May 4, 1917, married Mary Hopson.

Second married Robert Johnson Forest City, Ark. Two children: August Virginia Johnson, born June 9, 1918; Ferdinand Rogers Johnson, born Dec., 1919. Third marriage to Hon. C. P. Greenlee, a cousin, of Brinkly, Arkansas.

**806** (See 842)

-804-A-Presly Nelme and Ann (Nancy) Montgomery Ingram, his wife, had four children:

(A) Eliza Sydnor Nelme, born 1814, in 1831 married Col. William Gaston Smith.-619- For descendants see 619 to 700.

(B) Charles Gallatin Nelme, married Kate McCorkle. (See sketch of Charles Gallatin Nelme.) (843).

(E) Ebenezer Nelme or Eben Ne'me, married Martha Ann Smith. (See sketch of Ebenezer Nelme-806B-.)

(D) Joseph Presly Nelme, married Sarah Parson and then Caroline Pritchard (See sketch )-806A.

**806A**

-806-D-Dr. Joseph Presly Nelme, born Sept. 1, 1825, died Oct. 28, 1878. In 1841, when a little past sixteen, he married Sarah Parsons, born April 18, 1825, died March 8, 1850. Children:

(A) Mary (Mollie) Ann Nelme, born March 24, 1843, married Capt. Edward Hull Crump.

(B) Eben Nelme, born Feb. 23, 1845, died Oct. 6, 1849.

(C) Joseph Nelme, died a few hours after born.

Mary (Mollie) Ann Nelme, above mentioned, on Oct. 2, 1866, married Captain Edward Crump, born Feb. 26, 1838, died Oct. 4, 1878. They lived at Holy Springs, Miss., and had children:

(A) John Crump, born Oct. 25, 1868, died March 18, 1900.

(B) Kate McCorkle Crump, born April 10, 1870, died June 22, 1902.-806C-

(C) Edward Crump Jr., born Oct. 2, 1874, now residing in Memphis, Tenn. January, 1902, he married Elizabeth (Bessie) Byrd McLean. They have three children: Edward Hull Crump, born June 8, 1903; Robert McLean Crump, born Dec. 29, 1906; John Crump, born Nov. 5, 1911.

Dr. Joseph Presly Nelme, on January 1, 1860, married Caroline Elizabeth Prichard, born 1841, died 1908. Born to them:

(A) Vieve Nelme, born 1865, died 1885.

(B) Kate Nelme, born 1857, died 1878.

(C) Caroline (Olyn) Nelme, born 1870, died 1911, married Dr. James Soniat, New Orleans, La. Children: Olyn Eugenia Soniat, born 1901; Joseph (Jamie) Moore Soniat, born 1901; Charles Presley Soniat, born 1907.

(D) Ora Cecilia Nelme, born 1878, married George Wilson. No issue.

**806B**

-806-E-Ebenezer (Eben) Nelme born Dec. 21, 1817, died July 16, 1902. On Dec. 10, 1852,

he married Martha Ann Smith, born July 16, 1833, died Dec. 12, 1895. Children:

(A) Eliza Sydnor Nelme, born January 9, 1857, married Hamilton Raynor. Kenneth Raynor, attorney, Blythesville, Ark., is a son.

(B) Ebenezer (Eben) Nelme Jr., born January 9, 1864, on Oct. 10, 1888, married Claudia Elizabeth Gibbs, born Sept. 24, 1869. He is a farmer. They have three children: Ann Nelme, born Dec. 6, 1889; Adeline (Addie) Nelme, born Feb. 6, 1892; Elizabeth Sydnor Nelme, born Nov. 11, 1905.

(C) Presley Nelme, born January 22, 1869, died 1907.

Addie Nelme, born Feb. 6, 1892, as above mentioned, married R. W. Kelso. They reside at Cormorant, Miss.

Anne Nelme, born Dec. 6, 1889, married E. J. Pollard, groceryman, Lake Cormorant, Miss. Children: Eben Joyce Pollard, born June 11, 1911; Frances Marion Pollard, born April 3, 1913; Robert Edward Pollard, born Oct. 22, 1916.

Annie Nelme, Dec. 13, 1913, married R. W. Kelso.

(We have copied after data sent us. Evidently an error. Our book goes to press in a few days. We regret we have not time to correct it. One of these ladies seems to have married Mr. Kelso. One seems to have married Mr. Pollard. We do not know which.)

**806C**

-806A-B-Kate McCorkle Crump, about 1889, married Jasper Francis Butler. Children:

(A) Marie Nelme Butler, born Oct. 18, 1890.

(B) Frances Crump Butler, born August 24, 1896.

(C) John Edward Butler, born August 24, 1898, died July, 1907.

(D) Olivia Corine Butler, born January 24, 1902.

Marie Nelme Butler, on Nov. 6, 1912, married Hugh Rather. Children: Hugh Henry, John Edward, born Aug. 26, 1918.

Frances Crump Butler, on April 29, 1917, married Dr. Henry G. Hill. They reside at Memphis, Tenn.

Caroline Elizabeth Prichard, born 1841, who married Presley Nelme, was a daughter of Dr. Jeremiah Prichard and Sarah Cook, his wife. Sarah Cook was the daughter of Charles Cook. Dr. Prichard was the son of Jeremiah Prichard Sr. and Cecilia Wilson, his wife. She was the daughter of Abraham Wilson and Isabella Duncan, his wife. She was the daughter of John Duncan.

Dr. James Moore Soniat dates his ancestry back to Guy d Soniat, who came to America in 1752 as Captain in the French service. He

dated his ancestry back to 850. Guiliama de Soniat, who lost his life in the 7th Crusade was in this line of descent.

### 806D

John Dunn and Frances Dunn, his wife, the Emigrants, landed in America about 1700 to 1710 (see sketch of The Bennetts). Children:

- (A) Nancy Dunn.
- (B) Mary Dunn.
- (C) Elizabeth Dunn.
- (D) Hannah Dunn.
- (E) Joseph Dunn.
- (F) John Dunn Jr.
- (G) Hezekiah Dunn.
- (H) Leonard Dunn.

(I) Bartholomew Dunn, born 1716, died 1787. His wife's maiden name was Ruth. To them was born Isaac Dunn in 1754. In 1776 he married Mary Sheffield of Moore County, N. C., located in Anson County, N. C., and died 1836. She was born 1758 and died 1862. They only had one child: Susannah Dunn, who married William Bennett. (See sketch of Mary Sheffield)-806E-

### 806E

The Bennetts: Richard Bennett early came to Jamestown. He became Governor. About 1626, Rev. William Bennett came and next year his wife Susannah came. They are said to have been brothers and to have been nephews of Gen. Richard Bennett who served under Sir Oliver Cromwell. Neville and William Bennett No. 2, are thought to have been sons of Rev. William Bennett, the Emigrant. About 1775 these brothers left the eastern shore of Maryland and settled in Anson County, N. C.

William Bennett No. 2, was a Minister of the Baptist Church. He married Miss Huxton of Maryland. She died and was buried there. He served as Chaplain in Wade Militia, Salisbury District, N. C., in the Revolutionary war.

After coming to Anson County, he married Miss Cheers of Marboro County, S. C., and is buried in that county near "Burnt Factory." There were born to him in Maryland, by Miss Huxton, two children, she dying shortly after the second one was born and he then came to Anson County. Children:

(A) Elizabeth Bennett, born about 1771, came to Anson County as a child, married Mr. Covington and there are many descendants of them in Anson County, N. C.

(B) William Bennett No. 3, born 1773, married Susannah Dunn of Anson County (see 806D), and died 1840 (806-F).

### 806F

-806D-B-There were twelve children born to William Bennett No. 3 and Susannah Dunn, his wife:

(A) James Bennett, born April 13, 1796, died March 1865, married Mary Winfree.

(B) Neville Bennett, born January 28, 1800, died April 1852, married Catherine Harris. (See Williams Table 116 for their descendants.)

(C) Isham Bennett, born April 1, 1803, went to Kentucky or to Tenn.

(D) William Bennett, born Nov. 3, 1804.

(E) Lemuel Bennett, born April 15, 1806, married Jane Little.-806G-

(F) Carey Bennett, born Oct. 27, 1808, married twice. One wife was a Covington or Hodge and then he married Emma Bostic.

(G) John Bennett, born Sept. 7, 1809.

(H) Roxanna Bennett, born May 13, 1811, died 1874, married John Wesley Flake, and their descendants can be seen in Flake Tables from 333 to 342.

(I) Susannah Bennett, married George, the son of William Little, and died Oct. 7, 1894.

(J) Riden Bennett, born March 25, 1816, married Miss Ingram.

(K) Mary Bennett, born June 26, 1820, married Joel Gaddy.

(L) Nancy Jane Bennett, born Feb. 5, 1823, died April 4, 1906, married Benjamin Ingram.

### 806G

-806F-E-Lemuel Dunn Bennett, born April 15, 1806, married Jane Little who was the daughter of William Little and his wife, Elizabeth (Betsy) Steele, the Emigrants from England. William Little was born 1777, died 1847, and in 1798 he married Elizabeth (Betsy) Steele of Mallsate, Longtown, near Brampton, Cumberland County, England and with a brother, Thomas Little, landed at Charleston, S. C. William Little and wife then located in Anson County, N. C. (see sketch of Lemuel Dunn Bennett.) Jane Little, who married Lemuel Dunn Bennett, was the oldest child. Born to them, eight children, as follows:

(A) John Washington Bennett who became a physician. (See North Carolina Booklet of Oct 1917 for a sketch of him.) He married Lydia Bogan. No issue. Then he married Mary Richardson: Children: Purdie Richardson Bennett; Lily Bennett; Clifton G. Bennett.

(B) Ann Eliza Bennett, married Henry Pinkney Townsend of Cabarrus County, N. C. They went to Georgia. Children: Laura Townsend; Eugene Townsend; Donella Townsend; Teccah Townsend; Martha Townsend; Jane Townsend; Henry Townsend; Pinkney Townsend; Hassie Augustus Townsend; John Townsend; and Minnie Lee Townsend.

(C) William Lemuel Bennett, married Roshelia Adams f Arkansas. Children: Lemuel Bennett; Augustu Bennett William Bennett; and Arkansas Bennett.

(D) Thomas Ridsen Bennett, married Mary Townsend. Children: Rosa Bennett; Laura Bennett; Thomas Ross Bennett; Elfleda Bennett; and Jane Bennett.

(E) Captain Frank Bennett married Elizabeth Curry of South Carolina. Children: Frank Bennett Jr.; Elizabeth (L.C.) Curry Bennett.

(F) Mary Jane Bennett, born Feb. 21, 1842, died June 20, 1914, was buried in Anson County, N. C. (see Mary Jane Bennett sketch.) She married Gen. William Alexander Smith, one of the compilers of this book (see 631 and sketch of him.) Three children: Etta Smith, born Nov. 25, 1870, died January 11, 1888; Nona Smith, born Dec. 24, 1872, died Nov. 14, 1877; infant, born August 11, 1875, died the same day.

(G) Charlotte F. Bennett, married Joseph Ingram Dunlap. Children:

(1) Mary Olive (Dolie) Dunlap.

(2) William Bennett Dunlap. He became the adopted son of Gen. William Alexander Smith (see 631), changed his name to Bennett Dunlap Nelme, married Margaret Beacham and has three children: Nona Nelme, Mary Charlotte Nelme, and Elizabeth Nelme. His address is R. F. D. 2, Wadesboro, N. C. He resides on the old Nelme homestead in the home where the General was born.

(H) Frank Dunlap Bennett, single.

(I) Laura Bennett, died single.

### 807

#### THE GEORGE STARBACK TABLE.

George Starback and wife, whose name is not known, begat three sons:

(A) Thomas Starback, married Captain John DeJarnette who came from Virginia to Anson County, N. C., settling at Smith's Ferry on Pee Dee river. He is buried on a bluff near the said Smith's Ferry. He was a member of the Legislature 1874-75.

(B) Frank Starback, moved to Georgia and died single.

(C) George Starback Jr., married twice, the second time to Elizabeth Ingram Saunders, the widow of ———— Saunders, deceased, and the daughter of Captain Joe Ingram and Winnefred Nelme, his wife, the daughter of Charles Nelme and his wife, Eliza Sydnor, of Virginia, and a sister of Presley Nelme. Children:

(A) Matilda Saunders, daughter of Elizabeth Ingram by her first husband, married Horatio Tyson.

(B) Jane Starback, born 1810, married Feb. 11, 1832, and begat two sons to Farguhand Martin, her husband: Starback Martin, and William Martin.

(C) Presley Nelme Starback, born 1812, on July, 1838, married Elizabeth Little, born 1810, died 1871, daughter of William Little.-808-

(D) Winnefred Starback, born 1814, died 1820.

(E) Charlotte Starback, born 1816, married John DeJarnette Pemberton. Three children: Mary Pemberton; Martha Pemberton, died when small; DeJarnette Pemberton, married Emma Lilly and begat two children.

(F) Thomas Starback, born 1817, died 1842, married a Miss Young, sister of Hon. Cary Young of Memphis, Tenn.

### 808

#### -807-C-PRESLEY NELME STARBACK-ELIZABETH LITTLE TABLE.

Presley Nelme Starback on July 1838, married Elizabeth Little, daughter of William Little. Children:

(A) Elizabeth Starback born 1839, married Col. Henry W. Ledbetter.-816-

(B) Mary Jane Starback, born 1841, married Col. Henry W. Ledbetter being his second wife. No issue.

(C) George Little Starback, born 1842.-815-

(D) Charlotte Eleanor Starback, born 1843, married John M. Ross, No issue to this marriage.

(E) William Little Starback.-814-

F Thomas Francis Starback, born 1847, married Julia Manly Powell.-812-

(G) Presley Starback, born 1849, married Ann Winnefred (Nancy) Davis.-811-

(H) Walter Starback, born 1851, died the same year.

(I) Jeremiah Starback, born 1852, married Annie Robbins.-

(J) John E. Starback, born 1854, died 1855.

(K) Charles Starback, born 1856, married Della Ingram.-809-

(L) Jude Stete Starback, born 1859.-810-

### 809

#### -808-K-CHARLES STARBACK-DELLA F. INGRAM TABLE.

Charles Starback on Dec. 17, 1879, married Della F. Ingram, daughter of Braxton Ingram. Twelve children:

(A) William Jerome Starback, born 1880.

(B) Laura Burkhead Starback born 1882, died 1883.

(C) Thomas Melville Starback, born 1884, married Ada Littleton on April, 1916.

(D) Harris Ingram Starback, born 1886, married Annice Nuby.

(E) Elizabeth Nelme Starback, born 1889, died 1912.

(F) Walter Little Starback, born 1891, died 1913.

(G) Charles Lamar Starback, married Sarah Dunlap Parson, June 30, '920.

(H) Frances Burkhead Starback, born 1896, married James Marshall, Marshall, Va.

(I) Frederick Jennings Starback, born 1898, served in the World War.

(J) Wallace Braxton Starback, born 1900, soldier in the World War

(K) Eleanor Lois Starback, born 1903.

### 810

-808-L-JUDE STELLE STARBACK-WILLIAM STARBACK DOCKERY TABLE.

Jude Stelle Starback, married April 15, 1888 to William Starback Dockery. Children:

(A) Elizabeth Starback Dockery, single.

(B) William Dockery, born 1856, died 1894.

(C) Herbert Dockery, 2nd Lieutenant as training officer at Camp Dodd in the World War.

(D) Robert Dockery, died April 26, 1906.

### 811

-808-G-PRESLEY STARBACK-ANN WINNEFRED (NANCY) DAVIS TABLE.

Presley Starback on April 15, 1874, married Ann Winnefred (Nancy) Davis, daughter of Eben Nelme Davis, Byhalia, Miss., and Martha Greenlee, his wife. Eben Nelme Davis was a son of William C. Davis and Elizabeth Nelme, his wife. Children:

(A) Roger Starback, died an infant.

(B) Augusta Starback, married Mr. Feltz.

(C) Emma Starback.

(D) Maud Starback, single.

(E) Martha Starback, died when small.

(F) Thomas Starback, died when small.

(G) Earl Starback, is married.

(H) Lula Starback, married Albert Bayard Clark. Three children: Louise Bayard Clark; Albert Bayard Clark; Nelme Starback Clark.

(I) Nancy Virginia Starback, married Starback Harcison. Two children: Nancy Starback Hardison; Hilda Hardison.

(J) William Starback, soldier in the World War, married Sept. 16, 1920, Josephine Walker.

(K) Thomas Earnest Starback, dead.

### 812

-808-F-THOMAS FRANCIS STARBACK-JULIA MANLY POWELL TABLE.

Thomas Francis Starback, born 1847, died 1914, on Dec. 12, 1871 married Julia Manly

Powell and begat eight children:

(A) Elizabeth Manly Starback.

(B) Louisa Powell Starback, married L. L. Ross.

(C) Julia Pauline Starback.

(D) Annie Little Starback, dead.

(E) Sadie Smith Starback, married.

(F) George Manly Starback, married Annie Leak Moss.-813.

(G) William Thomas Starback, World War veteran.

(H) Virginia Thomson Starback, June 22, 1920, married Paul Vernon Godfrey.

### 813

-812-F-GEORGE MANLY STARBACK-ANNIE LEAK MOSS TABLE.

George Manly Starback, on April 28, 1905 married Annie Leak Moss. Children:

(A) George Manly Starback Jr.

(B) Julia Powell Starback.

(C) Annie Leak Starback.

(D) Cornelia Parson Starback.

(E) Alberta Moss Starback.

### 814

-808-E-William Little Starback enlisted in the Confederate Army as one of the Anson County N. C. Guards and served with credit during the war. He was severely wounded in the battle of the wilderness, being in the 14th Regiment which was holding the line at the "Bloody Angle". At Sharpsburg there was what is called in history the "Bloody Lane". The 14th Reg. N. C. V., of which The Anson Guards was the Color Co., occupied this "Bloody Lane" and lost, in killed and wounded, every man of the 45 present, and at Chancellorsville, the same company carried into battle forty three men, and all were killed or wounded except one and a minnie ball had lodged in his knapsack. See Clark's Regimental Histories, Vol. V page XIX. Brave and fearless he did not flinch amid the hail of bullet's sharpness and solid shot. He paid the supreme sacrifice in the Wilderness fight.

"Sweet sleeps the brave who sink to rest,  
By all their Country's wishes blest"

### 815

-808-C-George Little Starback, born 1842, enlisted as a Confederate soldier as a member of the Anson County Guards, Co. 14, Reg. N. C. V., and was killed in the battle of Bethesda Church on May 30, 1864. The following is taken from "The Anson Guards", page 255: "George L. Starback was another member of your Company who failed to answer roll call the night of the 30th. He was the son of Presley Nelme Starback and Elizabeth Little, his wife, and was born and reared on the banks of



the Great Pee Dee river, on the Richmond side. His ardent spirit could not brook delay—could not wait for the formation of a company from his own county, but he came and enlisted in The Anson Guards.

He made a most capital soldier, a good messmate, an all-round good fellow. Ever ready, cheerfully willing for duty, he was esteemed by his comrades. When he left for the seat of war he left behind a dog to which he was tenderly attached and the dog returned the love with compound interest. When killed his faithful servant and valet, by some means—and it must have been with great difficulty—procured a coffin and took his body home. The servants of the Southern boys took great pride in providing for their masters, whom they served with the devotion of foster brothers, and after a battle roamed the field over till they were found and their wants attended. George's brother Frank relates, 'On the day of the 30th, the dog howled and continued to howl during the night. Next day he was more quiet, but had a drooping manner and a sad countenance; four or five days afterwards the dog accompanied me to the field where I was superintendent to the workers. While sitting beneath the shade of a tree near the roadside, with the dog's head lying on my lap, I was surprised at the approach of Jim, George's servant, whom I supposed was in Virginia. Jim said, 'Marse Frank! Marse George is dead and I brung his body home. It is out yonder in the big road now'. Then it was that I felt a quiver pass through the body of the dog, and he was dead'. The relator of this incident still lives and he speaks the words of truth and soberness. He was a noble character. We called him our standby because he was faithful. We quote again from "The Anson Guards", page 222—"Nov. 7, the second and 30th Regiments (of our Brigade) were on picket duty at Kelly's Ford. In the afternoon the enemy appeared suddenly, surprised them and killed five men, wounded 59, and captured 290 of these two regiments. We drove them back and re-established our lines.

On the morning of that day George Starback received a large box from home. At 11 A. M. we heard Dr. Rosser preach. After the sermon we returned to our shacks. We boys improvised a table and spread the contents of George's box thereon—consisting of a large

turkey, baked and dressed with the skill of our Southern darkey cook, a fine ham and bacon, balls of yellow butter, loaf bread, biscuits, cakes, etc. We stood around, reverently bowed our heads while Doctor said grace. Sharp, rapid fire intermingled with the doctor's thanks. "Officers quick" short command. "Fall in men. Fall in with your guns and accoutrements only." Leaving knapsacks, blankets, everything but cartridge-boxes, we double quicked to the ford, formed in line of battle, recovered the ground and awaited the charge of the Yankees till nightfall and then withdrew to the south bank of the Rapidan. We never saw our knapsacks and blankets any more and the great feast spread was enjoyed by the Yankees. Such is war! The feeling of the hungry boys who lost that "lay out" will never be written."

### 816

#### -806-A-ELIZABETH STARBACK-COL. HENRY W. LEDBETTER TABLE

Elizabeth Starback, born 1839, died 1875, married Col. Henry W. Ledbetter. Children:

(A) Henry Wall Ledbetter, died when small.

(B) Martha Elizabeth Ledbetter, married W. A. Sloan.-817

(C) William Presly Ledbetter, married Texie Gray. One child, Laura Elizabeth, died 1918, about grown.

(D) Lillie May Ledbetter.-818-

(E) George Starback Ledbetter, married Nellie Lockhart.

(F) Mary Anna Ledbetter, married Cyrus C. Bryan. Children: Cyrus C. Bryan Jr., died in infancy; Mary Ledbetter Bryan; and Emma Pernelia Bryan.

### 817

-816-B-Martha Elizabeth Ledbetter, married William A. Sloan. Children:

(A) William Ledbetter Sloan.

(B) Mary Starback Sloan.

(C) Henry Wall Sloan.

(D) Frank Alexander Sloan.

### 818

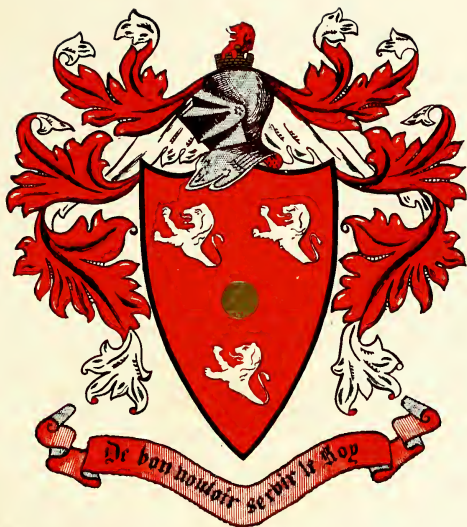
-816-D-Lillie May Ledbetter, married John W. Wassemon. Children:

(A) John Earnest Wassemon, died in infancy.

(B) Elizabeth Wassemon.

(C) All Little Wassemon.





Bennett



839 (See 801)

## COL. HUGH MONTGOMERY.

By descent from this ancestor, William Alexander Smith, was privileged to become a member of the very exclusive Society of the Cincinnati. This famous Society was founded by Gens. George Washington, Steuben, Knox, Hamilton, Lafayette and others. The membership of this Society was composed of the Commissioned officers of the Revolutionary Army, and Washington was the president. Only the birthright son of these officers was eligible to succeed the father. In case the line of the eldest son lapsed, then a collateral branch may continue the succession. The name was derived from the famous old Roman Cincinnatus and was bestowed by Washington. The object of the Society was to maintain and support the infant republic of the United States, to which each member was pledged. Gen. William Alexander Smith is the son of Eliza Sydnor Nelme, the daughter of Nancy Ingram, the daughter of Nancy Montgomery, the daughter of Col. Hugh Montgomery. The Society was established in 1787 to promote Republican form of government, for the betterment of the people, to make Utopia of the infant democracy of the day the reality of the future. Some ill-disposed, disaffected and disgruntled people of the day (we can imagine the reason) attempted to bring the Society into disrepute, saying the intention and object of the Society was to establish a rank of nobility in this country. We know that Gen. Washington was offered the crown and he could have raised to the peerage whom he pleased. That Society was organized to counteract this sentiment of kingly authority, combining therewith assistance to the needy officers, their widows and orphans. In confirmation of the sentiment of opposition, I quote from the Colonial Records of North Carolina, Vol. XVII, page 135:

"Hon. R. Caswell to Brig. Gen. Caswell"

"Dear Son: This acknowledges the receipt of yours by Captain Craddock by whom this will be returned to you. I will attend to what you require. There is not anything material here. The Cincinnati make some noise principally owing to a piece written, tis' say'd, by Dr. Burke, one of the judges of So. Carolina in opposition to the Order. Suggesting it will be the establishing a Peerage in each member of this posterity. May love attend you and yours. Your affecte. R. Caswell."

In further confirmation of opposition sentiment, (because misunderstood) we again

quote from Col. Rec. Vol. XIX, page 743: "On Thursday, Nov. 22, in the General Assembly Mr. Butler" (a representative from Orange County) "presented a Petition from a number of people of Orange County praying &c. Whereupon Mr. Butler moved for leave and presented a bill to render incapable all such persons that now are, or hereafter may be, of or belonging to the Society of Cincinnati, of having a seat in either house of the General Assembly of this State—ordered that the said bill and petition be laid on the table."

Thus you will notice that the Assembly promptly killed the bill, and the good people of Orange County killed the political life of Mr. John Butler, as we hear nothing further of him. We note also the Society of the Cincinnati was represented in the General Convention (see Col. Rec., Vol. 17, page 133): "The Sons of Cincinnati sent Lt. Col. Comt. Lytle, Major Blount and Major McGree as delegates to represent the Society of the Cincinnati in the General Convention to be held in May, 1785.

C. Ivy Secty. P. T. Jethro Sumner, Pres."

In Vol. 16, page 911 we quote:

Hillsborough, Oct. 20, 1783

"Mr. President and Gentlemen of the Society of the Cincinnati: With great satisfaction I receive the honorable mark of my conduct as chief magistracy of this state from so respectable a body of my fellow citizens as the gentlemen officers composing your Society. An institution formed for the noble purpose of perpetuating merit and transmitting to the latest age the epoch of the glorious revolution of the States from the tyranny and oppression to sovereignty and Independence cannot but be acceptable to me.

Inspired by the highest sense of gratitude for the honor intended for me on this occasion with singular pleasure I accept of same for which I beg leave, gentlemen of Cincinnati, to return to you my humble and hearty acknowledgments. At the same time Mr. President you will please accept my thanks for the polite and handsome manner in which you have conveyed to me the sense of the society. Alex Martin."

Alex Martin was then Governor of the State of North Carolina.

In portraying the character of our ancestor, Hugh Montgomery, we take pleasure in copying the following from the "Reminiscences and Memoirs of Eminent North Carolinians" by Col. John H. Wheeler:

"Prominent among the names of the Committee of Safety of Rowan County is

Hugh Montgomery. He was a native of Ireland. At an early age he fell in love with a Miss Moore, who was of noble birth. This was strongly opposed by her friends, but the attachment was reciprocated—and she was conveyed secretly on board a ship where she met her lover and was married. The youthful pair escaped in safety to America. He was himself of a goodly stock, a near relative to General Richard Montgomery, who fell at the battle of Quebec, 1775.

He settled first in Pennsylvania and afterwards removed to Salisbury, North Carolina. He was constant and active in promoting the cause of independence and was one of the most fixed and forward of the daring spirits of that day. Among whom were Griffith Rutherford, John Brevard, Matthew Locke, John Lewis Beard, William Sharp, Maxwell Chambers, Wm. Kennon, George Henry Beringer, John Nesbit, and Charles McDowell. By his enterprise and industry he amassed a handsome fortune. He died in Salisbury Dec. 23, 1779, leaving one son and seven daughters. His son Hugh Montgomery Jr. married Miss Parnell of Virginia and by her had several children of whom, Lemuel P. Montgomery was Col. of the 39th Regiment U. S. Infantry. He fell in the battle of the Horseshoe, March 27, 1814, in the 25th year of his age; the first to mount the breastworks and was pierced by a ball in the head.

The eldest daughter married Dr. Anthony Newman, who settled in Nashville, and whose son, Lemuel Daniel Newman, was born in North Carolina, then moved to Georgia; was a lieutenant on the 4th Regiment U. S. army and commanded the Georgia volunteers in the action with the Florida Indians, distinguished himself in an attack on the Creek Indians in Autossee Towns in Dec. 1813, and was severely wounded at Camp Defiance, Jan. 1814. He was a member of Congress from Georgia from Oct. 1831 to 1833. He died in Walker County, Georgia in 1851.

The second daughter married Mr. Stewart who settled in Greensboro, Tenn. where his family now reside.

The third daughter married Mr. Blake whose grandson, James Blake, distinguished himself in the war with Mexico under General Taylor.

The fourth daughter married Captain Edwin Ingram, of Richmond County, who entered the army of the Revolution as a private and rose to the rank of Captain. He was "The Marion" of the State, daring and active in the cause. He was tendered, on account of his services and losses, five hundred pounds by the General Assembly of North Carolina,

which he declined to accept. He was the grandfather of Major Saunder M. Ingram, of Richmond, who behaved so gallantly under Taylor and Scott in Mexico.

The fifth daughter married Col. David Campbell, distinguished at the battle of Kings Mountain. He moved to Tennessee and established Campbells Station. Several of his boys were distinguished in the Indian wars under Jackson and Harrison, especially William B. Campbell, who was born in Tenn. He was Attorney General of the State, served in the Cherokee and Creek wars, elected to Congress from Tennessee from 1837 to 1847. He was Colonel of the First Regiment of the Tennessee Volunteers in the Mexican War and distinguished himself at the battles of Monterey, National Bridge, and Cerro Gordo. For 1850-53 he was elected Governor of the State of Tenn. and in 1857 was chosen by the unanimous vote of the Legislature, Judge of the Circuit Court. In 1862 he was appointed by Lincoln a Brigadier General in the Union Army, which his health caused him to decline. At the close of the war he was again elected a member of the 79th Congress 1865-67 and died at Lebanon, Tenn. Aug. 19, 1867.

The sixth daughter married Gen. James Wellborn, of Wilkes County, whose eldest daughter married Newton Cannon, Gov. of Tennessee.

The seventh daughter married Montford Stokes who was Gov. of North Carolina.

Hugh Montgomery was a prominent member of society, of ample fortune, and resided in the Town of Salisbury, N. C. He was a gentleman of standing, of education and learning; a gentleman of wealth, owning many separate tracts of land in Rowan County as will appear by reference to the records in the Register of Deeds office in that County.

The Montgomery family came from Scotland. Crossing the North Channel it located in Londonderry, in Ulster, Ireland. From thence Gen. Richard Montgomery and Col. Hugh Montgomery emigrated to America and were known as Scotch-Irish. Maj. Gen. Richard Montgomery was in command of the Continental Army sent against Canada. After a brilliant campaign through New York he took Montreal and pushed on to Quebec, and there began the siege with 300 men but later received reinforcements of 600 men. The time of service of most of his army expired in Dec. The only possibility of taking the city would be lost by the men leaving. With the inadequate force of 800 men he determined to make the effort. He assaulted and carried the first line of defense, and moving promptly forward on the second line he was instantly killed by

a discharge of the enemy's battery. His men thrown into confusion, by the loss of their general, retired in disorder and the assault failed. Thus ended the hope of the United States to attack Canada.

For Gen. Montgomery, Montgomery County, N. C. was named, as was Montgomery, the Capital of Alabama, notable in the history of the Confederacy as the city in which the delegates of the Seceding States met to form a new nation. They organized a Provisional Government under the title "Confederate States of America".

We are not absolutely certain that Gen. Richard Montgomery and Col. Hugh Montgomery were brothers. They both came from Ulster County, Ireland, both of them were of goodly stock, both of them were Protestants. Gen. Richard Montgomery was born in 1718 and Col. Hugh Montgomery was born in 1720, a very natural sequence in children of the same parents. The Historian Wheeler says Hugh was a very near relative. From the above statement of facts we are warranted in believing they were brothers. They were both ardent patriots and both died in the service of their country.

On June 9, 1778 a ship arrived at Edonton, N. C. with 13,000 pair of shoes, a large quantity of clothing for the Continental Army, and a marble monument for Maj. Richard Montgomery, whose body sleeps in St. Pauls Churchyard, New York City.

John Montgomery was also a prominent and eminent character in Colonial days, being a Justice of the Peace, Attorney General and Chief Justice of the Province of North Carolina. We know not the relationship, if any, he bore to Col. Hugh Montgomery. Wheeler in his Reminiscences says: "He (Col Hugh Montgomery) was of goodly stock, and was probably scion of Roger de Montgomery, Earl of Arundel and Shrewsbury. He must have been well connected to be intimately associated with Lady Mary Moore, who thought it not derogatory to her family to become his wife."

Hugh Montgomery and his bride first settled in Pennsylvania. Climatic rigors caused him to seek a more congenial clime and he came to the Piedmont section of North Carolina, to dwell among other Scotch-Irish, who had preceded him. He purchased a home in the town of Salisbury, followed the mercantile business and prospered.

Previous to the adoption of the Constitution of North Carolina, the Province had two kinds of government. 1st Proprietary government by the Lord Proprietors which prevailed to the year of 1731. 2nd Royal government

or government by the King of England, which prevailed until the adoption of the Constitution in May 1775.

In April 1775 the royal Governor, Josiah Martin, dissolved the General Assembly. This act terminated the royal rule of England. Four days thereafter he took refuge in Ft. Johnston, then on board the Cruiser, a ship of war lying in the Cape Fear River. The delegates to the Convention assembled Aug. 25, 1774 at Newburn and enacted that the civil government be vested in:

1st. A Provisional Council of two members from each Judicial District.

2nd. Committee of Safety for the town, composed of a president and twelve members.

3rd. Committee of Safety for the County, composed of twenty members.

The County Committee was empowered to examine all suspected persons, arrest, imprison, punish, and take special care that the public interest suffer no detriment. Under this act the Rowan County Committee of Safety was the first to be organized, and the Pitt County Committee was the second. These Committees, in addition to the powers granted by law, usurped some new authority every day, executive, judicial, or legislative, as the case might be and their powers soon became unlimited. They determined not only what acts but even what opinions constituted a man an enemy to his country, passed on his guilt or innocence, and fixed his punishment. Woe unto the man who they declared to be "an enemy to his country."

As time passed, the Committee of Safety grew more despotic and keenly vigilant for the welfare of their country. See Colonial Records in confirmation.

The Rowan County Committee of Safety in 1774 fixed the price merchants should charge for powder. About one year afterwards, June 1, 1775, at a meeting of said Committee it was "resolved that Maxwell Chambers be publicly advertised in the South Carolina Gazette as an enemy to the common cause of liberty for raising the price fixed, contrary to the directions of the Continental Congress." There was then no Salisbury Watchman, "Whose Argus eyes o'er the peoples rights doth an eternal vigil keep, No soothing strains of Maia's son could lull his hundred eyes to sleep."

No newspaper was published in North Carolina and the advertisement must be made in Charleston, S. C.

At this same meeting of the Committee of Safety, it was "resolved that Hugh Montgomery be brought before the Committee to answer a charge of selling powder at a higher

price than had been set by the Committee." The minutes of the meeting continuing says: "Let it be remembered that Mr. Montgomery on his appearance, generously acknowledged his trespass of the resolve, and declared his intention to do so no more." If advancing the price of goods made one an enemy to his country, then our merchants during the World War should hang their heads in shame.

Beyond question this proves the honorable character of Hugh Montgomery, one of nature's noblemen, in that he properly appeared, courageously, magnanimously confessed fault and promised amendment. We are sure he "kept the faith", a loyal Whig and friend of his country, for in 71 days thereafter, on August 20, 1775, he was elected a member of the Safety Committee and became active and influential as a member. Confidence in his ability and integrity is responsible for the important commission assigned to him when on Oct. 17, 1775 he was appointed "to go among the disaffected and obtain their signatures as friends of liberty and issue certificates of loyalty to them." He was a potent factor in persuading men to become allied with the sons of liberty and to follow the cause, to the limit of their ability, to the end.

In Governor Tryon's administration he was the Commissary of the Rowan Battalion of Militia, as also was William Graham for the County of Tryon, Thomas Polk for the County of Mecklenburg and Thomas Wade for the County of Anson.

In a letter from Gov. Tryon to the Earl of Hillsboro, Dec. 26, 1768, we learn that Hugh Montgomery was allowed 345 pounds and 2 shillings which he advanced as Commissary. In the same year judgment was taken against him as surety in the sum of 475 pounds 13 shillings 4 pence, about \$2300.00.

In Oct. 1775 he was elected to represent the Town of Salisbury in the General Assembly. As a member of the Provincial Congress, the minutes show that he exerted power and influence in legislation, assigned to important commissions, evidencing activity and prominence.

Bear in mind those were strenuous days. One who engaged with heart and soul in the cause of liberty did so at his peril. Heads were the stakes. Days of danger, of risk, of venture, of gravest peril, which brought forth from Benjamin Franklin the epigram, "We must all hang together or we shall all hang separately," and "No man having set his hands to the plough, and looking back is fit for honorable mention in his country's service.

Hugh Montgomery set his hands to the plow, pledging his life, his property and his

sacred honor to the cause of liberty and independence, never looking backwards. His acts as a civilian bespoke eloquently of the spirit of freedom and liberty inherited from his Scotch-Irish ancestry.

Imbued with the spirit of freedom his courageous soul was not content to abide in the honorable halls of the Committee of Safety and the Provincial Congress. In 1776 he accepted the appointment of Captain of the Marines, he was promoted to Colonel and paid the supreme sacrifice, dying in the service Dec. 23, 1779. His prestige and influence brought strength to the patriotic struggle for liberty and independence which his contemporaries were glad to acknowledge and his descendants to honor. He was a good financier; success crowned his business efforts. It could have been said of him as it was said of Job: "Thou (God) hast blessed the works of his hands and his substance is increased in the land." Continuing the paraphrase—There was a man in the Town of Salisbury whose name was Hugh Montgomery and "that man was perfect and upright, one that feared God and eschewed evil". There were born to him one son and seven daughters, all of whom became more or less distinguished as were also the children born to them, as will appear from Wheeler's Reminiscences quoted above.

Prudent and economical, brave and heroic, possessing the courage of his convictions, with a heart of gold he gave undivided support to the principles of right, of freedom, of justice against the exactions of overlords. He ventured the wrath of his King, George III, and his minions, for failure meant laying his head on the block for the executioner's ax, his name accursed and his goods confiscated.

The North Carolina Delegates in the Continental Congress obtained an order that a half a ton of powder be sent to Salisbury, N. C. by one Mr. McDowell of Rowan County, returning in a wagon. (Can this be a progenitor of my friend Franklin Brevard McDowell?) The powder was to be "delivered to General Rutherford, in his absence to Mr. Matthew Lock, in case of both being absent to Mr. Hugh Montgomery". By wagon was the only way of conveying freight in ye good olden days, regardless of distance.

In 1907 a monument was unveiled at Quebec, Canada by the Prince of Wales now George V, King of England. This monument was erected to Generals Montcalm and Richard Montgomery, Commanding generals of opposing armies, tho not killed in the same battle. Montcalm was killed Sept. 14, 1759, and Montgomery was killed Dec. 31, 1775.



In 1908 the writer saw this beautiful design of the sculptor's art, viewing it only with the attention given to other magnificent monuments. Afterwards search of the genealogist, Mrs. Lily Doyle Dunlap, revealed that Gen. Montgomery was probably his great-great uncle.

Col. Hugh Montgomery married Lady Mary Moore. Her family opposing, she was secretly conveyed aboard ship and concealed in a barrel, till the ship passed the inspection of the guard and permitted clearance papers. She was united to the gentleman of her heart, aboard ship, on the open sea by the Captain of the ship. Their honeymoon was spent in crossing the Atlantic, precedent of the honeymoon tours of to-day. His interesting will of several pages is on record, bearing date Dec. 13, 1779, executors, James Kerr, the elder of Salisbury, David Nesbit and John Brown. The will was witnessed by Michhoy Max Chambers, and B. Booth and probated Feb. 1780.

In the terribly strenuous days during and preceding the Revolution, strong men were needed in the Committee of Safety, in the General Assembly and in the Continental Army; men of education, men of learning, men of conviction, men of ability, men of influence, men of wealth, men of principle, men of standing, men of courage, men of eminence. All these qualifications were possessed by Col. Hugh Montgomery. His esteemed personality, his high-bred family connections, his worth and his intense devotion to the best interest of his country, made him conspicuous among his brother officers in the army, his confreres in legislative halls and among his citizen associates.

His life was cut in the very hey-day of his usefulness to his God, his country and his fellow-man. He reaped the reward and esteem by faithful service in this world and will be a ruler in the world to come. "Well done thou good and faithful servant; thou hast been faithful over a few things, I will make thee ruler over many things: enter thou into the joy of the Lord."

W. A. Smith

840 (See 800)

#### ABRAHAM BELYEW

The name of Belyew is of French origin and in the old records is spelled various ways, Bellview, Bellow, Bellue, Bellou. Indeed, sometimes contracted to Blue, though the last is an entirely different name. It is, however, generally written Bellow.

We do not know when he came to America

but from the records, we are assured he was a substantial citizen and a man of substance, owning select tracts of rich bottom lands on Flat Fork Creek, Cedar Creek, Brown Creek, Fork of Brown Creek, etc. He was an accomplished gentleman of education and refinement. His brother Belyew was a surveyor after the type of George Washington. We now term them engineers. One must have a knowledge of the higher mathematics to be an expert surveyor. In acquiring the higher mathematics in the olden days one must necessarily have attained more or less knowledge of the ancient languages and be proficient in the modern. Being of French extraction, probably a Frenchman himself, it is legitimate to suppose he was a proficient Latin Scholar as the French language is largely based on the Latin. He was of a versatile, vivacious, polished, animated and cheerful disposition, enjoying and following with keen zest the hunter's sport. Stalking deer was a favorite pastime of his.

In his day there was no undergrowth to obscure the bison and the eye could penetrate long distances obstructed only by the boles of trees. The land was covered by wild pea vines, upon which countless numbers of deer fed. The water-ways abounded with fish and the surface was haunted by water fowl of many kinds, among them the large canvass-back duck upon which Gournetts delighted to feast.

Not far from one of his farms on Brown Creek there was a hill, the favorite stand from which to shoot deer as they leaped past when pursued by the dogs.

An old gentleman related to the writer that one winter, while still in his teens, there was a heavy fall of snow from 18 to 20 inches deep, on top of which there fell one fourth inch of sleet. The deer when aroused by the hunter would make only one or two leaps, his feet crushing through the sleet and the snow beneath. The sharp edges of the sleet would cut through the flesh and lacerate and bruise the shin bones, which was very painful. Depressed and dispirited the deer would surrender submissively and resign themselves to the fate of the hunter's knife. They were slaughtered by the hundred. The flesh of the deer called venison, is a delicious, savory meat and was common on his table.

It is not surprising that Isaac bade Esau "Take thy weapons, thy quiver and thy bow and go out in the field and take me venison and make me savory meat, such as I love". The hide of the deer tanned with the hair on it was used to make knapsacks, game and ball bags, even caps and clothing. "Unto

Adam also and to his wife did the Lord God make coats of skins and clothed them". With the hair removed the hide was used in making buskins, a trim, neat dancing boot.

Fitted on his shapely foot

"Come trip it as ye go,

On the light fantastic toe"

The deer hide was most admirable for thongs, strings, and whip lashes.

We do not know when he or his parents emigrated to America but we know that he married Katie Smith, daughter of Phillip Smith and are assured that he was a gentleman of distinction. He lived in the section of the county now known as Horne's School House not far from the Pee Dee River, was a large owner of choice tracts of land and had many slaves. He was a substantial citizen of influence and standing, as he is numbered with William Baiford, Samuel Flake, John Smith, John Williams, Joseph Allen and other Regulators as appears on the Colonial Records of the Province of North Carolina.

Laws for the governing of the Province were enacted in far away England and executed by citizens of this country appointed by the Governor of the Province; the Governor himself being an appointee of the Crown or the Lords Proprietors. The tax collectors, sheriffs magistrates and judges were usually venal, taking advantage of the long distance from the source of authority and accountability, their conduct was governed by a sordid love of money declared to be "The root of all evil."

Justice was perverted, bargained and sold; excessive and enormous fees exacted; exorbitant taxes collected by distraint; seizing goods and chattels and selling them at a sacrifice. All this and more drove the most substantial and prominent citizens to gather in assemblies to recount their grievances, and petition for redress. This was their only way to obtain a hearing. The petitions were sometimes addressed to the Governor, the representative of the Crown in the Province; sometimes addressed to the English Parliament and often addressed to the King George III. The conscience of the King was hard to reach; the Parliament gave little heed and the Governor was obdurate. Consequently the petitions of the Regulators were made in vain, rejected, more oppressive laws enacted and malicious schemes hatched to force submission.

The protesting assemblies were first called mobs. After they grew in numbers and met more frequently, seeking to regulate the execution of the law, according to justice and right, they were designated Regulators.

The Regulators in meeting assembled, drew

up and attached their names to a petition addressed to King George III, dated Oct. 1769, setting forth their grievances protesting against distraint of taxes, miscarriage of justice and harsh enforcement of unjust laws. They suggested seventeen changes in said laws. Quoting from said petition, "We take the freedom to recommend the following mode of redress, not doubting audience and acceptance which will not only tend to our relief but command the prayers and duty from your humble petitioners, etc."

The officers in Anson County complained of, were named in said petition, viz, Anthony Hutchins, ex-sheriff; Col. Samuel Spencer, Clerk of the Court; Charles Medlock, sheriff; the subordinate assistants of the officers and the Justices of the Peace. It was a far cry thru the Governor to the King, three to four thousand miles distant requiring weeks and months to reach him and possibly to be spurned by him, rejected with disdain, calling them his "disgruntled, insubordinate and rebellious subjects".

Open rebellion was the last resource left to these brave, freedom loving people of the Province, and appeal was made to this resort. The Anson Regulators were joined by others from Mecklenburg, Orange and Rowan. These four counties embraced all the middle and western section of the Province, and, in this section the Regulators dominated and predominated.

Before the Revolutionary War the county of Alamance was a part of Orange; Stanly and Montgomery Counties, a part of Anson; Cabarras a part of Mecklenburg, and Iredell, of Rowan. The Regulators to the number of 3,700 assembled on the Enoc River and fought on May 16, 1771 the battle of Alamance against the organized forces of the King under Governor Tryon, numbering 3,000 from the eastern counties, commanded by Gen. John Waddell, Col. John Hinton, John Ashe, Joseph Leach, Richard Caswell, William Thompson, Needham Bryan and Alexander Lillington, with their regiments of infantry, a company of artillery, a company of mounted rangers and a company of light horsemen, all fully equipped and well armed.

The Regulators had only their hunter's rifles; no military leader in command; no organization into companies, regiments, brigades or other units of an army. Each man acted independently, it was organization pitted against a mob; the battle could have but one result—the defeat and rout of the brave but unorganized Regulators. Many were killed, more wounded, scores captured and thousands escaped. The foremost in

the battle ranks were captured and among the captured was Abraham Bellyew. To escape being hanged and quartered he took the oath of allegiance to the British Crown and afterward conscientiously abided by the oath.

The War of the Revolution came on in 1775-76 and we find Abraham Bellyew an active partisan loyalist of such prominence that he was made a Captain in the British Army, commissioned by Lord Cornwallis. He was killed in battle. (See Colonial Records Vol. XIV, page 609).

We have seen that he was a Regulator, protesting against British rule, to the extent of battling for the people's rights, was captured and released on taking the oath of allegiance to the British crown, as did more than 6,000 other Regulators in the four counties of Anson, Mecklenburg, Orange and Rowan. As a gentleman, and as an honorable man, his religious convictions impelled him to respect his oath of allegiance to King George III, and he made the supreme sacrifice as a Loyalist and Tory. We are to respect and honor his religious principles.

The Tories or Loyalists accepted the result of the Revolution with equanimity and possibly with good will and abided the new order of government in good faith. Col. Edmund Fanning was the one notable exception. He

was a very great man, a graduate of Yale, having had the honorary degree of LL. D. conferred upon him by his Alma Mater—Kings College, Dartmouth University and by Oxford, England. At the close of the war he abandoned his home and lands and clientage, fleeing to Canada, where he was made Governor of the Province. It is said of him that during the whole seven years of war he never lost a battle or failed in a campaign.

The animosities engendered by the bitter contest that tried men's souls were mollified, lost and subdued in time's infinite sea as it rolled onward.

Errors demanded pity; resentment was disarmed by the cheerful acquiescence of the loyalists in the new order of affairs, who were received with open arms by the Whigs. The Tories blessed the day that restored them to the friends of liberty; the cause of America; the cause of God and mankind.

Time heals many wounds and rights many wrongs. Soon the Whigs and Tories, mingling and commingling, became one people. The sons marrying and the daughters being cheerfully given in marriage—no one to object or say them nay. Today only by searching the old Colonial Records can one tell who was Tory and who was Whig.

Wm. A. Smith



Dr. J. P. Nelme



Presley Nelme

841 (See 804)

## PRESLEY NELME, JR.

Presley Nelme Jr. was the son of Presley Nelme of Franklin County, N. C., who was the son of Charles Nelme of Northampton County of Virginia, who was the son of John Nelme, the emigrant to America from the Isle of Skye, Scotland; of good family, known as The Lords of the Marches. His Coat of Arms indicated a very high rank of nobility. He settled in New York. His son, Charles Nelme, went to Virginia, a Province of Great Britain, whose first Governor was Lord de la Warr. The patriot, Charles Nelme, enlisted the 10th of March, 1777 as a private in Captain Samuel Drury's company, afterward Capt. John Danridge, in Col. Harrison's Regiment, First Artillery of Continental Troops, to serve three years. His services were acceptable to his superiors and he was made a Corporal; later his bravery won him further promotion and he was made a Sergeant. Enlistments for a term of years were known as "Troops of the Line", to distinguish them from short term enlistments and from the Militia. Troops of the Line were thoroughly trained and enured to war and were dependable, able to cope with the trained, efficient, reliable Redcoats of the British Army. The Troops of the Line from the various Provinces were forwarded

to the seat of war and served under Washington and his officers.

He survived the war, after enduring the suffering of Valley Forge in the winter of 1777-1778; took part in that winter's campaign, crossing the Delaware River, made more dangerous by floating ice, caught the sleeping British under Col. Rahl at Trenton, and gained a glorious victory. Success crowned this terrible winter campaign. The Lion at Bay had turned upon his pursuers and wrested from them the initiative of war. This was the result of the conception, the genius, the courage of a Washington. From this time he took an assured place among the great commanders of history. Charles Nelme, our ancestor, survived the 7 long years of the American Revolution, married Miss Eliza Sydnor of the prominent Sydnor family of Virginia; one of the F. F. V's of which we have heard so much, and today the Sydnors are reckoned to have borne an honorable part all these years in the upbuilding of their great Mother, the State of Virginia.

Charles Nelme "began sons and daughters" (See Genealogical (806) Table) and lived to the ripe old age of four score and four years. During the years of his potency and efficiency, he declined the pension granted by the government to the Soldiers of the Revolution. When eighty (80), an invalid, enervated and incapacitated, he applied for and was granted a

pension, which he enjoyed four years. All of which will appear by reference to the Records of the Pension Office in the City of Washington, D. C.

Charles Nelme's son, Presley, came to North Carolina and located in Franklin County on a tract of 900 acres of land lying in Goldmine and Sandy Creek Townships on both sides of Shocco Creek. This tract of land he gave to his son, Presley Nelme Jr. Reference is made to the Register of Deeds office of Franklin County. His uncle Eben, a bachelor, directed his land to be sold and divided between his sisters, Winifred Ingram, Elizabeth Davis and Ann Booth. See Will of Eben Nelme.

In 1749 Anson County was formed and soon thereafter Presley Nelme sold his lands in Franklin and with his penates cast his lot in the virgin forests of Anson, purchasing large tracts of land on Cedar Creek, Brown Creek and Pee Dee River. The lands on the River are still owned by his lineal descendant, Gen. William A. Smith.

Presley Nelme married Ann Montgomery Ingram, a lineal descendant of Lt. Hugh Montgomery who died in the service of his country during the Revolution. Hugh Montgomery was a brother of General Richard Montgomery of Cromwell's Army. Presley Nelme was a notable character by reason of his high social position, his education, his wealth and aristocratic carriage. His affability cast a ray of sunshine as he greeted high and low, hats were doffed because of his distinguished bearing and unfailing courtesy. His wife was a daughter of "Redhead" Joseph Ingram, whose mother was Katie McCaskill of Scotland who also came from the Isle of Skye. He was a Scotchman of Scotchmen with Chesterfieldian manners. He settled on Cedar Creek in a roomy, handsome residence, living the happy life of the southern country gentleman with his slaves quartered around him, all of whom he treated as members of his family for whose welfare he was responsible. By his will he liberated an entire family of the most valuable of his slaves. He not only gave them their freedom but directed that they be furnished with means to transport them to a free soil state and further directed that his executor should purchase for them land for a home.

In 1830-1840 there were, according to my information, about 100 Emancipation Societies in the United States. Of these 87 were south of the Mason and Dixon line. This fact clearly shows the sentiment of the best thought among the people of the south. These societies were rapidly gaining in in-

fluence and importance as their membership increased, and the sentiment for freeing their slaves was making good progress till Wm. Lloyd Garrison, Wendel Phillips, Arthur Tappan and other Abolitionists came to the force with abuse, denunciation, aspersion, malediction and fulmination of foul invectives against the southern slave owners and forced them in self defense to disband their societies and resist the encroachments of these fanatics who, in time, were backed by the North and finally culminated in the Confederate War.

It was the purpose and intention of these societies to liberate the slaves by progressive stages, contingent upon age or some limited period of service, and accomplish the desired emancipation gradually without confusion and disastrous dissolution of society and government as did Abraham Lincoln's unlawful Emancipation Proclamation.

Presley Nelme was a staunch believer in pedigree of the human race. With the blood of nobility in his veins he was courteous and hospitable; chivalrous in his respect and regard for the gentler sex. He always addressed his consort as "Mistress" and treated her with the deference of a lover wooing his best girl. For her he purchased the first vehicle brought to the county, in that day called a "gig"—called in London a "Two Wheeler". It had seats for two and was elegantly and luxuriously upholstered in brown leather. Its long shafts were curved downward just as they are today. From E. P. Whipple's book, "Literature and Life" I copy. "I consider him a very respectable man. What do you mean by respectable? Why he kept a gig." He regarded his wife as of superior mold and estate, and altho the gig was two seated, he would not place himself by her side as an equal but would ride his horse by the side of the gig. A servant on horseback rode in front and another servant in the rear. Thus in making a visit, going to church, shopping or a "joy" ride, this was the style of his lordly forbears in the Isle of Skye. His great-grandfather came from that Island, the largest and most northerly of the Inner Hebrides. It has been made famous by Sir Walter Scott in his "Lord of the Isles". On this Island, Glen Sligachan is the grandest in the Scotch Highlands. Here also are found many beautiful waterfalls and many caves. One of the latter is historically interesting being near Portree and having afforded refuge to Prince Charlie after his romantic escape from the Island of Uist, which is a small island upon which 3,000 British soldiers under the Duke of



Argyle were seeking his capture. Around the Isle were stationed armed vessels to intercept every boat leaving the Island. The army and navy were active and diligent because of a reward offered by the British Government of \$150,000 for his head, dead or alive. The Prince made his escape in female attire, personating one of the attendant maids of Flora McIvor, who at the risk of her life accomplished his escape. Flora afterwards married the Lord of McDonald and became the mistress of Armandale Castle, the most beautiful of the castles of the Isle of Skye.

Presley Nelme naturally inherited love of the orderly and the beautiful, his ancestors having come from the grandly beautiful Island of Skye, with its mountainous, highland hills, its lovely valleys and enclosures fenced in with neatly trimmed hedges. He surrounded his home with a hedge of cedar and bordered his field therewith.

He maintained to the close of his life a loyal, chivalrous regard for his wife, a handsome, gentle, refined lady of the old school, a daughter of "Redhead" Joe Ingram and Ann Montgomery. Her father also came from his ancestral Isle of Skye, emigrating to America and bringing his entire family, consisting of his wife and seven children, clearly indicative of abundant means to pay passage money across the Atlantic and the purchase of large landed interest in the county, with slaves, stock, and tools to farm it.

Consequently, the children born to Presley Nelme and his Scotch wife were Scotch to the bone and marrow. We will remark in passing that there were two Joseph Ingrams, one known as "Redhead" Joe, so-called by reason of his red hair, the other his nephew, was called "Cap" Joe because he wore a cap made from the dressed skin of a coon. "Unto Adam and to his wife also did the Lord God make coats of skin and clothed them." The red hair now and then crops out in "Redhead's" descendants, frequently shaded into a curly, ravishing beautiful auburn. "Cap" Joe Ingram married Winifred Nelme, a sister of Presley Nelme, the father of this sketch.

The McCaskill family were prominent in Scotland, gentlemen of means and distinction. Malcolm educated his sons in the famous Glasgow University. Malcolm's sons Alexander and Frederick chose the profession of the law. They made their homes in the West Indies and amassed fortunes. Both became victims of the climate and died without issue. A canny Scotchman, one McGuinn, armed with Power of Attorney went down to settle their estates and bring back the pro-

ceeds for division among the heirs, less his expenses and commissions. He never returned to America and made no accounting but he went to his native Scotland and lived the life of a prince, it is thought, with the proceeds of his dereliction and unfaithfulness. No effort was made to recover or prosecute.

The prudence and foresight of the canny Scotchman McCaskill, was highly developed in our subject, he being gifted in finance. 'Twas said of him "Everything he touched prospered." His foresight of the markets, his ability to make a shrewd guess "the way the cat would jump", enabled him to turn an honest penny and add to his store of this world's pelf without resorting to usury to the injury and distress of others. His success was noted by neighbors and his advice sought from far and near. One of his sayings is still sometimes quoted, "A poor man should always purchase a good article, thereby obtaining a fair value for his money." A rich man could do as he pleased; buying a shoddy article he could throw it away and get another. His maxim or settled principle was to purchase the best article obtainable. I have an invoice of goods purchased by him, showing broadcloth at eighteen dollars per yard. The best was none too good for him. His whole life was based on deep-rooted esteem of good blood and ancestry, and the precedent of honorable forbears must be handed down unsullied and intact. His high, lofty racial respect would not tolerate impunity.

His wife, Ann Montgomery Ingram, was a tall, handsome, willowy girl with blue eyes and light hair. The sunlight was in her hair and the blue of the sea in her eyes, changing as the waters of the sea change in the light; the grace of the wild doe in her motions. She was stunning in her comeliness, affable and approachable, blessed with a happy, sunny disposition and withal energetic and practical. As the Book of Books says, "The heart of her husband doth safely trust in her" and her servants sought with diligence to merit her approbation. She was tall and stately, and the long stomachers worn by fashionable ladies of her day seemed to add to her stateliness. She was fond of dancing the Minuet, the Old Virginia Reel and playing the game of whist. Womanly grace sat on her brow, sweetness of temper delineated and permeated her face. Courtesy distinguished her actions and the poetry of motion her movements.

The habits and customs of our ancestors were very different from ours. Presley Nelme visited an aunt. Entering the room in which she was sitting, at the threshold he made a



low obeisance, she arose and returned the salutation with a deep curtsy, each advanced two steps, the bow and curtsy repeated—again each advanced two steps and courtesies extended as before, again advanced, embraced and saluted each with a kiss on the forehead and the cheek—never lips.

The highly educated and polished gentleman gave his daughter, Eliza Sydnor a collegiate education and to his three sons, Charles Eben and Presley, in addition to University graduation, he added the professions of law and medicine. He was not slow, but methodical, in his business. 'Tis said that he had a place for everything and kept everything in the place; that he could go to his office and get a paper or to his tool room for a tool in the dark.

With a clear vision he pursued the path of high resolve with singular devotion, accentuated by his noble characteristics. He was a generous member of Olivet M. E. Church, South, which he marked by planting a hedge of cedar around it and which he kept trimmed so long as he lived. His tomb is covered by a large, heavy slab of marble, three or more inches thick. From this slab, as a base, rise six large beautifully turned pillars and on these pillars rests another large slab of marble three or four inches thick with the inscription chiseled thereon.

In the old Waxhaw Cemetery are two tombstones of similar design, almost actual duplicates. One of these is erected to Gen. Wm. R. Davis and the other to Col. Samuel H. Walkup. Some think the future existence of those who have passed beyond the veil is but a fond dream of hope, others think they live again, "far advanced in state in the lives of just men made perfect". It is beyond question we think that what they have been here, what they have done here, and what they have said here, in part remains with us, and has potency in influencing our lives today.

Wm. A. Smith

842 (See 806E)

### EBENEZER (EBEN) NELME

Ebenezer (Eben) Nelme was born in Anson County, N. C. Dec. 21, 1817 and married Martha Ann Smith Dec. 5, 1852. He died on July 16, 1902 in Desoto County, Miss. He was the second son of Presley Nelme and Nancy Ingram, his wife. His forbears were Norwegian and bore the cognomen Nelmj. In the course of time a member of the family crossed the North sea in a foray into Wales. Enamored by the milder climate and less

rugged country he made his domicile there. Years rolled by, the family grew in respect and influence, became defenders of the borders, and were known as Lords of the Isles. Their Coat of Arms indicates a very high rank of nobility. The name was changed to Nelme. Years passed when the roving spirit again possessed them, and they ventured across the Irish Sea, the North Channel and landed in the Isle of Skye off the coast of Scotland. Here they nestled in glen Sligachan with crags rising 2000 to 3000 feet. Thence one John Nelme and his brother Charles Nelme ventured across the broad Atlantic Ocean and made their home in America. John Nelme located in New York. Charles Nelme located in the west, his numerous descendants peopled the middle west and branched to Georgia and other Southern States. Charles Nelme, son of the Emigrant, John Nelme, settled in Southampton County, Virginia. Again the spelling of the name is changed to Nelms. From Virginia we trace them to Franklin County, N. C., and from Franklin County to Anson County, N. C., and from North Carolina to Mississippi, named for the "Father of Waters"

On Salmon Creek in Bertie County, N. C., is a stone reading: "Here lies ye body of Charles Eden Esq., who governed this province eight years to the great satisfaction of the Lords Proprietors and ye ease and happiness of ye people. He brought the country into a flourishing condition, and died lamented March ye 26, 1722: aetatis 49." The mild but firm government of this virtuous governor brought a tidal wave of emigration during the years 1720-1740. The government of the Lords Proprietors in 1729 was succeeded by the government of the crown. The Province of North Carolina was bounded on the north by the Virginia line, on the south by South Carolina, on the east by the Atlantic and on the west by the Pacific Ocean. (See Wheelers History, Vol. 1, p. 41) "Truly a princely domain". Emigrants came by scores and the Province increased rapidly in population, in wealth and in resources. The Scotch-Irish came in numbers and located in the Piedmont section, attracted by its fertile soil and salubrious climate. Among these came Presley Nelms and purchased a large tract of land on the west side of Pee Dee River in Anson County, N. C. (This river in many histories is generally but incorrectly spelled Peedee.)

Presley Nelms had born to him three sons, Charles, Eben, and Presley, Jr. They must have inherited a roving disposition as all of them sold their patrimony in North Carolina and moved westward. "Westward Ho empire takes its flight." The subject of this sketch

attended the best local schools and later Chapel Hill, the University of North Carolina, and bore from its classic halls a graduation diploma. Not content with this he went to Princeton, the more famous University of New Jersey and there graduated with honors. He chose law for a profession, obtained license from the Supreme Court and located in Wadesboro, N. C. His practice soon extended into the adjoining counties of Union, Stanly, Montgomery and Richmond and beyond, throughout the judicial district. He said to the writer: "It is usually the ambition of a lawyer to follow the profession and obtain the wherewith to purchase a farm estate, become monarch of all he surveys and settle down as a country gentleman."

Inheriting a competent patrimony, he gave up his profession which he liked, to become in fact, as he was by blood, a country gentleman. His broad acres lay on Cedar Creek, surrounding the magnificent residence, built by his father, located on a commanding hill in the midst of a grove of 20 acres. His housekeeper was one Miss Polly Hicks with matrimonial intentions. One Saturday as he was leaving to visit his sister some ten miles distant, he was asked when he would return. "On Tuesday," was the response. On Sunday morning one of his negroes rode up and informed him his house was burned with all its contents the night before. He immediately returned to find his elegant home a smoking pile of ashes, nothing saved, his magnificent, old-time furniture and family portraits destroyed with the residence.

He was wayward in his early professional days, as was frequently the case among the talented; bon-vivant, fond of cards, dissipating his time attending cock fighting, horse racing, etc. "He came to himself", however, saw the folly of wasted opportunities, and was converted. He became an advocate of temperance and sobriety and entered actively into the campaign of "Touch not; Taste not; Handle not", and was often invited to make addresses in behalf of the good cause. As he was a man of brilliant mind, a graduate of two Universities, a lawyer with mental attainments above the average, close attention was given his words on these public occasions because of his profundity, his humor and his eloquence. He had the understanding heart, the gift divine, and could always bring smiles to those he met and extort smiles even from the afflicted.

His special friend and brother-in-law, Atlas J. Dargan of Wadesboro, his intimate boon companion of the various courts attended, was a noted character of that day. Brilliant,

ingenious, factitious, but negligent in dress and personal appearances; often with a shabby coat, pants suspender button missing, shoes untied, with disheveled hair, he was a master of wit, learning and sarcasm. His friend Eben Nelms was his antithesis—neat in his habit, his dress in style, his appearance gentlemanly. His mind was active and sparkling with irony; he was clever and a great teaser. Both were humorous, both liked "peach and honey".

Their contemporaries, who were familiar with the characteristics of these famous raconteurs, enjoyed the following bonmots. In the halcyon days before the war, Eben Nelms and other gentlemen were standing in front of the Court House door when Mr. Dargan approached. Addressing the party but looking at Nelms he said: "Ezer—teaser spell Nezer and two red elms spells Ebenezer Nelms". Instantly flashed back: "Bootless, shoeless and hatless spells Atlas, splurging and charging spells Dargan". They were knights of the round table. Afterwards Dargan was appointed Brigadier General of the Militia and Nelms was commissioned Captain of Co. A. 1st Mississippi Regiment in the Confederate Army.

The Rev. Alexander Smith was the first President of Carolina Female College, which was founded in 1848 and this was the second College for women in the world. His daughter Martha Ann Smith, was a member of the first class to graduate and receive diplomas in said institution. She was a charming young lady, popular, beautiful and accomplished. One of the fair daughters of old Anson County, gifted, highly educated, she modestly took her place in high social life which was hers by birth. She was a lady of rare mentality, elegant diction, superb form and pleasing personality.

Intending to ask the momentous question that would decide his life's mate, Eben Nelms drove to her residence rapidly, to acquire sufficient animation and courage. He had won her heart and she gave him her hand Dec. 16, 1852. Her father officiated, tying the knot that bound these two loving souls together. After many years had passed, Eben Nelms said to the writer: "No man ever dared to be happier in his conjugal relations". Solomon said: "A gracious woman retaineth honor, a crown to her husband". She was the one ideal lady for whom he had waited for years. Fitted by birth and education to be eminent and shine in society, she preferred the quiet, domestic felicity of her country home, bestowing her love and attention upon her husband and their children.

It could fittingly be said of her and them:  
 "The knightliest of the knightly race,  
 That since the days of old,  
 Have kept the lamp of chivalry,  
 Alight in hearts of gold."

Westward he took his flight, sold his patrimony in Anson County, bought land and located near Horn Lake in Desoto County, Miss. It required some six to seven weeks to move his negroes and belongings through the country by wagon. A neighbor, moving his negroes and family to the same county in Mississippi, had planned to travel with him. They set out on their journey Monday morning and pursued their way without special incident until they camped on Saturday night. To Eben Nelms' surprise on Sunday morning, his neighbor-friend had his teams hooked up and moved on. Mr. Nelms endeavored to dissuade him, calling his attention to Sunday being the Sabbath, and that his family, negroes and stock all needed rest. "Remember that thou keep holy the Sabbath day." He persisted in traveling on Sunday. Mr. Nelms narrating incidents of the trip said: "I never failed to overtake him before Saturday, delayed by a broken wagon, sick horse or some other misfortune, and I reached my new home two days before he arrived."

Eben Nelms was fond of reading. His library of standard works afforded him many hours refreshment. He communed with the best thought of the world's master minds. His one dissipation was his pipe, and he preferred the dirt pipe made of clay at Old Salem in North Carolina. This he could burn and keep fresh. With a long stem, made of cane or a cane root, bent and curved to suit his convenience, he would dexterously emit the smoke in circles, spirals or other curves to the wondrous delight of his observant nephew; reminding one of the curves the ball is made to take by the artistic pitcher in the National game of the present day.

Nine peaceful, happy years passed quickly, like a tale that is told, over the heads of this loving couple to be rudely awakened by the dread tocsin of the Confederate war. An omnivorous reader, he kept posted on current events of the day. He noted the daily encroachment of the general Government on the reserved rights of the States, the activity of anti-slavery propaganda, the deadly hatred of the abolitionists against the prosperous South, protected in their rights by the charter of our Union, the Constitution, which they stigmatized as "a league with the devil and a covenant with hell". Animated by the knightly blood of patriots he was among the first to volunteer to withstand the invasion of

the South. Elected Captain of Company A of the 1st Mississippi Regiment of Volunteers, he performed the duties attached to that unit of the army to the satisfaction of his superior officers, earning their encomium. He so governed his men as to gain their respect, admiration, confidence and devotion.

The collapse of the Confederacy and the more disastrous regime of Reconstruction spelled ruin and impoverishment to the affluent Southerner. Undismayed, he accepted the situation, and illustrated and verified the noble sentiment that "Human virtue is equal to human calamity." The necessity of supporting his wife and children was his opportunity. Prov. 24:10. "If thou faint in the day of adversity thy strength is small." Vegetables, grown by the work of his own hands, which had not known this toil, peddled from house to house in the city of Memphis, gave him the wherewith to provide and sustain his loved ones. Later his plantation was cultivated by his former slaves, who never ceased to call him "Master", and his fortune improved. On December 16, 1895 his beloved consort crossed over to the fairer shore.

"There is no death, the stars go down

To rise upon some fairer shore,

And bright in heaven's jeweled crown

They shine forever more."

Zest of life passed with her flight. His house was cared for and his bodily comforts considered by the affectionate and competent, dutiful and capable daughter, named for her great grandmother, Eliza Sydnor.

The violin was his loved instrument. Violin music is an attractive language without words, which unconsciously creates pleasing associations and exerts a powerful influence over the sensitive imaginations of both the ignorant and the cultivated. To his melodious violin, breathing delicious symphony in impassioned strains, he sometimes added his own cultivated voice. His voice and violin combined, spoke in compelling tone with sublime and touching chords. The musician and music being one, exuberant, sad, exciting or pensive at his will, would sway his audience as would a gifted and eloquent orator.

One who knew him well from long association, writing of him, said: "A man of unswerving rectitude, a lover of justice and fair play." He was a man of education and culture—a graduate of Chapel Hill (University of North Carolina) and of Princeton N. J. His buoyant, happy disposition and his fine sense of humor made him at all times a genial companion. He loved everybody and was universally loved. He might truly

say with Abou Ben Adhem, "Write me as one who loves his fellow man."

Men of humor enjoy jokes and amusing incidents told of others. Eben Nelms was so uniquely humorous that he enjoyed relating jokes on himself. One could not be with him five minutes before some word or some action would remind him of some amusing story. Officers of his regiment were assembled for instruction and the roll was being called. "Ebenezer Nelms." No answer. "Ebenezer Nelms." The adjutant addressing him, said, "Why don't you answer to your name?" "You haven't called my name," he replied. "Isn't your name Ebenezer Nelms?" was asked. "No, my name is Eben Nelms." "I can't see any difference," the officer said. "Now, Adjutant, your name is Peter Swink." "Yes." "Well, would you answer to the name of Peternezer Swink?" The officer roared: "That is one on me Captain."

Eben Nelms liked country life and solitude, but, like the bee among the flowers, he was never lonely—it gave him time for reading and reflection. Given a standard author in his hands and a pipe in his mouth, hours passed on fleeting wings while he absorbed and digested the rich crumbs of master minds.

"Give a man a pipe he can smoke,

Give a man a book he can read,

And his home is bright with a calm delight  
Though the room be poor indeed."

Solomon said: "A wise man will hear and increase learning and a man of understanding shall attain unto wise counsels." His chief characteristic was amiability. He possessed one of the kindest hearts that ever beat in the human breast and even when so reduced that he was forced to peddle vegetables for a means of living, he did not forget the poor, verifying the fact "that the poor are generous to the poor." Had he nothing else to bestow, he would send his regards, and the intonation of his voice was as sweet as a melodious note from his loved violin. "Oh, La. The Crippled Chicken, Knocked Him Down and Left Him Kicking," was one of his favorite pieces. Playing, talking and singing it, he would attract the neighbors of a whole village who would flock to the residence where he was performing.

Training made efficient his natural musical gift, for like the Poets, "It was born, not made," and gave to him that rhythmic sweetness of sound, extracted by a master performer from the world's master musical instrument.

As Captain of Co. A, 1st Mississippi Regiment, he seemed born to command. He

ruled his men firmly but kindly, giving respectful attention to their wants and complaints, being mindful of their comfort and well being, patient with their mistakes and lenient with their faults. These traits, acquired in a great part from his association all his life with the negro slaves, won for him the love of his men.

Captain Eben Nelms and his noble wife were dutiful members of the Methodist Episcopal Church South, and both died in the communion of that Church. They now rest side by side in "Gods Acre" waiting the Resurrection Morn.

"Oh, the beauty, oh the gladness

Of that resurrection day.

Which shall not through endless ages

Pass away."

W. A. Smith

843 (See 806B)

#### CHARLES GALLATIN NELME

Charles Gallatin Nelme was the son of Presley Nelme and Nancy Montgomery Ingram, his wife, and the grandson of Charles Nelme and Eliza Sydnor, his wife, who resided in Northampton County, Va., and was the great grandson of John Nelme, the emigrant, who came to America about 1700. He was born in Anson County, N. C., in 1816 and died from wounds received in the battle of Shiloh, April 16, 1862. He was named Charles for his grandfather, Charles Nelme, a soldier of record in the Revolution, belonging to the Continental Line, and Gallatin for an honorable Swiss gentleman who was greatly esteemed and admired by his father, Presley Nelme. Abraham Alphonse Gallatin, 1761-1849, emigrated to America in 1780, took an active part and bore himself honorably in the struggle for Colonial Independence. He was a member of the Convention which revised the Constitution of Pennsylvania in 1789, was elected a member of the United States Senate in 1798, and was Secretary of the Treasury under Thomas Jefferson, 1801. His services were so estimated in that important position that he was again selected and appointed Secretary of the Treasury by President Madison in 1809. He was one of the three ministers who negotiated the peace treaty with England and signed the Treaty of Ghent. He was minister to Paris 1815-1827, and was Ambassador Extraordinary to London in 1826. He was also the author of a work on finance, ethnology, etc.

Charles Gallatin Nelme was a graduate of the University of Virginia, located at Charlottesville, founded by Thomas Jefferson.

He took a law course but was so well fixed in life that he did not need to follow his profession. He married Catherine (Kate) McCorkle, the only child of her parents, and she brought to him a rich dower, not only in land, money and negroes, but she herself was dowered intellectually and with all the graces of education and refinement of the aristocratic Southern woman. Intelligent, sprightly, humorous, the charm of her conversation was manifested on all occasions. Agreeable, pleasant, attractive, and suave in mode she won for herself a host of friends. She was the mistress of a mansion in Holly Springs, Miss., noted for its prominent location and grandeur, and notable as the home of elegance, refinement and hospitality. This couple were par excellence fitted to each other. He was strong intellectually, chivalric in bearing, high-minded, gentle as a lady in disposition and as fearless as a lion in the path of duty.

The mode of travel to and from the University was by public stage. In a letter, written in Richmond, Va., to his father, he details the progress of his trip and the stop for a visit with his uncle Charles, living in Franklin County, N. C. He, Charles Nelme, was a bachelor. His will, on record, directs that his property be sold and the proceeds be equally divided between his three sisters. His next stop was in the city of Richmond. Desiring to attend Shakespeare's tragedy of Romeo and Juliet, and fearing to be robbed in the crowd, he took the precaution to lock his money in his trunk. Returning from the theater where he had wandered with pleasure and joy with Romeo to Juliet's window and lived through that beautiful night of youth and love, he found his room had been entered, his trunk opened and his money gone. The ecstatic pleasure of the evening was quickly followed by anger, mortification, gall and wormwood. He was forced to write his father for \$500.00 to replace his loss. His youthful spirits soon recovered their wonted buoyancy, however, and he entered into the delights of the city while awaiting funds to pay his hotel bill and proceed to the University.

He was manly, vigorous, tall, well-proportioned, handsome—with courtly Chesterfieldian manners—an exquisite dancer and a violinist of rare skill and technic. It was a great pleasure to hear Gen. Atlas J. Dargan relate incidents of a trip to Mississippi on horseback with Charles Gallatin Nelme when they were both young men, of their pleasant stay in the town (now city) of Memphis, of their invitations to entertainments, to parties,

balls and other amusements—commenting on the graces, attractions and the courtly manners of Charles Nelme, and he never failed to add "He was the handsomest man I ever saw."

On this tour of inspection to that new territory, Charles Gallatin Nelme was so pleased with the rich alluvial lands of the Mississippi River bottoms that he purchased—with money given him by his father—a large plantation, locally known as the Norfolk Place. Returning to North Carolina, he made preparations to move his household goods and his negroes to Mississippi to his new possession. They went by wagon as there was no other mode of travel. Anson County knew no more of him except by an occasional visit to his mother and other relatives. He thrived and prospered in his far western home, considered far owing to the fact that it required weeks to make the trip, two or three times as long as it requires to now cross the great Atlantic. He added tract of land to tract, negro to negro, and was known far and wide, with State reputation as a successful planter, a gentleman, prominent, courteous and agreeable. The war of the sixties came to rouse the lion in him in defence of States Rights. He was commissioned Colonel of the 22nd. Regiment of Mississippi Volunteers. He studied with assiduity Hardee's Tactics, drilled his regiment into a fighting machine and was actively engaged in the great battle of Shiloh. Shiloh was the greatest, most sanguinary battle fought in America to that date, April 6, 1862. General Grant commanded the Federals, and General Albert Sydney Johnston the Confederates. The total Federal loss was 13,047 and the Confederate loss was 10,699. Gen. Grant's army, encamped near Pittsburg Landing, on the left bank of the Tennessee River, numbered 44,895 men, not counting two regiments and a battery (estimated at 2,000) which were engaged. This made a total of 47,000 Federals, supported by two gunboats in the river which also took part in the engagement. The Confederate army numbered 40,335 men. The figures here given are taken from the official reports from the Century's Battles and Leaders of the Civil War. Gen. Buell with 20,000 men and Gen. Lew Wallace with from 5000 to 7000 men were in easy supporting distance. Gen. Johnston determined to fight before Grant should be reinforced by Buell and Wallace, and planned the engagement for daybreak of the 5th of April 1862. Slow movements of his army caused delay of 24 hours. This delay bore an important part as we will see later. The Federals occupied



rolling ground for 2 to 2½ miles from the river in an irregular triangle, bounded on one side by Snake Creek and its branch, Owl Creek, and on the other side by Lick Creek, while the Tennessee River formed the third side of the triangle. Sunday morning the Confederates moved forward at 6 o'clock and at 6:30 struck the Federal lines and the battle was on. It is not our intention to follow the engagement in detail. Briefly the Confederates by repeated charges drove the Federals back toward the river.

About noon, Gens. Hurlburt, Prentiss and W. H. L. Wallace rallied their divisions and occupied a hill 150 or 200 feet in height, a very strong position supported by fifty guns. The Confederates called it the "Hornet's Nest." Three attempts were made to carry this position in vain. General Johnston, knowing the necessity of carrying this position to insure a complete and overwhelming victory, deemed the time at hand for him to enthuse, encourage and animate his men by leading them himself. In doing this he received a mortal wound from which he died at 2:30 p. m. General Lee, when the enemy had broken his line at Chancellorsville, to prevent impending inevitable ruin, rode to the front with the intention of leading his men and restoring his line of battle. A private rushed out of the ranks, caught hold of Traveler's bridle and led him to the rear. Acting in the position of Brigadier General, his life was valuable and the love of his men was so great that he was not permitted to place himself and his life in jeopardy. Napoleon at the bridge of Lodi did just as Lee did on this particular occasion. General Johnston was succeeded in command by Gen. Beauregard. As Albert Sydney Johnston fell in the charge against the "Hornet's Nest", so likewise fell Charles Gallatin Nelme. Following his Commander in Chief, bravely leading his regiment, he too received a fatal wound from which he died on April 15th in the presence of his wife and his brother Eben Nelme.

The "Hornet's Nest" was carried, Gen. W. H. L. Wallace was killed, many guns captured and more than two thousand prisoners taken but at a fearful sacrifice of many precious lives. Gen. Grant had a preponderance of 7000 men and two gunboats, but his men were driven from position to position between the two creeks, back to the impassable river and into a pocket which meant surrender and disaster. Later he mustered 4,000 men to make the last stand. Gens. Bragg, Jackson, and Chalmers made ready to assault these 4,000 men and complete the glorious victory when Gen. Beauregard

issued orders to desist, a fatal mistake for the Confederate forces. That night Gen. Grant was reinforced by Gen. Buell and Gen. Lew Wallace with 25,000 fresh troops. Grant renewed the battle on Monday morning, 7th, taking the offensive and recovering the ground lost the day before. He found the Confederates disorganized and plundering the camps of his men. The Confederates could only muster 20,000 but with this force resisted so stoutly that the Federals did not attempt to pursue the retiring forces. A little log church in the woods gave name to this great battle. Had the battle begun on the 5th as planned, Buell could not have come to the assistance of Grant. It was the policy of President Lincoln, Commander in Chief of all the Union Forces, to displace defeated commanding generals and try another. Witness McDowell, McClellan, Pope, McClellan again, Burnside, Hooker, Meade and Grant. Had Gen. Grant been defeated at Shiloh he would probably have been assigned to some unimportant command. The death of Gen. Johnston was a tragedy in the life of the Southern Confederacy. It prevented the surrender of Gen. Grant's entire army, with all its arms, guns and supplies of all descriptions.

In General Albert Sidney Johnston the Confederacy had another Lee in command of the West and had he lived he would have saved this section from disaster and collapse as did Lee in the East. President Davis said of Gen. Johnston: "Without doing injustice to the living, it may safely be said our loss is irreparable." As we sing of the Commander-in-Chief, so we can likewise sing of Charles Gallatin Nelme.

As Colonel of his regiment he did his knightly devoir, bravely led his men against the "Hornet's Nest", and there received his mortal wound. 'Tis asserted that he went into battle as Colonel with a Brigadier General commission to be issued. The general in command may plan a battle ever so wisely or so well, but without intelligent, brave and faithful subordinates to execute his plans, he will assuredly and utterly fail. In the last analysis it is the humble privates in the ranks who make the fame of the commander, and they are the ones whose deeds are oft unknown and unsung. As with the private so it is with every under officer and subordinate. They must all do their duty in promptly obeying commands of superiors.

Charles Gallatin Nelme was a man of sterling qualities, alert mind and strong character. Brave and heroic, gallantly and unflinchingly he led his regiment against the



"Hornet's Nest" with its whistling minnies, once heard never to be forgotten, with its fifty guns belching forth shrapnel, hurling death and destruction, and he cheerfully gave his life as a sacrifice on the altar of his country. His one regret was that he had not more lives to give in defence of States Rights and for his beloved Confederacy. His death was a severe loss to his regiment and Holly Springs lost its highest entitled officer and most prominent citizen. He sleeps in the cemetery near his home in the bosom of mother earth, under soil perfumed by the odor of sweet flowers. Generous to the living while living, he was generous to the living in death by his will.

Respect and veneration for his lordly ancestors was dovetailed into his inmost soul, and to emulate their virtues was his chief characteristic. The Lord of Hosts was not on the side of the Confederacy, and did not intend to permit this nation to be divided. He knew that in a short half century it would require the undivided strength of this great Republic to dethrone Autocracy and enthrone Democracy.

"Under the sod and the dew,

Waiting the judgment day;

Under one the Blue,

Under the other the Gray."

We copy the following from a local paper: "Mr. Editor:

In the last issue of your paper the names of those who were to be honored by the V. I. A. by planting a tree to the memory of each, the name of Gen. Charles Nelme appears among the majors. We old Vets pride ourselves in love and fealty to our old commanders. When then we see one whom we loved for his endearing qualities as a civilian, as well as for his soldierly bearings, reduced from his well-earned rank, either inadvertently or ignorantly by some chronicler, we desire to protest and set forth the true status of our former comrades. Gen. Nelme in '61 was custom-house officer at Norfolk on the Mississippi River. While thus engaged he was instrumental in raising a company for the Confederate service, of which company—DeSoto Rebels—he was Captain. He equipped the whole company with Confederate gray uniforms, company camp utensils and blankets at his own expense. The company numbered over a hundred men. When organized into a regiment, 22nd Mississippi at Corinth, Capt. Nelme was made a major. On the bloody field of Shiloh he was promoted to the Colonelcy and commanded the regiment in that battle, our first fight.

It was well known in his old company that

Col. Nelme was soon to be promoted as Brigadier General, and it was currently reported after the Shiloh fight that his commission as such had been forwarded from the war department, but before its arrival, the gallant, superb and Christian soldier had crossed the river, accompanied by several of his old company, and together they winged their flight to the thrice happy Elysian plains of paradise.

DeSoto Rebel

Co. F. Twenty-second Miss. Reg."

W. A. Smith

844 (See 806H)

### BENNETT

The Bennett surname was attached to many emigrants to America locating in Maryland, Virginia, North Carolina and other Provinces. In course of time the Bennetts became very numerous and some of them were very prominent in Colonial days. A number of them migrated to Maryland in the years 1643-1665. One Richard Bennett settled in Anne-Arundel County, Maryland in 1648. Owing to an oath required of him he did not claim lands of the State until 1662 when the oath was modified to suit his conscience.

This Richard Bennett, (he must not be confounded with Governor Richard Bennett of Nansmond County, Virginia) located lands on the Potomac River between Potites and Bennett's Creek (probably being named for said Bennett) and on Black Creek as early as 1651. After the English custom, he gave names to his holdings. One tract of four hundred acres, he called Bennett's Folly; a 2500 acre tract, he called Bennett's Adventure; another, Bennett's Hill and Poplar Hill, etc. Richard Bennett's son, Thomas Bennett, and wife begat George, Elizabeth, Thomas and John. This Thomas Bennett is probably, although not positively, identified as Thomas Bennett, planter, of Baltimore Co., Maryland, whose will made in 1746 gave property to Elisham, Thomas, Samuel, Benjamin, William, John, Sarah, Mary Eleanor, Elizabeth and Lydia. Thomas Bennett was a soldier in the Patriot Army. In Loudon County, Virginia was another family of Bennetts bearing the names: Thomas, Joseph James, Charles. They were probably cousins. Charles Bennett whose will was probated in Loudon Co. in 1821, probably married Mary Hamilton. He mentioned in his will Nancy, John, Charles, Mary, Winifred, Jane, Thompson, Jefferson, James, Elizabeth, Hamilton, and Sydnor.

In the churchyard of Christ Church in Alexandria, Virginia stands a large monument which is inscribed as follows:

Beneath  
lie the remains of  
Charles Bennett  
Born in Charles County, Maryland,  
Died in Alexandria, Va.  
the 24th. day of April, 1839  
A PUBLIC BENEFACTOR

This monument was erected by the Common Council of Alexandria, Va. in commemoration of the private charities and public liberality of their esteemed townsman, the late Charles Bennett. He lived and died a bachelor, leaving a large estate. The amount of the estate is unknown, but it was so large he required his three executors to give bond, each in the sum of \$200,000.00. The surname of Bennett is found in the old chronicles and in Colonial records in the form of Benet, Bennt, Bennit, Bennitt and very rarely Benit, although generally Bennett.

One Richard Bennett was a Major General in Cromwell's army. In 1653 Cromwell became firmly established on the throne of Great Britain by Act of Parliament under the title of Lord Protector. Commissioners, of whom Richard Bennett was chief, were sent over to Maryland and Virginia to induce these Colonies to submit to Parliament rule under Cromwell. Quoting from history, "Negotiations were opened with Virginia authorities which resulted in giving the Colony the right of home rule, and Virginia became almost as free and independent of England as she was after the Revolutionary War." After the restoration of Charles II, Governor Berkley of Virginia persecuted Major General Bennett who fled to Maryland and settled in Anne-Arundel County. Two of General Bennett's brothers, William and Neville, emigrated about 1660 and located in Maryland on the Eastern Shore. Afterwards, about 1740, the two Bennett brothers, William and Neville, left the eastern shore and located in Anson County, in the Province of North Carolina, on the west side of the Pee Dee River, then a wilderness and the hunting grounds of the Indians.

Before leaving Maryland, William Bennett married Nancy Huckston and she bore him a daughter, Elizabeth, born in 1770 or 71, and a son, William, born in 1773. A few weeks after the birth of her son, she winged her flight to paradise and her husband, disconsolate in his old home, winged his flight to the wilds of North Carolina. His land

holdings lay on both sides of Jones Creek. He located his house, built of logs, on the Northeast side of this creek near a fine spring of ever-living water, known to this day as the "Old William Spring". The writer, in his youth saw the roofless, decaying logs of this house and oft refreshed himself with the cool waters of this bubbling spring. William Bennett was a Baptist Minister and became Chaplain, with the rank of Captain, in General Wade's Company of the Revolutionary Army.

The Bennetts were a patriotic people. Among the Bennetts in the army are mentioned James, John, Moses, Nehemiah, Thomas, William and others. Peter Bennett of Granville County was a member of the North Carolina Convention of 1779. A noted genealogist of Washington, D. C., writes: "The Bennett family is of ancient English lineage and includes many personages among its members, both in the Old and New world. The family name of the Earles of Arlington is Bennett, and others bearing the same surname have rendered important and valuable service in their day."

The Reverend William Bennett, Chaplain, moved to South Carolina, married Olivia Cheers and settled in Marlboro County. Some say the town of Bennettsville was named as a reward for his meritorious services in the continental army. He possessed in a great degree, the animosity and hatred of the Tories and there are people now living who have seen the holes in his door made by their bullets. On one occasion they surrounded his house. To escape, he crawled up the chimney. They discovered him and pulled him down and handled him so roughly that they broke his shoulder. He lived to rear a family of girls and boys by his second wife. His army canteen has been preserved and is now the precious relic of Mrs. Mary Bennett Little, a descendant in the direct line.

There was another Richard Bennett who settled in Nansensmond County, Virginia, who was elected Governor by the House of Burgesses for three successive terms. He was a Major General of Militia, and while a Commissioner to treat with the Indians, he made a treaty with the Susquehanna tribe which, in point of liberality and justice, was easily the equal and forerunner of the treaty made by William Penn thirty years afterwards. We must not confuse this William Bennett with the family of General Richard Bennett of Cromwell's day, the brother of our ancestor, William Bennett. It is written of him while in public life in Virginia, "He

sowed the seed of civil and religious liberty which bore fruit a century afterward, set on fire the soul of Patrick Henry and animated the sword of George Washington. Later in the war of the Confederacy, from some vantage ground, with kindling eyes, Lee saw the ragged boys in gray in a hundred battles sweep the Federals from the field. It was the blood of Major General Richard Bennett that thrilled the veins of Robert E. Lee." I quote further: "This Richard Bennett was descended from a noble family. His grandfather was judge of the Prerogative or Ecclesiastical Court of Canterbury and Chancellor of the Archbishop of York." His father, Sir John Bennett, had three sons that rose to distinction. The eldest was Lord of Osculton, whose son became the Earl of Tankerville; his second son was Earl of Arlington (whence comes the name of Gen. R. E. Lee's famous residence, now the national cemetery near Washington, D. C.) and was Prime Minister of Charles II; his third son, Richard, was distinguished but of less shining destiny. Major General Richard Bennett, Richard Bennett of Annapolis and Governor Richard Bennett of Nantuxent County on the lower James, all probably sprang from a common ancestry, the different nobles having each his Coat of Arms but all of them very similar. One of these in heraldic terms reads Arms: Gules, a besant between three demi-lions rampant couped argent. Crest: A double scaling ladder or. Motto: Hand facile emergent. (Comes not forth easily). Another Coat of Arms reads: Arms: Gules a besant between three demi-lions rampant argent. Crest: Out of mural coronet or lions head gules charged on the neck with besant. Motto: De bon Vouloir servir le Roi. (Serve the King with right good will.) The general outlines are the same and point to a common ancestor, the differences accentuating only variety.

William Bennett No. 2, (1717-1815) married Nancy Huckston (1748-1773) of Maryland in 1769. To them were born Elizabeth, 1771, who married Covington of Anson Co., N. C. When William Bennett No. 3 was only a few months old, his father left Maryland and moved to Anson County, N. C. William Bennett (1773-1840) in 1798 married Susannah Dunn, the daughter of Isaac Dunn, (1754-1836) and Mary Sheffield his wife (1760-1862) of Moore County, N. C., who were married in 1776. Their only child, Susannah, married William Bennett No. 3.

John Dunn the emigrant, and his wife Frances, came to America about 1700-1710. There were born to them ten children: Nancy,

Mary, Elizabeth, Hannah, four girls; Joseph, John, Isaac, Hezekiah, Leonard and Bartholemew. Bartholemew (1716-1787) and his wife Ruth, begat Isaac (1754-1836) who married Mary Sheffield (1758-1862) (see sketch). Their only child was Susannah Dunn who married William Bennett No. 3. Twelve children, seven boys and five girls, were born to Susannah Dunn and her husband William Bennett. The children's names were as follows: Neville, James C., William, Isham, Samuel, Cary, Lemuel, Roxanne, Susannah, Mary, Nancy, Jane. Lemuel Dunn (1805-1878) married Jane Steele Little (1811-1872).

The land in the British Isles was owned by the King, princes, nobles and the Church, with their parks, forest preserves and game laws. The middle class was composed of the well-to-do tenants, farmers, merchants, doctors and lawyers. Third class was made up of laborers, craftsmen and servants. All men are more or less ambitious to rise in rank. A knight desires to become a baronet, lord, viscount, marquis, duke, etc. Craftsmen desire to become tenants, tenants—landed proprietors. Owing to the law of primogeniture, minor sons and others would become land owners by emigrating to America, where the finest lands could be obtained by purchase, by entry, at very small cost, and even by squatting and by allotment from the Province. There is something in the ownership of realty, the confident tread of the man on soil that he owns in fee simple, that elevates and ennobles him. In the British Kingdom lands were held at no price or prohibitive prices, but in the wilderness of America it was to be had for the asking. We know not the exact year John Dunn ventured the Atlantic, wild and wide, in search of land, but let us say it was 1700-1713. In the latter year he was a resident of North Carolina Province, and is first mentioned in Colonial Records of the Province of North Carolina 1713 as a defendant. In this case judgment was obtained against him for £1 17s. and 1d. and attachment ordered to be served against his goods and chattels. In 1748 by the same Colonial Records he appears as Lord Proprietor of 100 acres of Bladen County land and in 1749 Lord Proprietor of 100 acres in New Hanover, 150 acres in Craven and 200 acres in Bladen. From the east he came further west and settled in the town of Salisbury.

"In Salisbury Town the skies are bright,  
The smiles are true, the hearts are light,  
And days are full of sheer delight  
In Salisbury Town."

In Salisbury he studied law and obtained license to practice in the Counties of Anson, Mecklenburg, Tryon, Guilford, Surrey and Rowan. These counties constituted a Judicial District with the Court House in Salisbury. As a member of Assembly he took an active and prominent part therein. In 1760 he was allowed a claim incurred in the expedition against the Cherokee Indians. In 1771 he and other officers of the Crown were forced by the Regulators to disgorge and restore excess Court fees extorted from the people. He was made a Justice of the Peace, Notary Public, Clerk of the Court, Attorney for the Crown, Adjutant of Militia and rose to the rank of Major. While riding with his command he was thrown from his horse and kicked by the vicious animal and forced to keep his bed for six weeks. Making report of the taxes of Rowan Co. to the Crown, he mentions his accident and continuing, said: "And now, at this time, not able to stoop to buckle my shoe or sit to write unless it be a line, at a time, then rest until my pains abate."

Associated with others he was a Commissioner in many important services for his County and District, such as building jails, Court House, running dividing lines between Counties, laying out public roads, etc. A loyalist from position and office, by education and temperament he took an active part in suppressing the Regulators, among whom was numbered his own son, Bartholemew. "The father shall be divided against the son, and the son against the father."

John Dunn was arrested as an active loyalist by the Committee of Safety in Rowan County, banished to Charlestown and jailed for twelve months. He protested his innocence, recanted and was released on parole, placed under bond of 1,000 pounds (nearly \$5,000.00) and was forced to appear daily at the house of Maxwell Chambers, after being permitted to return to the State. He afterwards resided on his farm some five miles from Salisbury.

His son, Bartholemew, radically differed from the sentiments of his father and joined the Regulators. (See N. C. Colonial Records, Vol. 7, 736). He was probably a soldier and militiaman, but we have no authentic evidence thereof. These patriotic citizens were called Regulators because they resisted the exorbitant exactions of the officers of the Crown and attempted to regulate and confine fees to the tariff allowed by law. These Regulators were so determined to maintain their rights they rose in arms, bravely, boldly, and fought the battle of Alamance on Thurs-

day, the 16th day of May, 1771, on the road from Hillsboro to Salisbury, five miles from the river. This was the precursor of the Revolution and in North Carolina was shed the first blood in defense of the rights of the people.

Bartholemew's son, Isaac (1754-1836) married in 1776—Mary Sheffield (1748-1862). To them was born one child, Susannah, who became the wife of William Bennett No. 3, uniting the famous families of Bennett and Dunn.

W. A. Smith  
"The Oaks"  
Ansonville, N. C.

845 (See 806H)

#### LEMUEL DUNN BENNETT

Lemuel Dunn Bennett was the son of William Bennett No. 3 and Susannah Dunn, his wife, and the great grandson of William Bennett No. 1, who emigrated to America with his brother, Major General Richard Bennett of Cromwell's army, about the year 1648. Lemuel Dunn Bennett's mother's maiden name was Susannah Dunn, daughter of Isaac Dunn and Mary Sheffield, his wife, Isaac Dunn, was the son of Bartholemew and Ruth Dunn, and Bartholemew was the son of John and Frances Dunn, the emigrant. Mary Sheffield was the daughter of William Sheffield, a private in Hall's Company, 10th Regiment of Continental Troops. The exuberant boyish spirits of a sound mind in a sound body, inherited from distinguished ancestry seemed to us youth incompatible to the staid, grave, scholarly gentleman of three score, yet we are assured that he was full of life and fun, bubbling over with sportive action and mischievous, boyish tricks. Enjoying the advantage of good schools, he made use of his opportunities, alternately teaching school and attending school and cultivating a good memory. He became a fine Latin scholar and Latin proved a great aid in his chosen profession of law. He was licensed to practice but gave up his work and retired to his farm to care for his negroes and cultivate his broad acres. His active mind was not content to stagnate in his country home, it reached out after knowledge, "as the hart panteth after the water brooks". He studied geology, the rocks, the strata and soil; botany, collected herbs and plants and became skilled in classifying them. His active mind still reached out after knowledge; he studied medicine and prescribed for his family. He also prescribed for the negroes and his neighbors and set their broken limbs,

with the one and only reward: the satisfaction of administering to humanity's needs. His knowledge of law stood him in good stead in his business dealings and enabled him to give sound counsel to those who sought his advice. So well was his well-balanced mind stored with knowledge that he was considered the best read, the finest scholar and the most erudite gentleman in all the country-side. Skilled in the use of tools, he fashioned for himself a writing desk, now the proud possession of his daughter, Mrs. Joseph Ingram Dunlap of Wadesboro, N. C. He was born in 1805 and died in 1878. He married in 1828, the sprightly and accomplished Jane Steele Little. Elegant in her youthful beauty, versatile and vivacious, she was a fit companion for the handsome, scholarly L. D. Bennett. She made his home a social center and dispensed liberal entertainment to his and to her cultured friends in true southern style. Very rarely was this home without guests, visiting from the County, adjoining Counties, from Cheraw and other towns of South Carolina. She bore him four sons and was so fervently patriotic that she gave them all to the Confederate Army, "That dear cause that ne'er will be forgotten the dead."

She was the daughter of William Little (1777-1847) and Elizabeth (Betsy) Steele (1785-1859) who were married 1798. Her father's home was at Mallgate, Longtown, near Brampton, Cumberland County, England. The Little family is allied by marriage with Scottish Lairds of the Manor of Askerton, and Sir Walter Scott. When the writer visited the old Homestead in 1908 it had passed by marriage out of the hands of the Little family. The present owner keeps it in good condition, its fertile acres undiminished. The owner himself was attentive, kind and hospitable.

William Little and his brother Thomas, young men, determined to seek a new outlet for their youthful energies, left home one night, unknown, to their parents and footed it forty miles by morning cockcrow to a port and took shipping to America. They landed in Charleston. William Little was large of frame and tall in height; his name, inscribed by himself, is to be seen above all others in St. Nicholas Church belfry. He pioneered to Anson County, settled down, married, thrived and prospered. He added acre to acre and slave to slave; reared graceful, well favored daughters and fine stalwart sons to hand down his honorable name to posterity.

His eldest daughter, June, fair, lovely, elegant and graceful, was modest and retiring,

never courted notoriety, never desired to be in the limelight. She gave her time to making a model home for her husband, and her attention and faculties to rearing her four girls and four boys whom God had given her. She watched their growth with tender solicitude and grieved as only a fond, loving mother could, over the going of her youngest daughter, in her teens, in 1864. She was happy in her home, happy in her husband's love, happy in her children. She was proud of her children, her husband and her home. Living a life of service and economy, seasoned with love, pride and affection she pitched her life on a high plane of content and happiness. Her duty and her love reached out and embraced her negroes, one and all, who regarded her as the princess bountiful, a gracious mistress and a generous benefactor for all their wants. When Sherman had killed every animal and fowl; taken every pound of meat; loaded the handsomest carriage in the county with greasy, dripping home-raised bacon and drove away behind a handsome, high-stepping pair of bays; burned every grain of corn or other cereal, she was appealed to: "Oh, my mistress, give me food for my starving children."

#### Children born to them:

1. John Washington, married 1st, Lydia Bogen. No issue. 2nd, Mary Richardson. Issue Purdie Richardson, Lily, Clifton C. A sketch of Dr. J. W. Bennett appears in the North Carolina Bookley, October No., 1917.
2. Ann Eliza, married Henry Pinkney Townsend of Cabarrus Co., N. C., and moved to southwest Georgia. Children: Laura, Eugene, Donella, Tecoa, Martha, Jane, Henry Pinkney, Haisse Augustus, John, Minnie Lee.
3. William Lemuel Bennett, married Pamela Adams of Arkansas. Children: Lemuel, Augustus, William and Arkansas.
4. Thomas Riden Bennett, married Mary Townsend. Children: Rosa, Laura, Thomas Ross, Elfleda and Jane.
5. Capt. Frank Bennett, married Elizabeth Curry of South Carolina. Children: Frank Bennett No. 2, Elizabeth (L. C.), Curry Bennett.
6. Mary Jane Bennett, married William Alexander Smith (see sketch.) Children: Etta, Nona and infant boy unnamed.
7. Charlotte F. Bennett, married Joseph Ingram Dunlap. Children: Mary Olive (Dollie) Dunlap, William Bennett Dunlap, name changed to Bennett Dunlap Nelme. Bennett Dunlap Nelme married Margaret



Beacham. Children: Mary Charlotte Nelme, Nona Nelme and Elizabeth Nelme. Frank Dunlap: unmarried.

8. Laura Bennett; died 1864; single.

L. D. Bennett's home and farm were situated between the North and South prongs of Jones Creek. His broad acres embraced fertile bottoms on both creeks. He traveled many summers in Western North Carolina, Virginia and East Tennessee. As a progressive citizen he took a leading part in Internal improvements. He was president of the plank road leading from Cheraw, S. C., up through Anson County and crossing Rocky River into Stanley by a substantial wooden bridge. His home lay in the track of Sherman's army. To escape, he left his home and lay concealed for days, his personal comforts administered to and his wants supplied by a faithful slave. This gives the lie to the assertion of the Abolitionist, of cruelty by the master to his slave. His brother James, whose mansion was about a mile away, remained at home. The old gray-haired gentleman was wantonly, cruelly and foully killed while sitting on his door steps. Murdered at 72, his faithful, loving old slaves made a coffin and reverently committed his body to the dust amid tears. The slaves were the only ones present.

"Down in the canebrake, hear the mournful sound;

All the darkies am a weeping,  
For Massa's in the cold, cold ground."

L. D. Bennett's fond, virtuous, loving consort preceded him to the better land five or six years. In God's good time this fine, upright, courteous, hospitable, Christian southern gentleman followed her and was gathered to his fathers. He welcomed the time,

"When I shall see him face to face,  
And be with those I love once more."

W. A. Smith  
"The Oaks"

Ansonville, North Carolina

846 (See 806-D)

#### MARY SHEFFIELD

Mary Sheffield became the wife of Isaac Dunn. She was the most noted and notable woman of Anson County. Like Sara, Abram's wife, she was very fair and comely. Her elegant form was proportioned after the Grecian model of womanly perfection as seen in sculpture. Wiser than most people in her day and generation she was thoroughly acquainted with the medicinal quality of herbs and roots, nature's remedy for the ills

of man and beast. Known far and wide as a doctor, she went her rounds as a practicing physician. She did not prescribe mineral medicaments but used herbs: wormwood for vermifuge; fever-few for tonic; balsam for wounds and sores; hoarhound for coughs and colds; snake root for a cathartic; sotherwood, a near specific for that terrible disease diphtheria; rue for a narcotic. Rue was sometimes called "Herb of Grace" because it afforded relief from remedies for the various ills to which flesh is heir. A famous salve for healing old chronic sores, known as "Grandmother Dunn's Salve", she made of heart leaves, sweet gum and mutton suet. This salve was famous in her day and since. Spice-wood, spice bush, for fevers, vermifuge; hornseed for ergot; coltsfoot, snake root, Indian wild ginger, bearberry, foxberry, snake head, sometimes called turtle head, mother's wort or feather feet; devil's bit or bitter grass; all of these she used as stomach tonics; devil's bite for a diuretic; smilax, sarsaparilla for rheumatism; pepper wort as an antiseptic; partridge berry, an anodyne which she probably got from the Indians as it was a famous Indian remedy, candle berry, a species of spice or cloves, brake or female fern, used for tapeworm; Indian turnip, dragon turnip, pepper turnip, remedy for asthma, croup etc.; ladies' slipper, ladies' smock and bleeding heart, antispasmodic; dog's bane or ipecac, monk's hood, wolf's bane, a cathartic; she sought blazing star, gay feather in meadows and damp places, which she prescribed as a diuretic; willow water flag, remedy for toothache; heartease for skin diseases; blow root to regulate the pulse, and hundreds of other indigenous herbs with medicinal properties familiar to this learned woman.

A scientific cook, she used thyme, sage and other herbs in preparation of food suitable for her patients. She also prepared perfumery from lavender, rosemary, roses, sweet spices and other sweet smelling herbs and flowers. We always associate lavender with dainty, refined ladies. Cosmetics for beautifying the complexion and improving the skin came under manipulating hands. More than all, she was famed as an accoucher, her services being in great demand over a wide scope of the country. She named an infant daughter of her grandson, L. D. Bennett, after herself, Mary, and, like Anna, the prophetess, "She blessed the child". As the spirit of Elijah descended upon Elisha, the spirit of Mary Sheffield was bestowed in large measures upon her great grandchild, Mary Bennett. With the blessing came the gifted insight of



reading characters of men, resembling, in this respect, "Napoleon the Great". With the blessing came the ability of foretelling coming events. With the blessing came hauteur and high notions which would have been termed arrogance but for her sunny smile—that noblesse oblige so graciously worn upon all occasions and which won the hearts of those who knew her. With the blessing, the great grandame bestowed the knowledge of herbs and their medicinal qualities; that love of roses possessed by "this dreamer of dreams"; that graceful carriage and queenly walk. With the blessing came that artistic preparation of food and that orderly housekeeping for which she was famed. With the blessing came the skill in needle-work, in tapestry work and painting in oil, both landscape and portrait. Mary Bennett inherited all of this and more. Mary Sheffield Dunn was a Universalist in her religious belief, grounding her belief upon the "Universality of the Atonement." "For, as by one man's disobedience all men were constituted sinners, so by the obedience of one shall all men be made righteous and that not of your selves—it is the gift of God." Again "As in Adam all die, even so in Christ shall all be made alive." "For I am persuaded that neither death nor life nor angels nor principalities nor powers nor things present nor things to come nor height nor depth nor any other creature shall be able to separate us from the love of God, which is in Christ Jesus our Lord." God is infinitely wise and good and holy—and created man in his own image for man's good and it is incompatible with the All Wise and good God to condemn His creatures to everlasting punishment. Thus she argued and it is said she was so thoroughly conversant with the scriptures she could maintain her position against all parties. She became the wife of Isaac Dunn in 1776, the year of the Declaration of Independence. Independence was to be won only after a terrible struggle of seven long years. Embracing the Patriot Cause, a member of Captain Thomas Wade's Company, Isaac Dunn and his young wife had to endure the enmity of the Tories. In Anson County there were many honorable men who from infancy were taught the Divine right of kings and non-resistance. Kings could do no wrong and it was high treason to resist the authority of the Crown. These were loyalists at heart and verily believed it right to harass, plunder, pillage and devastate the property and homes of the

American patriots who dared to resist the king's authority. These loyalists, called Tories, formed themselves into bands, organized under military officers, and went from settlement to settlement and from house to house in pursuit of the patriots, the enemies of King George III, God's vice-regent on earth. By night and by day they proceeded to wreak vengeance on the patriots.

At set of sun information was received by Isaac Dunn at his home that a band of these Tories was approaching. Hastily he saddled a horse for his wife and one for himself, snatched up their baby, mounted and fled.

"Weel mounted on this gray mare, Meg,  
A better never lifted leg,  
And scarcely he Meggie rallied,  
When out the hellish legion sallied."

The Tories were hot foot on his track behind him. Seeing he would be overtaken and probably killed, while riding at a sweeping gallop, he tossed his baby into the arms of its mother and made his escape. Neither the mother nor the baby were harmed. It was Isaac Dunn they were pursuing with murderous intent because Captain Wade's company three weeks before had retorted upon them, burning, pillaging, and destroying their homes. Those were fearful days, when brother fought brother, father fought son and devil take the hindmost. The patriots were in the large majority and won. Often it was "Escape for thy life, look not back behind thee."

Mary Sheffield Dunn was a superb horse-woman and sat her horse elegantly and stately. As she was not slothful in business, so also she contributed to the necessity of the saints and was given to hospitality. Blessed with health and strength she went in and out before this people and came to the age of 104 years and died. Truly she lived a life of service to humanity. Thus passed from earth to Paradise a benefactress of her country.

"Whose life was a song, God wrote the words,  
Which she set to music;  
The refrain was glad, or sad—at her pleasure,  
Her life work of service evidenced the Measure."

It can be said of her as of Abraham, "She died in a good old age and full of years."

William Alexander Smith  
Ansonville, North Carolina



Smith Williams

847 (See 934)

WILLIAM SMITH WILLIAMS AND  
NELLIE JOHNSON WILLIAMS

Of the boys born to Lewis J. Williams and Sallie Smith, his wife, only Smith and Lewis came to years of maturity. The elder, Smith, is the subject of this sketch.

When a boy he was fond of sport, running rabbits either to be caught by hounds or chased into a hole in a hollow log or tree. By use of the hickory withe he could pull them out. If the withe failed, smoke would prevail. Made happy by the catch, he would trudge over the hills with buoyant steps and proudly cast his trophy at the feet of his no less proud parents.

"Old Mollie Hare, what you doing dare?  
Sitting in de corner, smoking my segare."

His parents left the old homestead, Panther Creek, and hid themselves to the twin city. They bought a residence in Winston-Salem that they might obtain for Smith and their other children the advantages of the city schools. Wiry, nervously active and energetic, to make pocket change, he would rise very early, go to the Journal office, get his supply of papers, sell them and be at school on time without thought of fatigue, ready

for play on the grounds, and lessons in the school room. Taught obedience by his mother, he was dutiful to his teachers and was so apt in books that his instructors were accused of partiality.

The boy was forerunner of the man. He early left the roof-tree and obtained employment. At the age of fifteen he was a page in the Legislative Halls at Raleigh, then a special page in Congress at Washington and manager for the noted lecturers, Earnest Thompson Seton, Marshall P. Wilder and Richmond Pearson Hobson.

Possessing musical talent like his mother, it was his pleasure to join a company of musicians. As advance agent for a lecturer he has traveled over nearly every state in the Union and in Canada, visiting towns and cities. Thus he obtained knowledge of the world by experience. Indeed, all we know is by experience; the remainder we take on hearsay. Meeting daily, new faces he came in contact with normal, bright and mature minds of all calibre, "Going to and fro in the earth, and walking up and down in it," afforded him a school that trained and prepared him for his life's work as a "Prince of the Road," a "Knight of the Grip," a "Commercial Ambassador." As a salesman for the Bahnsen Humidifier, his success has been

phenomenal. His employer said to him: "You need not go to see Mr. A. I've been to him and you are wasting your time." Not deterred by his employer's failure he went to see Mr. A. and returned with a signed order in his note book. With a woman's smile and lilt in his eye, he rarely fails to secure an order. Of course he meets competitors, fights foemen worthy of his steel; the harder the contest, however, the more honor there is in the victory. To his credit be it said, he fights fairly and disarms his pleasure and resentment of defeat by open frankness, fair consideration and just treatment. Although successful, he thus retains their esteem and friendship and wins their admiration. His heart is so large that it takes in all humanity. He is ever ready to accommodate and serve. The aged and the young are especial objects of attention. By doing for others, he surrounds himself with pure, wholesome atmosphere of genial kindness. He is the living embodiment of a high-strung gentleman; a breathing, intense reality of loving humanity. His life is an exponent of the following sentiment:

"Have you had a kindness shown—

Pass it on.

'Twas not given thee alone,

Pass it on.

Let it travel down the years,

Let it wipe another's tears

'Til in heaven the deed appears."

What we put into the lives of others comes back to sweeten our own, and he counts that day well spent that enables him to put sunshine into the life of another.

There is an old proverb and a true one: "Birds of a feather, flock together," exemplified in the union with his wife, Nellie Carolina Johnson. She is the daughter of John A. Johnson and Sarah Elizabeth Mitchel, daughter of Joseph Mitchel and Rebecca Ann Eathforth, daughter of William Eathforth and Rebecca Preston Cornell, daughter of Captain Joseph Cornell and Roxana Preston, son of Thomas Cornell and Susannah Lawton. This Thomas Cornell was the son of Thomas Cornell and Rebecca Briggs. Thomas Cornell and his wife, Rebecca Briggs, were the grandparents of Ezra Cornell, founder of Cornell University. Ezra Cornell's son, Alonzo Cornell, was the twenty-fifth Governor of New York. The Cornell family came to Boston, America, from the County of Essex, England, 1638. They moved to Portsmouth, R. I. in 1640. The old home is still in the family. It is now owned by Rev.

John Cornell, Minister of the P. E. Church Diocese of Rhode Island.

Happy in her Panther Creek home, she is training her children to be assets in the world and while watching their development, her heart and soul is guiding, with tireless vigil, their footsteps under the tutelage of a governess.

Possessing magnetic personality, this ideal couple charm by courtesy and cordiality all who enter the doors of the hospitable old Williams homestead, Panther Creek. Having seen a great deal of the world, by reason of extensive travel, by being a close observer, by embracing his opportunities of rubbing up against all kinds of men, he has developed into an all-round and foursquare man of efficiency, retaining the cardinal virtues of truthfulness and simplicity which impress others and compel respect and attention. He seems just what he is, a gentleman of tender heart, noble impulses, genial, kind, magnanimous and generous. He takes active interest in civic improvement. With a breadth of understanding, with ready sympathy for the welfare of his neighbors, his guiding hand is seen in effective leadership and cooperative movement for betterment. Gifted in music, in song, in story, in recitation, in conversation, his very fibre is woven in pure gold.

"Long may he wave.

To cheer the brave."

Wm. A. Smith

## 848 (See 934)

### COL. JOSEPH WILLIAMS

John William, a Welshman, emigrated to America, landing at Jamestown, Virginia. His son, Nathaniel Williams, made his home in Hanover County, Virginia, later becoming Judge of the Court for that County. Nathaniel's son, Joseph Williams, animated with the pioneer spirit, sought a new field for his activities in the wilds of the Piedmont section of Anson County, North Carolina. He located in that beautiful, rolling, well watered section now known as the "Little Yadkin". He made large entries of several thousand acres of fertile land on the east bank of the Yadkin River, embracing the famous Shallow Ford, marked as the Daniel Boone Trail. Near his home was a small stream called "Panther Creek", so named from a lair of panthers on its banks. This creek gave name to the Williams' homestead, famed for the elegant hospitality of Col. Joseph Williams and his successors. Observe that Rowan County was formed out of Anson in 1756 and

Surrey from Rowan in 1770, Yadkin from Surrey in 1850-51. A small section of Yadkin County lying on the east side of the Yadkin River gave rise to the name of "Little Yadkin", in which is situated Panther Creek, the home of the Williams family for nearly two hundred years. This branch of the Williams family is noted for its numbers, all of them talented. Many of them are noted for the honorable official positions held in North Carolina Province, North Carolina State and in other states. This wing of the family has branched out west of Tennessee and Mississippi, south-west as far as Texas, and wherever found they are noted for intellect, enterprise and substantiality.

Colonel Joseph Williams, the youngest son of Nathaniel Williams, was a delegate to the Provincial Congress which met at Hillsboro in 1775. As a Major in the Revolutionary War he took an active part against the Tories, obtaining their inveterate enmity thereby. He also conducted a successful campaign against the Cherokee Indians. They had made foray into the border settlements, killed and scalped innocent victims and pillaged the country. He captured, burned and destroyed five of their towns in retaliation and completely broke their spirit for further depredations.

In the Continental Line he rose to the rank of Major and in the State was a Colonel of Militia. He had many narrow escapes from the Tories, to whom he became very obnoxious.

While absent in the campaign against the Indians, a band of Tories assembled in the section near Panther Creek. Mrs. Williams his wife, being informed of their presence, to save her horses, sent them away. The Tories came to her home. She diplomatically treated them with respect and entertained them by giving them her good food and best of drinks. She trusted thereby to mitigate their animosity and save her plantation from being plundered. Her hospitality was all in vain, for—Tory like—when they left, they robbed her of every living animal and fowl on the place except one duck, which escaped by use of its strong wings. She ordered a servant to catch the duck, saddle one of her fine horses and take it to the Tory Colonel with her compliments with a note saying: "As you have taken everything on the plantation except this duck, please accept it too, it is lonesome here." He replied: "Tell your mistress, in return for the duck, I present her with the fine animal you are riding." It is surprising that he did not take the horse. He afterwards said: "Mrs. Williams is the

prettiest woman in America." Surely she was one of the best.

Col. Joseph Williams was distinguished for his patriotism and for his progressive ideas. He was a school-committeeman and a Justice of the Peace. He was noted for his piety and was made a church warden. He married Rebekah Lanier, daughter of another distinguished Colonial family, tracing their lineage to Sir John Lanier of the British Isles. Her father was Thomas Lanier, Judge of Hanover County, Va. This Thomas Lanier married Eliza Johnson, half sister to Mary Ball, the mother of George Washington. Therefore, Rebekah Lanier, the daughter of Eliza Johnson Lanier, was half first cousin to George Washington.

Col. Joseph Williams and his wife reared a large family, all of whom were noted and distinguished. For further particulars regarding them, reference is made to John H. Wheeler's history of North Carolina, page 409, and Wheeler's Reminiscences, pages 418, 419, 420. After the Revolution he was elected, or appointed, Clerk of the Court of Surrey County and died incumbent of that office in 1828. A prominent, useful citizen went to his confident reward. "For he was a good man and full of the Holy Spirit and of faith." Acts 11:24.

The Williams families in North Carolina vie in numbers with the Smiths, the Browns and Jones. They were very, very prominent in Colonial days and hard to distinguish. Mr. Williams, (no initials), is mentioned in the North Carolina Records (Colonial) nineteen times. Capt. Williams (no initials), seventy times; Colonel Williams (no initials), thirty-four times; Joseph Williams, one hundred and twenty-eight times. The Williams name in the whole records occurs about three thousand times.

There is unquestionable evidence of the great prominence of the Williams family in ye olden days. Respected and honored, Joseph Williams lived a stirring, active life in strenuous days and died in the harness as one would suppose he would like to lay down this mortal coil. He was a—

"True man and kept our country's laws,  
And guarded its honor and its cause,  
A man who bravely played life's game,  
Nor asked rewards of gold or fame."

Wm. A. Smith

#### 849

#### HON. EDWARD HULL CRUMP

A brief, imperfect and incomplete sketch of whose life runs as follows:

Edward Crump was the son of Captain Edward Hull Crump and Mary Ann Nelme, his wife. Captain Crump was in the Confederate Army, brave, daring but not reckless and trusted officer of Gen. John H. Morgan's command. He sprang from the prominent Colonial Crump family of Virginia, ranked and associated with the F. F. V.'s. of that grand old estate, the mother of presidents. Captain Crump was born Feb. 26, 1838 and on October 4, 1878 answered the last roll call, summoned by that scourge, yellow fever, that came from Havana and swept through the Mississippi bottoms, leaving his son, Edward Hull Crump Jr., at the age of four years and two days, to be reared and trained by his mother. She was capable of the task and gave to him her assiduous, tender, loving and intelligent care which enabled him to say whole-heartedly in after years: "All that I am, I owe to my mother."

Mary Ann Nelme Crump's family originally came from Norway with the patronimic Nelmj, and migrated to Wales and Scotland. The passage of years brought distinction and they were known as "Lords of the Marches", "Protectors of the Borders". The name, in course of time, changed to Nelme. Her great, great grandfather, John Nelme, crossed the Atlantic and pitched his tent in New York. His son, Charles, migrated to Northampton Co., Va., and volunteered into the Colonial army, 1777, for three years' service under the name of Charles Nelms. Thus we see how names change with the passing years.

After the death of her husband she moved from Hudsonville and took up her residence in the town where she was reared by her uncle Gen. Charles Nelms.

Edward Hull Crump was a bright, intelligent lad and yielded dutifully, submissively and readily to the guidance of his tender, competent mother. He grew in stature and in favor with his companions, roaming the fields and woods in sport after the wild animals abounding there. Squirrels, rabbits, opossums, coons, quails, ducks, turkeys and wild geese became subject to his expert gun fire. He was fond of sport but did not indulge too much—to the neglect of his studies—owing to the wise administration of his careful mother.

His quickly acting mind readily absorbed by due application the learning taught in the common and high schools of the village. He developed a handsome form, modeled after the soldierly figure of his father, and the exquisite proportions of his gracious mother, who acquired elegant, matronly

proportions as the years of middle age approached. Her fair cheeks were flushed with the rich, red blood that throbbled from her loving heart and coursed through her veins for her sensible children. Her bright eyes, shapely nose, high forehead and comely, regular features, gave dignity to her countenance in repose and vivacity in excitement, and her soft, modulated, musical voice, added additional charm to her intelligent conversational powers.

At the early age of sixteen Edward Hull Crump began a successful business career. First, as the devil in a printer's shop, then a clerk in the general store of N. R. Sledge & Co., Lula, Miss. Here he came to himself, feeling, and knowing his expanding capacity, prompted by ambition, he sought a wider field. He went to the city of Memphis and accepted a position with the firm, Walter Goodman & Co., Cotton Factors. Later he accepted a position with Woods' Chickasaw Mfg. Co. as bookkeeper. Winning the confidence and esteem of the firm, by promotion he became the trusted cashier and financial secretary and treasurer of that corporation. As the years passed, with confidence in himself, backed by experience, he ventured the purchase of the plant which he successfully conducted for eight years, amassing a competence, and was known as a master of finance and a leader in big business.

In 1905 he entered politics as a member of the Board of Public Works. In 1907 he was made one of the Fire and Police Commission. His conduct in these important positions won for him the nomination of Mayor of the City. He was elected by a large vote in the year 1910. So ably did he discharge the affairs pertaining to the important office of head of the city and county that he gained the admiration of his fellow citizens and reflected credit on his constituents who supported him a second time for Mayor.

Bear in mind, the county government and city government were merged into one office and one head. The Commissioner of the County or the Mayorship of the city is considered a full one man's job. Blessed with health and good, hard, horse sense, he stood the strain of administering both these important, exacting positions and so won the esteem and good will of the citizens that in 1911, they again called on him to head the ticket. Self reliant, he scorned to dicker with his opponents, and every newspaper in the city except one opposed his election. In spite of the opposition of these moulders of public opinion he was triumphantly and over-



whelmily elected, the vote on the evening of day standing:

Edward Hill Crump	11,428
J. J. Williams	3,361
Harry E. Bradford	165
A. N. Redford	77

Gifted with the art of winning the confidence of the people, making and holding friends, endearing himself to them with hooks of steel, he fearlessly pursued the path of honesty and equity. No charge of dishonesty or malfeasance in office could be sustained. He regarded service for the county and city as a supreme commitment of life given and entrusted to him by the people. Constant in the faithful discharge of duty, he was courteous to all, obsequious to none. The common welfare was the goal of his ambition and the dominant motive that actuated him. Thus panoplied, his friends were staunch, unswerving and unpurchasable. Elevation to the Mayor's office did not warp his genius or mar his esteem for men of the commonalty. It simply placed him in a position to serve the best interests of the city, and, in so doing, to acknowledge the good offices of his friends.

After the election his handclasp was equally warm, his smile as amiable and his footsteps as urgent in pursuit of their interests as before. By mingling with his constituents and putting his ear to the ground, he could hear the voice and feel the pulse of approval of his efforts.

Kind, approachable, genuinely true, he was faithful in the discharge of the many and oft-times difficult duties of his high office.

On January 22, 1902 he led to the altar the beautiful and accomplished Miss Elizabeth (Bessie) Byrd McLean of Memphis, Tennessee. To them have been born several children (see genealogical table) perfect in mind and body. She is fittingly described by Ezekiel: "Thou wast decked in gold and silver; and thy raiments of fine linen and silk and embroidered work; thou didst eat fine flour and honey and oil; and thou wast exceedingly beautiful and thou didst prosper into a beautiful kingdom." That kingdom was the heart of her husband and there she reigns supreme.

Edward Crump was not satisfied to plod along the open roadway over the smooth surface worn by the footsteps of his predecessors. He sought to mount the hills and reach the heights, fearing not to breast the wave of opposition to measures he thought would prove beneficial.

He adopted early in life as his motto: "En Avant, Forward—Onward—Upward."

Wm. A. Smith

900

## COAT-ARMOUR

of the

## ANCIENT AND HONORABLE FAMILY

of

## THOMAS SMITH, Sr.

The arms of this family are thus described in heraldic terms: Or, a chevron cotised between two demi-griffins couped respecting each other in chief, and a like griffin in base sable.

Crest: An elephant's head erased or, eared gulls charged on the neck with three fleurs-de-lis azure two and one.

Motto: Tenax et fidelis.

This, translated into non-technical terms, means that in the centre of the shield, superimposed on its golden ground, is described a black chevron with the cotises guarding it on either side. On the remaining portions of the ground are three black demi-griffins, cut straight from the body. For crest the golden head of an elephant is shown, the same being depicted as having been torn from the body in jagged fashion, with ears red, and on the back three blue fleurs-de-lis. A translation of the motto is: "Preserving and Faithful." The explanation, significance and symbolism of this coat of arms is as follows:

The Honorable Ordinaries are nine in number, as follows: The Cross, the Chief, the Saltire, the Pale, the Bend, the Fesse, the Chevron, the Pile and the Quarter. The shields of the eleventh and twelfth centuries display traces of all these Ordinaries with the exception of the Pile. They appeared as strengthenings of wood and metal on the shield themselves, and were sometimes gilded, silvered or painted in the gayest colors. Various meanings more or less fanciful, though clearly without foundation in fact, have been given to these Ordinaries.

Of the Ordinaries as above mentioned, the Cross was clearly the most important, and was borne in a very great many different forms and designs. Some of these Ordinaries have diminutives which are of the same form as the Ordinaries themselves, though narrower.

The Chevron is one of the Honorable Ordinaries. It represents "two crosswise beams co-joined at the apex," and derives its name

and probably its origin from the roof of a building.

Another authority says that it is formed by two lines drawn from the fess point to the dexter and sinister base of the shield to include one-fifth of the width of the shield. It is also stated that: "The chevron is a form like the letter 'V' with the point turned upwards." Nisbeth says that "it is like a compass half opened, while some say it represents a carpenter's square". It corresponds in the form with the lower half of a saltire.

Dame Berners has this to say concerning it: "We haue sothly in armys certyn sygnys whyche are callyd cheurons in frensshe, and in englyshe a couple of sparrys, whyche signes by lyknesse fyrste were borne of Carpentaries and makers of houses. For an hous is neuer made perfytt tyll those sparrys ben put upon it, by ye manere of an heed."

Wade says: "The Chevron signifies protection and has been often granted in arms as a reward to one who has achieved some noble enterprise". It has sometimes been given to those who have accomplished some work of faithful service. Another old writer asserts that the chevron signifies Preservation.

The arms of the Pords De Stafford are: Or a chevron gules; and the great family of Fe Clare, from whom so many families derive their chevrons and cheverneles are: Gules three cheverneles or. To the Baron's letter to the Pope, A. D. 1301, are affixed two seals: The first of Henry Tytys, displaying a chevron and the second of Walter de Teye a fesse charged with three mullets between two chevrons.

The cotises which are borne on either side of the chevron and which enclose or protect it usually are borne in couples. They are considered merely diminutives, being much narrower, and each is termed a "couple close". Each is one fourth the width of a chevron.

The griffin or gryphon is classed among the fabulous animals, many of which are frequently borne as charges in heraldry. It has the head, shoulders, wings and forefeet of an eagle with the body, hind-legs and tail of a lion. One authority says: "In the early days of heraldry the belief in such creatures was fully held." It is described by an old writer as "Thai haue the body upward as an eagle and benethe as a lyoun, but a griffine hat the body more gret, and is more strong than eight lyouns, and more grete and strongere than an hundred egles". The form is found freely in ancient art centuries before the dawn of heraldry. Guillim says that the griffin "sets forth the property of a valor-

ous soldier whose magnanimity is such that he will dare all dangers and even death rather than become captive". It also symbolizes Vigilancy and is found to be as old as the time of Phoenicians as shown by the Count D'Alvielle

Another authority says that the griffin shows "Eagerness in Pursuit". The griffin appears in the arms of Simon de Montacute in the time of Henry III and Edward I.

The heraldic significance of the elephant is said to be drawn from its courage and strength. It was the ensign of Cyneus, king of Scythia, and Idemenes, King of Thessal. The elephant is, of course, of huge strength and stature, and very sagacious. The English family of Elphinstone bear an elephant in their arms.

Sloan-Evans says: "The elephant is a beast of great strength, greater wit, and greater ambition; insomuch that some have written of them that, if you praise them they will kill themselves with labor; but if you commend another above them, they will break their hearts with emulation."

Hulme remarks: "The elephant was long regarded as the emblem of kingly rank, from the belief that he could not bow his knees, an idea that one meets with from time to time amongst the old writers of natural history. The creature is sometimes found in heraldic devices, generally as the supporter of the arms of those who have served their country with distinction in Eastern lands. We see it, for example, on the shield of Sir Henry Smith, whose brilliant victory at Aliwai and other services in India fully account for its presence.

An elephant with a castle on its back, and its trappings emblazoned with the arms of Jerusalem was carved in the arms of Bishop Bruers, an Oriental traveler, and may be seen in Exeter Cathedral. This is earlier even than the famous pictures on one of the Cottenian MSS. of the first elephant brought to England, an event that happened in the year 1255. The elephant was also an emblem of Magnanimity. "This beast is so gentle to all others that are weak, and not as strong as himself, that if he passes through a flocke or heard of smaller cattel, it will with nose or trunk, which serveth instead of his hands, remove and turne aside whatsoever beast cometh in his way, for feere he should go over them, and so crush and tread under his foot any of them ere it were aware. And never doe they any hurt unless they be provoked thereto". Aelian and other old writers also affirm that the elephant was to the best of his ability a very religious beast. "They

withall have in reverence not only the starres, but the sunne and moon they also worship". The old writer goes on to describe how, "herds of them at full moon come to the stream, sprinkle themselves with water, and after a solemn purification salute and adore the moon. All these beliefs put together sufficiently account for its employment in heraldic and religious art".

Elephants' heads constitute the well-known bearings of the Marquis Camben.

Worthy says: "The fleur-de-lis long quartered by England, in pretended right of France, and abandoned by George III after the union with Ireland, may be described as an heraldic Lily, although some incline to the opinion that it was intended to represent a Spear-head". It is unlike the lily as borne by Eton College, which consists of five leaves, three of which are usually shown.

Hulme remarks: "Though the fleur-de-lis is so conventional in form that its original is lost, some authorities thinking it is meant for a toad, while others see in it a lance-head or lily flower, the balance of opinion is in favor of a floral origin. It is a very ancient and favourite bearing. In old rolls of arms the form is called a flower, and the compilers of these ancient MSS. being considerable nearer the dawn of heraldry than ourselves, had excellent opportunities of coming to a right judgment. Chaucer calls the form of a lily, while others, more justly we opine, see in it the iris."

The upholders of the lance-head theory point to such a device as that seen in the arms of the See of Hereford and say that it is absurd to suppose that the form there seen can be a lily flower, while it is very reasonable indeed to accept it as a spear thrust through the head of a leopard. The advocates of this view, moreover, add that the band in the centre of the fleur-de-lis has no counterpart in a flower, while it strongly resembles the ring that would hold the metal head to the wooden shaft of a spear or lance.

The fleur-de-lis is the emblem of France, and it is gravely recorded by old chroniclers that it was brought down from heaven by an angel, as a celestial token of good will, to Clovis, the first Christian king. Clovis, it is related, made a vow that he would, if victorious over his enemies, embrace Christianity, and the decisive battle, fought near Cologne in 496, being in his favor, he adopted the heaven-sent flower and was baptized into the Christian faith.

In the work of Boutell it is recorded that, "Ancient heralds," says Newton, "tell us that the Franks of old had a custom, at the

proclamation of their king, to elevate him up on a shield or target, and place in his hand a reed or flag in blossom, instead of a sceptre, and from thence the kings of the first and second race in France are represented with sceptres in their hands, like the flag with its flower, and which flowers became the armorial figures of France."

Many legendary tales have been told about the "blue banner with the golden fleur-de-lis," but there can be little doubt that the kings of France from Clovis downwards, bore a field covered with golden lilies, and that Charles VI reduced the number to three, either to symbolize the three different races of the kings of France, or the Blessed Trinity. Mr. Planché supposes the origin of the fleur-de-lis, or fleur-de-luce, to have been a rebus, signifying the "Flowers of Louis," and adds that "Clovis is the Frankish form of the modern Louis, the C being dropped, as in Clothaire, Lothaire, etc." The Fleur-de-lis appears in early heraldry under several modifications of its typical form. It was considered the emblem of the Blessed Virgin Mary, and was in especial favor in the middle ages with the designers of the inlaid pavement tiles and other decorative ecclesiastical ornamentations. It forms one of the figures of the diaper of the shield of Robert De Vere, and it decorates the Royal Tressure of Scotland, in the shield placed by Henry III or Edward I in the Abbey of Westminster.

The tinctures which cover the shield are composed of metals and colors and sometimes furs. They were changed upon great occasions, sable or black being substituted as a sign of mourning, and vert or green as an allusion to a field upon which the head of a family might have been killed in battle. Each tincture was originally supposed to have an equivalent among the planets, precious stones, signs of the Zodiac, months, days of the week, seasons or times of the day, the elements, the periods of life, the virtues or dispositions, the flowers and the numerals.

Thus, in blazon, the coat of armor of the Ancient and Honorable Family of Smith, employing the metal Or and the color of sable, has the following tincture significations: Gold, heraldically termed Or, is, in addition to silver, the only metal employed in heraldic blazonry. It is represented by a brilliant yellow. Its name is taken from the Latin term "aurum", meaning gold. Ancient heraldic authorities writing of gold, state: "It doth lively represent that most excellent metal, the possession whereof enchanteth the hearts of fools and the color whereof blindeth the eyes of the wise; and as this metal ex-

ceedeth all others in value, purity and fineness, so ought the bearer endeavor to surpass all others in prowess and virtue."

Its resemblance to the Sun consists in the purity and lustre of its brightness. Heraldically, it is assimilated to the topaz, that stone being deemed worthy "to be sette in the breast-plate of Aaron."

It denotes Sincerity, and according to Sir Ferne, Elevation of Mind, and is also supposed to represent Constancy. The word Sable is supposed to be derived from the Latin "sabulum", on account of its heavy and earthly substance. An old writer says: "Sable is the tincture of heraldry which signified Meditation, Solemnity and Mourning. It has sometimes been borne in coat armor with an allusion to the fatal execution of its bearer on the battlefield as a special mark of prowess, which signification, however, is not common. It is blazoned by the planet Saturn, "that mighty ruler of the depths of time", and its corresponding jewel is the diamond. It denotes Prudence, Patience, under Tribulation, and Sorrow under Bereavement. It is also held to denote Constancy and sometimes Grief.

The whole achievement would thus signify that the family of Smith has been noted for its courage and strength, for the ardent love of freedom of its members and for their sterling Christian faith and character.

Leonard Wilson  
Genealogist

August 23, 1916      London and Washington

The above is copyrighted by B. F. Johnson Incorporated, of Washington, D. C., and published in "Makers of America", in connection with a sketch of Gen. W. A. Smith. It is published here by their permission. The above described Coat of Arms is known as The Thomas Smith Coat of Arms, granted to our ancestor.

W. Thos. Smith

The coat of Arms might also be explained this way:

Or: Gold.

Chevron: Composed of two stripes descending from the center of the shield in a diagonal direction like the rafters of a building.

Demi: Half.

Griffin: A fabulous creature, half lion, half eagle. A chimerical creature, or mythological monster, which the fancy of the modern adopted from that of the ancient world, first mentioned by Aristeeas about 500 years before

Christ, variously described and represented but most frequently represented as an animal generated or a cross between a lion and an eagle, but of great size, having the legs and body of a lion, and the beak and wings of the eagle.

Couped: In Heraldry used to describe the head of any limb of an animal cut off from the trunk.

Sable: One of the tinctures in Heraldry, implying black. In heraldry engraving, it is represented by perpendicular and horizontal lines crossing each other.

Gules: Is the color red.

Azure: Is the color blue.

Cotice: In Heraldry, one of the diminutives of the Bend.

Bend: A band or stripe crossing the shield diagonally from dexter chief to sinister base. Dexter is right as opposed to sinister which is left.

Erased: Forcibly torn off and therefore rugged and uneven.

Fleur-de-lis: An emblem derived, some say from the white lily of the garden. Others say that it came from the flag of Iris. The legendary story is that a blue banner, embroidered with the golden fleur-de-lis, came down from heaven; that an angel gave it to King Clovis at his baptism. The King of France bore it on his arms first a number but later only three golden lilies on a blue field or as heraldry would say, azure, three fleur-de-lis, but Charles VI reduced it fleur-de-lis to three, disposed two and one, some conjecture on account of the Trinity. Others say to represent the three different races of the King of France. Many English and Scotch families bear the fleur-de-lis on some portion of the shield, generally with some reference to France.

W. Thos. Smith

## 901 (See 501)

-501-THOMAS SMITH SR. of NOTTINGHAM and GADDESBY, ENGLAND

Thomas Smith Sr., born at Cropwell in 1631, is known in history as the founder of our branch of the Smith Family. His grandfather, John Smith Sr., died in 1602 when his father, John Smith Jr., was nine years old. The mother of Thos. Smith Sr. died when he was two years old, his father died when he was eleven years old and his stepmother died when he was twelve years old. His father had no doubt been a tenant on the land of Sir Thomas Hutchinson and at the age of

29 in the year of 1622 had purchased of Sir Thomas Hutchinson 62 acres of land for 185 pounds. He, at his marriage in 1630, settled this land on his wife, Elizabeth Garton. At his death in 1642 his estate inventoried over 543 pounds besides 300 pounds due on bonds for money lent. Elizabeth Wilcocke Smith, the second wife, appointed her brother, William Wilcocke, as executor of her estate and he seems to have also been the executor or one of the two of the estate of John Smith Jr. He seemed to have become insolvent, and suit was brought to recover property entrusted to him under these wills. He seems to have settled 100 pounds due Mamie Smith, the sister, by deeding to Daniel Wilcocke, his own son, who had married her, his lands and receiving 30 pounds difference. John Smith Jr., in his will, had entreated Mr. Robert Burrows of Nottingham to become the guardian of Thomas Smith, his son. It is thought, on the death of his parents, that he went to live with the Gartons, his mother's people, and also later went to Nottingham to school and there lived with Mr. Robert Burrows. He was probably educated in Nottingham in the Free School founded by Agnes Mellors, under Mr. Balston. The master of this school was required to be "of good and honest conversation."

It is thought that the litigation made necessary to recover the legacies left him brought about such a feeling that he, for that reason, went to live in Nottingham. In 1653, for 210 pounds, he purchased some property at the corner of Peck Lane in Nottingham and in years after on this property was located his Bank. This property was purchased from William Littlefear, who from the family name is thought to have been a Puritan. Laurence Collin, who was a Protestant, later the Master Gunner under Sir Oliver Cromwell, and still later in 1681, became the father-in-law of Thomas Smith, was a witness to this deed. No bank of any kind existed in England until 1640. The Bank of England was not established until 1695. Money was hoarded by the nobility in iron chests. The merchants in London had been in the habit of depositing their bullion in the Tower for convenience, and had security under the guardianship of the Crown. About 1640, King Charles I became impoverished and is said to have seized about 30,000 pounds of this for the payment of his debts. Then people began to leave money with Goldsmiths and others for safe-keeping. Thomas Smith Sr. became a Mercer and was successful in his business. People began to leave their money with him and he issued notes

for it. He in turn lent it out. By 1688 he had worked himself into a good banking business, along with his other business as a Mercer. At length he began to purchase lands. At his death he was a large land holder and by his will left to Thomas Smith Jr., his Bank and 1400 acres of land at Gaddesby. To his second son, John Smith, he left lands at Cropwell Butler; to son Samuel, lands at Keyworth; to Abel, his youngest son, he left lands at Bobler Mills.

In 1688, while Alderman, he, with the Mayor and others, objected to the New Charter proposed to be granted by James II on the surrender, or rather forfeiture, of the more ancient foundation of their municipal liberties. He married twice and had children as shown by the Tables 501. A stone covering his grave has the following inscription on it: "Here lyeth the body of Mr. Thomas Smith, Mercer of this town, who departed this life the 14th day of July, 1699 in the 67th year of his age."

John Augustus Smith says that Thomas Smith Sr. was a Cromwellian and cast his fortune with Sir Oliver Cromwell.

In 1535 Parliament came to open rupture with the Pontiff of the Roman Catholic Church. The Pope had enjoyed Temporal Power and in a way the English Government was subservient to his will. By act of Parliament, the Pontiff was divested of these powers and the King of England was designated as the head of the Church in England. Of course many of the Priests took sides against this law. Priests and Jesuits in England strove to have this law abrogated. The line of separation between the Church of England, as then called, and the Roman Catholic Church began to broaden; the controversies grew in ways more bitter. There also began to separate from the Church of England those, termed Puritans, who thought the Church had not yet diverged to a sufficient distance from the Roman Catholic Church, and who believed that the many ritualistic forms used things that had crept into the Church with the Pagans who had become converted to Christianity in the earlier ages. These Puritans were composed of Moderate Presbyterians, Scottish Presbyterians, Erastians, Baptists, and Independents. George Fox began to preach in 1647 and by 1654 had the Quakers well organized with sixty preachers in the field. When the split came in 1535 our ancestors undoubtedly remained with the Catholic Church. John Smith Jr. was baptised in the Roman Catholic Church, October 2, 1593, but later became a dissenter and left the Roman Catholic Church.



Some of the Smiths of Cropwell became Quakers. There were two William Smiths from Cropwell who became Quaker Preachers. Thomas Smith Sr. had purchased lands in Nottingham from a Puritan. He had early associated with Laurence Collin, well known to have been a Protestant, and later married his daughter, Fortune. Everything we have would indicate, and perhaps John Augustus Smith had other proof for his assertion, that Thomas Smith Sr. was a Cromwellian. We know that his father-in-law, Lawrence Collin, was a Cromwellian. In 1625 Charles I came to the throne. He was a most devout Catholic. He early had open rupture with Parliament. As early as 1628, Parliament refused to vote him money to wage war on Spain and France, but in answer sent him that remarkable document known in history as "Petition of Rights", citing the Magna Carta and warning him of his legal limitations, and denied his right to imprison or punish without due process of law. For eleven years he refused to again call Parliament together, and then he only called it together because of his depleted treasury and need of money to pay personal debts. When called together, Parliament passed a law convening it in session every three years whether called by the King or not. Charles I undertook to extend the Church of England to Scotland but the Scotch Presbyterians refused to pay his levies. In 1640 he made bold his demands. The breach became wider and on a dark and stormy night in August 1642, King Charles I took his stand at Nottingham and defied Parliament.

The Catholic Encyclopedia says: "When war broke out between Charles I and Parliament, English Catholics, to a man, espoused the cause of the King. Hatred of Catholicism was the dominant note of the Parliamentarians". Further on it says: "To the Irish, Cromwell's death in 1658 was welcome news". There emerged from Parliament, Sir Oliver Cromwell. (By the way of divergence, for the benefit of our kindred in the Williams Tables, we will say that the great-grandfather of Oliver Cromwell was Richard Williams. Upon being elevated to peerage, he took the name of Cromwell. Richard Williams was a descendant of Morgan Williams of Wales. Morgan Williams was one of the first to assume a family name. He was one son of Williams. Williams was the son of William. He might have been the son of Joe, Frank or Sam. Morgan Williams and his descendants are prolific in Wales). Cromwell was fanatically anti-catholic, and around his standard gathered the Puritans. For six

years this religious war raged. Cromwell set out to collect a "godly" regiment, men earnest, sober, and with religious enthusiasm. He disregarded social traditions and selected for his officers those who had shown ability, and of all classes. He said: "I had rather have a plain russet Captain that knows what he fights for and loves what he knows, than what you call a gentleman and nothing more". He had for officers "Roundheads" who cut their hair close instead of wearing long flowing locks, such men as Laurence Collin, the father-in-law of Thomas Smith Sr., as we mentioned in paragraph 501. For six years this internecine struggle followed. Both sides were unjustly cruel. At length the army of King Charles I was routed and scattered and the King was captured. He was tried by Parliament as a "tyrant, traitor, murderer, and enemy of his country". He was found guilty, condemned, and in January, 1649, was beheaded. The like of this had never been known before. In all the centuries before, it had been the peculiar prerogative of Kings and Rulers to kill and behead other Kings.

During this time the Catholics of Ireland had massacred the Protestants. The war over, Cromwell then went to Ireland and suppressed the Irish Insurrection with such severity, cruelty, and vigor that his name to this day rankles many Irish the world over. He took the land of Northern Ireland and divided it among his followers, the Presbyterians. He then went to Scotland in 1650 and scattered the Royalist army there gathered. He then turned his attention to Holland, which country had been injuring the trade of England during the home troubles. He then went to Algiers and destroyed the pirates who had been preying on English merchantmen during the struggle. Then came the war with Spain in which he destroyed the Spanish fleet. The Duke of Savoy had been roving over southern France, killing Protestants where he found them. He now intervened to protect them. In 1658 he died. He is known as "The Lord Protector". He issued orders that leniency be shown the Quakers. A law prevented the Jew from living in England. He assured them he would favor them and alleviate them as far as possible under the law. He ordered the release from prison of George Fox, the Quaker. There was a reaction, and two years after the death of Cromwell, Charles II was permitted to succeed to the throne. He was a weakling and of a vacillating character. In 1685 he was succeeded by his brother James II. He was a devout Catholic and undertook to bring about a re-union with the Roman

Catholic Church. The same anti-Catholic feeling again came to the surface to fight the second battle. At length there was an open rupture. Parliament again collected an army and made war on King James II and in 1688 drove him from England. He found safety in France. Parliament then offered the crown to Prince of Orange, William III. He and his wife ruled until 1702, after this ancestor was dead.

Just what part Thomas Smith Sr. played in these troublesome times we know not. We take it that John Augustus Smith was correct when he said that Thomas Smith Sr. was a Cromwellian. He lived in an age and in a season when neutrality was impossible. Convictions were strong, prejudices great. Things happened that tried the souls of men and exposed to the gaze of men the metal of which they were made. The "Rights of Man" were struggling for ascendancy as never before. With the dominating character of this ancestor, no doubt every man knew where he stood. Happily for us, when the American Revolution was over, the leaders of the Church of England wisely decided in this country not to insist on a state religion. Happily for us the effort of a few Presbyterians to have that Church made the State religion was frustrated. The Church of England today is what we know as the Protestant Episcopal Church of the United States. Happily for us, we now live in an age of fraternal amity and commercial unity when these attempted factional controversies matter little to the writer. We can see the virtues in the ideals of every religious propaganda. The "Rights of Man" are now championed by every political faction. We can only vie with each other as we strive to be the Creator's defender, and champion the "Rights of Man" along those avenues where conscience leads our respective visions, without impugning the motives of others, or in any way attempting to silence those differing in opinions from us. It is not for us to say who was right, who was wrong. Each can scan history and draw his own conclusions. We know the rank and file of every controversy usually follows his conviction of duty to be done. It was the life this ancestor lived and the high-minded citizen that he was that caused, eighteen years after he had passed away, a Coat of Arms to be granted to his son, as his representative, for the benefit alike of all his male descendants. Eighty-three years after this ancestor died, seven of his grand and great-grandchildren at one time were members of parliament. His grandson, Abel Smith Jr., had six sons. Abel Smith Jr. and five of his

six sons sat in parliament at different times. Some of the descendants of his son Samuel Smith have also sat in parliament. Peerage in England is the status of a Peer. It is a royal grant and becomes hereditary within the limits of the grant, descending at death to the oldest son, so long as there be a son, and if there be no son, it becomes extinct. The status entitled the holder to a seat in parliament (The House of Lords). There are five degrees in rank, ascending as follows: Baron, Viscount, Earl, Marquis and Duke. All Peers are equal in every way, save these honorary ranks give precedent in social and state functions. The wife of a Peer is referred to as Lady.

The descendants of this ancestor have won their spurs and because of ability, received royal grants bringing them into the families of the nobility of England. The first was Charles Eggleton, son of John Eggleton and Mary Smith, grandson of Thomas Smith Sr. In 1743 Charles Eggleton was High Sheriff of London. He was later that year knighted and created a baronet. He had married Sarah Kent. He took the title Sir Charles Kent. This line has become extinct for want of a male issue.

Robert Smith, son of Abel Smith Jr., great-grandson of Thomas Smith Sr., was connected with the Bank of Smith, Payne and Smith of London. He grew enormously wealthy. He was very highly educated and a speaker of some note. He gave much money to charitable institutions. He was a very handsome man, suave in manner, both a politician and a financier. He was elected to parliament for five consecutive terms. He was created under the title of Baron Carrington of Bulcot Lodge in the peerage of Ireland, Oct. 20, 1789, advanced later to English peerage as Baron Carrington of Upton, Nottingham. July 1810 he was created D. C. L. by Oxford and in 1819 LL.D. by Cambridge. He was the only man engaged in trade, given peerage by George III. His son dropped one of the r's and spelled the name Carington and not only took the title but by royal license changed his name to Carington. The present Earl of Lincolnshire is the holder of his title. He has been a man of considerable prominence as can be seen by consulting Burks Peerage and Baronetage.

Catherine Smith, daughter of Robert Smith, married Phillip Henry who became 4th Earl Stanhope. This line is still in existence and Lord Stanhope sits in the House of Lords.

Charlotte Smith, daughter of Robert Smith, married Alen Legge who afterwards became

Lord Gardner. This line is extinct for want of a male issue.

Julian Pauncefote, a descendant of Abel Smith Jr., was born 1828 and died 1902. He entered the bar in 1852. He went to Hong-kong and there served as attorney-general. In 1873 he became chief justice of Leeward Islands. In 1882 he was made assistant under-secretary for the colonies. In 1882 he was made permanent under-secretary. In 1885 he was a delegate to the Suez Canal Commission. In 1889 he became minister to the United States. In 1893 he was raised to ambassador. The Bering Sea controversy, the Venezuela affair, and the revisions of the Clayton-Bulwer Treaty known as the Hay-Pauncefote Treaty were among the problems he solved in the thirteen years he represented his country at Washington. In 1899 he was senior British delegate and helped establish the Court of Arbitration. He was then raised to peerage and took the name of Baron Pauncefote of Preston. He died without male issue and the line became extinct.

George Smith, son of Abel Smith Sr., was raised to peerage in 1757, and took the name of Bromley. He became Sir George Bromley. Subsequently the name was changed to Bromley-Wilson. Sir Maurice Bromley-Wilson, 7th Baronet, born 1875, is the present representative of this family.

Charlotte Smith, daughter of John and grand-daughter of Abel Smith Sr., married Thomas Boulton, son of Sir Thomas Parkyns and her son became Sir T. G. A. Parkyns.

Robert Smith, son of Thomas Smith, descended from Abel Smith, married Mary Bigsby and he, by royal license, changed his name to Pauncefote, being descended from that House in his mother's side. He was the father of Julian Pauncefote above mentioned.

Following are the names of some of the descendants of Thomas Smith Sr. of Nottingham and Gaddesby, who have been elected to parliament and served in the House of Commons: George Smith, died 1769; Abel Smith Jr., born 1774; Abel Smith No. 3; Robert Smith, born 1752; Samuel Smith, born 1754; George Smith, born 1768; John Smith, born 1767; Robert John Smith, born 1796; Abel Smith No. 4, born 1788; George Robert Smith, born 1793; John Abel Smith, born 1802; Martin Tucker Smith, born 1808; Abel Smith No. 5, born 1829; Samuel George Smith, born 1822; Frederic Chatfield Smith, born 1823; Jervoise Smith, born 1828; Gerard Smith, born 1839, also Governor of West Australia; John Augustus Smith whom we mention later.

We also find nearly as many ministers of

the Gospel in this family as we find politicians. They seem to be a family of Bankers, Preachers and Politicians. Rene Payne of the Bank of Smith, Payne and Smiths, died in 1799 and the Payne family ceased connection with it, but it still retains the former name. Hugh Collin Smith of this family, but not of Smith, Payne and Smiths, was Governor of the Bank of England in 1897 and 1898. A few years since, the Banks of Samuel Smith & Co., Nottingham; Samuel Smith & Co., Hull; Samuel Smith & Co., Derby; Samuel Smith & Co., Newark; and Smith, Ellison and Co., Lincoln, amalgamated. These Banks had been in existence for something like one hundred years. This Samuel Smith was from Abel Smith Sr. and owned, in Hereford County, 10,000 acres of land.

Richard Smith of Nottingham, Lace Manufacturer, (born 1729, died in 1825) was from John Smith Jr., of Cropwell, but not through the Thomas Smith Sr. line. Compton Reade says of this family: "This family, after having been founded in manufacture, and carried forward by commerce, has achieved further success, as well in the University of Cambridge, as also in the professions of Law and of Medicine. That the same family should have won four fellowships, a scholarship, and four university prizes within little more than a quarter of a century, will surely find but few parallels in either university." For further data see "The Smith Family" by Compton Reade.

The National Dictionary of Biography gives an extended sketch of John Augustus Smith, born 1804, died 1872. He was the great-grandson of Samuel Smith Sr. and Elizabeth Cartlitch, his wife. Wealthy by inheritance, in 1834 for 20,000 pounds or \$100,000.00 and a small annual rental he leased from the British Government the Scilly Islands, located some forty miles from London. This lease runs for ninety-nine years. He spent 80,000 pounds or \$400,000 in rebuilding the homes and making improvements there. This was equal to his rent for the first twelve years. He refused to allow more than one family of his tenants to live in the same house. He maintained schools and required that all children attend school. By some he was called despotic for requiring this mode of living and the education of the children. He contributed practically all for the building of two churches on these Islands. In 1836 he published a book, entitled: "Apology for Parochial Education in the school of industry at Great Berkhamstead". In 1841 he ended a long fight he made through the Courts and brought about the re-opening of

a free grammar school at Great Berkhamstead. In early life he became interested in, and during life did considerable in, reforming the laws as related to the poor, and furthering national public school education. The second Earl Brownlow enclosed a strong iron fence around one third of the parish. John Augustus Smith employed a band of natives to go from London out there and pull it down. He then went into Court and in 1870 obtained an injunction against future enclosure. In 1857 he was elected a member of parliament and remained a member for eight years. He was president of the Royal Geological Society for eight years. He was president of the Royal Institution of Cornwall for five years. While grandmaster of the Masonic Lodge at Cornwall, he established a County Fund for aged and infirm Masons. In 1866 he published a book entitled "Constitutional Reflections on the present Aspect of Parliament Government". In 1861 he compiled and published a book entitled "Stemmata Smithiana Ferraria", which translated means "True Faithful History of the Smith Family". We have tried to obtain a copy of this book but Mr. Frank Woore of Nottingham, England, writes us he has advertised and tried to purchase a copy of it on several occasions without success. It seems from the matter before us that some friend of Lord Carrington had undertaken to show that John Smith Jr. of Cropwell was in fact named Carrington and descended from Sir Michael Carrington who was a standard bearer of Richard I, prior to, 1200, in the Wars of the Roses and that one of this family adopted the name of Smith for concealment purposes. John Augustus Smith cared little for snobbishness and became very much peeved over this book. He set out to ascertain the truth, showed the book was pure fabrication and that if John Smith Jr. had been the rightful heir to the large Carrington estates, his son Thomas Smith Sr., would have been shrewd enough to have made effort to recover them. The present Lord Carrington family accept the book of John Augustus Smith as correct history. We are thus descended from a yeoman who could not write his name. What has been accomplished by his posterity, has been by personal effort and not by inherited greatness.

W. Thos. Smith

902 (See 502)

#### JOHN SMITH NO. 1, THE EMIGRANT

The baptismal name John, and surname Smith, are found in different form in many languages. Written in Latin, Johannes Smith-

us; Italian, Giovanni Smithi; French, Jean Smoet; Russian, Jonloff Smittowsky; Polish, Ivan Schmittweisky; Welsh, Iohn Schmid; Holland, Hans Schmidt; Greek, Ion Smik-ton; Spanish, Juan Smithus; in Turkey, Yoe Seef.

Our John Smith No. 1, the emigrant, was not the first of that name to come to America, for we read of Captain John Smith of Pocahontas fame, who was an English adventurer on the continents of Europe, Asia, and Africa, and who came to America as early as 1580, becoming one of the founders of Virginia. This John Smith was the son of a tenant farmer of Lincolnshire, England, and we have no reason to think him related to us.

Our John Smith, born in 1719, was the son of Samuel Smith Sr. and his wife, Elizabeth, the daughter of John Cartlitch. He was the grandson of Thomas Smith Sr. of Nottingham and Gaddesby, by his second wife, Fortune, the daughter of Laurence Collin of Nottingham. Thomas Smith Sr. was born in 1631 and died in 1699. He became a mercer and banker and is known in history as founder of our family. Thomas Smith Sr. was the son of John Smith Jr. (born 1593) and his first wife, Elizabeth, the daughter of Thomas Garton, and the grandson of John Smith Sr. who died in 1602. John Smith Sr. lived in the parish of Titheby. John Smith Jr. lived at Cropwell Boteler, nine miles east of Nottingham.

Samuel Smith Sr. was left by his father the estate of Keyworth. He later moved to London, became a goldsmith, then a money lender, and at death he was called a Merchant Prince. He died a very wealthy man. He at first handled the banking business there with his brother, Thomas Smith Jr., as a partner but later withdrew from it. This banking House has existed ever since and is now one of the larger banks of London, being known as Smith, Payne & Smith, Bankers.

Samuel Smith Sr. died in London 1751, his estate being almost wholly personal property.

Harry Tucker Easton in his book, "History of a Banking House", says that Samuel Smith Sr. died without leaving a will and his estate was divided among his six living children, each of them receiving 40,000 pounds sterling.

This run-away boy landed in Virginia and went to Wake County, N. C. We are not sure that he kept in touch with his parents or received any part of this rich estate. This young man's mind was saturated with the wonderful tales of the New World, like the description of ancient Palestine: "A land flowing with milk and honey, a land

filled with hills and valleys and drinketh water of heaven, a land which the Lord, thy God, careth for, the eyes of the Lord, thy God, are always upon it from the beginning to the end of the year". It was a land filled with bear, turkey, deer, geese, and ducks; a sportman's delight. The lakes, bays, and rivers abounded with fish. All of this was attractive to the impetuous youth of energy and determination. The ardor of the youthful lad of sixteen to try his fortune in the far way America won out, and beyond doubt he clandestinely left the roof-tree, stole aboard a ship, and sailed to the land of such great promise. He adventured the turbulent Atlantic about 1735, landed in Virginia, penetrated the forest wilds further south and located in the Province of North Carolina in the section afterwards known as Wake County. Here he married, raised a family and died. We know little of him, even by tradition, and less of his wife, not even her name.

It required four weeks, oftentimes eight weeks, and sometimes twelve weeks to cross the Atlantic Ocean in sailing ships. (Steamships were then unknown). It was a long, tedious, perilous, desperate undertaking for a landsman. Icebergs were common, four-fifths of them under water. They rose hundreds of feet out of the water and were so extensive as to appear in the distance like land, miles in extent as far as the eye could discern, often resembling the main-land, as the sun would cast its seamed, rugged sides and crevasses into light and shadow. The hundreds of little icebergs were very dangerous because they could not be seen even by careful sailors on the watch. The ship was liable to come in contact with them, impinge thereon and break to pieces, with the loss of the ship and all on board. We may, therefore, place him in the class of the courageous and daring to venture the dangerous, treacherous Atlantic in search of a new home.

He must have been a boy of great pluck and resolution to leave his father's home in London, his associates and his native land, to seek a home in America, all by himself, three thousand miles from his people. Boldness, spirit and valor must have predominated his youthful heart to enable him to penetrate the forest wilds and build his cabin in the forefront of American civilization, threatened both day and night with stealthy, hostile, murderous Indians. So also must we reckon a woman courageous, whose love and devotion as his wife, made her willing to follow the footsteps of her husband, John Smith, as

he pioneered into the wilderness to brave the hardships, the loneliness, the exposure. Harassing anxiety must have been hers, far from civilization to which she had been accustomed, while seeking to build a home in the primeval forest-wilds of the Province.

As we denominate the Emigrant, John Smith No. 1, in like manner the son born to them in the year 1740, we denominate John Smith No. 2. Under the tutelage of his brave, daring, energetic parents we can fancy John Smith No. 2 growing up to maturity, possessed with a robust constitution, unlimited energy, capable of untold perseverance and infinite endurance. His education, limited to the common schools of that day, embraced only the three "R's"—(reading, writing and arithmetic).

Tradition says he was a Patriot, and on Feb. 27th was engaged in the battle of Moore's Creek Bridge, fought by Colonel Alexander Lillington in command of the Patriot Army and General McDonald in command of the King's Forces. This fact rests upon tradition only, handed down from father to son, and at this late day is not susceptible to written proof. John Smith No. 1 was fifty-eight or sixty years old and beyond the age limit of military duty in the regular army but subject to militia organization. In that day, and during all the long years of the Revolution, the country was sparsely settled, with only little cabins, surrounded by clearings, here and there. The cultivation of these clearings supplied the family with necessities. These clearings increased as the owners were able to fell the forest. The larger the size, the more prosperous and successful the owner. There was no organized government and no provision made to provide, maintain and support the families of the Patriots while they were in service doing military duty. Every household had to provide for itself, and when not on a campaign against the Tories they were at home working their land. All were dependent on their daily labor for bread, clothing, and shoes. All able-bodied Patriots were incorporated into the militia, organized as a military body under officers, appointed as in the regular army, privileged to remain at home and engage in their ordinary occupations but subject to military duty at the call of the Captain of the Company and Colonel of the Regiment. When emergency arose the Captain would issue summons, appoint the place of rendezvous and John Smith No. 1 would shoulder "Old Betsy", as he affectionately called his long barrelled rifle, and march away to war. He supplied his own



powder, carried in a cow's horn, elegantly scraped and polished; his own ball, moulded of lead to fit his unerring rifle; his own haversack, made of the dressed skin of some wild animal, tanned with the fur on, and in his haversack, his supply of provisions. He kept his rifle (there were no shotguns in those days) high up on the wall of his cabin over the door-way, out of reach of the children. The rifle was supported by two forks made of the limbs of a tree nailed to the wall with wooden pegs. (No cut or wire nails were to be had in that day. The only iron nail was forged by hand in a blacksmith's shop.) On these forks were hung his powder-horn, his ball-bag, flints and haversack. His rifle was always loaded and primed ready for instant use against an Indian, a bear or a venomous snake. These long barrelled rifles, six feet and more, were very accurate, and it was a disgrace to shoot a squirrel anywhere but in the head at a distance of a hundred yards. His rifle was dear to his heart. He loved his gun for it was the protection of his family. Receiving a summons from his Captain, he would carefully inspect "Old Betsy", sling around his neck his powder-horn, ball-bag and haversack, all well supplied with the needful, commend his wife and children to the mercy of God and his faithful dog, and trudge away to the place appointed for the rendezvous. He would serve through the campaign of weeks, without enrollment and without remuneration. Their names, therefore, are not recorded and we are constrained to rely upon tradition as to their services. We do know that very much of history is but recorded tradition.

During the Revolution the Militia was frequently called out to serve in campaigns against the Tories, sometimes against the Indians, and in the years 1780-81, against the Regular British Army, (at Guilford Court House for instance). Sometimes they gained glorious victories, such as King's Mountain, in which battle Colonel Williams, Colonel McDowell, Colonel Cleveland, Colonel John Sevier, Colonel Campbell and a few other prominent leaders only are mentioned, while two or three thousand militia participated and served gloriously; yet not one of their names is recorded and they have passed into oblivion, unhonored but not unsung. The services of these thousands are traditional and tradition is history.

W. A. Smith  
The Oaks,  
Ansonville, N. C.

903 (See 503, 301-A)

### JOHN SMITH

John Smith No. 2 was born in Wake County in the Province of North Carolina, and moved to Anson County when a young man. He settled on Smith's Creek two and one half miles from the present town of Lilesville, the creek taking its name from his residence thereon. He was six feet in his stocking feet and every inch a man, strong, robust, courageous. He did not hesitate to pitch his tent in the lonely wilderness, trusting in his manhood, his unerring rifle and trusty dog, to cope successfully with poisonous snakes, with beasts and the sly, stealthy, murderous Indians.

With unabated vigor he plied his axe, and, day by day the forest fell before him. He cut the logs for his cabin, walked for miles to obtain the aid of his nearest neighbors, pioneers like himself, whose assistance was always ready and forthcoming in those days. He notched up his cabin logs, chinked the crevices with mud and left loop holes in the cracks for his trusty rifle. At one end he constructed a stick and dirt chimney. The back of the broad fire-place was lined with rock, no brick was to be had. They had to be brought from England as ballast to the ships coming to America. It would have been too expensive to have shipped them as cargo. Then, too, he was 150 to 200 miles from the coast—in a wilderness without roads, making it impossible to transport brick. His home built, he traveled around looking for a wife. He met his fate in fair and comely Mary Flake, the only daughter of Samuel Flake by his first wife. With her by his side, a helpmate indeed, the days and years passed in sunshine and shadow while they subdued the forest wilderness and added to his little clearing which grew into a field around their cabin home.

Affection, love, respect, confidence—this was the goddess that presided in their home. To them were born manly sons and buxom daughters (see genealogical table) to whom they gave such schooling as the limited opportunities permitted in this pioneer country. Their children, by example and precept, were taught to labor for a living with their own hands; to be true, just and upright; to fear God and keep his Commandments; to give others their respect and exact of others their dues.

By diligence they acquired sufficient property, as each child arrived of age, to give him a start in life. This section of country became more settled in the course of years;

neighbors, who became friends and companions, abounded.

Anson County was named for Admiral Lord Anson, the first Englishman to circumnavigate the globe in three years and nine months. In command of a fleet of warships, he defeated the French Admiral Jongmiere in 1747 off Cape Finisterre. The writer is now the owner and proud possessor of "Lord Anson's Voyage Around the World", a book bound in calf, printed in 1748, which is preserved in good condition in 1920.

The County of Anson was formed in 1749 and extended from New Hanover and Bladen Counties northward to the Virginia lines and westward to the Mississippi River, embracing all of Tennessee. No other people were more thoroughly aroused and determined in resistance to exactions of the King's officers and to opposition to the encroachments upon their privileges to which they were entitled under the Bill of Rights enacted in the reign of King Charles the First. Nearly 500 of these Ansonian Regulators assembled at the Court House in the year 1768, eight years before the Mecklenburg Resolutions (or Mecklenburg Declaration of Independence) to resist the exactions of the Court Officers. In defiance of the King's authority, in open rebellion, they entered the Court House while the Court was in session, violently expelled the Judge, the lawyers, officers of the Court and ordered them to cease their exorbitant exactions. On the following day they drew up a petition to Governor Tryon, the representative of the King, avowing their act, explaining the reasons therefore and declaring "that no people have a right to be taxed but by consent of themselves or their delegates." This proves that at that early day the great principle, "No representation, no taxation," was endorsed and understood by these people, and to the citizens of Anson County, our ancestors, belongs the honor of first promulgating this principle. In the same paper, presenting their grievances, they also recommend the election of Court Officers and magistrates by the people. Therefore, to Anson County, province of North Carolina, belongs the Democratic idea that rulers should be chosen by the people.

Gov. Tryon in response to this paper, Aug. 16, 1768, issued his proclamation "requiring all public officers to have a fair table of fees displayed in each office, and for them not to demand or receive other fees for the public business transacted in their offices than what was established by law." The name of John Smith does not appear as one of the signers of the petition but doubtless

he was numbered with the 500 men above mentioned who expelled the Court officers and who determined to do this by "force and to have persisted unto blood" as set out in the petition in their own words.

Only few men were present when the petition was drawn up and signed. The name of John Smith is not attached to the petition. He was probably one of the 400 who had returned to their homes for, in May, 1771, he is recorded as one of the Regulators who fought the King's forces in the battle of Alamance.

While laboring to make a home and support his wife and children, he looked forward to enjoying the fullest civil rights and religious freedom "to worship God according to the dictates of his own conscience", holding the creed that "Opposition to tyrants is in obedience to God." His mind was alert to the condition of his country. He saw with dismay the encroachment of the King's Government, the extortion of excessive taxes, the exactions of the officers of the Court, the venality of the judges and the miscarriage of justice.

In 1767, 1768, 1769 and 1770 he was a Regulator, numbered among those who protested against their grievances and petitioned for redress in vain. In May, 1771, three or four thousand had rendezvoused on the Eno River near Hillsborough. They had no ordnance, only armed with their hunter's rifle, powder-horn and hat bag. Their Commissary department consisted of a haversack, suspended around their neck. They had no military leader of experience to organize, drill and command them, no organization into companies, regiments, brigades or other units of an army. Indeed they were a disorderly crowd, more resembling a mob than an army, each man acting independently, but they were brave men, confident in the justice of their cause and did not hesitate to join battle with the King's forces at Alamance on the 16th day of May, 1771. The King's army was commanded by Governor Tryon, formerly a colonel in the British army; by Gen. John Waddell of Wilmington; by Col. John Hinton of Wake; John Ashe of New Hanover; Joseph Leach of Craven; Richard Caswell; William Thompson and Wendham Bryan with their regiments of infantry; Captain Moore with his battery of Artillery; Captain Neale of the Mounted Rangers, and a company of Light Horsemen under Captain Bullock. Organization was pitted against confusion; military leadership and capacity pitted against a mob. The battle of Alamance could have no other result

than defeat and rout. Many were killed, more wounded, scores made prisoners and hundreds escaped. At Alamance was shed the first blood of American patriots, the precursors of the Revolution.

Among the thousands who made their escape was John Smith No. 2. Acting upon the sentiment of the old couplet:

"He who fights and runs away,  
May live to fight another day."

This he did in the war of the Revolution, which came in 1775. Escaping at Alamance, he was not taken prisoner and forced to take the oath of allegiance to the King, and was free in 1775 to uphold his principles of "No representation, no taxation". He was free to maintain and fight for the right to choose his rulers, and for the Independence of his country. We know not the date of his enlistment but we do know he volunteered in the Continental Army of the province of North Carolina, a member of Captain John Allen's Company, 2nd N. C. Regiment.

A line drawn from the Roanoke River, where it runs into North Carolina out of Virginia, across the state or province of North Carolina to the point of exit of the Pee Dee River into South Carolina, represents a division of sentiment in 1767-1771. East of this line the people were loyal to the King and the British Government, west of this line—to the remotest settlements—they were almost unanimous in opposition to the King's prerogatives, and openly rebelled against paying extortionate taxes and exorbitant fees, the venal conduct of the judges and the miscarriage of justice. They assembled year after year and in these meetings drew up instruments of writing—complaining, remonstrating and petitioning Governor Tryon for redress of their grievances. Obtaining no relief, they formed themselves into a band, bound by most sacred obligations to preserve order and maintain justice. They pledged their lives and fortunes and sacred honor in behalf of "our privileges and liberties."

They elected committees of oversight (a model of the Committees of Safety during the Revolution) who were to resist extortion, arbitrary use of power in positions, distrait and maladministration, to preserve order, punish crimes, maintain justice and regulate the affairs of the country. Hence they were known and designated "Regulators". By this name they have honorable mention in the histories for they made North Carolina the Cradle of American Independence, attested by the battle of Alamance and the

Mecklenburg Declaration. The Regulators stood for the rights of man, and although crushed at Alamance, they rose in the Revolution for all time and for all mankind.

John Smith No. 2 helped to win the Freedom and Independence of the Thirteen Colonies, survived the war and returned to his home which had been robbed and pillaged in his absence; built again the fires on his hearthstone and spent the remainder of his days in the bosom of his family. He is buried in the graveyard near his residence, on land granted him by George III. The Patent is still readable, although yellow with age. It is in the possession of the Henry Family, his lineal descendants, who now own and live on said land which has been handed down from the original owners. This grant is on record in the office of the Register of Deeds in Wadesboro, the capital of Anson County, North Carolina.

For the above article on our noted ancestor, John Smith No. 2, we are indebted to General William Alexander Smith of Ansonville, North Carolina. The Mecklenburg Declaration of Independence was formulated at a public meeting at Charlotte, N. C., on May 25, 1775. The assembled people denounced the action of parliament, declared the tie of Great Britain severed, claimed colonial rights of independence, enjoined obedience to Colonial authority and invested the delegates and militia with authority to keep the peace. This was the first Declaration of Independence in our country. It had its growth in the county adjacent to where our ancestors lived and was the outgrowth of the order known as the Regulators, of which two of our ancestors were members. It was similar in tone to the Declaration of Independence at Philadelphia and was signed by twenty-seven of the brave patriots who attended that mass meeting. Had our histories in our schools been more universally written by southern writers, our children would have known more about this historical information which rightfully belongs to them.

W. Thomas Smith

904 (See 300, 301)

#### SAMUEL FLAKE

Samuel Flake, the emigrant and the progenitor of the large Flake families found in different sections in the South and the ancestor of many by the name of Smith, thought to have been born about 1700 or 1701, landed in Charlestown, now Charleston, S. C., in 1720. From there he journeyed west and pitched his tent in the frontier of the Province

of North Carolina, west of the great Pee Dee River, now known as Anson County. He is said to have been of Scotch-Irish parentage.

Anson County, erected in 1749, embraced all the Western section of the province of North Carolina, and by British claim extended to the Mississippi River. Substantially all the country was then inhabited by Indians and was territory of Great Britain only in name. Here, early, in this eastern section, Samuel Flake settled. He perhaps lived here for some years before title to the land could be obtained. He at length became a large land owner, receiving several tracts from his Majesty's Letters Patent and some tracts by purchase.

The attempt to conquer Scotland by English Kings, Edward the First, Second, Third and other kings, continued for more than 200 years, often ravaging the country with fire and sword, embittered the Scotch against the British. The ill-feeling now so prevalent among the Irish against England is not of recent date but only the re-opening of wounds, wrongs and imaginary wrongs, dating back for several centuries.

For these reasons we are not surprised to see him among the Regulators, as is shown by the Exhibits hereto attached. As tempting as the subject is, we cannot go at length into that matter in a book of this character, but if our readers will follow up our exhibits and obtain books of this insurrection, we feel sure you will be interested.

The tradition is that Samuel Flake was a Regulator and as such was in the battle of Alamance. He had petitioned for redress and with others said in part: "That the Province in general labors under grievances, and the Western part thereof under particular ones; which we not only see but very sensibly feel, being crushed beneath our sufferings, and not withstanding our sacred privileges, have too long yielded ourselves to remorseless oppression. Permit us to conceive it to be our duty, our individual right to make known our grievances and to petition for redress as appears in the Bill of Rights passed in the reign of Charles the First, as well as the Act of Settlement of the Crown of the Revolution (1688), we therefore beg leave to lay before you a specimen thereof that your compassionate endeavors may tend to the relief of your injured constituents, whose distressed condition calls aloud for aid. How relentless is the breast without sympathy, the heart that cannot bleed on a view of our calamity—to see tenderness removed, cruelty stepping in and all our liberties and privileges invaded and abridged". His son, Thomas Flake, as

shown by Exhibit F, was a most trustworthy Regulator and as such he had been selected by them as one of a committee to seek redress. Apparently it was accomplished, but the criminal is ever a deceiver. There is no doubt but that Samuel Flake would have been more active but he had even now approached the three score and ten years ordinarily allotted man to live. Things went from bad to worse. At length came the battle. May 16, 1771, the battle of Alamance in N. C., was the first battle of the Revolutionary war. Some three or four thousand Regulators were charged by Gov. Tryon with attempting to set up a separate government, and with twelve hundred trained troops he gave them battle. The Regulators were defeated. Many were killed. Many were wounded. Scores were captured. Many escaped. Thirty were dragged up and down the highways as a scarecrow to others. Six leaders were summarily tried, convicted, and thirty-three days after the battle were executed. Some five thousand citizens were required to take a new coined oath of allegiance or else be imprisoned or executed. Samuel Flake was among the captured, while his son-in-law, John Smith, was among those who escaped. Samuel Flake was required to take the new coined oath or be executed. In a way things now went on but wrongs were not righted.

The name of Tory was first given to the free-booter or outlawed Irish, who dwelt in the inaccessible boglands of Ireland, then to one of the great political parties (Whig-Tory) successors to the Cavalier party of the times of James the First. They later favored the elevation of the Duke of York, a Roman Catholic, to the throne. The name of Tory was applied to them by the Whigs, as a nickname, confusing them with the outlaws dwelling in the Irish Bogs. In the reign of James II the Tory party was the Court party and maintained the prerogatives of the Crown of divine right. In American history Tory was applied to those Royalists who adhered to the cause of British sovereignty. In 1776, the War of the Revolution was on. John Smith, the son-in-law of Samuel Flake, enlisted as a Patriot in the Regular army for the space of three years. Tradition is that William Flake, the son of Samuel Flake, was a Patriot and soldier in the War of the Revolution. Exhibit J and Exhibit K following hereafter speak for themselves and show where his son John Flake stood. Samuel Flake was now about seventy-five years old and a Presbyterian in faith. His will indicates he was a man of deep religious feeling. Being a man of deep religious convictions, this oath he

had been forced to take rested with a peculiar force on his conscience. Tradition is that his sympathies were with his son-in-law. Exhibit L following shows his decision:

One writer says: "Possibly no more two facts in American history have been more doubted and discussed, and as a consequence of that discussion, more clearly and indisputably proved, than that the Battle of Alamance was the first battle, and here the first blood was shed; and that the Mecklenburg Declaration of Independence was the forerunner of the American Revolution. The blood shed at Alamance made possible the Declaration of Mecklenburgers. However, just as there were during the War of the Roses patriotic Englishmen who sided with the House of York, while others were allied with the House of Lancaster; as during the Protectorate there were patriots among the Roundheads as well as among the Cavaliers; so during the Revolution there were some good men who believed in Toryism and sided with England, while other good men became Whigs and opposed the English."

As Governor Richard Caswell read Exhibit L, hereinafter found, we wonder what thoughts came to his mind; for as Col. Richard Caswell he had joined Gov. Tryon in 1771 and had rendered good assistance in the battle of Alamance and was in part responsible for Samuel Flake now finding himself in the position where he had to commit what he thought a crime in the taking of a new oath and thus laying violence on what he had been compelled to swear, or else leave his country or go to prison. Samuel Flake was released from jail upon his own recognizance, promising to appear at stated intervals in testimony of non-partisanship. His conscientious scruples were respected and he finally became esteemed for his adherence to his convictions as to the sanctity of an oath once taken, even if under force. His sons and daughters comingle their blood by affiance and marriage with the first rank in patriotism, wealth and position, property and intelligence, and his descendants rank with the foremost and best of the land.

He made his will May 5, 1802, and he died a model of Christian conscientiousness and is buried on Smith's Creek, resting in the bosom of his homestead, the land of his heart's love. The life and career of Samuel Flake should be an inspiration to his descendants. Firm in his convictions, he bore calumny without flinching and contumely with contempt. Loving his home with filial devotion he refused to leave it at the behest of authority, and lived to be centenarian, respected and

honored. In North Carolina History he goes down as a Tory. Col. Richard Caswell goes down as Gov. Caswell, a Patriot.

### Exhibit A

North Carolina Gazette, Nov. 20, 1765, gives an account of five hundred men who gathered together, exhibited the effigy of an unnamed person and hung it by the neck because he was in favor of the Stamp Duty.

### Exhibit B

August 1766. Regulators' advertisement appears calling a meeting to "inquire whether the free men of this country labor under abuses of power or not".

### Exhibit C

Regulators' advertisement No. 2. A committee had been appointed to look into taxes, on Aug. 29, 1766.

### Exhibit D

Regulators' advertisement No. 4 asserts they would no longer pay other than lawful fees and taxes.

### Exhibit E

Oct. 9, 1769. A petition by Samuel Flake, John Smith and 218 other Regulators from Anson County protests in general about the way the government was run and asks for remedial legislation.

### Exhibit F

Book 8, page 521, North Carolina Colonial Records: "We the subscribers, officers of Rowan County, now met at Mr. Steels with a committee of the People, called Regulators, now assembled at a meeting for a Redress of Grievances as to officers and fees and disputes, towit; Messrs. James Hunter, John Inyerd, Wm. Wilburn, Thos. Flake, John Curry, James Wilson, Sam Waggoner, Daniel Gillespie, Jas. Graham, Henry Wade, Peter Julian, Jerihiah Fields, John Vickery, Sam Jones, and Joshua Teague, to receive such proposals as shall be offered by the several officers for the approbation o. the people." The officers then agree to pay back and restore all money unlawfully collected and to leave all future controversies to a committee rather than the Courts. The Thomas Flake above, one of the Committee appointed by the Regulators, was the son of Samuel Flake.

### Exhibit G

Regulator's Oath: "I..... do promise and swear that if any sheriff,



county officer, or any other person shall attempt to collect taxes unlawfully levied, or make distress on any of the goods or chattels or other estate of any person sworn herein, being a subscriber, for the non-payment of said unlawful tax, that I will, with the aid of other sufficient help, go and take, if in my power, from said officer, and return to the party from whom taken; and in case any concerned should be imprisoned, or under arrest, or otherwise be confined, or if his estate, or any part thereof, by reason or meaning of joining this company of Regulators, for refusing to comply with the extortionate demands of unlawful tax gatherers, that I will immediately exert my best endeavors to raise as many of said subscribers as will be force sufficient and if in my power, I will set at liberty; and I do further promise and swear that if, in case this, our scheme, should be broken, or otherwise fail, and should any of our company be put to expense or under confinement, that I will bear an equal share in payment and making up said loss to the subscriber. All these things, I do promise and swear to do and perform, and hereby subscribe my name."

#### Exhibit H

A part of the complaints in the communication Samuel Flake and others sent from Anson County was:

"That the poor inhabitants in general are much oppressed by reason of disproportionate Taxes.

That lawyers, clerks and other petitioners, in place of being obsequious servants for the country's use, are become a nuisance, as the business of the people is often transacted without the least degree of fairness, the intention of the law invaded, exorbitant fees extorted, and sufferers left to mourn under their oppression.

That an attorney should have the right to commence a suit where he pleases, however inconvenient to the Defendant, is an oppression.

That lawyers, clerks, and others, extorting more fees than is intended by law is an oppression.

That at all elections each suffrage should be given by Ticket and Ballot."

These were only a few of the many complaints and demands for reformation in government management. Be it not forgotten that in those days, officials were not elected by the people, but appointed; and most frequently one who obtained an office, we are informed, paid a higher official for the appointment.

#### Exhibit I

"Some Neglected History of North Carolina," by Dr. William Edward Fitch, published in 1905, is a very interesting history of the North Carolina Regulators. Dr. Fitch at that time was Editor of "Southern Medicine", Savannah, Georgia. The book can most likely be found, if at all, in the second-hand book stores in the larger cities. That is, these dealers are the most likely ones to find a copy for one who wishes it. The Regulators, receiving no redress from those in charge, at length entered the court house at Hillsborough and whipped some of those most guilty of flagrant abuses. Judge Henderson escaped under cover of darkness. The Regulators took charge of the books and proceeded to hold a farcical Court, elected Francis Yorke a school teacher, as Judge and compelled Edward Fanning, the King's prosecuting Attorney, to plead law in his official capacity, and the school teacher dismissed a number of cases.

#### Exhibit J

In book 13, page 150, during the Revolutionary War, we find John Flake of Anson County, N. C., signing a petition to Gov. Richard Caswell, protesting that an election in Captain Wilson's company had been held with due regularity and men elected to serve as soldiers in the Continental Battalions raised by the State and that the commanding officer had unlawfully set aside the election and appointed him and others in the place of those duly elected. This seems positive proof that John Flake was in the Continental Army and he is thought to have been a son of Samuel Flake, and to have died without issue.

#### Exhibit K

South Carolina Records; Historical. State Capitol, Columbia. "Stub book for receipt given for services to those who did services during the Revolution.

No. 595. I paid the 25th of July, 1785, to John Flake, four pounds five shilling and eight pence for Militia Duty per account and item Principal L 4 . 5 . 3 annual Interest L O M . 5 . 11 No. 50 Bill State of S. Carolina. Dr. to John Flake for Duty to Col. Anderson return Stg 4 . 5 . : 8/2 L 30.

End. No. 50 V 595 Jul. Mr. John Flake his acct. Militia Duty as Private previous to the reduction of Charleston".

We are informed by the custodian of these records that the place where most likely, from the return, these services were rendered

was about 150 miles Southwest of Anson County. We do not find any Flake family in South Carolina and are of the opinion that this John Flake was the son of Samuel Flake.

### Exhibit L

Colonial Records of N.C., Book 11, page 655,  
"To Governor Richard Caswell:

Anson, October 17th., 177

Sir:

We are sorry that we are necessitated to acquaint your Excellency that there are many disaffected persons in our County, some of whom we have caused to be cited agreeable to the Act of Assembly in that case made and provided, and in consequence of the refusal of James Chile, Jacob Williams, William Yaw, William Bennett and Samuel Flake, to take the oath prescribed by said act and their refusing to give security for their departure to Europe and the West Indies in sixty days, the Court committed them to jail, and have also issued warrants to apprehend a number of other disaffected persons who have been cited for the same purpose to appear at Court—Our jail is much too small to contain those we are constrained to commit, and the District court being still further from seashore, makes it necessary for us to apply to your Excellency for your immediate instructions how to proceed. We have the honor to be your Excellency's most humble servants. Chas. Medlock, Thos. Wade, Jam. Auld, Hy Wm. Harrington, Wm. Huske."

In 1825, we think it was, Congress appropriated money and under the direction of Peter Force there were gathered together in six or seven very large books, and matter printed in small style in column as in newspaper style, everything in the way of letter, documents and printed matter that then could be located as to the Revolutionary War. I find in these books much interesting matter, as it gives both sides of the story. The Revolution was not a one sided affair. Mr. Force was very kind in the publication of these matters, for in those documents emanating from a Tory or one in sympathy with the Tory, he most kindly forgot to publish names, lest it might give heart burns to some descendant. Had he been less generous and published all names, we think that there would now be few members of the Daughters of the Revolution who, in tracing their ancestry back, could find in this book the name of some who were of the Tory persuasion.

In the preparation of this article, we have

taken the liberty to quote verbatim at times very copiously from an article written by General W. A. Smith of Ansonville, N. C.

W. Thos. Smith

### 905

#### THE MECKLENBURG DECLARATION OF INDEPENDENCE, DECLARED AT CHARLOTTE, N. C. 20TH OF MAY, 1775

1. Resolved: That whosoever directly or indirectly abets, or in any way, form, or manner countenances the unchartered and dangerous invasion of our rights, as claimed by Great Britain is an enemy to this country—to America—and to the inherent and inalienable rights of man.

2. Resolved: That we do hereby declare ourselves a free and independent people; are, and of right ought to be sovereign and self-governing association, under the control of no power, other than that of our God and the general government of the Congress, to the maintenance of which independence we solemnly pledge to each other mutual co-operation—our lives, our fortunes and our most sacred honor.

3. Resolved: That as we acknowledge the existence and control of no law or legal officer, civil or military, within this country, we do hereby ordain and adopt as a rule of life all, each, and every of our former laws, wherein, nevertheless, the crown of Great Britain never can be considered as holding rights, privileges, or authorities therein.

4. Resolved: That all, each, and every military officer in this county is hereby reinstated in his former command and authority, he acting conformably to their regulations. And that every member present of this delegation, shall henceforth be a civil officer, viz: a justice of the peace, in the character of a committee man, to issue process, hear, and determine all matters of controversy, according to said adopted laws, and to preserve peace, union, and harmony in said county, to use every exertion to spread the love of country and fire of freedom throughout America, until a more general and organized government be established in this province. Abraham Alexander, Chairman; John McKnitt Alexander, Secretary; Ephraim Brevard, Hezekiah J. Balch, John Phifer, James Harris, William Kennob, John Ford, Richard Barry, Henry Downe, Ezra Alexander, William Graham, John Queary, Hezekiah Alexander, Adam Alexander, Charles Alexander,

Zaccheus Wilson, Waightstill Avery, Benjamin Patton, Matthew McClure, Neil Morrison, Robert Irvin, John Flennigin, David Reese, John Davidson, Richard Harris, Thomas Polk Sr.

### 906 (See 750-E)

The State of North Carolina,  
Anson County.

Before me, B. R. Wall, a notary public of Anson County, and State of North Carolina, on this day, personally appeared Mrs. Mary F. Lindsay, who being first duly sworn and known to me to be a credible person says from oath: "I was born on Nov. 22, A. D. 1823, in Anson County, State of North Carolina, and have ever since resided therein. I remember grandmother whose name before her marriage was Mary Flake and she married my grandfather, John Smith. They settled on Smith Creek. They had six sons, John Smith, Tom Smith, Jesse Smith, Samuel Smith, Jas. Smith and Eli Smith, and one daughter, Sarah Smith, who married Geo. Lindsay.

They all settled near together on Smith Creek, Savannah and Cedar Creek in said County and State. James Smith settled at his home on the Stanback Ferry Road about five miles north of Lilesville, where his grand-daughter, Mrs. Fannie McGregor, now resides. They had already settled at this place as far back as I can remember. They said Samuel Smith was my father, and I was born on the place which he settled; have never resided further than three miles from my father's place. James Smith married Mary Gathings. They had a daughter Ellen, who married Winfree Meachum. I saw them married at her father's, Jim Smith's, old homestead. I don't remember the exact date, but it was a long time ago. I went to school to Winfree Meachum and I know he was the same man who married my first cousin, Ellen Meachum. Winfree Meachum's father's name was Wm. Meachum, who resided near Lilesville, Anson County, N. C. Winfree Meachum and his wife, Mrs. Ellen Meachum, left this county before the Confederate War and went to Texas. John Smith's wife was named Mary Bellew and they lived then at their home near Olivet Church all their life time. He was the son of the John Smith first mentioned, and his wife was always called "Aunt Polly". John Smith's son, Tom, married Jane—— but I don't know her surname. His son, Jesse, married Mary Seago. His son, Samuel, (witness' father) married Margaret Hutchinson. His son, Eli Smith, married Sarah

Mix. His daughter, Sarah Smith, married George Lindsay. His son, Jesse Lindsay, married the witness, Miss Mary Flake.

——Smith, daughter of Samuel Smith, we being first cousins. My uncle, James Smith, and his wife, Mary Smith, the father and mother of Mrs. Ellen Meachum, the wife of Winfree Meachum, are buried at the family graveyard near his residence where Mrs. Fanny McGregor now resides as I have already stated.

John Smith Sr., and their six sons above named and one daughter were among the earliest settlers of this country; but it has been a long time ago and I can't remember the dates. My grandfather, John Smith, and old Mr. Livingstone, were the oldest settlers in this neighborhood that I ever heard of, and old Mr. Livingstone has been dead over seventy years and my grandfather died before he died, but I don't know how long before Mr. Livingstone died. I never saw Winfree Meachum or his wife, Ellen Meachum, or any of their children until Mr. John D. McGregor, the son of Mrs. Fanny McGregor, introduced his cousin Wm. Winfree Meachum to me on yesterday. I sign by my mark, because on account of my great age and infirmities I cannot now write my name.

Mrs. Mary F. Lindsay  
Her Mark (X)

Attest:  
Mary Welsh  
Wm. Winfree Meachum.

S. B. B. Wall, N. P. in and for Anson County, State of North Carolina, do hereby certify that the witness, Mrs. Mary F. Lindsay, subscribed and swore to the above statement which was reduced to writing in my presence including the word Livingstone, which word was interlined before she signed the same.

The above was signed and sealed by B. R. Wall on 11th day of August, 1910.

### 907 (See 6001)

#### JOHN SMITH NO. 3

John Smith No. 3 was the son of John Smith No. 2 and Mary Flake Smith, his wife, (1772-1854) married Mary Bellview (Bellew) (1775-1872). Approachable and cordial, he was familiarly called Jack by his contemporaries, and Uncle Jacky by younger people. Reared on the farm on Smith's Creek, near Lilesville in Anson County, N. C., his education was limited to the common schools of the country. He was five feet and eleven inches high, of medium weight and light

build, active and energetic. At four score he could jump ditches three and four feet wide. Merchandising and farming, running cotton gins and grist mills were his occupation. The most financially successful of all the Smith family, he added tract of land to tract of land and negro to negro until he was easily the largest landowner in the county and owned more slaves than any other person in Anson or adjoining counties. He was also the largest stockholder in the Bank of Wadesborough. For many years he was an active Justice of the Peace. The office in his day carried the respect given it as handed down from the old English landlords-proprietors. In that day a Magistrate must be a gentleman of substance, intelligence and discretion, for the officer must decide many causes of differences, the higher courts being held at long intervals. As a Magistrate and Judge he must give judgment against the plaintiff or defendant one or the other in every case. He regarded the office as a public trust and held the scales of justice with equipoise. His reasoning faculties were so potent and convincing that he rarely failed to indicate his decision to the satisfaction of the losing party.

He was elected and served as a member of the House of Representatives in 1825. He was re-elected in 1826, but declined to serve longer. Many of the members of the Legislature thought patriotism consisted in opposition to anything new, especially when the proposition required the expenditure of money. The subject of State aid to railroads was before the House. They were unknown and untried, but the subject of our sketch believed in the future of his state and desired its material prosperity. Progressive in the conduct of his private business, he was favorable to any move portending to the welfare, uplift and benefit of the state, and was found among the advocates of the measure. He had never seen a railroad engine, car or track—was totally ignorant of their construction, yet in his speech in favor thereof, became so enthusiastic, he offered of his own private means to donate one hundred thousand rails toward it. One can laugh now at the old gentleman's ignorance but we must admire his progressive generous spirit. His residence was commodious, situated on the public highway leading from the county seat of Anson to the county seat of Montgomery. Known as the "White House" because it was the first painted house in this section, it was noted for hospitality. No stranger seeking entertainment was refused. His wife was Mary Belliew, (sometimes spelled

Belliew, Bel'ew, Bellue) of French extraction. She was raised in that section of the county, now known as Horne's School House, some two or three miles from Pee Dee River. Her father was a gentleman of substance, owning land on Flatfork Creek, Cedar Creek, Brown Creek and other lands besides. She brought to her husband a handsome wedding dot. With a fair face, pearly teeth, raven hair, blue eyes and elegant form, she was a picture of health and beauty. Skilled in all domestic arts, she told the writer that she worked with her own hands the cotton of which her wedding gown was made, twisted the lint from the seed, (Eli Whitney had not invented the cotton gin, and a pound of lint a day was considered a day's work) spun the lint into thread and wove it into cloth so fine it could be rolled and drawn through her thimble. With her small, shapely hands and long tapering fingers she wrought dainty needlework for her house. She was a good housekeeper and kind to her servants. Her butler, maids and cooks looked to her guiding hand with affection and reverence. Her wish was their law, because they loved their mistress. When she came to choose her slaves given her by will, one and all said, "Please Mistis take me". After Emancipation, in the dark and dreadful days of Reconstruction, many of them abided with their mistress and shared in her adversity as they had shared in the halcyon day of prosperity. She survived her husband many years, living her 97 years with mind active and interested in affairs, and memory unclouded. Her recollections of her youthful days in the Revolution and incidents told her by her mother were clear and distinct. When a baby, her mother to aid in the work, would carry her to the field, lay her in the shade of a tree and while chopping back and forth leave her in the care of a large dog, a mixture of the mastiff and terrier. One day her mother was distant about one hundred yards when the dog left his charge and came to her. She said to him, "Go back to my baby". The dog obediently went. In a few minutes the dog came back. Again she scolded the dog and ordered it back. He reluctantly started but turned and looking at her, whimpered and whined. Assured that something must be wrong she hastily followed the dog to find a large, poisonous snake lying beside her baby. She stole quietly to the other side and snatched her baby up. "That was me," she smilingly said. The dog then seized the snake and shook it to death. The shaking was so violent, the concussion of the snake's large body against the dog's head bruised it so

badly, the swelling closed the dog's eyes for several days. She also related to the writer the following incident of the Revolution: The Captain of the Patriots Company, of which her father was a member, assembled his company and crossed the Pee Dee River to repel an advance of Tories from Cumberland County. While away on this expedition the Tories made a foray into Anson County from South Carolina, came to her home, took the horses, drove off the cows, robbed the house and pillaged the premises, carrying away her wash-pot. The loss of the pot seemed to grieve her more than the loss of the stock for it was impossible to procure another from England while the war continued (there was no foundry in the Provinces) and she had no vessel which she could substitute in which she could boil the weekly wash.

John Smith and his wife were loyal members of the Methodist Church and when the Southern Methodists separated from the parent church in 1845 on the question of slavery, they went with and affiliated with the M. E. Church South. He gave the land and material aid toward the building of Olivet Church, located in a beautiful grove not far from his residence. My father related the following incident, but I do not remember that he said it occurred at Olivet Church. The Methodists had a week day appointment. It rained hard and unremittedly. Only the minister arrived. Later a hunter sought refuge in the church from the rain. The minister spent the night with one of his flock. Said his host, "You surely had no congregation?" "Didn't I? Let me tell you the house was full of the Spirit of God and it was the best meeting I ever had, for every sinner in the house was converted and every Christian got happy."

John Smith and his wife were both generous contributors to the various needs of the

Church. Both were life members of the Missionary Society, evidenced by parchment, framed and preserved to this day.

He died in 1854 and was laid to rest, amid the tears of his slaves and the grief-stricken hearts of children and friends, in the Smith and Nelme graveyard, five miles east of Wadesboro—God's Acre—inclosed by a hedge of cedar, planted by Presley Nelme, which was kept neatly and artistically trimmed during his life but by neglect, to our shame, is now grown into a hedge of large trees. By his will he made ample provision for his wife, bequeathing his residence and its contents to her. The residence was surrounded by 2000 or more acres of land, and the personal property consisted of stock, tools, wagons, carriage, a year's supply of food and fifty negroes of her own choice. She looked well to the ways of her household and now rests from her labors by his side awaiting the Resurrection morn.

"On that happy Easter morn'g  
All the graves their dead restore,  
Father, child and Mother,  
Meet once more."

By his contemporaries, John Smith No.3 was esteemed and reckoned the head of the Smith family, attaining that position by active business pursuits, guided by an intelligent brain full of good, hard horse sense, combined with zeal, energy, foresight and economy (not parsimony), and the spirit of improvement, betterment and progress. A commercial agent endeavored to sell a plow, a new invention to one of his neighbor farmers. After thorough examination and many questions answered, he finally said to the agent, "Go sell one to Jack Smith, if it proves all right then I'll buy one."

Wm. A. Smith





Eliza Sydnor Nelme Smith



Col. Wm. Gaston Smith

908 (See 619)

## WM. GASTON SMITH

William Gaston Smith (1802-1879) was the birthright son of John Smith No. 3 and Mary Bellew, his wife.

This brief sketch is written by his son, Wm. Alexander Smith.

My father's youth was spent on the farm, laboring and superintending. He was educated in private schools known as subscription schools. Gentlemen taught school for a living and as a profession. They visited house after house in a neighborhood soliciting pupils, and the parent would subscribe for one or more students or scholars—hence the name Subscription Schools. Often the teacher was a polished, highly-educated gentleman, graduate of a school, capable and qualified to teach the Ancient languages, Latin and Greek and the higher mathematics. In such a school, Wm. G. Smith was educated. He studied surveying, combining the technique with the practical, by surveying the lands of his father and others.

He grew to be six feet high, broad, square-shouldered, with erect military carriage, elegant in person, manly and handsome. Courteous and active, he was fond of the dance; his delight was "to dance all night till broad

daylight and go home with the girls in the morning."

At the early age of 23 years he was chosen Colonel of the Anson County Regiment of Militia, the National Guard of the State. Anson County contains 460 square miles, and this territory was under his command. The regiment consisted of eight companies, composed of every able-bodied man from 21 to 45 years. Each company was commanded by a captain and his subordinate officers, and, by law, they assembled every 4th Saturday at their voting place to drill. All of the Companies assembled for regimental drill, subject to the orders of the Colonel as to time and place. He attended the meeting of the companies, inspected their arms and accoutrements and taught them military tactics. He held this important position in 1831, when the rising of the negroes, better known as the Nat Turner Rebellion occurred. Nat Turner was a slave in Southampton Co., Va. He claimed to be the Divinely appointed agent or leader of his people to freedom and, persuaded six others to join him. They went from plantation to plantation, killing and murdering, sparing neither age nor sex. Fifty-six victims were slaughtered before the rebellion was crushed. Nat Turner and his associates were tried, condemned and ex-

ecuted. Information of the contemplated rising was disseminated throughout the state. Col. Smith ordered his captains to assemble their companies, fully equipped with arms, accoutrements and fifty rounds of ammunition, and hold them ready for any emergency. The night set for the rebellion he rode from precinct to precinct to find his orders had been obeyed to the letter. He found each company held under arms, vigilant, active and ready. The night passed quietly as usual. There was no commotion, no sign, no disturbance. The negroes all peacefully slept in their quarters. Everywhere quiet, peace and contentment reigned. The Nat Turner Rebellion was confined to Southampton County, Va., where he lived. It was a purely local affair.

Col. Smith was fortunate in gaining the affections of Miss Eliza Sydnor Nelme, the daughter of Presley Nelme and his wife, Ann Montgomery Ingram. (See the genealogical table of the Nelme family). He was married Sept. 29th, 1831 at the age of 29 and she had just passed her 17th birthday. He waited for his best girl several years and she was worth waiting for. She was a lady of unusual charm, highly cultured, and a graduate of the famous Salem Academy, now Salem College. Salem Academy, the oldest institution for girls in the State, was founded in 1802 and has maintained its high renown for all the years of the 19th century. Miss Nelme was high-bred, having the culture of ages behind her, being descended from the Lords of the Marches in Scotland. Aristocratic to the core, she disdained ironstone granite crockery. Haviland china, cut glass and silver graced her table and she was the graceful, accomplished hostess. She was five feet four inches tall, petite, (wearing a number one boot with high instep the hall-mark of high-bred ancestry) and she possessed an elegant form, crowned with a shapely head adorned with rich auburn curly hair. She wore her natural curls all during life. She never used curling irons. Possessing grace and ease of manner acquired only by generations of lordly forbears, clever and fascinating and beautiful as the morning she was the cynosure of all drawing rooms. Tho delicately reared, dainty and tender, it is worthy of note that after the birth of her children she arose and ministered to their wants. She did not spend two or more weeks in bed and have a trained nurse in attendance.

She was an elegant performer on the piano, owning the first piano brought to the country. She took music lessons in the early days, in the long ago, when she had to copy the notes

and words of her pieces. She possessed the softest, sweetest touch of the ivories the writer ever heard and her voice was modulated like the sound of a perfectly tuned instrument as she played her own accompaniment and sang the airs of her ancestral country.

She came of a musical family, her three brothers being expert and artistic violinists. Private concerts, with the first, second and third violins of her brothers, the flute of her husband and her piano, were famous throughout the country. Such concerts were gladly attended by all who had the entry to this select circle. She was an ideal hostess, giving her attention and herself to her guests; seeing that they lacked no comfort was her pleasure. Her chambermaid and dining room waitress were trained for order, neatness and dexterity. The chambermaid, Betsy, was fastidious, clean and artistic. She could make the old time feather bed square cornered and straight as a boxed mattress of today. Her dining room girl would arrange the table according to the number of guests and supply it with china, glass, silver and table napkins, all in perfect order without her mistress' supervision. Likewise her head cook, Jemima (Minie) was so competent, skilful and reliable, it was unnecessary for her mistress to plan the meals and supervise the preparation. She would usher her guests into the dining room with confidence, knowing the menu and quantity would be satisfactory and adequate, a credit to the house and hostess. This was in the happy, halcyon days of the old regime in the South. There is nothing like it in the world today. Those days are gone never to return. Her servants delighted to please her "for the love they had for her". She was opposed to slavery. Often has the writer heard her say, "I am the slave to my negroes, not they to me". "I would not own one but they were given me by my parents and I must look after their welfare; nurse them in sickness; properly clothe them and teach them the catechism and the worship of the true God. I have seen her hands blistered with toil laboring for them. They repaid her with loving obedience and affection amounting to almost worship. After emancipation, her former slaves would come for assistance, food, clothes, medicine, etc., to be given the welcome hand, and in her poverty, the generous hand to divide the last loaf she had, for she loved every one of them.

In the days of prevalent, raging typhoid in Carolina Female College, hers was the hand that ministered to the sick day and night; hers the fingers that closed the eyes of the dying amid tears of her sorrowing heart,

she the one who kissed them farewell for their absent mothers.

She was truly a woman of unaffected piety. It was her habit, daily, to retire to her closet for secret communion with God. "When thou prayest enter into thy closet and when thou hast shut the door, pray to thy Father who is in secret and thy Father who seeth in secret shall reward thee openly". Universally lamented by rich and poor, white and colored, she passed to the glorious Elysian fields, January 11, 1863.

When Col. Smith was 35 years old he had a severe case of Plegmasia-Dolens, commonly termed White-swelling, which dislocated his hip joint and shortened his left leg about two inches. For the remainder of life he walked "up and down". However, he did not lose his energy and perseverance. Humorous young John Wheeless wittily said, "Col. Smith had many ups and downs in life to be so successful". He conserved the large property in lands and negroes inherited from his father and added to them—all to be swept away by the disastrous termination of the Confederate War. He had three large tracts on Pee Dee River and was land poor. He could not sell same or any part thereof to meet his necessities. There was no sale for land. No one was able to buy it.

He was opposed to secession. He believed in fighting for our Constitutional rights, but in fighting in the Union, "neath the folds of Old Glory. Then the North would not have had the forceful, convincing slogans, "The Union is in danger," "The Union is in peril" and "Save the Union". This all-compelling, winning cry filled again and again the ranks of the Federal Army, depleted by the valor and heroism of the sons of the South. His three boys were enrolled in the service of the Confederacy. After Appomattox a Convention was called to change the Constitution, the fundamental law of the state. All eyes turned to the foremost citizens of the county: Thos. S. Ashe, Senator in the Confederate Congress and Col. Wm. G. Smith, Chairman of the County Court. The state records will show his services in the Convention. The County Court consisted of three judges. A prominent attorney practising in this Court said, "The court consisted of the Chairman and two ciphers." Another prominent citizen remarked, "Col. Smith has the sense of the whole Smith family." This remark was made after many of the Smiths had gone westward to Miss., Ark. and Texas and were unknown to the exaggerator.

Carolina Female College, located in Ansonville, was chartered in 1850. Col. Smith was

made Chairman of the Board of Trustees. The institution thrived and prospered under his guiding hand until it became necessary to add a large wing to the building with chapel and dormitories.

As a magistrate he administered the law for years, winning the esteem and confidence of the people in his judgment and sound discretion. In all assemblies, when present, he was chosen Chairman of the meeting; ruling with intelligence, impartiality and discretion. As the widow's friend, many the sack of flour and ham of meat was their portion.

Liberal and free-hearted, noted as a host, his mansion was always open to acquaintances and friends and kinsfolk. Often pallets were laid that the overflow of guests might be better accommodated. All were made welcome. No stranger, applying for a night's entertainment, was turned away, nor permitted to pay as a lodger, but was treated as a guest. He was kind to his slaves, whom he regarded and treated as members of his family, as they were, in fact. He employed a physician by the year. He gave the medicine prescribed every hour or every two hours himself, for he could not rust the sleepy-headed darkey who stood watch, he himself waking within five minutes of the hour and sleeping soundly during the intervals.

On suitable occasions, he would descend from his usual grave, dignified bearing and tell anecdotes, to the delight of his hearers; telling them well and felicitously, making them all the more pointed and enjoyable by acting them during the recital. A bevy of young ladies one "All Fools' Day", April 1st, asked him the origin of the day. In reply he said, "It is a very old practice to play practical jokes on this day and for a full explanation I will refer you to the second chapter of Obadiah, one of the Minor Prophets in the 'Book of Books'". He was fond of stories, relating incidents of his youthful days with animation and vividness. While riding with him one day near the Grassly Islands, the tramping ground of his youth, he pointed out a pond of water, where a number of hunters had gathered with their rifles (shot guns had not been invented). In the pond were two dabchicks, commonly called Didappers. The first proposition was that the boy who shot and failed to kill must treat the crowd. Several shot, all missed. The second proposition was that he who shot and killed should be treated by the crowd. Quite a number tried their skill and missed. The dabchicks giving at the flash of the powder in the pan of the rifle, caused the boys to miss.

Continuing he said, "After consideration I came to the conclusion that the time to fire was the moment the bird came from under the water. One could see the ruffle just before it rose out of the water, and the ball would reach the bird before it had time to dive again. Closely observing the course of the bird, I trained my gun on the ruffle and at the right moment fired. To my surprise and astonishment, I killed both dabchicks. I saw the ruffle of one only. They must have dived from opposite directions and rose together at the moment I fired. It would not occur again in a thousand years. The treat given me was a barbecued ox." He was good company, a genial companion, versed in the topics of the day and with a fund of anecdotes, he entertained by the hours. He was fond of relating incidents occurring at regimental maneuvers. Among many others, he said: "As soon as the regiment was disbanded, some one would call out, 'I can throw any man South of Wadesboro'. 'Here's your man'. With coats off they toed the mark within the ring made by the onlookers, gathered around to see the contest.

Each at once fair hold he took  
And felt the strength as he shook  
The body of his opponent.  
The wrestlers tried every feint and guard  
Before they fell upon the sward  
They tug; they strain; down, down they go  
One above, the other below.

Again one would shout, "I can whip any man North of the Standback Ferry Road". "You're a d—n liar!" At it they would go. They used no weapons. It was just a plain, open-handed, fair, fistcuff fight until one would cry, "Hold—enough." Friends before the fray, friends afterward. No animosity disturbed their waking thoughts nor sleeping dreams. He was a sportsman from his youth, yet he was conservative, not allowing sport to conflict with his duties to business or society. After his affliction, not to be deprived of the hunter's pleasure, he rode a side saddle made to order for the right side of the horse, which he had trained to stand quiet at the report of his gun. This same saddle, his son (likewise a cripple for

life in the left leg) rode while fox hunting. It is remarkable that his, son named for him, and every grandchild named for him are all cripples for life. Now what do you think of that? Like Sir Isaac Newton, he took delight in catching fish with hook and line.

When the wind is in the North, the fish to bite are loath. When the wind is in the South, it blows the bait in the fishes' mouth. When the wind is in the East, the fish bite the least. When the wind is in the West, the fish bite the best. His experience proved the accuracy of Sir Isaac's lines. He ran a seine for shad, shad fishery, on one of his river plantations. He spun the cotton into thread; of the thread he made twine and knitted his own seine. Often he said, "The shad is the best fish in the world, and the Pee Dee River shad is better than the shad caught out of other rivers." In those days of plenty and abundance, a shad weighing 5 to 9 pounds sold for 5 to 8 cents, the price of a pound of bacon. The exchange price being a pound of bacon. Col. Smith followed all his life the skill of the planter and honored his calling, thriving from the abundance of his crops and the increase of his well-cared-for slaves, for whom he amply provided. His slaves were the most contented, happiest people in the world.

For long years he was a member of the M. E. Church South, and the architect of the church in the village of Ansonville, a church stately, imposing and impressive, with handsome front of Doric columns. Cut from his own forest and sawed in his own mill, was the long-leaf yellow pine lumber used in the building. There was not a knot in the weather-boarding, floor or facings. No imperfection was permitted in the building dedicated to the worship of the Most High God.

He crossed the Great Divide, Sept. 5th, 1879. His last words were, "I want to go home". He sleeps in the Smith and Nelme Cemetery; his dust commingling with hallowed dust of his fore-fathers. We pay tribute to him as MODEST, MODERATE, MORAL, MODEL.

Wm. A. Smith



William Alexander Smith

909 (See 631)

## WILLIAM ALEXANDER SMITH

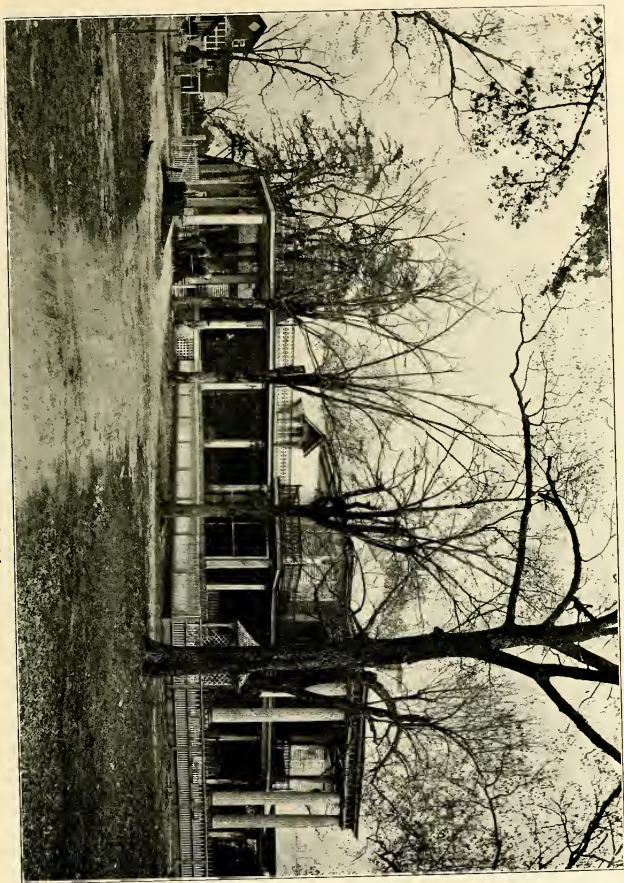
Maj. Gen. Wm. Alexander Smith, N. C. D., U. C. V., Ansonville, N. C., was born January 11, 1843, the fourth son of Col. William Gaston Smith and Eliza Sydnor Nelme, his wife, (see No. 908). We were somewhat abashed, felt highly honored and were quite a space of time getting our breath upon receiving an invitation to write the biographical sketch of this most interesting personage. He had promised to write his autobiography, for which we were highly elated. We feel there are others more capable than we are, there are others more intimately acquainted with his life, and others who could come nearer doing him justice.

His biography has already been written and printed along with a select list of the very highest type of American citizens, and can be found in "Makers of America," of which Leonard Wilson was the Editor in Chief. He, it was, who wrote the article of Explanation of The Thomas Smith Coat of Arms as printed in this book. (See 900). These books were not hurriedly written and

in the centuries to come they will be the great reference books in all our large libraries, as in them can be found only sketches of real makers of America.

One hundred years ago the sawmill had not yet been invented. Practically all structures were wooden. The building of a now modern home as we know it, was beyond the financial reach of all save a few of the wealthier citizens. With trees and logs some built hovels or cabins. Some used more care and built homes. A few built mansions. To build a house with planks, they had to be sawed by man power. High wainscoting, doors, mantles, all hand carved, required much time and enormous labor. It took time to square the logs, mortise and joint them and hew them as smooth as the modern planing mill can make them. To build a house with these hand-carved doors, mantles and hand-sawed planks, with smooth hewed logs, coming so close together as to require no daubing, and yet keep out the bleak winds of stormy weather, and make the home warmer in winter, cooler in summer than the modern home, cost for those days a large sum of money. This was the home that Presley





Home of William Alexander Smith

Nelme built for his family, three miles from Ansonville and near the banks of the Great Pee Dee River. It was akin to the manor of nobility, as pleasing as the palace of royalty. This mansion still stands, well kept, comfortable in all ways, the home of Bennett Dunlap Nelme, the nephew and adopted son of Gen. Smith. It now gains the admiration of all who visit it. Here it was that Gen. Smith was born. Here it was he spent the first few years of his childhood days. This home and the many broad acres surrounding it are the sole property of Gen. Smith and have been retained in the family for 150 years. Gen. Smith was born in plenty, nourished in love, lived in opulence, and had every needful want supplied. He was trained in religious education, attended the country schools; when advanced, sent to the Academy; from there transferred to Davidson College. As a child he was very busy and early developed an exploring caste of mind. He was accustomed to have many of his boyish whims satisfied. He was ever anxious to know what was on the table, mantle, bureaus, and other places out of reach. He went to the cupboard for food without asking. He hesitated not to climb on a chair and pull from the mantle, bureaus, or tables all there was on them, in order that he might investigate. When satisfied, he went on with his exploring and made further trouble. It required two slave nurses to watch this youthful worker. Derelict in duty or absent for some reason, they were not sufficiently watchful, and for two years in childhood days he hobbled on crutches for experimenting with the sharp edge of a hatchet and investigating the temperature of fire. Today two scars are evidence of these misfortunes.

As a boy he was jovial and ever ready to compete with the larger boys in all games of sport. Prof. Lombroso says that smallness of stature and modesty in demeanor are two traits nearly always found in the man of genius. These are and ever have been characteristic of this gentleman. Never stout, small in stature, agile, slender, wiry, active, fleet on foot, a good climber, he was fond of all sports, and, as a boy, by personal exploration was ever willing to measure the height of the forest trees, test the strength of the limbs, and thence look the country over. At school he was equally as tireless and as much interested there in books as in sports.

As an infant, he was sick unto death, it would seem, but with his tenacious courage and dominating mind, he always pulled through and recovered, despite the predictions of the skeptics. At school he was

studious and ever stood at the head of the class, and in the contentions for honors he was ever the victor. What the Creator had not given him in physical size, he had added in continuity of effort.

As school days were closing, before it was intended they should be over, dreams were entering his mind as to business choosing or future occupation, when the war cry was heard all over the land. This beardless boy was the son of wealthy parents. The mother had long been opposed to slavery. She had slaves a plenty, it is true, the gift of a father. The father also had plenty. The father was a believer in the principle of State Rights but he thought the problem could be worked out better by remaining in the Union. The father made firm his decision and opposed secession.

William Alexander Smith and two brothers well weighed duty and cast their lot with the Southland. "I declare unto you, whoever leaves home, wife, brother, and parents, will receive a hundred fold in this world and in the world to come everlasting life". (Luke XVIII: 29, 30)

Early in 1861 the Anson Guards were organized, offered their services to the Governor and were accepted. A brother, Charles E. Smith (see No. ) was made Captain. This Co. took title as "The Anson Guards, Co. C, 14 Reg., N. C. V." and went forth to battle under Captain Charles E. Smith. This Company was the Color Company. The flag was carried by the Color Sergeant. Six guards accompanied him in order to keep the flag floating, should he or some other be wounded and let it fall. This daring, alert, swift, nineteen year lad was given the honor of being one of these guards. At the fight at Malvern Hill, a yankee bullet hit the Sergeant and he fell. Up came the flag in the hands of a guard and he fell wounded. Another took his place and he fell wounded. In this battle, the Sergeant and all six guards were so badly wounded that they were not able to then perform further duty. This was one of the extreme hard-fought and bloody battles of the war and the Anson Guards covered themselves with glory. Here William Alexander Smith fell wounded in the knee as one of these six guards, and from that day has ever been compelled to use a crutch.

Edmund F. Fenton, a member of this Company tells the story in words as follows: "The writer picked up the bloody and desperately wounded boy lying nearest the enemies' guns, faint from the loss of blood, having lain on the field all night. Without a murmur or groan from him, we bore him

to the rear. We never left his side until we placed him in the tender care of his loving and praying mother. For six months Gen. Smith hovered between life and death. The devotion and careful nursing, and the prayers of his Christian mother prevailed and this beardless boy's life was spared to the world. Gen. Smith's devotion to his old Comrades in Arms has ever been as unwearying as it has been touchingly beautiful. I know Gen. Smith's love for his Comrades in Arms better than most others, because I am one of the unfortunates myself. I once heard the Gen. express in words this beautiful thought: "I may not travel this road again and while I am here, I want my stay not only to be pleasant to myself but enjoyable to others." From this wound he was never able again to shoulder the musket and answer the call of his country.

The great internecine struggle ended. The wealth that was once this young man's for the asking had crumbled and was not in existence as it once had been. The once wealthy were poor. The former poor were in almost helpless condition. Sherman had made his well known march through Anson County. Every High School child knows the story. The brutality and uncalled for severity is self-apparent. It does no good to recite now the details of those matters, for the posterity of the perpetrators are in no way responsible for the acts of their forefathers. The Confederate soldiers all over the Southland were in extremely critical condition as to finances. Not only this, but in North Carolina as in Tennessee, the Confederate soldier was disfranchised. Negro domination seemed apparent. To Tennessee stands the honor for the organization at that period of the Ku-Klux-Klan. Its sole and only purpose, as then organized and as it then existed until it voluntarily disbanded after the right of franchise was given the Confederate soldier, was for the preservation of the Southland as the then and forever home of the white race. Those who live there now can and of right should give to that organization the credit for this preservation. Those who wish details are invited to read "The Clansman," a book written by Thomas Dixon, depicting conditions especially applicable to North Carolina at the close of the war. Our father was Captain of the Ku-Klux-Klan at Friendship, Tenn., where similar conditions existed. Gen. Smith was a cripple, he could take no active part in them.

The war was ended. Every one now had to fight for a living. Some in the crippled condition of Gen. Smith would have given

up, but Gen. Smith was not made of that crudeness of metal. He was yet ready for the fight. He pulled off his coat, took up his crutch, and announced himself ready for the battle for a living. He had not sufficient funds to go into business alone but by pooling his very small funds with an older gentleman, he gained a partnership in a small business. To this he devoted his time and the best there was in him. The business grew and prospered. At length this youth purchased the interest of the partner and owned the business. By close attention and square dealing, as has ever characterized his life, he continued to have the confidence of the public. His store had its full share of public patronage. He then began to mount the ladder of financial success.

Solomon said, "Whoso findeth a wife, findeth a good thing". We know of no one who should know as well as Solomon, as we are told he accumulated seven hundred of them. Gen. Smith also thought it a good thing to have a wife, and found her in the person of Mary Jane Bennett, (see No. 910), a charming lady, and from one of the best of North Carolina families. They then began team-work and their life was one of happiness, their minds ran along in similar channels.

Business was now good, the fortune was beginning to show symptoms of life. At length, on Nov. 25, 1870, Etta came to make their home more happy, and never was a child more welcome. On Dec. 24, 1872, Nona came to keep her sister company. This made life sweeter. The flowers were blooming, the stormy weather of war days was past history. In 1875 the expected arrival of another, a boy, made them happy but alas, his existence was less than a day. Then, on Nov. 15, 1877, Nona crossed the river. On January 11, 1887 Etta joined her. "For of such is the Kingdom of Heaven". Reader! Kindly pause here a moment. Drop here a tear of sympathy. The Mother! For near forty years she grieved these losses and then went to Heaven. Their hopes were blasted. Their dearest and cherished expectations were not realized. Sometimes it seems that God calls one that the heart's love may expand and take in a multitude of others. This at least has been one resultant effect in this instance, for Gen. Smith has been good, and assisted many others in securing an education, in order to better fight life's battles.

The accumulations from the business grew until Gen. Smith decided to dispose of it and help in deed and truth to be one of the Makers of America. He then entered the manufacturing business as it related to cotton.

He became the President of Yadkin Fall Manufacturing Co., and also President of Eldorado Cotton Mills. In this he became very successful and has had varied experiences with other business institutions. He is now called by Anson citizens a wealthy man. He is one of its largest agriculturists, owning the many acres which belonged to the Nelme ancestors.

We said in the former portion that as a child he was of an exploring caste of mind. He has ever been of that nature. When he reached school age, it ran to books. When he gained wealth, it ran to travel. He has traveled extensively in this country and we believe made three trips across the water. His investigation of the thoughts of others has brought to him a home library of probably 2000 well selected books, purchased for home reading or for reference. His chief authors are Scott and Burns but he is most of all familiar with the word of God. He is the Nestor of writers in his section on matters historical and has made numerous contributions for many years to the papers. A few years ago he compiled and wrote a history of the part Anson county played in the struggle of the sixties. It is entitled "The Anson Guards". A most interesting book it is. In it are listed the names of sixteen of our relatives by blood or by marriage, who volunteered their services in behalf of the Confederate cause. In years to come this book, as now, will be highly prized. It will be the official record for those Daughters of the Confederacy who can trace their ancestors back to Anson county. He was just preparing to write a series of articles as Commentaries on parts of the Bible when we wrote him for information two years ago, and he kindly turned aside and volunteered to help us. Early he investigated the doctrines of the Churches. While he had relatives in the Baptist, Presbyterian and Methodist Churches, after some study, the Gospel, as understood by the Protestant Episcopal Church, appealed to him as being more in harmony with the teaching of the Scriptures, and because it was an apostolic church he connected himself with it. For fifty years he has been regularly sent as a delegate to the Diocesan Convention. For many years he has been a member of the Board of Managers of the Thomson Orphanage. For many years he has been one of the Trustees of the University of the South, located at Sewanee, Tenn. The students of this University and those of Vanderbilt University at Nashville, Tenn., have had many battles for supremacy in the Arena of Athletics and forensic debates.

Interested in the betterment of education,

the community and the public schools have been the recipients of his bounty. At his own expense he founded "Nona Institute", taking its name from the second girl who had come to make his home happy and had passed on. Later it was found impracticable to use it in competition with the Public School and it had to be abandoned.

He has been very liberal in assisting poor boys to obtain an education and has made large donations both to educational and religious institutions. He was the designer and the principal builder of All Souls Episcopal Church at Ansonville, N. C., which building is a credit to this village. He is a member of the Church Historical Society, and also a member of North Carolina Historical Association.

His mother was the daughter of Presley Nelme and Ann (Nancy) Montgomery Ingram his wife. She was the daughter of Joseph Ingram and Ann McCaskell; Joseph Ingram was the son of Capt. Edwin Ingram and Ann (Nancy) Montgomery, his wife. She was the daughter of Col. Hugh Montgomery. By virtue of this descent, he is a member of the Society of The Cincinnati, the most exclusive order in America, being hereditary only.

As a successful farmer, and having brought his plantation to a very high state of cultivation, he was honored by the Governor by being appointed as a delegate to represent North Carolina in the Farmers' National Congress held at Sioux Falls, Dakota.

For many years he was Worshipful Master of Carolina Lodge, A. F. & A. M., High Priest and Grand Lecturer of the Chapter. He is a Knight Templar. His motto is: "Unremitting attention, square dealing, economy, perseverance, and keeping capital employed."

It has been written of him: "As a child, devoted to his parents; as a student, diligent, painstaking, and persistent; as a soldier, obedient, prompt, and brave; as a citizen, broad-minded and progressive; as a husband and father, kind and loving; as a Churchman, devoted and liberal; he is a philanthropist and humanitarian."

Outside of his Church and family, his greatest love is his old Comrades of the sixties. While he and his family were spending the summer in the mountains of western North Carolina, as from a clap of thunder, notification came to him that he had been elected Commander of Anson Camp, United Confederate Veterans, to succeed the late Capt. Frank Bennett. His comrades presented him with a gold cross of beautiful design, which he wears with wonderful pride, coming as it did



from those who were so near and dear to his heart, welded by that love and esteem, only known to soldiers suffering the common dangers and hardships which fell to those of the Confederacy. Later the Camp refused to accept his tendered resignation until, unexpected on his part, he was called for higher honors. He was then promoted in the form of a Commission as Brig. General in command of 2nd Brigade, N. C. D., of U. C. V.

At the meeting at Chattanooga in 1921, he was further honored and promoted to Major General in command of the North Carolina Division of United Confederate Veterans.

He has ever been active in political affairs, in that he has at all times had decided and pronounced opinions on all matters and has used his influence and vote to elect to office those whom he deemed best for public good. He has ever eschewed self-presentation and has never allowed his skirts to be bespotted in pursuit of official honors. They would have been worth naught to him. The increments the office would have brought him, he needed not. As great honors as official life would have temporarily brought him, have been for his part, unsolicited and were graciously thrust upon him for his personal worth alone. These have come to him from a far more highly prized yeomanry than the mixture of people that cluster around the poles on election days. These honors have not brought to him anything of wealth, but have brought with them a continual expenditure of his private fortune and a sacrifice of much valuable time. He has never begrudged the money thus expended. He has asked naught for the time donated to these causes. His religion has been for the elevation of man.

After the death of his first wife, in 1914, he married Nannie (Nancy) Jane Flake, an ideal wife and lady (see No. 338). They live happily at "The Oaks" in Ansonville, N. C.

Gen. Smith is considerably past his three score and ten, allotted to the ordinary man. He bids fair to live many years longer. He has ever been abstemious in his habits, and a moderate consumer of food, one biscuit at a meal at times sufficient. Fond of sweets, he has ever refrained from the use of tobacco in any form. Fond as he is of entertaining and having been entertained by others so often, this is very unusual as to smoking. He has never been a user of intoxicating drinks, even tabooing coffee, preferring the milk diet. To his simple habits, he attributes the longevity of his life.

He belonged to a small footed people. His father, Col. William G. Smith, wore a number

5 boot, his mother, Eliza Sydnor Nelme a No. 1 and their son, General William Alexander Smith a No. 3. All possessed a high-arched instep, the hall-mark of high bred Southerners to the manor born..

He is very fond of entertaining. He invariably wears his Confederate uniform on all occasions and everywhere. (On the Q. T. we do not think he now has any other outer garment). In this Confederate uniform he has visited the old country, and has been received there in proper rank, in all circles of social and official life, as the dignity of Brig. General demanded.

When his days are finally numbered and he has been laid to rest, there will vanish from us one of those noted characters who have stamped the Southland as the home of the chivalric, the highest type of gentility, social superiority and intellectual brilliancy. He is the essence of politeness, a gentleman of extreme modesty, and Anson county's most noble of all her citizens. He is the Roman of them all. In the words of R. D. Richards:

"We ought to rejoice while growing old, not meet old age with tears,

For no one as yet has devised a way to stem the tide of years.

We ought to be proud of our white hair if we've been good and kind,

Proud of having traveled far and left a clean trail behind.

I was thinking just the other day, and it was on the tip of my tongue,

To say to myself, as I looked in the glass, "I am no longer young."

Then I thought as I looked at the old hills, still green and fresh as the morn,

Why, I'm only just beginning to live, I am but newly born.

Youth is the time we build castles in air, of wonderful things to be,

Of launching our boat on the restless wave of life's uncertain sea.

Our sails are new, our boat is strong, and the hopes in our heart are great.

And what is ahead on the sea of life is only known to fate.

Old age comes after our work is done, and life's battles are nearly o'er;

With perfect trust we're looking up as we've almost reached the shore.

Our difficult problems have been solved with the cold, hard test of truth.

And we've faced our trials from day to day with a clean, strong heart of youth.



Then let him be proud of what he won while  
 battling for the right,  
 Proud that he's worked from sun to sun so  
 he could rest at night;  
 Proud of having traveled far o'er life's uneven  
 road,  
 Proud that he never lost faith while carrying  
 a heavy load;  
 Proud of hair that is white as snow which  
 once was burnished gold,  
 Proud that he's lived a good, clean life while  
 now growing old."

In the spring of 1921, it chanced our good fortune to be entertained in the home of Gen. Smith for a week. On the sloping hill of Ansonville, stands his magnificent home, among "The Oaks". Large, two story, spacious rooms, private electric light system, baths and all the conveniences of the modern city dwelling, it is furnished with many antiques, rare and of splendor, gathered in a life's time. It is richly adorned with the costliest money will buy, but furnished with a plain simplicity, in keeping with the modesty of the master. There this Sage lives for the most time in his wonderful library. It is a home the plebeian would call a mansion and yet if the guest, he would rest in ease and contentment. If the nobility should happen that way, he would gaze with wonder and wish that he could transport "The Oaks" with its rich and handsome furnishings across the water and have it for his manor in Old England.

The soil of Anson county is hallowed ground. One hundred and sixty years or more ago John Smith No. 2 and Samuel Flake helped to fell the forest on its rolling hills and fertile valleys. Within its confines sleep the mortal remains of ten of our ancestors. Here our father was born and received his early inspiration. Here in numbers are buried those near and dear to Gen. Smith. His attachment of and for Anson county can be best expressed in words he has used:

"The gray old hills of Anson  
 I never can forget, amid life's joys and  
 sorrows,  
 My heart is on them yet;  
 And when my course is ended,  
 When life her web has wove,  
 Oh! May I then beneath those hills  
 Lie close to them I love."

As the cycle of years has rolled on, a multitude of histrionic legendaries of Anson county have been lost to future generations. From the wreckage, Gen. Smith in varied writings has placed in enduring form rem-

nants and many stories of former generations. In years to come the researching mind will feast in the interesting lore he shall leave behind.

We pay this inadequate tribute to the gentleman whose writings make this book interesting.

W. Thos. Smith

After the above and manuscripts had been given to the printer, there came to us the following sketch from the hands of Mrs. Dunlap who has known Gen. Smith since she was a small child. Too much cannot be said of him and we gladly give it place.

### GENERAL SMITH

By Mrs. Lily Doyle Dunlap, Ansonville, N. C.

Close knowledge of our fellows, discernment of the laws of existence, these lead to great civilization. (George Meredith) A famous writer in the Outlook said that it was as necessary for the boys and girls to know something of the lives of great men and women of their communities as it was for them to be able to name the President of the United States. Hence it is a pleasure, and we believe a service to record here, as best we may, with limited capacity, the personal history of Gen. Wm. A. Smith. His pedigree appears in the pages of this book—a noble one of many virtues, and his achievements in a business world can also be found in a number of other books; while his literary successes are widely read and appreciated, his history of the Anson Guards being one of the best, truest and most charmingly written contributions to the South's historical literature. We must write of him as we know him best—the kind and generous friend, citizen and neighbor, Christian and Southern gentleman. Born at a time when the south was in its zenith of glory, and in a home where prosperity and gentle blood were combined, we might call him "a darling of the gods."

The first few years of his life was the time of the Black Mammy and Uncle Remus stories, and abundant and luxurious hospitality. In homespun pinafores he romped with his father's pickaninnies, never being outdone in sport or test, and in velvet, "Lord Fauntleroy" gracefully spoke the blessing over the Sunday dinner. This varied and contrasting rearing engendered an easy grace for all occasions and developed a natural sympathy for all classes and conditions. As if to round out and develop all capacities, a severe illness, the result of an accident, confined him to a bed of intense physical pain which, even as

a child, he bore with the utmost fortitude. But not to be conquered or made useless he learned during this convalescence a number of feminine arts, and with crochet, knitting and cambric needle soon became expert in handling them being akin in this respect to the great Woodrow who as Tommie Wilson knit socks for the Confederate soldiers.

He attended the old field schools of that day along with all the children of his community. These schools were purely American-made institutions, recent results of Revolutionary War Democracy and an excellent plan for encouraging equal rights to all men, inspiring the yeomen and sobering the aristocrat. After exhausting the resources of these schools, he entered Davidson College where he continued in an atmosphere of knowledge and pursuit of learning. During his Sophomore year the blow fell that charged the blood of every Southerner—memorably the April of 1861. Dear as was learning, and to Willie Smith learning was dear, there was something nearer and dearer—the love of home and country and he speedily exchanged the book satchel for the soldier's knapsack and leaving the inviting path of knowledge, hiked away on the tramp that led o'er brae and brake in the battlefield of blood and carnage.

Of slight build and accustomed to the comforts of luxury he never winced from the hardships and deprivations of army life, cheerfully kept abreast at the front, often being "first in the foremost line".

In 1862, for him the Rubicon was crossed, for on the first of July of that year he was desperately wounded and the feet that had so blithely stepped to the martial music were put out of commission forever, and a crutch has ever since beat the requiem of limbs, supreme sacrifice. For half a year life fluttered in hesitancy upon the border land and the fight that had been tangibly pitted against his country's foe was now invisibly set against a more subtle and uncertain enemy. Determination and his winning qualities with his mother's tireless care overcame, and he won.

Not so the Confederacy. It was lost as far as material aggrandizement was concerned but a glorious record was made by the men and women of the South who showed the world how to suffer and to lose.

Luxuriously reared boys and men, delicately nurtured girls and women proved that true manhood and true womanhood can stand undaunted in the face of poverty and suffering for conscience and country's sake. Bring me such as these. Gen. Smith set hand and heart to the upbuilding of his

home and county and the recovery of his father's fortune. Industry being one of his chief characteristics, success early overtook him and has ever since kept step with him. The first interest beyond the limits of every man's duty his home, was the fortunes of his fellow comrades in arms. The feelings of his heart have ever been expressed in simple form by wearing of the gray, not ostentatiously or vaingloriously, for there was a time when this seemed ill advised, if not really provocative of criticism and detrimental to personal interest to be seen in "gray coat", but because his heart was still true to the cause, just as we remain loyal to those whom we have loved and who have crossed to the unseen shore. The 23rd day of December, 1869, Gen. Smith did the best thing he ever did for himself, when he married Miss Mary Jane Bennett. Together with this charming and intellectual woman he founded a home, happy and hospitable. Blessed in this beautiful domesticity and successful in business and now become by wise and temperate living "physically fit", he started many business enterprises that were blessings to many people by giving employment and a mode of investment to the small money lender. As is always the case, success carries increasing responsibilities and demands. Eleemosynary institutions and charity crowded to his door and the deserving went not away empty.

Three children, a son, dying in infancy, and two daughters of four and seventeen who remained to bless and gladden this home with expanded talent inherited from both parents, were blessings that came to General and Mrs. Smith. True to the poet, "whom the gods love die young," "and death loves a shining mark," all were early called across the bar, leaving this elegant home with its doting parents arid and dry as summer's dust. However amidst this crushing sorrow, the duties of life and a firm belief in the wisdom and the love of God sustained General and Mrs. Smith, and with deepened sympathies and courageous fortitude they set about the business of being kind and doing good. So from that time forward the program of every day was one in which a fellow being was the beneficiary.

In June 1914 Mistress Smith gently lay down to rest and the General was again led through the waters of grief. Still undaunted, but with a tear in the heart, he kept his face forward and grimly "carried on".

God is good and breaks the burden to our backs and heals us with his promises, so in due time Gen. Smith did the second best

thing that he ever did for himself when he married his distant kinswoman, Miss Nannie Bennett Flake, as sweet and kindly a woman as the old North State has ever produced. Again The Oaks smiled and blossomed with happiness, nothing of the old sorrow remaining but a precious memory of the dear departed, whose gentle spirits must hover about in transparent blessings upon the loved ones there.

Now in the mellow years of the sunset of life the clarion call of battle sounds again and the war horses lift their heads. The brave old charger, Gen. Smith, starts up to hear. He speedily girded up his loins and went forth to search a place in the ranks. Unfitted for battle action, he looked for other patriotic service and found it in the Liberty Loan drives. Having been a successful financier he found the ears of the people readily, and they gave confidence and support. He spent day after day going about his section urging the people to purchase bonds and support the Government, and through it the boys at the front. But this was not all; knowing a soldier's needs from experience, he brought out his needles of a former age and spent the evenings knitting gloves and mufflers. Industrious by nature and never doing anything halfway, he gave his time and his talents, and his money unstintedly to the demands of the times.

His heart is filled with the milk of human kindness and genuine brotherly love. The amount of work he has done along almost all lines is tremendous. It seems that nothing that needed to be done was beyond his ability to accomplish, from feeding baby chicks, to writing essays and historical sketches and a book; and every one well performed. His beautiful home abounds with flowers of almost every kind, many being plants collected from abroad, and with berries and fruits of every description; and a garden that never fails to produce. These are under his own and his wife's immediate care—they often with their own hands giving the necessary "stirrings". All these good things are generously sent around to friends. The rule of their lives is, "He to know a joy is to share it."

General Smith has made many trips abroad where he has received courtesies rarely shown to Americans. The present King and Queen are among the notables of England whose hands he and his wife have shaken. One of his chief delights has been the increasing of his father's library which is now the finest in this section. He selects his books with great care and is as particular to know about them as he is in all his other undertakings. He has learned (or was it born with him) the art of taking pains which is the secret of any success.

To his church he is faithful and generous, and his good offices have been appreciated by her and she has honored him with many honors. Twice during the sunset years desperate illnesses have overtaken him and operations have been advisable. These were the anxiety of his friends who dreaded the outcome and endeavored to persuade him to worry along with the inconvenience and pain, but he has never been of the chicken-hearted type and said, "I'll take the chance"; and without the slightest tremor of fear or even doubt as to the results, went under the knife to come out like a youth and recuperate accordingly. This was no doubt the following of temperate years of living and reasonable schooling of his mind. He has cultivated a naturally clever mind. He kept to justice in judgment; was indefatigable in industry; reasonable in economy; generous in giving; Samaritan in service; kingly in kindness; patient in affliction; courageous in war; dauntless in danger; arduous in righteousness; forgiving to wrongs; firm to right; loyal to friends; humble toward the Master and with charity to all men. The last of his family name in Anson, where once they were plentiful, there seems to be summed up in him a major portion of the many virtues of his sires. May the youth of his connections, now scattered about this great country, learn of him and strive for the things that he has attained, and be encouraged to overcome as he has overcome, and be proud that his blood is their blood; for truly he is a man whose like one rarely looks upon!

(signed) "Lily Doyle Dunlap."



Mary Bennett Smith

910 (See 631)

## MARY BENNETT SMITH

A true heroine was Mary Bennett Smith, the wife of Gen. Wm. Alex. Smith of Ansonville, N. C. She was Mary Jane Bennett, daughter of Lemuel Dunn Bennett and Jane Little, his wife. She was proud of her ancestry, yet simple and sincere.

She began her education at the Mineral Springs School taught by the Reverend James E. Morrison, a near relative of General Stonewall Jackson's wife; later pursued her studies at Carolina Female College; Salem Academy and St. Mary's, Raleigh, N. C. She was a foe to ignorance and taught her neighbors' children free as a service to God and her country. She possessed exceptional personal charms and attractions; was easily approached and unaffected and was considered quite wealthy. She was very tender hearted and charitable, with an ear always open to the cry of distress and a hand swift to relieve.

Profound respect and esteem were felt by all who knew her; to her was given admiration and gratitude from dependents, and deep, true affection from relatives and friends. She was cultured, attractive and accomplished; the product of generations of refinement. Prominent in the family history of Mary Bennett Smith is Major Gen. Richard Bennett, of high reputation and courage in Cromwell's Army, who on the accession of Charles

II, fled across the ocean to Virginia, pursued by the King's resentment. Governor Sir William Berkley forced him to escape to the Province of Maryland.

Two of General Bennett's brothers, William and Neville, emigrated to America about 1740 and were pioneers in the Province of North Carolina in the section now known as Anson County. William Bennett married Miss Huckston and to them were born William and Elizabeth. He saw active service as captain in the Continental Army. After the war of the Revolution, he lived and died in Bennettsville, S. C., which town was named as a tribute to him. Capt. William Bennett's son, William, married Susanna Dunn, of the famous Dunn family of Virginia with which Sir David Dunn was identified. Susanna's mother was Mary Sheffield of Virginia. Susanna Dunn and William Bennett were married in 1794. Their son, Lemuel Dunn Bennett married Jane Little, whose father, William Little, came from Marlsgate, Cumberland County, England.

The Littles were a prominent family, intermarrying into the families of the Lords of Askerton and Scott (Sir Walter Scott).

Mary Jane Bennett, daughter of L. D. Bennett and Jane Little, married Gen. William Alexander Smith, Dec. 23rd, 1869. Her talents were many and varied and it was hard to find an accomplishment in which she did not excel. Her ear was attuned to

sweet symphony; painting in oil and water colors was her pleasure. Tapestry claimed her devoted attention also. The walls of her old colonial home are adorned with the work of her skilful hands; with needlework, paintings in oil, and tapestry. A gentleman viewing a piece of her tapestry representing "The Bridal Party Crossing the River Rhine," with the eye of the connoisseur said, it was superior to anything he saw at the World's Fair at Chicago.

She was a veritable artist in all kinds of needlework. It was her chief gratification to learn a new stitch. In trimming hats, the adornment of dresses, mantua-making, and other needlework, she was gifted. Floriculture was a favorite pastime. The cultivation of the rose, the queen of flowers, was a passion, and her collection was unrivalled. She was a walking encyclopedia in flower nomenclature, having knowledge of both wild and cultivated flowers. She was the neatest and cleanest of housekeepers—no visitor ever caught her house in disorder. She was so skilled in the culinary department that she used her own recipe cook book. A thrice delightful companion, with brilliancy of mental attainments and keenness of wit; a racy raconteur and an attractive, winning story-teller. Beautiful and gracious; eminent for personal charms; with commanding regal appearance, she invited confidence by smiles of indescribable loveliness.

Yet with all these mental acquirements and accomplishments, graceful movements and queenly bearing, she was modest and unassuming, with an utter lack of arrogance. Brave and heroic! When her maiden home was being pillaged by Sherman's Army, she defended her imperiled honor by leveling a pistol in the faces of the ravishers, threatening to shoot the first brute that crossed the threshold of the room into which she and her younger sister had retired. They quailed before that resolute gray-blue eye.

With an inquiring mind and tenacious memory, she profited greatly by travel at home and abroad. She crossed the Atlantic several times, visiting England, Scotland and Wales; the Continents of Europe, Asia and Africa; was delighted with Malta and the beautiful Madeira Islands. She was impressed by Greece, Egypt and Palestine, but Constantinople was her abomination; dirty, filthy, abhorrent, to her cleanly soul.

She was a worthy daughter of the Confederacy; an honored daughter of the Revolution, and, with lineage entitling her to the eminent Society of Colonial Dames.

As a member of the Episcopal Church

(All Souls, Ansonville) it could be said of her as it was reverently said of the Master: "She went about doing good". Hospitality swung wide the Colonial doors of this gracious hostess. On one occasion she had a dozen guests at a course dinner. The ice cream course was to be served when she discovered that it was spoiled by salt. She had the cows brought up from the pasture, milked and froze more cream, entertaining her guests so pleasantly the while, they did not notice the delay. They were, indeed, perfectly unconscious that there had been any accident to mar the feast. This was a marvelous evidence, demonstration and exemplification of her capacity, and sangfroid. Nothing could disturb her equanimity.

She had the ability, the address, the adroitness and the happy faculty of winning the confidence of children because of the pure, sheer love she had for them. She could entertain them for hours to their great delight. She always had some new idea for their amusement. Nothing pleased them more than to have permission from their parents to visit Mistress Smith. There is no better judge of human nature than a child. Instinctively, they know the pure in heart, white soul of a true friend.

Like Napoleon the Great, she was a most excellent judge of character. A commercial transaction persisted in contrary to her advice invariably was disastrous. She had four brothers, all volunteers in the Confederate Army. Her youngest brother, Frank, became Commander of the Sharp Shooters, the most perilous and hazardous position in the army. He won the high distinction and sobriquet and was referred to by his superiors as "Captain Frank Bennett and his Invincibles". The children's Chapter of the Confederacy is named "The Frank Bennett Chapter", a tribute to his bravery and his memory.

The loss of her children was the one supreme sorrow of her life. It bowed her heart with grief that was never overcome, although she bore up with resignation. One wrote of her, "Oh! Princely heart the Christ is on thy head; on ours the dew. The gold and purple of your heart you gave and laid them on the outside of the wall for the passerby to take. Thank God for thy life and thy friendship, and, the memory of gifts will bless us always." She possessed the characteristics of two strong families, to which her life has added dignity and prestige. Her presence inspired the best that was in those with whom she came in contact.

No character was maligned within her hearing; her nature was to take the part of



the under-dog. She was a ray of cheer wherever she went and could make sufferers forget their pains. Once when visiting a poor old sick woman who was pouring out a history of her ailments, she broke in with the query, "Did you dance when you were young, Mrs. B.?" Her mind was diverted and she (Mrs. B.), was soon laughing as she had not done for years. She was an optimist and looked through life with rose-colored glasses; she stressed the beautiful and the good. Courage and patience was the keynote of her life. She never flurried nor lost her equilibrium. She espoused the cause she believed right and stood by her guns firmly but kindly.

### A TRIBUTE

By Mrs. Chas. M. Burns

"If I were asked to measure the loss sustained by the community in the passing of Mrs. W. A. Smith, I do not think I would know where to see the rule or the line to fathom it. Language fails me in this hour of inexpressable grief to record my real estimate of this lovely woman. It is with deep sorrow that I would lay a flower on her grave or drop a tear to her memory. I have loved and admired her for many years. It was both my pleasure and privilege to be numbered as her friend. Personally, she was very attractive; a queenly woman, highly cultured and of lofty ideals; a sincere woman; true to her convictions, to her friends and to every cause she espoused. She despised all manner of hypocrisies and shame. Hers was a life of energy, eloquence and beauty. A sense of profound bereavement grips my heart as the great heart of North Carolina mourns the loss of such a daughter. After life's fitful fever she sleeps well. Dear, gentle soul, how we shall miss her. God bless her memory and pity the multitudes who weep today o'er their personal loss.

"With many a smile and a wave of the hand,  
She has wandered into an unknown land.  
And left us dreaming how very fair  
It needs must be since she lingers there.  
And you, oh you! you who the wildest  
yearn  
For the old time step and the glad return.  
Think of her still as the same, I say,  
She is not dead—she is just away'."

### FROM THE DAUGHTERS OF THE CONFEDERACY

"Since through the providence of 'Him who doeth all things well,' we are called to subtract

from the membership of our Chapter of U. D. C. by the transition of one of the most patriotic of our ranks be it resolved:

1st. That we lament the absence of one whose face was like an old painting, called by some long ago artist 'Portrait of a Lady'. The benediction of her sympathy; the sympathy of one who could never grow old; one to whom the simple things of life were dear; who despised not small things but took pleasure in them; one who was responsive; whose courtesy compelled; who held pace with progress while holding fast to 'all things that are true and established of old'. One who had a fine 'sense of proportion'; who lived for her country and had a passion for the cause of Dixie; one of those who are the anchors that bravely, and capably hold things steady, while the rank and file labor perhaps more ostensibly, but not more advantageously; one of earth's heroines. When she was needed she was there, calm, quiet, powerful—a root of our organization that beneath the surface strengthened and vitalized.

2nd. That we extend our loving sympathy to all who were near and dear to her, especially to the noble husband who so courageously met the enemy of his country, and who loves and furthers the honor and glory of those men that we are organized to forever memorialize.

3rd. That a copy of these resolutions be spread on our minute book, and that copies be published in the county papers and sent to her husband and nephew, Gen. Wm. A. Smith and Mr. Bennett Dunlap Nelme."

Mrs. J. W. Griggs	} Com.
Mrs. L. L. Little	
Mrs. W. D. Redfern	

### ANSON-STANLEY CHAPTER D. A. R.

"Mrs. Mary Bennett Smith was born in Anson County, N. C., in February of 1842 and died in Ansonville, Anson County, N. C., the 20th of June 1914. In 1869 she was happily married to Gen. William Alexander Smith and became the mother of three children, all of whom preceded her to the Better Land.

She was the daughter of Lemuel Dunn and Jane Little Bennett and inherited both maternally and paternally characteristics of great excellency, she herself being not surpassed in queenly beauty, unusual mentality and sweet womanliness by any ancestor or contemporary.

Her maternal ancestors came to America after the Revolution, hence it was through her descent, through her paternal line that she became a member of the D. of the A. R. Her great grandfather, Capt. William Bennett, served valiantly for his country during the decisive battles of the Revolution fought in S. C., and her four brothers were heroes in the Civil conflict. In her heartlove of country was a passion, but it was tempered by reason and Christian graces.

As we have said, she was in person strikingly handsome and had such individuality as to influence every circle that she entered. Her speech was chaste and elegant and free from petty gossip and slander. Her voice was ever raised in defence of the erring and abused, whether guilty or innocent, and, a helping hand extended when, in her wisdom, she saw that it could be helpful. The sentiment of the Master's speech, 'Let him that is without sin cast the stones' squared her expressions of the condemned and no character was soiled in her presence. The weaknesses and failures of her fellow men and women were her sorrows. It was her joy to strengthen and to forgive. Toward the sick and helpless in man and beast, she was affectionately tender and had a voice that was always comforting and often healing. She was cheerful and could bring a smile under desperate conditions and inspire a song to the sorrow-weighted. Her heart was in the right place and gave out fragrance all the stronger for having its own griefs; her courage and faith was such that she could smile for the comfort of others and could exclaim, "Bless the Lord, O my Soul" when God's afflicting hand entered her own home.

She was master of herself and could keep calm and sweet amid the distractions and excitements of all occasions, thus encouraging and strengthening those about her who would have otherwise given away to useless and injurious panic. She was a woman to look up to; to love and to imitate. Triply gifted as she was, in mind, beauty and wealth, she could have achieved any position that she willed, but her desire was the quiet walks of life. She preferred the heart's devotion of the few rather than the admiration of the multitude. So to her, friends, her home and family, books and flowers came first, which satisfied her. In many and delightfully original ways did she express her affections; some kindnesses were done daily, always quietly and in a way endeavoring to efface the author. All mightiest powers work quietly and so her actions were never attended by any ostentation.

Hers was a cultured mind from wide and much travel and careful reading. She never did anything by halves and with her anything worth doing at all was worth doing well. Her character was broad and well balanced. She was no extremist and no diffuse speaker or actor; she championed what in her good judgment was right and worthy and stood staunchly and openly by her convictions. Somehow she towered above all that was petty and trivial and little, and, like pure snow-capped peaks, purified the atmosphere about her.

The interest that she took in our A. S. Chapter, D. A. R. was possibly the greatest compliment that it has ever received, and, it adds prestige and distinction to our organization to have her beloved name upon its list of members. Had her days been spared, she would have been a wise counsellor, a patriotic supporter, and a beautiful adornment. While our hearts are sorrowful over our loss we are thankful that we are the band to have the honor of paying this memorial to her precious memory.

We honored her, we esteemed her, we loved her and we shall cherish the memory of her many and rare merits so long as there is one of us, and pass on to coming members, through our books her beautiful life.

In this organization she will never be forgotten, for her National number shall never be held by another, and her space in the National Lineage Book will speak of her as long as libraries exist, as long as the greatest Woman's Organization in the world shall endure.

This wreath of green with our colors, white and blue shall be placed upon her grave to remind others that patriotism and love are lessened on this earth, and, that we are all drawn nearer to that beautiful land whither she has gone.

Dear heart, you have answered your call to the palace not made with hands, the gold and purple of your heart that you laid upon the outside of the wall for such as we to take, shall be royal memories to us, and though the casket that held the gift be broken by the touch of death, the gift lives on and while upon our heads is the dew of woe, on yours is the chrism of a well finished life.

"She is not dead, our friend, not dead,  
But in the path we mortals tread  
Got some few trifling steps ahead  
And nearer to the end;  
So that we, too, come past this bend  
Shall meet again as face to face,

This friend we fancy dead;  
 Let us push gaily on with strong hearts  
 She loiters with a backward smile  
 Till we can overtake."

FROM THE CRAIGHEAD  
 DUNLAP CHAPTER D. A. R.  
 (Miss Lallie Dunlap)

I bring to the Anson-Stanley Chapter and to all Anson D. A. R. the deep sympathy we feel in the loss not only of a valued member of our organization but a County, State, and—aye—a National loss, for Mrs. W. A. Smith was a woman whose kind makes a nation great. We knew her worth and feel the sorrow heavily. Our sympathy is for her kith and kin and friends, among which latter we all were, especially the brave husband and noble sister who have our love and prayers.

Beautiful life well done,  
 Beautiful soul into glory gone,  
 Ours the heart ache, yours the song.

FROM THOMAS WADE CHAPTER  
 D. A. R.  
 (Mrs. J. G. Boylain)

At the request of the Thomas Wade Chapter D. A. R. I am here to express from our every member the sorrow that we feel in the loss of one who was very dear to us all; one who was a friend to her country and fellow women. She came of a family prominent in military and patriotic valor and united herself to a heroic soldier and they together loved first. Well do I remember my first visit to her elegant home, the order, neatness and beauty of its keeping made a lasting impression upon me. She loved to expand the possessions of her home and I left with various plants and sprouts of a rare kind that have added beauty and benefit to my home.

Her sane practical ideas were such as made heroes of our Revolutionary forefathers, and perhaps in her were combined more of Colonial common sense than in any other woman of our country. Is it any wonder that we miss such a character? We shall feel her loss more and more as time moves on and we realize by her absence the strength that she possessed. Our hearts are heavy; our hearts are sad. Words are useless, we all knew her; looked up to her, loved her. The D. A. R. have lost heavily.

"O true in word and tried in deed  
 Death has made his darkness beautiful  
 with thee.

A life that all the muses decked  
 With gifts of grace that might express  
 All comprehensive tenderness;  
 All subtilizing intellect.  
 I know transplanted human worth  
 Will bloom to profit other where."

TRIBUTE TO MY FRIEND  
 (By Mrs. Lily Doyle Dunlap)

I walked in your garden alone today  
 Your garden of roses rare,  
 And gathered the fairest of all those blooms  
 To place on your silent bier.

How often I've trod those paths with you  
 The queen of that flowering place,  
 No bloom was there that looked more sweet  
 Than your beautiful smiling face.

To be with you in that charming spot,  
 Where colors and fragrance grew,  
 Was a joy that can never be forgot  
 A memory sweet of you.

My tears fell fast as I solemnly cut  
 Each rose from its graceful stem,  
 And I thought of the love you had shown  
 to me  
 And the love you had for them.

And the many times that your precious hands  
 Had culled such blooms for me  
 And smilingly said in your own sweet way,  
 As you held them for me to see.

"I won't be here when you're dead, my dear  
 To place them upon your bier,  
 So I give them now to express my love  
 While we are together here."

But I never dreamed that the day could come  
 When I'd walk these paths this way  
 And cut these blooms for the purpose sad  
 That I have done this day.

'Tis a pain for me to look at them now  
 And their fragrance 'most takes my breath,  
 And the question arises, of how  
 Am I to give thee up to death?

In tears, tears, tears, yes that is how,  
 And with sorrowful heavy heart,  
 Looking up to God's garden above,  
 Where yours is a beautiful part."

INSCRIPTION ON HER MONUMENT

(By W. A. S.)  
 MARY BENNETT SMITH  
 1832-1914

Queenly—Brilliant—Radiant  
 God touched her heart with his finger  
 And she slept:  
 Sleep on, dear heart, sleep on  
 Till the Resurrection morn.

Reverently she was laid to rest in the Family Plat in East View Cemetery, Wadesboro, N. C. by the side of her children, which she had loved and lost awhile.

A handsome work of art in stained glass is her memorial window in All Souls Church, Ansonville, N. C. A stately, queenly figure of a beautiful, sweet faced woman, like an angel without wings, clad in gorgeous robes

is standing beneath the shade of a tree, viewing with mental insight a garden of roses and calla lilies in bloom, amid beautiful shrubbery; her soul absorbed in contemplating Deity, manifested by golden clouds in the distance lit up by the glow of the setting sun.

Wm. A. Smith



Nannie Flake Smith

911 (338-D-631)  
NANNIE FLAKE

Nannie Flake on Aug. 29, 1916, became the wife of Major Wm. A. Smith. She is the daughter of Flaval Bennett Flake and Mary Ann Allen, his wife. He was the son of John W. Flake and Roxanna Bennett, his wife. He was the son of Jordan Flake and Penelope Williams, his wife. She was the daughter of Joseph John Williams and Susanah, his wife. Joseph John Williams was the son of William Williams and Katherine, his wife. He was the son of Samuel Williams and Mary Dudley, his wife. He was the son of William Williams and Elizabeth Alston, his wife, and Elizabeth Alston was the daughter of John Alston and Mary Clark, his wife. John Alston was prominent in civil and political

life, residing in Chowan County, Province of North Carolina. He was a juryman in court, 1715; Grand Juryman at General Court of Oyer and Terminer for several years; a commissioned Justice of Peace for years. He was made a Captain of the King's forces in 1725, promoted to Major, 1729, and later promoted to Colonel. He was Collector for the King, Sheriff of the County and Vestryman of St. Paul's Parish. In all of these positions he conducted himself so as to commend himself to his government, gained the esteem of the people and did honor to himself, his family and his Province.

First and foremost in this sketch, we would say that Nannie Flake Smith has a charming personality that radiates the milk of human kindness to those whom she meets. Handsome, intelligent and accomplished. With

erect posture, graceful carriage, finely modeled form; low and tender voice, like heavenly music stealing o'er waters of a summer's moonlight night, and with gazelle-like eyes radiating light like stars in the gloaming, she is exquisite. Educated at the famous Salem Academy, now Salem College, she was well grounded in the rudiments; a solid foundation, upon which was reared the superstructure of broader, higher education. She taught school for many years and her work was so highly prized, patrons had her to continue teaching against her wishes. This reacted to her advantage, as teaching fired her ambition and whetted her appetite for knowledge until no word in Webster's "Blue-back" could faze her. Full of youth and enthusiasm, she was determined to excel, and success crowned her efforts.

"I long for the sight of the healing streams,  
And a glimpse only of the cities great;  
I long for the sight of the sun's bright beams,  
That smile on the old North State."

Country born and reared, expert in stock feeding and practical knowledge in vegetable gardening, her active mind and willing hands were productive in making "two blades of grass grow where one grew before." No phase of country life escaped; fond of stock, a graceful horsewoman, she sat superbly erect, her willowy, lithe form swaying to the motions of the animal, presented a symmetrical poise—rare and beautiful. Her ease and grace were not an acquirement of the teacher; they were bred in her bone. Her mother before her had been born in the saddle. She is also skilled in domestic art and science, in house-keeping, in cooking, sewing and knitting, mantua-making, gardening and dairying. Poultry raising is her specialty. She haunts the fowl yard and the little biddies regard her as a second mother. The slow recovery from the dire effects of Reconstruction Days laid upon her the compelling hand of economy, forcing her to make a life study of finance. An eminent attorney said of her: "She is the best woman-accountant and financier in the County." The world is a whole lot better by the example of such as she. "Some women can fling more out'n a little winder at the back en' of a house than a man can fetch in at the door," an old countryman said to the writer.

She is a woman of tact, of ability, of education, of refinement, of wealth and social environment. Notwithstanding all of this, she is modest and retiring, Perfection beyond praise. Friends, warm friends, comprise her neighbors. Esteem and golden opinion from

the negroes, whose admiration knows no bounds, is hers. All of this arises from service and is the natural result of giving and spending her life doing for others.

Pray tell me how can one better show devotion to God and His Son, Jesus Christ, than in service to humanity? "And whosoever shall give to drink unto one of these little ones a cup of cold water only—he shall in no wise lose his reward."

Her life has been one sweet song of service; beginning with her orphan sister and brother, her grandfather and grandmother, who was the daughter of Donald Ross, who came to America from Scotland with his father, Hugh Ross. Then she devoted her life to caring for her bachelor uncles, Moody and Thomas Allen and to the children of the schools she taught; to her husband, finally extending out to her neighbors, both white and colored. These daily good deeds are not proclaimed from the house tops. "Let not thy left hand know what thy right hand doeth." Golden deeds such as hers are their own messengers. She is content, and contentment spells happiness. Her husband and her home are her heart's shrine and they are enshrined in her heart of hearts. Devotion to his every comfort in the sweetest spirit of love and solicitude is given to solace and to cheer, rendered as a gift service—as was Aaron's before the altar. Sensitive to environment, she creates inspiration, manifested by beautiful, odorous flowers, rising from the soil in obedience to the manipulations of her fair hands. In confirmation of a saying of old Uncle Joel Tyson, they just grow for her "Sponch-alonch". In her flower garden she breathes the balmy Southern winds that marry the flowers in spring and fructifies them later on in summer and fall.

The blood of the English Allens, the Scotch Ross and the Welsh Alstons and Williams blend in her veins, and this blending of the noble traits of these nations and as developed in America is reflected in her heart of gold; deeds of silver and their characteristics are manifested in her mind of pearl. These blended traits preserve her youthful spirit and keep her hopeful, loving and beloved. As 'tis said of the housewives of Holland, so it can be said of Nannie Smith: "A marvel of neatness." It is also said she was made of dust, her husband thinks it is star dust.

By no means is she what is known as a "Society Woman", although she is a member of the Anson Chapter, Daughters of the Confederacy, member of the Thomas Wade Chapter Daughters of the Revolution, member of the North Carolina Society of the Colonial



Dames of America. She is a member of All Souls Protestant Episcopal Church of the Diocese of North Carolina. Thus she dwells in love's shadowland—peopled with the unfettered spirits of the great and noble, redolent with memories that do not die, because they cluster around the Confederacy, the Revolution, the Colonies and the Church, which are things immortal.

She possesses the talent of making and holding friends by her quiet walk, kind demeanor, serene countenance and winning smile. Pure, true, genuine friends mean so much in life as the years glide by on the accelerating incline. When she can say nothing good, silence is golden. As it is said of Bezaleel, "I have filled her with the spirit of God in wisdom and in understanding and in knowledge." Economical, just, energetic, active, diligent, industrious and spiritual, she believes in filling her storehouse for the proverbial rainy day of old age and for the eternal joys of the soul.

The words of King Solomon are appropriate and applicable: "She looketh well to the ways of her household and eateth not the bread of idleness. Her children riseth up and call her blessed, her husband also, and he praiseth her. Many daughters have done virtuously but thou excellest them all." It is her happy faculty, by quiet dignity, calm demeanor and serene poise, to radiate joy and peace to the uplift of others and bring them in harmony with the Christ-like spirit of cheer and forgiveness. Her husband joyfully daily sings:

"I know you love me, Nannie dear,  
Your heart was ever fond and true;  
I always feel when you are near  
That life holds nothing, dear, but you."

A real true woman, one of those that go to make the great State of North Carolina great, she is whole-hearted, tender-hearted and gentle in manner. She is a genuine home lover, giving her best thought to him she regards as the one man of all the world; and who, in return, gives to her his highest regards, deepest esteem, fondest love and implicit confidence.

W. A. Smith, "The Oaks", Ansonville, N. C.

912 (see 504-505; 108-J-150)

THOMAS SMITH and JANE GOFF, his wife;  
BENJAMIN WILLIAMS and his wife; and  
JOHN AULD SMITH and LEUSEY WILLIAMS and their children

Thomas Smith was born in Anson County, N. C., about 1768. That is thought to have

been the exact year. He lived and died in that county after 1820. The oldest child of his parents, he, when yet a young man, was thrown on his own resources. His father had acquired a considerable landed estate. His grandfather, Samuel Flake, who died in 1802, being over 100 years old, was also a large landholder. John Smith, James Smith and Thomas Smith were all good financiers and accumulated what was then termed a wealthy estate. John and James grew to be extremely wealthy and Thomas with a fortune less than theirs, but with a sufficiency, on the marriage of his only son, John Auld Smith, gave him two good farms and fourteen negroes with which to begin life's battles. The records also disclose that he gave his daughter on her marriage two hundred acres of land. Besides being a Planter, Thomas Smith spent most of his time as a Distiller, making cider, apple and peach brandy. His mother, Mary (Flake) Smith was a member of the Baptist Church. This was before the division into the Missionary and Primitive branches which came from 1815 to 1825. In those days the making and the drinking of these wares was in no way frowned upon by the Baptist Church or any other religious denomination. It was not considered improper for the pastor, then called Elder, to moderately partake of these refreshments. Many men in those days could not write their name. Deeds and other documents were then universally witnessed by two parties, rather than acknowledged before an officer. Trusted and responsible men were usually selected for witnesses, as a precaution to future need of proof as to the legality of the instrument.

We find that Thomas Smith and Benjamin Williams both wrote a good hand and both were frequently called upon to write or witness these papers. Thomas Smith died shortly after 1820 and perhaps before 1825 and was buried near Lilesville. His wife Jane Goff survived him. We know absolutely nothing of her ancestry. Her will was probated in 1835 in Anson County, N. C., and tradition is that she at that time was about eighty years old. She was then probably born about 1765, but tradition at times varies, but she was probably near the age of her husband. In 1792 we find that George E. Goff of Rowan County married Mary Frost. This is just north of Anson County. If future investigation shall develop that this George E. Goff was related to Jane Goff, it will be interesting to the children of Millard, our oldest brother, as they are from the Frost family of that County on their mother's side. Besides the

lands and properties that Thomas Smith had given his son about 1817 on his marriage, and the two hundred acres he gave Naomi Smith who had married James Capel, the records disclose that later a two hundred acre tract in which his wife, Jane (Goff) Smith had a dowry was sold or her dowry rather was sold to pay a note on which she was security. The son, John Auld Smith was not a good financier. He and his mother also went on notes as security. The wealth left her dwindled and at her death, she only had one tract of land which brought a yearly rental of \$50.00, the wages of a common laborer for that day.

Benjamin Williams was born in Wake County, N. C. about 1780. It is possible that he was born in Edgecombe County and that the date of his birth may have been earlier or later. Tradition is that he was born in Wake County. He married Oct. 2, 1802 and from that only can we guess at the date of his birth. In 1800, with his parents, he moved from Wake to Anson County, N. C. and located near Lilesville.

The records indicate that he was born in an humble home. The estates that had come from the Alston Family and from Samuel Williams Sr. had dwindled. Whether this was the result of mismanagement of the fortune, or misfortune of the Revolutionary war we know not. His father owned only a small tract of land in Wake County. He does not seem to have purchased any after coming to Anson. As the sons early purchased lands in Anson after coming there in 1800, it is likely the father, William Williams, lived on the lands of some child. Schools were scarce in those days. Only those of wealth were able to employ a private tutor or able to send the children to school to any great extent. Books were scarce. In some way, we know not how, Benjamin Williams was able to obtain a fair education. We have seen a number of writings left by him. He wrote a good, bold hand, well rounded letters, plain and well readable. He used good language, fairly correct, and his method of making out bills and keeping books showed him a man above the average intelligence.

Benjamin Williams was a Planter by occupation. He also like Thomas Smith operated a Distillery, making cider, peach and apple brandy. Neither of these engaged in the manufacture of whisky as we later knew it. Peach and apple brandies and cider were their specialties. With Thomas Smith, Distilling was his occupation and Planting was a diversion. With Benjamin Williams, Planting was his occupation and Distilling a diversion.

Our father had a most splendid opinion of Benjamin Williams and remembered him well. He informed us that Benjamin Williams was a most honorable and upright citizen, highly respected by all who knew him. He was a Baptist in religion, devout, and worshipped at Lilesville, where the Church now stands, where his brother-in-law "Elder" Archibald Harris expounded the gospel. He was prosperous in the early days of his manhood and gave most generously to his children. In the latter part of his life he had some financial reverses but had sufficient to the end.

It has fallen our fortune to come into the possession, as owner, of the Hymn and Psalm Book of his first wife, our great grandmother. In his bold handwriting we find Benjamin Williams and Elizabeth Williams were married October 2, 1802. From tradition we are very confident that her name was Leusey Elizabeth Pate. We have no documentary evidence but this is the best traditional story. The marriage bonds of Anson County were destroyed during the war of the sixties. Possibly he returned to Wake County and there married her. Only a small per cent of the marriage bonds of that county are in existence. We find in Wake County, in 1820, John Williams married Nancy Pate, in 1815 Joseph Wright married Sally Pate, and August 12, 1783 John Williams married Barzilla Pate. It is possible that this John Williams was his oldest brother. There were many of the name of Williams in Wake County in that day. We are told by our Anson County relatives the name of the wife of John Williams was Martha.

Elizabeth Williams, the first wife, died January 10, 1808 and Benjamin Williams later married a Miss Mitchell, sister of Thomas Mitchell. Our grandmother was by the first wife.

In 1838 Benjamin Williams accompanied his daughter, Leusey Williams and her husband John Auld Smith to Henderson County, Tenn., where he purchased, for \$800.00, two hundred acres of land and gave it to his daughter. When his daughter Elizabeth (Betsy) who married David Townsend went to Mississippi, or afterwards, he gave her, or later left her, quite a small estate.

From the two above families came the marriage in the year of 1818, of John Auld Smith, the only son of Thomas Smith, to Leusey Williams, the oldest child of Benjamin Williams. With a marriage gift of two good farms and fourteen negroes from Thomas Smith, the life looked bright. This was considerable fortune in those days. A slave was valuable property. The good intentions of

the father had not the effect expected. The father dying some three or four years after, the signature of John Auld Smith was good anywhere. He was asked to sign and freely signed as security for others. Too freely he indulged in the wares his father had manufactured. At one time seven of his slaves were put on the block and sold to pay the debts of others. A loving mother came to his rescue and acting unwisely she signed notes as security. Her dowry and his interest in a two hundred acre tract of land were sold at public sale to pay debts of others, if traditions are correct as verified by the records. John Auld Smith was of the old Baptist religion. A crime it was not to pay a debt. It was not many years until all of the wealth his father gave him was gone. He ever afterwards lived in a most humble home. Until his death he was able to retain his greatest fortune, Leusey Williams, his wife. She retained the Scotch spelling, Leusey, instead of Lucy. There was a large flow of Scotch blood in her veins. She was a maiden fair, a mother loved, worshipped, and idolized; a sainted ancestor whose life long had its influence on her children after she had passed away.

In 1818, Elijah Flake and others had left Anson County and gone to the great west where they settled in Henderson County, Tenn. near Red Mound. Finding fields and pastures there to their liking, others from Anson came. On January 5, 1837, Elijah Flake was back in Anson County on a visit. A new babe was then born. At his request it was named Elijah Flake Smith. Elijah Flake had no doubt become impregnated with that American spirit that has ever characterized those going west and no doubt sang the praises of this new country.

Deciding to make the venture, John Auld Smith and his wife began the journey in the early spring of 1838. With six horses hitched to a wagon, in which were loaded their household goods and things of that character, together with members of the family, possibly with some cattle driven on foot, they began their journey. We are of the opinion that they early crossed the Cinch river and then journeyed down and along the western and northern meanders of that stream, and of the Holstein and Tennessee rivers, passing where is now Knoxville, Chattanooga, and to Florence, Alabama, then called Mussel Shoals, and there crossed the Tennessee river. They perhaps then traveled along near the river for some distance, at length leaving it for Henderson County, Tenn. and in the last part of April arrived and settled seven miles

Northwest of Lexington, Tenn. There they lived and died and were buried. There were some dangers attendant to this journey but nothing of a serious nature happened. One night Nancy Ellen, then five years old, was trudging along behind with the older children, holding to and at times riding on the long coupling pole extending behind. Unexpectedly they came to a creek, and in it the horses and wagons went, while Nancy Ellen was thus riding. Completely under the water she went, but game like, held on and was none the worse save for a cold baptizing. On this journey, there may have been others. We are of the opinion that Hampton Williams, a half brother, Nancy Williams, a half sister, and her husband, Isaac Williams came with them. Benjamin Williams, the father, was with them.

For \$800.00 Benjamin Williams purchased 210 acres of land, on which there was a small log house and ten acres of corn just planted, and this he had deeded to Leusey (Williams) Smith and after her death to her children. As a gift he thus lightened the burdens of his daughter, and then journeyed to North Carolina to look after his business. In ways at other times he assisted this daughter, as well as other members of his family.

In our childhood days, there was more narrowness in Church circles than at the present day. At least that is our opinion. In our section, the minister of one denomination did not fill the pulpit in the Church of another denomination. Large gatherings were held and the doctrines of different religions were often debated. We were raised the strictest of Methodists, baptized, fed and nurtured in and on its doctrines. We were told it was sinful to dance, play a social game of cards, go to the theater. The drinking of wine of any character was forbidden. About one mile from our village once a year, the Primitive Baptist would have a foot-washing. We invariably attended this meeting. To us then it was a kind of a circus. If perchance there was on that Sunday, preaching at our church, we would be afterwards told that we should attend our own church. We thought the Primitive Baptist most wonderful sinners because they danced and enjoyed some worldly pleasures that in our youthful days we disdained because of their tendencies. We have a most profound respect for the Methodist religion. We know of no Church to which present civilization is so greatly indebted. It has a wonderful religion. When we grew to manhood and went West, with us we took our church letter. We have ever since remained without the folds of the

church. We have become more liberal in our views on some matters. We have never in our lives taken a drink of whiskey nor a glass of beer. Our views on that and gambling are unaltered. As we grow older there comes in our life a more profound and unshaken belief that there is a Deity, whose anxiety is a watchful eye and a pleasing expression for every noble deed, or good intention. More and more we have thought as we grow older that the church is not the place to locate a Christian but he can be best discerned in the business transactions of week day business. Our calling for thirty years and more has been to deal with those indebted to others. We have had occasion to deal with those of most every character, study and read human nature in its most exposed condition.

Our calling in life may to others seem to have somewhat narrowed our vision, but we are unable to see any difference so far as the approbation or punishment of Deity is concerned, between the common thief and he who can and will not pay his honest debts, or refuses to be frugal and thrifty in order that he may render unto man that which by legal or moral contract he has agreed to pay him.

In the last twenty-three years we have often had occasions to have business dealing with members of the Primitive Baptist Church, entirely ignorant of our position. We have learned to love and admire that religion. We have often said they were the most honest people and best debt-payers of any people we have had dealing with. It is a part of their religion. If unable to pay, others of the Church lend a helping hand. If a member declines to pay his debts he is turned out and not allowed to worship as a member in Illinois. It is a consistent religion. It is a commercial religion, going into all the business dealing with your fellow man, every day in the week. It was not with any sadness, when, on the 24th day of March 1921, we first learned that this was the religion of our ancestors, and in it, and for it, our grandmother plighted her whole life, and served God first at Lilesville, then at Gum Springs, N. C. and then at Mt. Arat, Henderson County, Tenn., and that this was the faith of our grandfather John Auld Smith. Many years after he died, his daughter, Nancy Ellen in her delirious condition as she was about to pass to another existence, cried out: "Father! Father!" and a most devoted Christian she was, when now her soul left the body to fly to eternity. An invalid and bedridden for years as she had been, this may furnish thought for those of that cult, so

numerous now in England, as well as many in this country, who think the living oft commune with, mingle with and converse with the dead.

Prior to 1815, there was only one Baptist Church. In it was contained many of the virtues now found in both the Primitive and the Missionary Baptist Church. The minister was called Elder. Foot washing was a yearly practice. Expulsion from the church was the penalty for not paying a debt. The church divided as was claimed on missions. The Missionary Baptist church has grown in numbers, but the Primitive Baptist church has held sacred these practices. Little whiskey was then made. Moderate drinking of wines, cider and brandies was in no way frowned upon and was indulged in by the Elders. Dancing was not thought harmful. In the dance hall, in the tavern, in business dealing at all times, there was held in mind the teaching of that religion.

As showing the feelings of that religion, we quote from a letter we recently read in a daily North Carolina paper. It is dated Dec. 10, 1814 and from Winifred Bryan of Johnson County, N. C. to her sons who were now in the army in the war of 1812. In part she says: "Your mother's hands that nursed you from infancy will be extended to your support while God shall give them strength. My dear sons: You are now out of my sight and beyond the reach of my voice, among strangers and a variety of characters; young men called into that service which has a tendency without a strict regard over one's self, to harden the feelings and brutalize the manners of men. I must, therefore, content myself the mode of requesting you to remember the many instructions I have given you whilst you were with me; to remember that you were raised in civil society, and guard against that encroachment of savage disposition incidental to camp life.

It is my particular request that you abstain from drinking excessively, cursing and swearing, and other debaucheries of human nature. Guard against the temptation of evil, and indulge not in anything that will tarnish the character of the Christian or the gentleman. Be kind and attentive to your soldiers; let not a hasty temper or unguarded expression incur their displeasure. Be obedient and dutiful to your superior officers. Endeavor to improve in discipline and should emergency require it support the honor of your family, your country, State, and the interest of your country." In this letter is found the old time Baptist religion, and in its classic words and poetry in prose is a

sermon which might take some other whole book to deliver.

In 1832 there was preached at Lilesville a new gospel. The preacher was now Rev. Culpepper. It advised missions. Things taught and believed in by their fathers were decried. They believed in an educated ministry. He was an orator of some note. A dissension arose. They called themselves Missionary Baptist. Dirt was cheap. The building was of logs. Another could be built. Quarreling and strife; contention and ill-feeling were no part of the religion of Elder Archibald Harris. Over the protest of his daughter, tradition is that he asked those who were of his faith to follow him, and they left the church and held their meeting out of doors and later built a church at Gum Springs. Our grandmother was present with her children and they followed Elder Archibald Harris. The Missionaries cried out and have ever since tried to dub them "Hardshell" but they, by common parlance of all, became known as the Primitive Baptist, and it is the honest opinion of this old sinner that they are in reality the First and Primitive Baptist, for we are constrained to think, yes we know, that in that church and its members is found more of that seven day honest commercial every day business integrity than any other church with whose members we have had considerable business dealings.

It was the impressions of this religion of his mother, so deeply marked on her personality, that were transmitted and found lodgment in the life of our father, and his life was in keeping with the tenets so dearly loved and held by this sainted grandmother,

Grandmother was an untiring worker. She carded, spun, wove and made all the clothing for the family. Her home was an humble one but neat and clean in every particular. She and her children were chums and companions. In the many busy duties she had, time was found to assist our father in trying to get an education. Tradition from all sources tells us that her children worshipped and idolized her.

On March 25, 1921, we made a pilgrimage to the old place where lived these grandparents, and where they were buried. Upon a hill some two hundred yards in a Western and slightly Southern direction from where the house on this farm now is, with a large Oak on the west for a monument, and the stump of a large oak recently cut down as a foot marker, there lie three graves. In one is our grandfather. In one is our aunt Omy. In one is our grandmother and aunt Jemina together. They both died the same day and were buried together. Jemina was then about fourteen years old. Were it not that living persons remembered the exact spot, we could not have located it. By the purchasing of 24 by 24 feet and the proper fencing of it, the spot where these ancestors are buried can be preserved forever. Their daughter, Nancy Ellen (Smith) Fessmire looked after and kept the graves in proper condition when she lived, but since her death, they have been neglected. If some relatives desire to take a collection to purchase the ground and properly fence it, kindly do not fail to allow us to subscribe for that purpose.

W. Thos. Smith





Smith Family Group



Dr. J. D. Smith

913 (See 506)

## DR. JOHN DEVERGIE SMITH

Dr. John Devergie Smith was born in Lilesville, Anson County, North Carolina, March 18th, 1829 and died December 28th, 1906; was buried in Oak Grove Cemetery, Paducah, Kentucky.

The first nine years of the life of our father were spent in Anson County. At the age of 76, from memory, he gave us the data from which we have been able to collect other information and compile this volume. He told us of the traditional history of the Smith ancestors being of English origin and having settled in Wake County in an early day; his great-grandfather, John Smith 2nd, having been born in Wake County; when a young man having moved to Anson County where he met Mary Flake, the daughter of Samuel Flake, and there married her.

He told us that tradition was that his forefather was a patriot and soldier in the Revolutionary War and well did his duty for his country. He remembered his great-uncle, John Smith 3rd, as the owner of a very large number of slaves; as the possessor of the most handsome carriage in all that part of North Carolina, costing \$1,000.00, which

was a small fortune in that day as wages of the ordinary laborer was twenty cents a day. His boyish recollection was that this relative was the richest and foremost citizen in that part of the country.

The life of his great-uncle, Samuel Smith, had impressed itself on his memory; his unspoken and well-known views on religious matters and his devotion to the Baptist Church had deeply impregnated his mind and no doubt helped to mould those youthful impressions in life, which always assert themselves in later years. For the life of this great-uncle he had a profound regard. He was not forgetful of the great physique and wonderful strength of his great-uncle, Eli Smith, whom he said was noted as a fighter and had engaged in many friendly bouts, bare fist and skull, for the entertainment of the multitude. He had ever been victorious, and died as the champion in those contests for physical supremacy.

He told us of his great-uncle, James Smith, a well-to-do farmer. He had distinct remembrance and splendid opinion of his grandfather, Ben Williams, who came to Tennessee in 1838 with him and his parents, purchased for and gave his parents a farm; then he returned to North Carolina. A



Smith Graveyard

traditional story that William Williams, the grandfather of Lucy Williams, his mother, had been a patriot and with George Washington in the Revolutionary War, was fresh in his memory; that while this forefather was in the service of his country, the Tories came and took from his family the last horse they had. The ancestral mother offered resistance and with drawn swords and threats to cut off her arm, the Tories compelled her to release the halter by which she held the horse. He, however, was forgetful of the name of this ancestor. The traditional fact that his grandfather Thomas Smith had been a successful business man and left a small fortune both to his father and to his aunt, Mary Ellen Capel, was still fresh in his mind.

He told us of the names of his uncles and aunts in the Williams family and of their respective destinations. He was in no way forgetful that his father in early youth had been the unfortunate victim of inherited wealth, which had helped to make dormant the latent energies and, benumbed his aspirations. These other surroundings, the early teachings of a very religious mother and the noble influences had been the youthful environments which were to shape his destiny; which was to arouse a spirit of research, which gave him courage for conquest and was a beacon light in the distant horizon urging him onward with promised reward.

At the age of nine, with his parents, he trudged his way across the mountain paths into the far west and located six miles northwest of Lexington, Henderson County, Tennessee, to live among the pioneers, none of whom had been there for more than eighteen years. As a boy in this new settled wilderness he spent the next nine years of his life with his parents on the farm. His life as a boy here was not one of ease or leisure but one of continuous work and hard knocks. We feel sure that he never suffered from the pangs of hunger but he lived in an humble home; helped to fell the forest, clear the lands, split the rails, till the soil and gather the crops. Wild game yet abounded and trapping and hunting were a part of the farmer's life.

Arriving at the age of eighteen years, three months in a log cabin had been the sum total of his scholastic education. He received some assistance at home, knew how to read and write and was versed in the fundamental rules of arithmetic. Very little of sports and games of pleasure had been indulged in by him as a boy. His early surroundings, his family name, his mother's teachings and the

history of his ancestors was to him an inspiration. At the age of eighteen he bid his parents good-bye and embarked upon his own resources to sail the seas of life. For two years he devoted his time to the study of medicine under the direction of Dr. Hays of Red Mound. From this time until death he was ever a hard book student, seeking to continuously store away in memory's reservoir some new idea, thought or useful information. At the age of thirty-five when in the army, he was one day criticized by a superior for some grammatical error. So deep did this wound his feelings that upon his return home after the war, he purchased an English Grammar, made diligent study of its contents, so as to ever again avoid further criticism and to perfect himself in the use of language. In later life few college graduates used purer English more correctly spoken or written than did our father.

In those days few physicians were college graduates, while many of the most successful practitioners had never seen a college door but had gleaned their knowledge from the Medical Books and from the local fraternity, coupled with actual experience. After two years' study our father went to Benton County and entered upon his profession. Successful from the beginning, he soon won the esteem and confidence of the people.

In 1851 in search of further light and knowledge he sought admission to the Masonic Fraternity. He was deemed worthy; found qualified and duly accepted. He entered the portals of the Lodge Room, professed his faith in God and announced that the Holy Bible was for him a guide in life. He was duly exalted to the high degree of a Master Mason, and, having learned the uses of the implements of Masonry, he began his travels eastward and with head erect he has ever continued his journey in that direction. His life afterwards showed his high regard for the true observance of those lofty religious and deeply moral obligations so impressively taught at the shrine and inculcated by the tenets and dogma of that order. In 1861 he took the Chapter degrees just prior to joining the army.

Shortly after reaching Benton County, he met Vetria White, sought her heart and proffered her his hand. It seemed most natural that she, well-known as the most beautiful young lady in all that country, should look with favor upon the proposal of the young, rising physician. On December 8, 1850, at Sugar Tree, the talented young doctor and charming daughter of Captain James White, the Indian fighter, were united

in holy wedlock. Coal oil had not yet been discovered and tallow candles were the only means of light at night. It was frequently customary at marriage ceremonies to have two small girls, one on each side, to hold candles while the ceremony was performed. They were termed candle holders. A religious meeting was then in progress and several ministers were present. It was decided to have two ministers to act as candle holders while a third performed the ceremony. We know of no other instance where three ministers were employed and took an active part in the ceremonies attending the marriage vows. So perfectly were this pair welded together that we doubt if in after life either one ever seriously contemplated an idea of separation. Their purse was small; their courage large; their faith great; the future uncertain but they began the team-work in life's battle.

Perhaps at the meeting then in progress, or at all events a short time before the marriage, mother had united herself with the church and had been told that dancing was in violation of the rules of the church and should not be indulged in. Shortly afterwards our parents attended a dance and mother declined to dance. When she saw her husband dancing, her idea on the subject had so changed that tears came to her eyes. When father learned how his wife felt in the matter, he ceased to dance and never again indulged in that pastime. He, a short time after that, also became identified with the church and was more opposed to dancing than mother.

He closely studied the rules and regulations of his church; was ever afterwards attentive to his duties. When a boy we once asked him for money to go and see that old-time, familiar play "Davy Crockett". Without a word concerning the cost, he handed us the money, then said, "I am always willing that all my boys shall do anything I ever did. I never went to the theatre but once in my life. I am perfectly willing for you to go once, but never again ask me for money to go to the theater." We confess we have since attended but always managed to finance the deal other than seeking assistance or advice from our parents. Both of our parents religiously refrained from going to the theater all of their lives, believing that the influence was not for the best, however, offered no criticism to their children after they became of age. A lecture or musical entertainment and things of that character, they encouraged. At the time of their death, moving pictures had not yet reached Paducah.

Shortly after they were married, father ordered a bill of drugs, at the bottom of which he included five boxes of cigars. Mother, on reading it, in a jocular way, asked that he add to this five boxes of snuff. She remarked that she was going to dip snuff, at the same time reminding him that smoking in a room always gave her a headache. Without argument, he ran his pen through the item of tobacco and so highly did he regard the feeling of his wife that ever afterwards he refrained from the use of tobacco in all forms. He tried to prevent his boys from learning the use of tobacco, but after they grew into manhood, they met with no further criticism. Of his seven boys who grew to manhood, John Devergie Jr. and the writer are the only ones who did not form the tobacco habit.

After two more years of practice, father had saved a small sum of money and was eager for a Medical College education. Captain White had faith in the future of his son-in-law and kindly proffered the helping hand in the way of finance. This was accepted as a loan and afterwards repaid. In the latter part of his life our father spoke in a most grateful way of this assistance and of the high esteem in which he held in memory the name of his father-in-law.

In 1852 he entered the Medical College at Memphis, Tenn. and there pursued his studies until he graduated.

In 1854 he located at Friendship, Tenn., to practice and pursue his profession. Sawmills were yet scarce in that section while horses were used as a motive power to run them. Our father built the first house of sawed lumber at or near Friendship. Log buildings were as yet used by others. This house burned a few years afterwards. At the time it was built it was considered a mansion; however, the modern housewife would consider it a nuisance because of its size, unless there was abundant help to keep it clean.

This house was a six-room house with sufficient lumber in it to have built a sixteen room house. Sills twelve by twelve inches were laid on a brick wall for a foundation. Sleepers of sufficient strength for a mill were mortised in these and fitted with exactness. Rooms twelve feet high, fourteen by sixteen feet in width and length, two in front below with a hallway ten feet wide between them. A veranda five feet in width running the whole way in frontal part of the house and portico extending ten feet in front of the hallway. A hallway ten feet wide extended along the



whole rear of these two rooms, back of that was a dining room and a kitchen of the same dimensions as the front rooms.

Two upstairs rooms were reached by a winding stairway in the front hall, while a winding stairway from mother's room also led to one of these rooms. Large pillars held up a portico and veranda upstairs as below and pillars from there held up the roof of the building. On the south side down stairs was our parents' room with a bed in one corner and across in another was a low bed for the smaller children. Across the hall was the parlor and in it a bed, the home of the Methodist Minister, who happened to be passing through—the Tavern where the Presiding Elder universally put up when there—but unlike other Taverns, no compensation was accepted for lodging and food. Over our parent's room was sister's room and across the hallway was the room for the boys and hired men. In this room were four beds, one in each corner with plenty of space in the center. In that day this was the most desirable home in that community. Children were plentiful in our home; at the same time there lives today a woman who as an orphan girl, found a place in the hearts and home of Dr. Smith and his wife—who grew into womanhood in this home as an evidence of their love and bigness of character.

We had a large front yard extending in three directions from the house. In this yard grew many flowers. However numerous the company was in our home, there was always vacant space for others.

Success again at Friendship became the companion of our father and he began to accumulate and gain a competence for old age. His practice broadened in every way—the distance of a single patient was at times a day's journey.

Our father's ancestors had owned slaves and he was not averse to that prevailing condition and had become the owner of several negroes. The civil war came on and father threw his destiny with the Southland. He volunteered in the fall of 1861 as a private, to take the musket and with it the chances in battles that were to come under Col. W. R. Hill, Company 1, Capt. William Gay., 47th Tenn. Volunteers.

His superior officers thought differently and he was placed in the Medical Department and elected Assistant Surgeon, later commissioned as Surgeon by the Surgeon General at Richmond, Ind. He was for a time in charge of Dawson Hospital, Greensboro, Ga., and later Surgeon of the post and was Surgeon of 47th and later 29th. Four years he fol-

lowed the gallant Confederate forces, rejoicing in their successes, grieving in their defeats, nursing the sick, operating upon the wounded and giving consolation to the dying. Without compensation and price he gave his time, the best of his talents and services to his Southland. Of his experience during the war he has told us little. We once spoke to him of how highly we were often entertained by Confederate soldiers relating to us their war experiences, and that since we had grown up and gone away from home, we had often wondered why he had related so little of his personal experiences in the war to his children. He said that, to his mind, the Civil War was a most unhappy experience and he regretted that some way had not been found to have prevented it. He thought the less said about it, the quicker would be healed the wounds received therefrom; that he thought best to try and forget it.

This was in keeping with his whole life, as he has in no time "lived in the past". If yesterday was a failure, it was not to be remembered to lessen his ardor of today. If a victory had been accomplished, he was content that it should herald its own tidings of success. He was always, rather, alert today to so shape his life's work that on tomorrow the sun should shine with more splendor. However, in the last four or five years of his life, the love of his youth became the sweetheart of his old age. He actively took part in the meetings of the Confederate Veterans, and, save the church, there was no gathering to which he looked forward with so much pleasure as when his old comrades were to gather in meeting and talk over the days of army life.

When General Bragg started on his campaign through Kentucky, our father was left at Knoxville because of sickness. When able to travel, he started alone on his journey to catch up with his command. Struggling through the country he came to Williamsburg, Ky. In this mountainous section until today, the spirit that "might makes right" is prevalent. The inhabitants were practically all of Union sympathy. So soon as our father reached the village he rode to the public well and dismounted to water and let his horse rest for a few moments. A crowd immediately gathered and many questions were asked. He treated the crowd in a courteous manner, answered the questions, informed them who he was, where from and where he was going. He told them that Confederate soldiers were on the road all the way to Knoxville and were coming in the same direction as he was. So they were, but he

did not tell them that they were in small numbers and like himself left behind for various reasons, single, in pairs or small squads and were trying to catch up with and join General Bragg.

He noticed one man nod to two others and the three walked away. He was somewhat curious as to the meaning of it but of course did not ask any questions. After resting he mounted his horse, bid the crowd good-day and went on his journey. Passing the outskirts of the village he rode down a hill. At the foot of this hill a small branch crossed the road and a hill rose in front of him. The land was timbered with a thick undergrowth on each side and as he reached the brook crossing the road, the three men who had left the crowd came out of the woods. One had a shot gun, one a rifle and one a club. They ordered him to halt, demanded who he was and where going. He quickly figured that murder was contemplated and that cowardice would be an encouragement. Halting his horse, he looked them in the face and said, "You gentlemen stood at the public well a few moments ago and heard me tell you I was, where from and where going. Of late there has been too much interference with the Confederate soldiers by the civilians in this locality and the sooner the civilians learn to attend to their own business without harrassing and annoying the Confederate soldiers, the better it will be for this community." The men looked at each other; seemed dazed for the moment; stepped back from in front of his horse and one said, "You can go on". Doubtless the men thought that from the bravery exhibited that Confederate soldiers were near in the rear and as father rode away he never looked backward and was not further molested.

After four years service in the Confederate army, father became ill and was given a furlough to go home. At home, for thirteen months, he was confined to his room and the most of the time to his bed. While still in that condition the war ended. His property had become depleted, his slaves gone, his health enfeebled and his condition was critical.

Upon recovering his health, he again started in his profession and gathered together what he had left of his property. During the years after his marriage, along with his profession, he had always been a student of the Bible and in 1858, had a license given to him by the Methodist Church to preach the gospel. We feel sure that at no time in life did he ever entertain any idea of following that as a profession, or for gain, but

as Ministers could not be obtained at that time with any regularity, he felt it his duty, in the absence of the pastor to preach the gospel to his people. On numerous occasions in our youth, we have heard our father preach in the pulpit.

At Friendship, once a sainted, good, old mother said to our father, "Dr. Smith! I have always thought that you were one of the best men I ever knew and that if any one goes to heaven you ought to go—but when I read in the Bible, 'Woe unto the Doctors and the Lawyers,' I worry a great deal about you." Father had been her family physician for many years and she had heard him preach the gospel. It was not anything in his life that worried her but a belief that most doctors were barred from heaven and a thought that our father should be among those excepted from this condemnation.

From the time father reached Friendship, he had been closely identified with the M. E. Church and for practically the whole of this period of his life had been a member of the Board of Stewards, while a good part of these years he was chairman of the Board. A rule of his was never to make a charge against a Methodist Minister for Medical services. If deeds could speak, there are several poor widows who could testify to similar generosity on his part.

As soon as the war ended, a new condition arose in the Southland. There were few white men in Dyer or Crockett counties save Confederate soldiers, all now disfranchised. The ones allowed to vote were mostly negroes and a few men termed "Carpet Baggers" sent from the north to hold the offices and appointed by the officials at Washington.

Of these officials, our father told us, the sheriff was one,—a good citizen, of well-meaning intentions, but helpless. As to the other officials, all perhaps now dead, it is always best when men are dead to let their evil deeds be forgotten. Suffice it to say, they were not of a very high type of citizen and no doubt in coming south they had financial greed uppermost in mind.

As always follows war, criminality came to the surface. Timidity and fear restrained few criminally inclined. Theft, arson and all manners of crime became rampant. There were no telephones or telegraph wires and the country was thickly wooded with forest abounding in every direction; escape was almost always possible while capture meant trial before a negro jury. In bondage for a life-time, children of those in bondage, absolutely devoid of all education, were as ignorant as a six year old child regarding the

duties of a good citizen. At times drunken by the newly granted liberty; frequently influenced by disreputable officials; more often deterred by fear of personal injury, these negroes were wholly unfit to perform those duties, and conviction was impossible.

To overcome these conditions, to establish law and order; to protect their families, their homes and their property, the better class of Confederate soldiers organized a second government. Our father thought that the membership of that organization included every Confederate soldier in Dyer and Crockett counties unless it was some lawless one who was not wanted. As we remember, General Forest of Memphis, Tenn. was the highest official. (This is true) It is not with any feeling of shame but a profound gladness that we announce that our father was deemed worthy and selected as the Captain of the Ku-Klux-Klan at Friendship. As such, he had direction over others and was instrumental in the establishment of law and order. He participated in seeing that just punishment was meted out after due trial to men who had no regard for law or decency.

In the spring of 1920 when on a visit to Friendship, we were elated when an old Confederate soldier came and whispered in our ears, "Tom, your father administered the Ku-Klux-Klan oath to me". He was not telling me any news as mother had first conveyed this information to me some time before her death. We then went to the office and asked father about that interesting period of his life. We think the earliest recollection we have of any passing event in our lives is when the Ku-Klux-Klan came to our home one evening, all dressed in white robes, with tall pointed caps, belts with small pieces of tin bent in circular form hanging in such close array as to tingle as they moved around. We were greatly frightened until some one older than ourself took us in his arms and assured us that he would not let them hurt us.

A friendly visit by a neighbor to our house was interrupted and Mr. Rice was asked to go to the store, unlock same and take out a party who had been left in the back room to sober up from a drunken spree. As we remember, he was taken out and given a whipping and made to promise to support his family with his earnings instead of spending it wholly for drink as had been his custom. As we remember, this punishment caused a reformation that modern imprisonment has rarely been able to perfect.

Horse thieves, to whom a lock and chain on a stable door had no terror, were quickly brought under control after three of their

members all accidentally met death at the lower end of three ropes hanging from the limb of a tree. This event took place near Dyersburg one night after due trial and a verdict of guilty. We have never been advised as to what particular one of the several Klans of Dyer county attended these ceremonies.

On numerous occasions in our boyhood days we have listened to the same story oft repeated by a negro. Proud that while a slave, by his wits, he had been able to evade punishment from his master, he would tell us of feats performed and punishment escaped. These were mostly such petty acts, as sucking stolen eggs and kindred things, to his mind's eye, rightly attributes of virtue in the life of a slave.

The highest turning point of his life and the proudest feat in this negro's career was his escape from the Ku-Klux. Just what particular act of indiscretion he was guilty of, we do not remember, but his eyes would sparkle as he would laughingly tell us about it. One night, hearing them approach, he barricaded his cabin door as best he could, then began his retreat up the stick and dirt chimney. Reaching the top he very quietly crawled on the roof opposite the door. As the Ku-Klux broke open the door and entered the room, he leaped from the roof to the ground and began the race for life. A few moments later he was discovered making long strides across the field. The Ku-Klux accustomed to long marches, followed in pursuit. The negro, after reaching the forest, however, soon made his escape. While this race to him was most exciting, the Ku-Klux, in a race after a scared negro, was as much of a farce as a pack of our dogs in a fox chase. He told us of the "awful whipping" he escaped and how for many nights thereafter he slept in the forest lest the Ku-Klux might come again to see him.

After the right of franchise had been restored to Confederate soldiers, the Ku-Klux-Klans publicly disbanded. After this, roving bands under the guise of the Ku-Klux-Klan, committed some depredations but these were illegitimate associations and had naught in common with the prior organization. To any one who at this late day would besmirch or throw discredit on the Ku-Klux-Klan, we would say that you cast stigma and dishonor on practically every Confederate soldier who lived in Dyer and Crockett counties during these trying periods, as they were the sum total of that society.

With the war ended and the rights of citizenship restored to Confederate soldiers, the south now began its march of progress.

Transportation had now become a necessity. The cotton gin had won its laurels, and with the use of horses as a motive power, it was able to separate as much as one thousand pounds of lint from the seed in one single day. A few years later steam power was used more successfully. The south had the Mississippi River but that, at places, was distant from the interior. Various enterprises for railroad building were organized, one to build a road from the Ohio River down through West Kentucky to Union City, to Newbern, to Friendship, to Brownsville and on into Mississippi was launched with Brownsville, Tenn. as headquarters. There, the moving spirits lived, but they came to the small village of Friendship for a leader and our father was made President of the company.

For two years he devoted practically all of his time to this work. The road bed was graded from Brownsville to Friendship, a distance of forty miles. Railroad building machinery had not as yet been invented. By spading, the dirt was lifted and thrown into wagons and with teams conveyed from places where not needed to places where wanted. The shorter hauls were made with wheelbarrows with Irish motive power. A large Irish emigration was then coming westward and they were largely employed in public work of this character.

Log cabins were built along the right-of-way and in these the laborers working on the road would live for weeks, at which time they would be torn down and rebuilt further down the road.

This enterprise was progressing very nicely and no doubt it would have succeeded but there came the panic in the seventies. Funds could no longer be procured and the company went into liquidation. With it, our father took his losses.

The war in the sixties had been his first financial blow and the railroad in the seventies again crippled his financial condition. As he was not yet an old man, he was unwilling to surrender. He again actively resumed the practice of medicine. He purchased a large tract of land, about 120 acres of which was set out in orchard and berries. Being of a generous soul, he heavily endorsed for friends.

To try and avert further loss he purchased a \$7,000 flour mill and began its operation. Later he took over a general merchandise store and paid its indebtedness. He then built a cotton gin, purchased a wheat thrasher, ran a brick yard and constructed a saw mill. For some years he ran these various enterprises and with them, followed his profession. Rising at four o'clock in the morning, he

would start things in circulation. About nine he would mount his steed and go to see his patients. Sometimes he would return to the mill in the afternoon and again start out about four o'clock, reaching home late for supper. From then on until ten o'clock he would spend his time in posting his books, answering his correspondence and reading his medical books and journals.

As a boy, on several occasions when he had a long journey, he would have the writer hitch a horse to the buggy and have us drive the horse, while he would read his medical books or journals. Sunday, for him, was a day of rest. Save the necessary medical calls, he devoted this day to rest, attending church and reading the Bible or some church paper. On more than one occasion, as a boy, he has criticised us for reading some secular paper on Sunday. We do not think that he ever in any way forbade it, but suggested that our Sabbath reading should be of a religious character.

The busy life of our father moved down these various avenues for some years. Finally the store was burned with no insurance, the cause we were never able to determine but later it was suspected to have been broken into goods removed and burned to prevent detection and search for the goods. The sawmill and cotton gin were dismantled and the machinery sold. The flour mill, a failure from the time it was built, was abandoned in hopes of selling the machinery for something, but it later burned without any insurance.

Being eighteen miles from railroad, transportation was partially the cause of these properties being no better financial investments. Mr. Boykin, who no doubt was a son of John B. Boykin one of the first settlers of Crockett County in 1820, had grown weary of the fruit farm and had gone west of the Mississippi river. The farm was later sold to pay a debt. Our father was still financially involved. The earnings of his practice had not been sufficient to pay the losses incurred in the business enterprises.

In the early days of our Government some thought congeniality was to be had by drinking of wines, brandies and intoxicants. The hotel was called tavern and most every tavern had its bar room. Around the counter the traveler, the politician and the gentry would gather to discuss the current events of the day. Papers were few and here the citizenship would congregate to hear the news as brought by the latest arrival from a distant village. Wines and brandies were the chief drinks with an occasional drink of whiskey.



There was a small or no license and the general store kept these goods as staple stock in kegs and barrels. Here the home dweller would fill his bottles or jugs to carry home and drink around the fireside. To be sure, there were some who did not drink at all. The drunkard existed but was not a welcome guest. He loafed where friends were willing to endure his presence.

Later, license eliminated the general store, while the occasional Dram Shop grew to be a saloon. Brandy and wine being the more expensive, the drink of whiskey was encouraged as it brought more income. The saloon became the Mecca of the gambling fraternity, the breeder of crime, the advocate of the vulgar, the home of the vagabond, and the most brilliant intellect was the most gifted one in profaning the name of God. Friendship, a village of 150 souls, became the home of four saloons. On Saturday there would gather a crowd in these places. When they got well under the influence of strong drink, led by a leader who was subsequently killed, some would get on their horses and race up and down the street all day, returning occasionally to the saloon for a fresh supply of whiskey. Because of the danger of being run over, mother would not allow us to go out into the street to play on these occasions.

Tiring of these conditions in the seventies, father began a correspondence and by agreement with others from different parts of the state, they met in Nashville. From there to the Legislature, they made their plea and entered their protest. Similar conditions were found to exist in other villages in the state. What has since been known in Tennessee as the Four Mile Law was passed and this prevented the sale of intoxicating liquor within four miles of a school house, incorporated town excepted. This at once eliminated the saloon from Friendship. Later school houses were erected in Tennessee and a school maintained in order to banish some saloons from the locality. We believe that when the state finally went dry, this same law was re-enacted save in case of incorporated towns which were not excepted. We think that to the work and influence of father, there is as much credit due as to any one else dead or living for the passage of this law. It was this law that largely created the condition and molded the sentiment which eventually made Tennessee dry.

Having disposed of his property in 1882, father moved to Dyersburg to engage exclusively in the practice of his profession. His reputation had gone before him and it was not long before he had the most extensive

practice of any one in Dyersburg. He kept two saddle horses and one buggy horse. In later years, Dr. Vernon told us that during our residence there, father rode on an average of forty miles a day. He said that he and father had at times compared notes on the question. Most of this was on horseback. Shortly after moving there, father purchased what he said was the best saddle horse he ever rode. His all day's pace was a running fox trot of six miles an hour.

Shortly after reaching Dyersburg, father was elected a member of the Board of Stewards of the M. E. Church and remained a member as long as there. While there, seeing the necessity of a new school building, public spirited citizens began a movement to erect one by public subscription rather than by taxation. Father was chosen as one of the active members and we rather think that he was Chairman of this committee. This was well under headway when we moved away. Later the building was erected.

In 1885 a gentleman came to our home and told father he was compiling a book containing the biographical sketches of a limited number of Tennessee's most select self made men and that father and Captain Latta were the only two he was going to interview in Dyer County. In 1888 this book was published. It is quite a large book with morocco binding and contains nothing save the biographical sketches of two hundred and seventy people. The sketches of father and of Captain Latta are the only ones from Dyer County. If any one of the descendants of our parents should have an opportunity to purchase a second hand copy of "William S. Speer's Sketches of Prominent Tennesseans" we think it a most interesting heritage to hand down to posterity. It is not only interesting because of this sketch but the writer has seemed most skilled in selecting such an interesting list of citizens to write about. On pages 270 and 271 the writer says in part of our father: "One of the best specimens of self-made, yet successful representative Tennesseans who have come under the observation of the writer is Dr. J. D. Smith. He has always been a close student and has zealously devoted his time to the study and practice of his profession; has ever tried to systematically store away in convenient form his fund of knowledge; has ever avoided dissimulation; lived the life of a plain, matter-of-fact man; held sacred every trust committed to his care and compromised no interest over which he had charge. He has been a liberal financial supporter of his church and the charitable institutions of the country. Per-



sonally, he is a very attractive gentleman. He stands five feet, ten inches high, has a large round head and a stout, round body, nowhere presenting an angular appearance. His character and reputation, like his physical make-up, is that of a well rounded man. In manner, he is exceedingly affable and wins friends because he is the ideal family physician."

Dr. Moss says of him: "He is a man of extraordinary mind. He is today one of the most diligent of students, and, judging from the vast fund of knowledge of which he is in possession, it is very plain that he has ever been studious. He is a man of never ceasing and untiring energy and in a struggle, whether it be some difficult problem or some mysterious subject worthy of investigation; or to cure some old chronic case of ankle joint disease, which demands skill, wisdom, patience and perseverance, long, long after others would have despaired and given up the field, he is still to be seen as fresh and vigorous as when the struggle began contending for victory. He is a firm and faithful friend to the sick, whatever be their trouble. Fortunate, indeed, may one consider himself, who when stricken with some terrible malady or with some fearful injury, can call to his aid the wise counsel and steady hand of Dr. Smith. He never deserts or forsakes but lends the best of his aid and skill during the most dangerous period, and, if it be the will of the All-wise Providence that his patient must go, then he can console those who need consolation and advise those who need advice with that Christian spirit that should ever characterize every practitioner of medicine."

Having reached the age of fifty-eight and as the heavy work of a country practice was telling on him, in 1887 father moved to Ninth and Jefferson Street, Paducah, Ky. where he lived until death overtook him. He had not been in Paducah long before he had a good practice and at the end of the second or third year he had the most extensive practice of any physician in Paducah. His reputation was not only that of a physician but that of a surgeon. This lead he no doubt would have retained until his death had he given his whole time to his profession. Shortly after reaching Paducah he was made a member of the Board of Stewards of the M. E. Church and for some years was its Chairman and was closely identified with it until his death.

In 1892, after all his children had finished school, he increased his activities in the prohibition cause and later plunged deeply into this work. His debts all paid, his children

no longer dependent on him, he had but one motive in life and that was the betterment of humanity. At a boarding house in Paducah some years prior to his death the question of success in life came up. A gentleman seventy years old was present. He was of a kindly nature, charitable disposition, a devoted husband, a good citizen against whom naught could be said. When shortly after, he died, he left to each of his several children a small fortune or at least a considerable sum of money. This gentleman said on this occasion that he had made a financial success in life, but that our father had not only made a financial success, but he would very gladly exchange all he had of wealth if he could say of his children, what he could say of the children of Dr. Smith—and that our father had been the one who had made a real success in life.

It seemed that this gentleman had done everything in life that any one could do, yet he was not satisfied with the greatest purpose in life. The contentment that father had in his late life, his ability to wield a subtle influence that helped to mold the character of his children was more of a satisfaction to him than had been the attainment of a large fortune to this wealthy citizen. We know that his influence, his life, his teachings have made a lasting impression on his children and have been of a restraining character when temptation has come their way.

Father told the writer some years before he died that once he thought that he would accumulate considerable wealth and having met defeat in that field of action, he was of the opinion that it was most fortunate for him that it had turned out as it did. He said that had he been able to have given to his children that wealth he once hoped for, he felt sure there would have been among his boys one black sheep anyway. However, he was able to give them all a fair education; they had to learn how to work and were all good citizens, instead of some one of them growing up in idleness and possibly of a worthless character. He said that he was proud of his children.

He then told us he had entirely abandoned the idea of leaving to his children anything of wealth but was seeking to so use his surplus earnings that when he died he would leave his children a name and example which they would prize more highly than any wealth he might lay aside. In this, he well succeeded and in our breast is no pang of regret that for the last fifteen years of his life he devoted the whole of his surplus earnings and all of

his spare time to writing, printing and circulating prohibition literature, and speaking for that cause.

For some years he caused to be printed and circulated from Paducah, a Prohibition paper. When others failed to contribute, he pushed his collections for Medical services and paid all bills. He often deprived himself of many small things in order to push the work in which he was so deeply interested. Twice he stumped the 9th Kentucky Congressional District as the nominee of his party for Congress and for fifteen years prior to his death was Chairman of the State Committee. Save George W. Bain, the noted temperance lecturer who devoted his life to the lecture platform, we doubt if any one in Kentucky ever spent so large a percent of his earnings, or an equal amount of his time and energy, as did father to the cause of Prohibition. To his memory there is considerable credit due for the molding of the sentiment which made Kentucky and Tennessee dry.

With this pronounced sentiment on that question, among those in Paducah, as well as in Dyersburg who always called him when some member of the family was sick, were several who were engaged in the saloon business. They well knew that he had no personal feeling in the matter but that he was honest and earnest in his convictions and they had faith in his greatness as the family physician.

Sometime after the Civil War, father became very ill and two physicians from Dyersburg were called. Realizing the seriousness of the situation, they informed him that if he had any message to leave to his family or instructions to give, that he best do it as he had not long to live. Calling for paper and pencil, he wrote out a prescription and asked that it be filled and given to him. The attending physicians demurred and informed him that this meant death, itself. He said that he knew that it was a heroic and powerful stimulant but could do no worse than would be the result unless it was ministered. He said he thought it was none too severe and was what he needed. Yielding to his wishes, the medicine was given, acted as he thought, proved effective and he recovered.

We have just been told recently that prior to his death there was a malady spreading over Paducah and many deaths had resulted. A special meeting of physicians was called to discuss the subject and to formulate some plan of action to find out the most successful treatment to abate it. Several had outlined their treatment and theories when father gave his ideas of the disease and his method of treatment. Some protested that the

medicine in itself was so powerful that it meant death to take it in that condition. Our father answered that the conditions justified a drastic treatment and needed strong antidotes. He said that for twenty years in these cases he had followed that treatment and had never as yet killed a patient. He asked if anyone present could name any death among the numerous patients to whom he had given that treatment in the then prevailing epidemic. A young physician quietly arose, walked over to father and told him that he had four patients none of whom could live more than thirty six hours. In a few moments this young physician left the meeting, went to the drug store and had the prescriptions filled as directed by father. He put his patients on it that evening and all four recovered. As a physician and a surgeon in West Kentucky, there was not one more successful and superior to our father. Of him a well known attorney once said to us, "Your father had the best thinker of any man with whom I ever came in personal contact." We think that no brainer man lived in all West Kentucky. As he wished, he left a life to which any descendant in any age might well point back with pride. We once heard a Minister in the pulpit say, "I have little use for the degenerated son of a noble sire who continuously boasts of what his ancestors did, but I rather admire that man who can say I have lived a clean life and have so reared a boy or a girl that he has accomplished something of worth in life."

Our father is to be doubly admired because from obscurity, by his own efforts he attained something of greatness; because of his seventy-eight years of existence, the whole of it since eighteen years of age, had been one continued laborious effort in which he never faltered; because he has reared a large family, all members of which were counted respectable in the communities where they lived; because his life has been an inspiration to his children and to his grandchildren.

We were recently struck by the idea of success in life as it relates to wealth. In a small city a gentleman died at the age of sixty-five. For years he had lived in that city, was the richest man in that part of the state and head of the largest business enterprises. His estate inventoried ten million dollars, yet, when he died, six inches of space was the most any one of the three daily papers deemed necessary to inform the community of the passing away of this rich man. A gentleman who had known him all of his life said to us, "It seems so strange to me that a man

who could and did so little for others would not even leave a part of his wealth where it would help humanity."

To father there were two worlds of action. Mother was the Queen of the home, while the business and professional life was his dominion. He freely furnished for the home all that was wanted without complaint, criticism or suggestion. In his domain he brooked no interference. Their tastes were somewhat dissimilar. Mother was very fond of sweets and the table was always furnished with these provisions. Father wished food of simplicity, corn bread, hot biscuit, well cooked; milk, butter and eggs were his staples of life. Meat, he ate sparingly of, and, oft pushed back some dessert and finished with corn bread and butter. He was the lightest eater in our family and often said that to always leave the table hungry was the best of medicines. He never ate between meals but was fond of fruit before retiring. Rarely did he ever drink ice water, preferring cistern or well water, while ice cream was frequently declined with thanks.

If he ever stood before a soda fountain and drank a soft drink, it must have been on some rare occasion. Of lemonade he was very fond, if not too cold. In later life mother was as foolish as a child for the best grade of candy and it was constantly provided in our home, however, father ate sparingly of it.

To him good health and correct living was dependent upon correct eating as well as correct thinking. In warm weather he invariably wore a black alpaca coat. When he was past the age of seventy and when there was no one at home save him, mother and the writer, we were very much surprised to see him appear at the table one day without his coat. This, we think, is the only time we ever saw him go to the table to eat without his coat, thus violating his rule of Southern gentility. We do not remember ever to have heard him criticise any one of his children for so appearing, he being contented to furnish the example.

After mother's death in June 1906, father lost all interest in life. He refused to give up his home and said that he was going to live the balance of his life in the room where she had passed away. Against the advice of friends, he plunged into the Prohibition work and stumped the district as the nominee for Congress. When at home, many afternoons he would have the driver take him to the cemetery and there for an hour and at times two hours gaze at the grave of the woman with whom he had so long lived. We found a small tin type picture of mother

taken when about forty years of age, had it enlarged and gave it to father. No boy with a new toy was happier. He had forgotten that such a picture was in existence. He had us hang it so that lying on his bed he could see it. The activities of the Prohibition campaign were of help to him as it diverted his mind from his grief for the time being, but this over, he began to decline and about the middle of November he took to his bed. We went home to help nurse him in his last illness. Life no longer had any charms for him. Once refusing to take the medicine his attending physician was offering, he pointed to the picture of mother and shaking his head in a negative way to the entreaty of his physician he said, "What is the use". On December 28th, 1906, he passed away. The doctor told us it was because of a broken blood vessel, but we know better.

Grief had worn away the cords which bind the soul to mortal man; the heart longings had become a reality; the hearse of heaven stood gently by while the spirit of man with a welcome smile gently leaped into it and quickly faded into eternity—going in search of her whose life had been so intimately interwoven with his for fifty-five years and six months; whose absence had been for six long months one continued tragedy to his grief-stricken life.

In the Egyptian Book of the Dead, written six thousand years ago and the oldest religious manual possessed by mankind, the soul of the departed, pleading in the judgment hall of Osiris is represented as saying in part, "I have caused no one to hunger, I have caused no one to weep, neither have I committed murder nor commanded others to murder. I have caused pain to no man; have not falsified the measure of corn, nor the measure of the length of the field, nor the measure of the scales. I have not stolen the milk from the mouth of the infant, nor have I stolen the cattle from the pasture, nor have I caught the birds and the fishes of the gods. I have not been eavesdropping. I have not committed adultery. I have not been deaf to the word of truth. I have not eaten up my heart with affliction; I have not been disdainful, nor have I made many words. I have given bread to the hungry, drink to the thirsty, raiment to the naked, ferrage to him without a boat. I have been a father to the orphan, shelter to the freezing. I have gained my possessions by righteousness. Save me, protect me, I am one of clean mouth and of clean hands."

With these words we commend our father's spirit to immortality, in full faith that his

life, his deeds and his works have been of an acceptable commendation to the Ruler of the Universe. Six feet under Mother Earth, his remains lie in a copper casket at Oak Grove Cemetery in Paducah, Ky.

Of him the Paducah papers said in part: "Paducah, Kentucky Daily Register, Saturday Dec. 29, 1906. God's noble worker is called to his reward. Dr. John D. Smith, Sr. passed to a higher home yesterday afternoon at 3:15 o'clock. He was a writer of note and a professional man of foremost rank in the Medical World.

Closing his eyes as in peaceful sleep, surrounded by sorrowing members of his family, Dr. John D. Smith, Sr. yesterday afternoon at 3:15 o'clock passed into the Great Beyond, going to a higher home as a reward for his noble and illustrious career upon this earth. Death overtook him at the family home on Ninth and Jefferson Streets, where for the past three weeks he lay gradually declining from the infirmities incidental to advanced age. With his dissolution, the community is delivered a strong blow, as it takes from their midst one of the most consistent and highly respected citizens, pleasant memories of whom will ever cling to all.

Dr. J. D. Smith Sr. was born March 28, 1829, in Anson County, North Carolina, having been the son of John Auld Smith and his wife, Lucy Williams Smith. During 1836 the family moved from North Carolina to Henderson County, Tenn., where Dr. Smith grew to manhood, he having received his academic education in the schools of that section. At the age of 18 years he commenced studying medicine at Red Mound, Tenn. and two years later entered upon and practiced the profession in Benton County Tenn. from whence he went to the Memphis Medical College and graduated with high honors in 1854. Finishing his collegiate course, the deceased settled in Friendship, Crockett County, Tenn. and remained there commanding a lucrative patronage until 1861 when he volunteered in the 47th Tennessee Confederate Infantry and went to the front to serve his cause. He served as assistant surgeon for the regiment until after the battle of Murfreesboro, when he was, without solicitation on his part, promoted to surgeon and assigned to the 29th Tennessee regiment for duty. After the battle of Chickamauga he was placed in charge of the Dawson Hospital at Greensborough, Georgia and remained there until the downfall of Atlanta, when he went to Andersonville and shortly afterwards to Iuka, Miss., fitting up the hospital at the latter place for Hood's army.

Upon the defeat of General Hood, Dr. Smith returned home upon a furlough on account of illness and remained confined for thirteen months. His shattered health would not permit him to return to the army service, where he had risen to an eminent rank as a professional man, as evidenced by the important missions assigned to him. Finally recovering his health, he resumed the practice of medicine at Friendship, Tenn. where he remained until 1882, when he moved to Dyersburg, Tenn. After remaining in the latter city for several years, Dr. Smith moved to Paducah during the late 80's and has made it his home ever since.

Immediately upon his arrival, he took front rank as an eminent and learned physician and has been kept constantly busy with an unusually large and lucrative practice.

Dr. Smith was a noted writer from a medical standpoint, many of his contributions attracting national attention, especially one article that appeared during 1880 in the Southern Practitioner on "German Measles" and another in the American Journal of Medical Science in 1882 upon "Aneurism of the Tibia", the latter being used by all medical journals for statistical purposes. His two greatest writings that carried his name into foreign countries were on "Pneumonia" in the Mississippi Valley Medical Journal in 1883 and one on "Malarial Fever" in the same publication three years later. Professional men the world over commented widely on these articles which evidenced great learning on the part of this eminent physician.

Dr. Smith always took a leading and prominent part with the medical societies of every section where he resided and honors were ever thrust upon him as he was highly regarded by the medical men.

For fifty-five years Dr. Smith was an active member of the Methodist Church. While he was a Whig until the war, after the conflict he was a Democrat, but of recent years he was a very strong and influential Prohibitionist, known throughout this state and Tennessee very well. He was licensed a Minister during 1858 but never ordained, desiring to continue his medical calling.

In 1870 he was elected President of the Brownsville Railroad Company and looked after the duties in a manner indicative of integrity and progressiveness.

December 8, 1850, the deceased was united in marriage to Miss Veturia White of Benton County, Tenn., she being the daughter of Captain James White, a Benton County



pioneer, who died during 1882 at the ripe age of 82 years, being a wealthy and prominent plantation owner.

Twelve children were born in the union, the living ones being Dr. M. M. Smith of Whiteville, Tenn., Dr. Julius A. Smith of Greenville, Texas, Benjamin F. Smith of Birmingham, Ala., W. Thomas Smith, Cincinnati, Ohio, Bettie E. Smith of Los Angeles, Cal., J. Weightman Smith of Los Angeles, Cal., and Prof. John D. Smith of this city. Dr. Millard is the oldest child, while Walter Scott Smith born in 1875 and dying in infancy was the youngest. Those children at his bedside at death were Prof. J. D. Smith, Miss Bettie Smith, Dr. M. M. Smith and W. Thos. Smith. The other living ones could not come.

For over one half of a century Dr. Smith was affiliated with the Masons, and took the Chapter degrees and was an esteemed member of the Golden Cross.

From boyhood he has been an energetic member and worker for the Methodist Church, his faith appearing always in evidence under all circumstances. Ever since moving to Paducah, he has been closely allied with the Broadway Methodist Church, being chairman of the building committee. To his untiring efforts is due much of the credit for the handsome edifice now at Seventh and Broadway, as he labored hard and faithfully for it. He was one of the most consistent and regular attendants and took deep interest in religion.

For fifteen years past he has been the chairman of the Prohibition party for the state of Kentucky and was ever at work to advance the good of the cause, he having sacrificed his time and talent without financial remuneration, being content for his services to be regarded by the great good accomplished. Last month he received the handsome vote of 2217 ballots in his race for Congress from the district on the Prohibition ticket.

Dr. Smith was a man of prominent standing in this community as he was usually active, always alert to perform something for the betterment of his people, never letting an opportunity pass by to do good in any form—though occasion may have demanded otherwise. He was of a kind, lovable and tender disposition that caused all to look up to and revere him. His walks through life evidenced the character of the noble man he was and his death is an irreparable blow to Paducah. He was one of the deepest and closest students of the state, and possessed a fund of knowledge on all issues and subjects to the extent that he was a very entertaining conversation-

alist whose strong personality and intellectual attainments were sources of attraction to every one.

After a long and beautiful wedded career he and his wife were separated by death only a few months ago as a result of injuries in her falling. The devoted husband never recovered from the shock of her sad dissolution.

The funeral services will occur at 2:30 o'clock tomorrow afternoon at the Broadway Methodist Church, followed by interment at the Oak Grove Cemetery. Rev. W. T. Boling will officiate."

In an article of one and one half columns, the "Paducah Daily News-Democrat" said in part, "When Dr. John D. Smith died at his home, 902 Jefferson Street, at 3:15 o'clock yesterday afternoon, his family lost a fond father; the south, a veteran hero; the Medical Fraternity, a devoted brother; the cause of Prohibition, an ardent advocate; the Methodists, a great leader; Paducah, a useful and public-spirited citizen. His death will be mourned by those who knew him as a man, a physician, a patriot, advocate of southern rights; the people of the Methodist Church, his many friends in Tennessee and Kentucky and, above all by his children he left behind. It is the sons and daughter that will miss him most, but he left them an example and has indelibly impressed his own worth upon their character. Dr. Smith has been ill since early in November and his death was not unexpected. He died as he lived, calmly and without fear of meeting his Maker.

Dr. Smith was born in Anson County, North Carolina. At the age of 18 he began life on his own account after having had but three months schooling. Young Smith purchased a few books and became his own teacher. He had an analytical mind and never overlooked an opportunity to learn something. Endowed with a firm will and a retentive memory, he set out to make his own way in the world.

His children expected to have the funeral from the family residence tomorrow, but the leading members of the church insisted that it was only proper that a man who had done so much for the Church should be buried from the church that he was mainly instrumental in building. The deceased was a diligent student; a man of wonderful information; of indomitable will power; of untiring energy; a fond father and a faithful friend of the sick, whether rich or poor."

—"The Paducah Daily Sun".



## THE CHAMBER WHERE A GOOD MAN DIES IS VERY NEAR THE VERGE OF HEAVEN.

The following is a synopsis of Dr. W. T. Bolling's remarks at the funeral of Dr. J. D. Smith, Sr., at the Broadway Methodist Church Sunday afternoon.

"Bryant has truly said that 'The chamber where the good man dies is very near the verge of Heaven'. So it must have been in relation to the chamber where Dr. John D. Smith passed from the labor of life to the rest and refreshment in the great beyond.

Dr. Smith was not of a gentle cast of character, yet he was tender and sympathetic. His was the character of the granite rather than of polished marble, but it was the pure granite forming a massive foundation on which was erected a life building, solid in foundation, morally finished, spiritually furnished and intellectually lighted.

In many respects Dr. Smith was a great man, if we are to judge greatness by inherent qualities rather than by the mere flash of genius.

He was a strong man with an unwavering faith in God and with unswerving loyalty to the right as he saw it. In religion, he was a Pauline in his view and methods; in civil movement he was as brave as Coeur de Leon, yet as fair as Bayard, in all the drifting currents of human opinions and movements. You knew where to find him upon all questions and under all circumstances, and while he respected an open foe, he had no use for the skulking coward. To him a conviction held no kinship with policy, and convinced of the right, he espoused it regardless of the promises or curses of his fellow men, preferring to keep in harmony with the convictions of his mind and conscience, rather than to conspire with evil or to compromise any truth to any degree.

As a religionist his concepts of truth were clear, while his loyalty to his church and her tenets never faltered. While liberal in view, we be it to the man who challenged his loyalty to either the doctrine or the policy of his church; for he was familiar with the word of God and the discipline of the church alike. He was the chief apostle of Prohibition in his state and I am sure that I do not go beyond the facts in saying that no man in the state gave more time, talent and means to this cause than did Dr. Smith. He took up the fight when it seemed hopeless. Like Henry of Navarre, he waved his banner in the forefront of the line of battle and his clarion call could ever be heard as he cheered the followers of

the White Ribbon in almost every county in this great state. Recent triumphs of Prohibition in many counties may largely be attributed to his ability, his zeal and his unswerving advocacy of the cause. His honest soul refused to make any compromise and his martial spirit spurned the idea of retreat, much less of surrender.

He was loyal at all times to his church, on the official board of which he long served actively, and with which he held honorary connection until his death. There was no work so humble but that he would cheerfully undertake at the request of his brethren.

As a Mason he did well all the labor marked out on the tressel board; and the work he did, measured by the square, the plumb and the level, was found true while his face was ever toward the east and his answer ever quick and correct.

As a soldier wearing the gray, our Brother did his duty well, and when we came home to our desolated fields and firesides, he was found among those who accepted conditions and set out to work to rehabilitate the fallen fortunes of our Southland, being one of that grand army of workers who did so much to lay deep the foundation on which our present prosperity holds so much of promise in relation to our future.

He loved his home and his family and as a husband and father met the fullest requirements of those delicate relations. The character of his children demonstrates this; and his devotion to her, who preceded him to the better world made it plain. When she went, the best of his life went with her and he longed for a reunion with her more than he did for earthly companionship. In a conversation with him some days before he was stricken with his final illness he said, "When the wife who has been everything to a man is gone, there is not much left for which to live."

As a physician he was skilled, studious and sympathetic and was indeed a fit follower in his practice of the Great Physician, who would tenderly heal the blind, the deaf and the dumb, and, who would lay his hands on the leper's spots to heal him and make him clean.

But "dust to dust" is our common heritage in relation to the body, and on Friday afternoon, the sturdy gentleman, the humble Christian and intrepid defender of the rights, as a soldier heard "taps", as a citizen retired from among us and sunk into slumber in the faith in which he had so long lived.

No doubt, his morning was lovely to young life with its sunlight and charming dreams; his noon was somewhat stormy,

amid the days of battling with the wrong and for the right, but at eventide the golden purple of hope and peace were on the clouds and our brother was rich in the fruitage which came to him when the sun went down, and his earth day closed to burst into a cloudless and endless day of rest with God, leaving behind him the wealth of a good name to enrich his children, while adding to the wealth of the world for having lived in it.

We are glad that he lived. We sorrow at his departure, but we rejoice at his preparedness and the cloudless setting of his sun of life.

He had his faults, but they were few and we write them in the sand, while his virtues were many and we inscribe them upon the tablets of memory.

Consoled by one faith in the fact that: "He is not dead; he has but passed beyond the mist that blinds us here".

Into that newer, longer life,  
On that serenest sphere.

We shall miss him in all the walks of life, but we know where he is and where we may find him, for his life in the present was comment sufficient as to his future, and in the 76th year of his pilgrimage, the gallant soldier, the eminent physician, the model citizen and Christian gentleman, drew 'the drapery of his couch' about him and sunk into peaceful sleep.

'Servant of God well done!  
Rest from thy loved employer:  
The battle fought, the victory won,  
Enter thy Master's joy.'"

Those who opposed slavery had now grown so many in number and so highly embittered that by the time of the election of Lincoln, plain notice had been given that in an unlawful way this constitutional clause would be disregarded.

This war settled naught save it freed the negro, eliminated forever a discussion of secession, early advocated by some of New England anti-slave agitators, and later fought for by the slave owners; and changed our government from a voluntary federated partnership into a closed corporation.

There is an old fable the tenor of which might be: Two knights standing apart began an argument, one saying that a shield was white and the other contending it was blue. At length they drew swords and went to deathly battle on this controversy. Reclining on the ground from the loss of blood, their positions had now become changed, and as their life was rapidly ebbing away, each excitedly pointed to the shield and in unison they said: "You are right, brother".

The shield was white on one side and blue on the other.

We think it best that the outcome of the war was as it ended, but to those who wish to investigate the righteousness of our father's position, we would refer them to an article of twenty-five pages in a book entitled, "The Civil War" written by Ann E. Snider of Nashville, Tenn. and published in 1890. The article in question was written by the Honorable Peter Turney, Chief Justice of the Supreme court of Tennessee. We were able to purchase for \$1.00 a good second hand, copy of this 350 page book, from Paul Hunter, 401 1/2 Church Street, Nashville, Tenn., Second hand book dealer. We trust that several copies will find their way into the hands of our father's grand-children and be passed on down to posterity.

This is not the place and we care not to discuss at length the merits or the demerits of the internecine struggle. When the Civil war ended, it was past history to our father until he reached that period of old age when there comes teeming down memory's highway recurrent thoughts of youth and childhood so long latent as to have seemed forgotten. School histories are not replete with the fundamentals which underlie the causes of this unavoidable calamity and what is said is largely of Union flavor. Of this we have no criticism as the writers no doubt had the thought in mind to seriously impress the youth with loyalty to our present government, and they have perhaps thought it best to tincture the subject matter with ideas of this character.

In 1814 there was called a convention in Hartford, Conn., brought about by the representatives of New England states jealous of slave-holding states' supremacy. There was frequent talk of secession by these New England anti-slavery agitators. Had the feeling, so strong at that time, dominated that section, we wonder if there would not live the children of rebels in New England while the daughters and sons of the patriots would largely reside in the Southland.

When President Jackson uttered his celebrated saying: "The Federal Union must and shall be preserved," Carolina had attempted to do no more than New York expressly reserved the right to do when it entered the Union.

When the Union was formed, the Constitution had a clause, most clear and plain, guaranteeing slavery, and Judge Story of the Supreme court had said: "It constituted a fundamental article without which the Union could not have been formed."

## KU-KLUX KLAN

Although in 1860 the vote cast in Tennessee was 145,333, on February 22, 1865, there was cast for the Military party in power 25,293 votes and 48 votes against it. The Confederate soldiers were not allowed to vote and this is indicative of the feeling and sentiment in Tennessee at that time, and this vote mostly came from East Tennessee, Shelby County being the only county in West Tennessee participating in this election. October 18, 1865 the house passed a bill making it a penalty of from \$5.00 to \$25.00 to wear a Confederate uniform. This bill failed in the senate. By a vote of 11 to 10 there was defeated in the senate a bill making it unlawful for a Confederate soldier to bring a law-suit of any character. The animus and feeling of the officials sent from Washington to operate the Government, and of those mostly in East Tennessee against the Confederate soldier was most intense. July 10, 1866 Governor W. G. Brownlow issued a proclamation warning all who should "band themselves together to defeat the execution of the act to limit the elective franchise, will be declared in rebellion against the State of Tennessee and dealt with as rebels". Thus our father was warned if, in conjunction with any other individual he undertook to reclaim the exercise of voting, that he might expect to be shot or imprisoned.

On Feb. 25, 1867 the act of May 3, 1866 disfranchising the Confederate soldiers was made stronger, while the negro was now admitted to full fellowship with the Carpet Bagger as a voter, so that he could be trained to keep him in power. Our father was denied the privilege of voting because he had been a Confederate soldier and could not take the oath as required, which was as follows: "I do most solemnly swear that I have never voluntarily borne arms against the Government of the United States for the purpose of, or with the intention of, aiding the late rebellion, nor have I, with any such intention, at any time, given aid, comfort, counsel or encouragement to said rebellion, or of any act of hostility to the Government of the United States. I further swear that I have never sought or accepted any office, either civil or military, or attempted to exercise the functions of any office, either civil or military, under the authority or pretended authority of the so-called Confederate States of America, or of any insurrectionary state, hostile or opposed to the authority of the United States Government, with intent and desire to aid said rebellion, and that I have

never given a voluntary support to any such government or authority."

On January 31, 1868 an act was passed making the negro competent to hold any office in the state and to sit on all juries. A most wonderful chance now came to stop the wave of crime spreading over the South and over Tennessee. As always follows the wake of war, the criminal dominated the state and county affairs to an extent almost beyond imagination. The Ku-Klux organized at Pulaski, Tenn. in May 1866, for amusement, had now grown in numbers and was a secondary Government extending in sections from Va. to Texas, practically wholly composed of Confederate soldiers having foremost in mind the protection of their families, their property, the education of their children, and the sanctity of their homes. According to the report of a Committee sent to Washington by the Military government of Tennessee, there were 40,000 of these in Tennessee alone, under the leadership of General Forrest. We submit that the number and character of the membership is fair proof of some respectability, when this number is no doubt more than twice the actual number of citizens of Tennessee who cast the vote to elect the Legislature which disfranchised them.

Governor Brownlee called the Legislature in extra session July 27, 1869. Many petitions were presented asking for a repeal of the elective franchise law. One headed by Judge Shackelford of the Supreme Court was signed by 4,000. There was one in person headed by B. F. Cheatham, N. B. Forest, Wm. B. Bate, John C. Brown, Jos. B. Palmer, Thomas B. Smith, Bushrod R. Johnson, Gideon J. Pillow, Wm. A. Quarles, S. R. Anderson, G. G. Dibrell, George Maney, and Geo. W. Gordon, all military officers of high rank in the Confederate army.

Little attention was paid to these, but there was passed a bill making it a fine of \$500.00 and a penitentiary offense of five years to be a member of the Ku-Klux Klan, disbarring any attorney who refused to prosecute any such one when brought to his notice, making any one who gave food to or allowed any such person to have shelter in his house equally guilty. The bill allowed the sheriff to post notice of any one whom he could not find, made it a \$500.00 to \$5000.00 fine for the inhabitants to allow such a person to remain in the county, and levied many more severe penalties. As practically every Confederate soldier in Dyer and Crockett counties was a Ku-Klux and as there were few other white men in that section, we do not think that any one ever served a term in the peni-

tentary for being a Ku-Klux in that section. In fact it was a most respectable thing, it was the one Government which gave concern to the criminal and it was the only Government that deterred him from the commission of crime.

On January 10, 1870, there met a Constitutional convention, the franchise was again restored to the Confederate soldier and in the following March, the Ku-Klux publicly disbanded at Nashville, Tennessee.

While there are several books dealing with this organization all of which perhaps are interesting, there is a book of 444 pages printed in 1890, entitled "Why The Solid South" by Hilary A. Herbert of Alabama which gives an interesting history of the Southern states from the close of the war to 1870. Forty-seven pages are devoted to Tennessee. We purchased a second hand copy for \$1.50.

W. Thos. Smith

"We take from Military Annals of Tennessee, Linsley 1886, pages 433 to 439 the following."

#### Twenty-ninth Tennessee Infantry (Official)

Colonel, Horace Rice; Lieutenant-Colonel, John B. Johnson; Major, A. K. Blevins; Adjutant, S. D. Reynolds; Assistant Quartermaster, R. P. Hamilton; Assistant Commissary Subsistence, T. J. O'Keefe; Surgeon, J. D. Smith; Assistant Surgeon, J. P. Allison.

The Twenty-ninth Tennessee Infantry, Confederate States Army, was organized in the summer of 1861, at Henderson's Mills, Greene County, East Tennessee, by the election of Sam Powell, of Hawkins County, Colonel; Reuben Arnold of Greene County, Lieutenant-colonel and Horace Rice of Hawkins County, Major. It was composed entirely of East Tennesseans; Co. A., from Bradley County, Captain McClelland; Co. B. from Polk County, Captain Hancock; Co. C. from Claiborne County, Captain Patterson; Co. D. from Hancock County, Captain Rose; Co. E. from Hawkins County, Captain Blevins; Co. F. from Greene County, Captain Arnold; Co. G. from Washington County, Captain Coulter; Co. H. from Greene County, Captain Fry; Co. I. from Washington County, Captain Faw; Co. K. from Hawkins County, Captain Powell. In almost every case the companies named were the first from their respective counties, and as a general thing the very best material in these counties joined these companies; and taken all together the men were exceptionally intelligent, hearty, and fine-looking—mostly

young, full of spirit, and well worthy the honors won by the regiment on many a well-fought field.

During the formation of Co. D, an incident worthy of mention occurred showing the popular mind and the difficulties that had to be overcome by those desiring to enter the Southern army even at this early state of the war. The members of this company, to the number of about twenty, assembled late one evening in Sneedville, the county town of Hancock county. Soon after, a difficulty took place between one of the company named Cantwell and a man named Barton, a Northern man by birth and education, and a known abolitionist. Barton got the worst of it, and left the town swearing vengeance on all "rebels and rebel sympathizers". No more was thought of the matter until midnight, when Capt. Rose, afterward Colonel of the Sixty-first Tennessee, was notified that the town was surrounded by armed men. He immediately marched his men to the courthouse, a substantial brick building, and collected such means of defense as were at hand, his men being unarmed. Barton sent a summons to the little force to surrender unconditionally, or he would take and shoot the last man. The demand was refused, although it was known that Barton had at least five hundred men, and was constantly receiving re-enforcements that had been summoned by the firing of guns, the lighting of signal-fires, and other preconcerted signals. Upon consultation the little Confederate force determined to select men to evade the besiegers and carry the news to their friends outside. This was bravely accomplished, and at noon next day a force of one thousand men was assembled at Mulberry Gap, under command of Lieut. Bishop, afterward Colonel of the Twenty-ninth Regiment; and Gen. Peter C. Johnston had one thousand men more at the Virginia line, four miles away, but said he would respect States rights unless blood had actually been shed. During the night Col. Walker arrived with his regiment of cavalry from Cumberland Gap. Barton, learning these facts, quietly withdrew, and his men dispersed to their homes. It is doubtful whether any event of the war created such a profound sensation in that hitherto quiet and peaceable community. The eloquence and logic of Andrew Johnson, the strong stand taken for the Union by Thomas A. R. Nelson, and the influence of Brownlow made the mountain counties of East Tennessee almost a unit for the old Government; hence the difficulties that had to be met and overcome by those who en-



deavored to accomplish anything for the Southern Confederacy. The men who had the nerve to stem the popular current and enter the army in the face of all opposition were unquestionably actuated by genuine patriotism and a strong sense of duty that needed only the opportunity to develop them into first-class soldiers. To hail from East Tennessee was a reproach in the South. A Georgia lady once asked a member of the Twenty-ninth Regiment if he was not ashamed to own that he was an East Tennessean. "No, madam," was the emphatic reply; "I am proud that I belong to that much-abused country, and I think if one Confederate soldier is entitled to more credit than another, the greater praise is due those who came into the Southern army under difficulties such as we had to contend with."

Soon after its organization, to the Twenty-ninth Regiment was assigned the duty of guarding the bridges along the line of the East Tennessee and Virginia and the East Tennessee and Georgia railroads, where it remained until the attempt to invade Kentucky by way of Big Creek Gap, in which it took part, having rendezvoused at Knoxville for that purpose. Upon the failure and return of the expedition, it was again assigned to the bridges for a short time, but in December was ordered to Mill Springs to join Gen. Zollicoffer.

On the 19th of the following January it took part in the disastrous battle of Fishing Creek, where Col. Powell was severely wounded and permanently disabled. Thereafter the command devolved on Maj. Rice, Col. Arnold's health not permitting him to engage in the active campaigns which followed.

In the retreat down the Cumberland River the suffering of the men was extreme. Many were totally unaccustomed to hardships and privations such as had to be endured during the long midwinter march, and some succumbed to disease brought on by exposure; and when Murfreesboro was reached, and subsequently Iuka, Miss., the regiment was considerably reduced in numbers.

During the battle of April 6th and 7th at Shiloh, the Twenty-ninth and Thirty-seventh Tennessee regiments were posted at Iuka, on the extreme right of the Confederates, and did not actively participate in that struggle. But when Gen. Beauregard withdrew his army to Corinth, these regiments were joined to the main army and assigned to the brigade of Gen. John S. Marmaduke. Under his command it participated in two or three skirmishes in front of Corinth. In the mean-

time some changes had been made in its commanders; Maj. Rice was Colonel; John B. Johnson of Nashville, was Lieutenant-colonel; and Kyle Blevins, Major. There had also been some changes in company officers Capts. Rose, Fry, Arnold, and perhaps others, choosing different fields of service. But Capt. Hamilton, that good provider and prince of good fellows, of whom mention had not been made before, remained at the head of the Quartermaster's department.

The Twenty-ninth Regiment accompanied the army of Gen. Bragg from Corinth to Tupelo; from Tupelo to Chattanooga; thence into Kentucky, where it, in common with the rest of the Army of Tennessee, of which it ever afterward formed a part until its final surrender by Gen. Johnston at Greensboro, North Carolina—confronted the enemy at Munfordsville and Perryville; thence to Knoxville through Cumberland Gap, and on to Murfreesboro, where it was brigaded with the Eleventh, Twelfth, Thirteenth, and One Hundred and Fifty-fourth Tennessee regiments, Gen. Preston Smith being assigned to the command, and the brigade attached to the division of Gen. Cheatham. The fact of its being an East Tennessee regiment caused more than one term of reproach to be applied to it; but Gen. Smith, brave soldier, and true-hearted gentleman that he was, rode along its front expressing himself as happy to form the acquaintance of the Twenty-ninth on the battle-field, and hoped that it would do its whole duty. The men responded with a hearty yell, and at the close of that memorable 31st of December any man in Cheatham's division was willing to take a Twenty-ninth man by the hand and call him comrade. In the great swinging operation of Hardee at the battle of Murfreesboro its loss was terrific, amounting in killed and wounded to one hundred and seventy-two, thirty-six of whom were dead on the field, and this from not more than five hundred present for duty. Both men and officers promptly responded to every call to advance, and doubtless needlessly exposed themselves. During a momentary pause that was made for the purpose of adjusting the line, private Clarkson Brewer mounted a large rock within fifty yards of the Federal line, and cursed them for cowards. He fell literally riddled with balls. At another time the Twenty-ninth, having routed the enemy in its front, gained a lane near the pike, when the senior Captain commanding, moved it rapidly to the rear of a large body of Federal infantry. The result was quite a number of prisoners, a badly demoralized Federal force, and a gallant



regiment badly run over by the enemy, who had not time nor inclination to take prisoners, nor had an idea of being taken.

At Chickamauga this regiment had no conspicuous part. During the 19th it was only brought into action once, though under fire at one point or another most of the day, and its list of killed and wounded amounted to thirty-two. The night advance is memorable to the Twenty-ninth more by reason of the death of its brigade commander, Gen. Preston Smith, which occurred within a few rods of its point. The General rode up to the head of the regiment and requested the men to make way for him to pass to the front. Col. Rice remonstrated, and he merely replied that he would not go far; but unfortunately he went far enough to draw the fire of the Federal line and end his career, and that of most of his staff. His death was deeply deplored by the regiment, for he had always been not only brave but generous and kind.

At the battle of Missionary Ridge the Twenty-ninth was posted on the extreme left of Cheatham's division and next to the brigade which was the first to break. Its front was immediately changed, and though under fire the movement was seldom better executed on the parade-ground. Alone it charged the advancing enemy, but was driven back with great loss. Here the brave and amiable Capt. James W. Fulkerson fell mortally wounded; and here too fell Sergeant Baker, the unpretentious Christian soldier, who had so long been at the head of the regiment as orderly Sergeant of the senior company. Capt. John B. Hodges was desperately wounded, but subsequently recovered and resumed his connection with the regiment. Both Gens. Cheatham and Hardee complimented the regiment on the field, Gen. Cheatham saying that it was the largest body of his men that he could find together.

The history of the Twenty-ninth Regiment from Rocky Face to Jonesboro, Ga. is the history of every other regiment in the gallant Army of Tennessee. Its casualties were many and its gallantry conspicuous on more than one occasion. The Twelfth and Twenty-ninth were ordered on double-quick from Rocky Face to Dalton, whence they were taken as fast as steam could carry them to meet, charge, and drive before them the Federals in the streets of Resaca, in the first of the series of great flank movements resorted to by the Federal Commander, Gen. Sherman.

At Kennesaw Mountain, the Twenty-ninth and One Hundred and Fifty-fourth regiments occupied an advance work which was persist-

ently charged by the Federals. Their dead and wounded were literally piled up in our front, inasmuch that the commander asked leave to remove the wounded and bury the dead. During the truce granted for this purpose there was some indulgence in grim humor, notwithstanding the terrible surroundings. Our jolly, whole-souled Gen. Cheatham was never better pleased than when passing himself off as one of the boys. Col. Rice was always grave, dignified and courteous. On the occasion referred to Gen. Cheatham wore his slouched hat, gray blouse, and smoked his short pipe. Col. Rice, gay in full regimentals, was treated with deference due his position by the Federals. The men met the General as an equal, and he was soon the center of a large crowd, talking, laughing, and occasionally taking a drink from the inevitable canteen. One son of the Emerald Isle was about getting on very intimate terms with him, even going so far as to try to put his arms around the General's neck, when Col. Rice, walking up, touched the man on the arm, and inquired if he knew to whom he was speaking. "One of your boys, I suppose," was the reply. "That", said Col. Rice, at the same time raising his voice, "is Maj. Gen. Cheatham." A forty-pound shot thrown into their midst would not have produced a greater sensation than did this announcement. Instantly all eyes were fixed upon the old hero, for they knew and respected him. Thenceforth he was given ample room for moving around.

In this campaign the young and popular Maj. Kyle Blevins fell a martyr to the cause he loved. Connected with one of the best families in East Tennessee, health, wealth, and youth as his portion, it seemed hard that he should be struck down, but such are the fortunes of war, and this is about the only consolation the soldier has. About this time the regiment lost Lieut. Col. John B. Johnson of Nashville, who had risen in rank from Drill-master to the Lieutenant-colonelcy of his regiment. So one after another was stricken either by the leaden messenger or by the hand of disease. In the assault made by the rash but daring Gen. Hood on the 22nd of July our loss was especially severe, some of the best and bravest officers and men of the regiment being slain in that fearful charge.

After the final battle of this long campaign was fought at Jonesboro, there remained but a handful of the old regiment. Its losses in killed, wounded and missing during the great retreat aggregated more than the entire number present for duty at its commencement. It was during this campaign that the

Twenty-ninth Regiment received from the ladies of Savannah, Ga., a magnificent silk banner, with its name and the names of the battles in which it had taken part handsomely embroidered thereon. Every man was proud of it, and it became his especial care to preserve it from that time until the surrender, and then to be sure it was placed in a safe deposit.

After the battle at Jonesboro, when retreat was changed to advance, and the men once more realized that they were advancing toward their native, loved Tennessee, their spirits rose visibly; and by the time Hood crossed the Tennessee River they could put on something of their former spirit, and appear as eager to meet their enemies as at any time during the war. And meet them they did right gallantly at Franklin on the 30th of November, 1864. It is entirely superfluous to say that better fighting never was done by men than by the Tennesseans in that battle; and we can safely say that the Twenty-ninth did her part most nobly, and point to her list of killed and wounded for the proof. Gen. Gordon, who had so long and ably commanded the brigade, was here wounded and captured; as was also Col. Rice who had passed unscathed through so many bloody battles. Capt. Jos. W. Burckett was killed on the field, and many more brave officers and men.

After the defeat of Hood at Nashville on the 15th of December, what with marching and fighting during that bitter winter weather is necessary to relate concerning the suffering of this particular regiment? As we have before remarked, the history of one is the history of all.

Back across the Tennessee, hurried on by the victorious and enthusiastic Federals, into Alabama, thence to Augusta, Ga., and across the Savannah to South Carolina, where a season of rest and preparation was allowed for the final struggle in North Carolina. During this last campaign of the war the command of the brigade devolved on Col. W. P. Bishop, of the Twenty-ninth, as senior officer, and that of the regiment on Maj. S. L. McKamy. Having been detained by he breaking down of their train near Raleigh, this command did not reach the battlefield near Bentonville until the conflict was well-nigh ended; but for all that, it served a good purpose in preventing the capture of Gen. Johnston's headquarters. As the remainder of the division was on a distant part of the field Col. Bishop reported his command for duty to Gen. Johnston in person. Having been informed that the men were much

fatigued by a long, forced march, he ordered them to rest at his headquarters. Soon most of the men were quietly sleeping. In the meantime the enemy had penetrated the dense pine forest unseen until they were close upon headquarters, and a volley of musketry was poured upon the drowsy ranks. Instantly all was commotion; but Gen. Johnston had scarcely mounted and dashed to the head of the column before the men were formed and ready for the charge. With a yell that drowned the roar of musketry, the little brigade dashed forward, led by Gens. Johnston, Hardee, and Wade Hampton, as well as their own officers. The enemy was put to flight and headquarters saved from capture. The loss in this affair was half a dozen brave fellows killed and as many more wounded. Long afterward the writer heard Henry Neff, private in the Twenty-ninth, boasting that he had passed through the war without ever being sick or touched by a shot and that the only battle he ever missed was that of Bentonville, and that because he was sent to the rear with the Colonel's horse, which had become unmanageable. When darkness came the army commenced its retreat and this brigade was ordered to bring up the rear. The night was a wild one. The pine-forest had taken fire and at frequent intervals the crash of burning, falling trees mingled with the roar of musketry and the occasional boom of cannon. Slowly the defeated army filed along the road lighted by tens of thousands of blazing torches, until daylight came upon it in the neighborhood of Bentonville; thence to Raleigh and Greensboro, where on the 26th of April it laid down its arms.

But little more remains to be told. If this sketch, hastily written, is imperfect—as it is known to be—the writer begs leave to inform his old comrades that he has written without note or report, or even the power to consult with those who are as familiar with the facts narrated as he can be, and more so, because years have passed since he has met any of his old companions-in-arms and conversed with them upon these topics. Faces and events are clear where names have not been recalled. Injustice has been intentionally done to no one, while praise has been sparingly dealt out, because where due to one it was more or less due to all. Finally, to have belonged to the Twenty-ninth Tennessee Regiment and to have taken part in the battles in which it participated, to have shared in the hardships which it endured and the victories which it won, is no mean heritage to transmit to generations yet unborn. Let its

true history be written by men competent to the task before its representatives pass from among us and the memory of its achievements grow dim; and especially let the names of its dead heroes be collected from any and

all sources available and placed upon the roll of honor, where they are so well entitled to appear. Relations, friends, comrades, please see that this is done; for it is not only an act of justice, but should be a labor of love.



Ventury White Smith

914 (See 50, 506)

"I cannot say, and I will not say  
That she is dead. She is just away.

With a cheery smile and a wave of the hand  
She has wandered into an unknown land

And left us dreaming how very fair  
It needs must be, since she lingers there

And you, oh, you, who the wildest yearn  
For the old time step and the glad return—

Think of her faring on, as dear  
In the love of There, as the love of Here.

Think of her still as the same, I say—  
She is not Dead—she is just away."

—James Whitcomb Riley

Vetury White Smith was born at Sugar Tree, Benton County, Tenn., January 5, 1833. She passed away on June 8, 1906, and was interred on the following day in Oak Grove Cemetery, Paducah, Kentucky.

Our mother spelled her name Vetury. Others spelled it Veturia, which we think was the original way of spelling it. General information is to the effect that James White, her father, was a widely read and well informed man. Those conversant with the history of his state and of the nation at large, will observe that he exercised great care in the selection of names for his children. Hence he perpetuated the name and honored the memory of a noble son or daughter of our land by naming his children for them. We regret we were not sufficiently foresighted during mother's earthly sojourn, to investigate the origin of her name. After mature reasoning, finding it impossible to come to any conclusion, we went in quest of some historical information.

In the *Encyclopedia Americana* dated 1851, Book 3, page 491, we find a most interesting and fascinating historical story, from which we weave the following:

Four hundred and ninety years before the Christian era, Coriolanus assumed command of the Patricians in order to deprive

the Plebeians of their hard earned privileges, even proposing to distribute provisions obtained from Sicily on condition that the Tribuneship would be abolished. For advocating such a plan, he was banished from Rome. Later he joined Attius and succeeded in placing himself in command of Attius' army, thereby becoming the military head of Latium, and in that capacity he continued to wage war against his own country. Envoys were dispatched by the Roman Senate to seek peace, but returned with the message that peace could only be had by the surrender of all territory taken from Volsci. A second embassy achieved no more. Even the Priests and Augurs, who were then detailed, returned heart sick and without hope. Terror seized the people, chaos reigned supreme. As a last resort the Roman Senate prevailed on Coriolanus' mother, Veturia, and his wife, Valumnia, to intercede. Praying, as a mother and wife only can pray, they proceeded on their holy mission—the establishment of peace. Coriolanus recognized them in the far distance and ordered his Aides to permit them to approach. On bended knee, his mother, Veturia, implored him to make an honorable peace with his country, and in the exaltation that "Right is Might", that wonderful woman made him understand that unless he so agreed, he could only enter Rome by passing over her dead body. Her Portia-like plea melted his proud heart, though he was drunk with the thought of political power and prestige. Raising his mother from the ground, extending his hand in silence, with bowed head, he accompanied her and his wife back to his native city, where as far as possible he reinstated himself. In recognition of the great service rendered the nation, the Roman Senate caused a temple to be built on the exact spot where Veturia had knelt, and dedicated it to "MOTHERHOOD". By resolution, the Roman Senate also made her first priestess of the temple.

Twenty-five hundred years ago the Roman people loved and honored this mother and priestess no more than we love and honor our mother and princess. Twenty-five hundred years ago she had no more inspiring influence over the lives of the Roman populace, than did the life of our mother over the lives of her children.

We trust that in the annals to come this beautiful name, Veturia, with its interesting legend setting, will be made a historical name, ever keeping alive the memory of our mother. Two of her sons already have established this memorial.

Civilization was not very far advanced in

the South at the time of our mother's birth. The stores were nothing more than trading posts where the meager merchandise was exchanged for furs. Farming, hunting and trapping were the chief occupations. Furs were the common currency. Some years prior, her mother had spun and woven her own silken wedding dress, her grandmother coming into Tennessee and having brought with her some silk worms. Thus it is a most reasonable deduction for us to make that the first-born daughter was dressed in a silken robe and wrapped in the finest of furs, in that wild country where only thirteen years before the first white inhabitant trod its virgin soil. Thus in regal splendor in a log house in that vast forest, our dear mother entered this early existence.

As a child her lot was a happy one. Her educational opportunities were those in common with other children of the South in those pioneer days. They had public schools part of the year, followed by what they termed "Subscription Schools", which were nothing more than paid private schools. However, these meager opportunities were supplemented with considerable reading along general lines and with study as time and conditions would permit. Our mother by nature was quite musical, but had little opportunity for the development of this talent. However, a natural, beautiful and mellow soprano voice was hers and it held its sweetness and richness to the end.

Thirteen years prior to her birth, the Indians had been driven from Tennessee, hence they were no longer a menace. Her childhood days were lived in a transitional period. The greed for gain and the ambition for the building of large fortunes, had not yet permeated the thought of the people. The forest yet stood in its primal grandeur, save here and there a small clearing for grain and vegetables. The honey bee and the drippings from the maple tree, so abundant in that country, afforded sufficient sweetening for food. Sheep were raised, the wool being manufactured into cloth at home. Wild game of all kinds abounded everywhere; quantities of acorns furnished sufficient food for pork. The social life at that period was simple but lived on a high plane of thought. They danced the old time square dances, Virginia reel, and jigs, all of which were interspersed with cultured conversation covering general topics and current events.

Our mother's father, James White, was a man of affairs. Ever thoughtful of his personal responsibilities, he was a good provider. In early life he became a slave owner, the

negroes doing the menial work. He had a keen sense of humor, and with his ever ready wit, he was a splendid conversationalist. No matter what things seemed to be, he saw the happy side of life. Truly to him "Every cloud had a silver lining". He was not only the progressive farmer of his day, but was the County Squire or Justice of the Peace, and as such was the community advisor in all misunderstandings and disputes. Not only was he a man well read, but he was a very close student of the Bible, reading and rereading it till he was very familiar with its teachings. Consequently early in life our mother received religious training.

Our mother's mother was said to have been an incessant worker, a beautiful housekeeper, a painstaking mother, and a most excellent manager of her realm—the Home. With a large family to plan for, a larger corps of negro slaves to manage, and with none of the comforts nor equipment of modern domestic civilization, she directed the home with a poise and efficiency seldom seen.

With a quickened sense of modesty, but with much greater sense of appreciation, we cannot fail to make mention of our mother's wonderful beauty. It has often been told us by our father and concurred in by many who knew her, that in early life she was considered the most beautiful young lady in all that country. Regardless of the size or character of any gathering, she was the one who always attracted the most attention for beauty and genial personality. Even in her last days, at the age of seventy-three, her skin was as fair as that of a baby, not a wrinkle to be seen; the peach bloom in her cheeks; snowy white hair, a queenly walk, an ideal personality.

At the age of eighteen she met the young physician and surgeon of the county, Dr. J. D. Smith. Their friendship soon ripened into love and after some months of courtship they were married.

Our mother possessed much general business ability and initiative, and no period of her life was more conducive to the development of these qualifications than that of the war of the States. When the call came to the Old South to shoulder arms, our gallant and patriotic father was among the first to offer his professional services and even his life if needed. By so doing the burden of maintaining a home and the support of four small children, one a babe in her arms, devolved on the loyal wife, the devoted mother and the patriotic daughter of the bleeding Southland. She endured all the hardships

and privations in common with all other women and did so without a murmur and deemed it an honor to suffer with those who suffered—all for the vindication and the glory of the South she so dearly loved.

An incident has been told us however, of her cheerfulness and constant desire to shed a little sunshine along the way even in those dark and dreadful days. On one occasion the young people of the neighborhood requested our mother to give a house party. Food being so scarce, it seemed advisable that each and all contribute their pro rata of luxuries and dainties for a banquet. On the festive day, by noon, the young and old from all directions were arriving, bringing with them the choicest of foods procurable. The table had just been spread and all was in readiness when the unexpected announcement was made that the Confederate soldiers were coming. A self-appointed general she became at once. She ordered that the tables be cleared of all their appetizing viands and that these be served to our hungry mud-spattered, yet gallant soldiers in Grey. When this command had been executed and the regiment had passed on, consternation seized the entire personnel of our would-be-party, for lo, here came the Union soldiers in hot pursuit.

Our mother was neither vain nor fastidious, but was the personification of cleanliness and she prided herself in keeping abreast of the times in all things which go to make for comfort, happiness and intellectual growth. In early married life she left the Cumberland Presbyterian Church and together with our father joined the Methodist Episcopal Church South. Immediately she ceased to dance, as in that day the church forbade its members to do so. Later in life an amusing incident occurred which not only brought out our mother's loyalty to the teachings and the laws of her church, but also tested her one great rule in life, namely, "Anything worth doing is worth doing well". The rumor reached her that one of her sons had been seen on the ball room floor at a neighboring summer resort. At first she seriously questioned the authenticity of the report. Once convinced it was a fact, she came out of deep serious thought and asked the question, "Well, did he dance gracefully?" This episode occurred in 1899, and from that day to this that son has never danced. The lesson of church loyalty versus good dancing found its way into his heart and the best that was in him arose and in the ascendancy set the seal on his early training. Thus again it was demon-



strated that the mother's life more than all else, moulds and shapes the lives and destinies of men.

Her married life was one well rounded and full. As the wife of a public and professional man, she ever measured up to the many demands made on her time, strength and ability. Loving and sympathetic, she gave financial, moral and spiritual assistance to all who came in contact with her, measuring unto each according to their requirements.

As a mother, she was the quintessence of all that motherhood implies. "A loadstone to all hearts, the load star to all eyes." Truly our mother was a living example of De Maistre's description of the real mother—"An Angel to whom God had lent a body for a brief season."

"Ask the hoary headed warrior if he remembers who it was he first loved, to whom his heart clung till the last with most reverence and affection, who rivalled his country in his heart even when he first buckled on the armor of war; ask him, too, whom he remembers with the most gratitude, and to whom, of all who have spent their merry or their sorrowful lives, he owes the greatest debt. Go to the Court, where filial affection is seldom felt and but seldom known, and ask the Prince who was his first love, and mark the answer. Go to the cottage where all is peace and harmony, where discord never entered, and where happiness has always held undisputed sway, the answer will be the same. Go even to the miser, who now cares for nothing but his gold, and as he hugs his treasure in his grasping arms, he will answer like the rest. Seek out the virgin bride, and ask her the same question. Find her husband with a countenance beaming with joy and a smile of confidence on his lips, all around him is gladness, he is the happiest man alive, but yet he will, if he answers truly, tell you that he first loved his MOTHER. Yes the first and best of all love may be summed up in that one little word.

"I have experienced prosperity in all of its glittering, pleasurable shapes; I have known adversity with all its sorrowing, heart-rending scenes; but in all and through all I have never yet forgotten that I had a mother, who once watched by my pillow in illness, cared for me in health, and who bore for me more pains and more distresses than I can ever repay. Seas may now divide us; the wide ocean may roll between us, but to her, even now, I look for pleasure, remembering that it is my turn to foster and protect. Well do I know a child can never realize the depth, the height, nor extent of a mother's

love. If you have a mother in this or any other land, cherish her image, and let the recollection of her gratuitous, disinterested and heartfelt sufferings be and continue to be the first, last and latest feelings of your heart."

As a friend, our mother was ever staunch and true to every trust confided in her. Abhorring deceit, she never assumed to be what she was not, nor promised anything beyond her power to perform, nor failed in the performance of anything in her power to fulfill.

As a church member she was faithful and loyal. As a Christian, her life daily reflected her close touch and communion with her God. Through her the Christ life was truly visualized and no one came under her influence who did not feel and know that to her the reality of things spiritual was the Pearl of great price.

In the last few years of her life she was much alone. Business and professional interests and worldly opportunities had led the children one by one away. Thus in the evening of life, there was no one left in the old home save her and our father. But like all great and courageous minds, she turned this enforced solitude to good account in the execution of much W. C. T. U and Church work. With a passion for spiritual things, which time, solitude and approaching old age had increased, she did much reading and studying along that line, always bearing in mind and living accordingly, that precept without practice amounts to naught.

We do trust this authentic picture of the life and experiences of this saintly woman will not only interest but may inspire any one who has kindly followed us thus far, for we can assure the reader that nothing save the actual charm of truth and reality lies behind this sketch. The utilization of one's talents and opportunities for the very best possible good to mankind is the highest concept of life, and one who solves renders the greatest homage to the Creator.

"If thou canst plan a noble deed,  
And never flag till it succeed,  
Though in the strife the heart should bleed,  
Whatever obstacles control,  
Thine hour will come—go on true soul,  
Thou'lt win the prize, thou'lt reach the goal".

May 30, 1906, our mother, in some unaccountable way fell and when found, was unconscious. Her hip bone was broken. Being in a general depleted condition, together with declining old age, she was never able to rally. After ten days of indescribable

suffering, she let loose these earthly moorings and went away to live with the Angels and to dwell in the fullness of God's own Heaven.

AGAIN I SAY—

SHE IS NOT DEAD, SHE IS JUST AWAY.

Bettie (Smith) Hughes

We thank sister for her beautiful sketch of Mother—"That Wonderful Mother of Mine"—who though absent for sixteen years yet every few weeks makes a pilgrimage to dreamland and there holds conversation with what the psychologist is pleased to term our subjective mind. These meetings are ever happy ones, of the most interesting nature, sometimes grotesque in character, and at times last for some duration.

Then on emerging from slumber, Oh! It seems:

"Oh, gallant ship, receding joy,  
It's goodbye, goodbye to you,  
The fairest bark that ever hove  
Within my narrow view,  
The cutest craft that ever cut  
The opalescent foam—  
Oh, that within my heart you might  
Have found your final home.

I stood a lonely watcher by  
The sad and lonely sea,  
And though you sailed almost in port  
You were not sent to me;  
And now you're fading from my sight,  
I kiss my hand—adieu—  
For hearts may ache, and hearts may break,  
But it's goodbye, goodbye to you."

(By Annette Stewart)

Whether mother ever really comes on these occasions, or whether these are only a panorama of phantasies substituted by nature to please the probable longings of a slumbering mind, we have never in any way attempted to fathom, nor have we ever investigated the opinions of those who write and speculate on these conjectured happenings.

The resultant effects on our semi-awakening is to traverse the streams of by-gone years, to wander over the fields of happy childhood days, and rejuvenate the soul with the sparkling love that so copiously emanated from mother.

The sculptor may chisel and picture a living expression in the shaped outline of his model; the painter may blend and interblend his colors in many beautiful forms on his canvas, the bard may waft his enchanting sounds of song on the ear, nature with her

thousand colors, forms and tones may express the beautiful in wondrous grandeur, but nothing can ever festoon our memory's mantle with any picture equal to the perduring etching there emblazoned of that Wonderful Mother of Mine.

P perchance it may be that a man with a family can divide his affections, but our mother was the ideal of our childhood days, the companion of our youth, the valentine of our young manhood and until her death the one in whom the sum total of all our affections gravitated to the common center of Motherhood.

She was a woman of wonderful pride. Pride is the chief source of all inspiration, the impetus of every great achievement, the result of every worthy accomplishment, the reward of feats well done. It lurks in the breast of the rich, and furnishes food for the poor. It affects the noble and the ignoble. It radiates in splendor from some, and under the coverings of a dimmer from others, but from all it emanates in some form when life's ambitions have been attained with due regard for civic morality.

This pride radiated from her face, from her person, from her walk, from her conversation. It was ever present in a well-kept home which found expression from the kitchen to the parlor and in the flowers that ever surrounded her home. This pride was interblended with love, motherly love, the mainspring of all human action. Love, the highest activity of the mind, found full sway in her person.

Hers was the pride devoid of haughtiness, modest in character, fragrant in beauty, symmetrically in keeping with her person. Some one has said: "Modesty is the art of concealing pride". Mother was an adept. She artfully concealed from others that pride that showed in such splendor in her home life and brought such satisfaction to her children.

Gossip found no place in her conversation and the mistakes of others were past history. Purity in thought, in talk, in action was her whole life.

Immaculate cleanliness had been taught her by her mother. Fond of biscuits, kneaded as she was taught in girlhood days, up to her death when able, she invariably went to the kitchen—as had her mother done with slaves aplenty—and performed this labor. She feared the cook might not well keep clean her person. Knowingly she would allow no negro cook to handle her family's prepared food save with a spoon or fork. All menial work could be done by others but she or

some member of her family must, at each meal go to the kitchen and see in person that the food was properly and cleanly served on her table.

There may have been occasions when she felt it wise to give an evasive answer but truthful statements were universal characteristics. A falsehood she would not tell under any circumstances. She loved her husband, she adored her children, she trusted her church, and with unflinching faith consecrated her life to her Creator.

As come to all at times, some hope was blasted, some ambition unsatisfied. Events come to all which pierce the heart and trouble the soul. In these she suffered with little murmur, but those massive tragedies which bow the head, accelerate old age, break human hearts and wreck human lives were never a part and parcel of her existence.

Her well rounded features, full face, soft white skin with not a wrinkle at death, her queenly bearing, her soft proud tread, her countenance serene in sweet and frank sincerity, her pure simplicity of heart and innocence of spirit, her once jet black hair, at length turning to a beautiful silver grey where it lingered for years and until age frosted it with snowy fringe, her clear, calm, full smiling eyes, her joyful beam of pride in our successes, her sympathetic expression of love in our reverses, have painted on memory's brow a most beautiful and fascinating recollection, and have lent to imagination's mirror a reflective telescope looking backward more than three score and ten years to when the most charming lass of Benton county, Tennessee ventured her all under the protecting hand of the gallant young physician.

W. Thos. Smith



Dr. Millard McFarland Smith

915 (See 507)

#### DR. MILLARD MCFARLAND SMITH

Dr. Millard McFarland Smith was born September 15, 1851 at Sugar Tree, Benton County, Tennessee, died October 4, 1908, and is buried at Whiteville, Tennessee. When three years of age he went with his parents to Friendship, Tennessee, and there grew to manhood.

As a child, he developed a high sense of doing startling things too numerous to men-

tion. Exploring the bottom of a large sixty foot well, by going down the ladder fastened to the curbing; climbing on top of a two story house his father was building, just as soon as he thought he had the field to himself; just such unheard-of things seemed to obsess him. He was five or six years of age at this time.

When he was a lad of sixteen his father presented him with a horse. While his parents were absent at the funeral of a friend, Millard Smith, with a vivid imagination still at play, decided that this particular time was

the time for him to go abroad and explore some of the world. First he visited relatives in Benton County, thence to Henderson County. His finances getting very low, he sold his horse. When he had spent this money, he taught school in the rural district near his uncle's home for about three months. Facing as stern a reality as a country school somehow brought the boy to himself. By this time his wanderlust nature was very nearly satisfied. Homesick and with no funds, he walked fifty miles to get back home. While it may not have been the typical return of the proverbial prodigal, it is a comforting thought to know that he had a very wise father and mother. He received a cordial welcome. He was given new raiment and a place in his father's office, for by this time he was really ready to go to work and do something worth while. He asked his father what he wanted him to do. His father replied: "Study medicine." This was the beginning of a long, useful and successful career.

He received his first training under his father, who was a successful physician and who had had a great deal of experience in a general practice both before and after the war, also as a surgeon in the Confederate service for four years. He later attended Medical College at Louisville, Ky., and Cincinnati, Ohio, graduating from the Miami Medical College in Cincinnati before he was twenty years of age. He became a skilled surgeon in later years. He made a specialty of obstetrical work. In all of his practice, none received quite the close attention as did his obstetrical cases. The night was never too cold, he was never too tired, the patient too poor, neither did the color interfere. If it was possible, Dr. Millard Smith, through love for suffering humanity, never shirked. He often said to his wife that this kind of suffering could not be neglected. There were individuals who called on him for this kind of service who did not have him in other illnesses.

After graduating, he located at Cedar Chapel, Hardeman County, Tennessee. The wanderlust was still in him. In 1874 he moved to Oak Hill, Tennessee; back to Cedar Chapel, thence to Friendship, Tennessee where for a season he was associated with his father in a general practice. In 1878 he returned to Cedar Chapel where he remained until 1900 when he moved to Whiteville, Hardeman County, Tennessee.

In the old days youth and good looks were more of a liability than an asset to the young physician, as many thought wisdom was vested only in those with age and experience.

This man was ever sagacious and resourceful. Early in the game he grew a heavy beard, in fact even before he was out of school. This was a satisfaction to some as he seemed older. All he asked was a trial. Of course he made mistakes, many of them, but if there is such a thing as a man being born with every instinct of his profession born with him, this man was truly a born physician. He could not have made a success at anything else, for he loved it as few men love their life work.

Fortunately, Millard Smith fell in love with his wife early in life. He needed just this influence, this wonderful faith that she placed in him, the confidence she gave him in himself and the rare love that only she knew how to bestow. She was the guiding star, his very religion in life. To him, he had never seen a fairer woman than Alice Hinkle. She was the very essence of sweetness, gentleness, kindness.

He was not bold in the affairs of the heart. He told her of his love; he wrote her of it. But after he had placed the case before her, he did not cease his pleadings until, at two o'clock in the morning, she told him if he would go home she would marry him.

So together, he, with his ever ready smile, hearty greeting, she, with the ever helping word and presence, they made a place for themselves in the homes and hearts of the whole country thereabouts.

It was a very common thing in those days, in the cities as well as the rural districts, to have what is termed "The family doctor." Usually he was the sole medical adviser. In the country he broadens into the Advisor General in sickness and in all things physical, mental, spiritual, and at times in financial matters. It takes a big man to hold down successfully the job of an all-round country physician. Men of the smaller type send their patients to the city when in deep water.

Dr. Smith was frequently called from the little town of Whiteville to a nearby city, Memphis, as a consulting physician in difficult cases. Had he located in a city, he would have had, perhaps, a better known name and a wider reputation, but nowhere could he have done more good or created a greater appreciation and love than he did by remaining in the smaller places and ministering to all classes at all times. The writer believes that he bespeaks the sentiments of each and every child when he says, to him, Dr. Smith chose the greater part.

Some ludicrous as well as pathetic cases come to the writer's mind as he reviews the work of Dr. Smith. Periodically, a certain

old lady would become ill. It was a habit. No physician would she have save Dr. Smith. On one occasion her family thought she was really going to die. Dr. Smith lived thirteen miles distant. An aged, reputable physician lived a few doors away. They begged her to allow him to come, but she refused. A messenger was sent only to find that Dr. Smith was absent and would not return for several days. She insisted that they go to the nearest telegraph station and wire for him. This they did. He answered her call. Looking up at him, with tears in her eyes, she said: "Doctor Smith, I knew you would come. I knew the Lord would spare me until you did come." She recovered.

Another instance came to the attention of the writer a few years after the death of Dr. Smith. We were talking to a dear old lady whose family physician Dr. Smith had been: "Yes, we had lots of sickness in our family. No one ever had to come and consult with the doctor. He always got them well right off. Since he died, my Luther (her husband) took a bad spell and died. Later my oldest daughter, who was the picture of health, died. Now, I know if Dr. Smith had been living, both my husband and daughter would have gotten well." These instances are only two out of many that might be told, showing the implicit faith placed in him. A man must be "all wool and a yard wide" to hold the faith and confidence of his people for thirty-five years.

In 1900 his practice had grown to such an extent that it was impossible for him to take care of it. He was too conscientious to take in a partner and try to shift any of the responsibility. We doubt seriously if a large number of his patients would have stood for an outsider. About this time, on account of the severe strain, his health began to fail. Even his friends noticed the difference in him, physically. Up to this time he would never admit to himself that such was the case. Knowing the seriousness of his condition, and being daily importuned by his wife to save himself by going less, he tried to cut down his practice. This he found a very hard thing to do. It was then that he decided to move from the little village of Cedar Chapel to Whiteville, Tennessee, a small town of about 500 inhabitants, about fifty miles from Memphis, Tennessee, on the N. C. & St. L. Railroad. A kinder hearted, more whole-souled people have never lived than these Whiteville people. Dr. Smith was not unknown to these people, since he had frequently been among them in consultation

with other doctors. Soon he had a thriving little practice here. In the meantime his old patients were clamoring for him and he could not say "No" to them. Thus a double task was imposed upon him. Many the time has the writer seen him come home in the middle of the night, half frozen, hungry and dead tired. He would hardly have his clothes off before there would come another call. Out again in the snow and sleet, his horse miring in the slush, no he went without a thought for self, only intent on getting to his patient, to administer in many instances moral aid as well as professional. For after all, half of the ills of the body are controlled directly by the mind. So far as the writer knows, he never turned down a request for aid, it mattered not from whom, when, or where it came. Many times he started out on a long trip through sleet and snow with the absolute knowledge that not one cent of remuneration would be forth-coming, and in some cases not even gratitude. His heart was in his work. He often made the remark that there were two kinds of successes in the medical profession: the man who made money and the man who made people well and happy. His ideal of the medical profession was to render all aid possible to suffering humanity; the material part of it seemed to have no glamour for him. So far as the writer remembers he never sent out a statement. He would take chickens, pigs, eggs, butter, feed for his stock, or anything that his patients saw fit to pay with. Nor did he push any of his clients. This is borne out by the fact that at his death, a half dozen or so large ledgers were full of unpaid accounts. It was not his wish that these accounts be pushed. In justice to his children, an attempt was made to collect them after his death, but pursuant to his request, no one was "pushed" except in a few instances where such base ingratitude was shown. One instance we recall. Dr. Smith had been family physician for twenty years to a man who, during this time had reared a large family. Nothing was ever paid on this account except probably some farm produce. When the statement was presented by the Executrix of the Estate, this party denied owing same and when it was found that pressure was going to be brought to bear, he promptly made over all of his property in his wife's name.

Thus we see that his life was ever a life of service, given over to alleviating suffering humanity, without thought of material gain. We believe that just as sure as there is a Hereafter and a Heaven, and just so sure as



the teachings of the Great Master are true, believed and followed, that those teachings are a prerequisite for a seat in that Heaven and that Dr. Millard McFarland Smith today sits on the right hand of God and enjoys every joy inherited by those who are privileged to share His kingdom.

Although not a close collector, his family was always well provided for. They suffered for none of the necessities of life. His children, unlike most children reared in the country, did practically no farm work. They were kept in school usually ten months in the year.

Dr. Smith was a man who stood fearlessly by his moral convictions. The country in which he first located had in it a certain element of lawless men who cared neither for law nor man. Soon Dr. Smith's outspoken protests caused these men to single him out for a series of annoyances, threatening bodily harm, even way-laying him, shooting at him, stopping him, threatening to horsewhip or to run him out of the country. Notices were found on his door, or posted in different places where he would find them.

However, his moral courage always stood him in good stead and finally this lawlessness was stamped out.

In middle life and until failing health Dr. Smith weighed around two hundred pounds and was about five feet, nine inches tall. He had a massive head with a high forehead. His face was of the Roman type, with clear-cut features and a skin like a woman's. With shoulders thrown back, ever erect and a commanding personage he was a Lord Chesterfield in manners, a magnetic personality. He was one of the handsomest men the writer has ever known. With a wonderful flow of language—his English of the purest type—an unusually good memory, a perpetual smile, ever optimistic, always in a good humor, he was a man ever in demand, socially as well as professionally. He was the best story teller in Hardeman County; his fund of humor was inexhaustible.

He was usually chosen to introduce any public speaker who might come to his town. He was an orator born, but confined his oratory to political speeches as a whole, although he was ever ready and willing to raise his voice on any subject wherein a principle was involved. He was not a fanatic on any subject but always stood for the suppression of the liquor traffic. On one occasion an ex-governor came to town to make a political address. Dr. Smith was to introduce him. When he found that the gentle-

man was much under the influence of liquor, he went home in disgust, refusing point blank to introduce him or to have anything whatsoever to do with the occasion in any way.

He was a Mason, also belonged to the Odd Fellows and took quite an interest in both of these organizations.

One thing in connection with this man that stands out clearly in the minds of his children was his child-like love of the Christmas. For many Yuletides he was the Community Santa Claus. For personal reasons he and his wife decided to have their own tree in their home. He still played the Santa Claus, taking part and entering into the spirit of it just as one of the children, aided and abetted by his wife. Truly the children were more blessed in this respect than they dreamed. He never grew too old to love the mystery that always pervaded the Christmas night, purchasing his gifts for whatever children there might be in the home and hiding them away until the Christmas morning. After all it is just such a spirit as this in the father and mother that makes them live on and on in the hearts and minds of the children left behind.

Although not belonging to any church, he had a creed and belief. He attended services in the different churches as long as he lived. The writer never knew one who had greater reverence and respect for all religions than he. His reverence for the church house will always remain indelibly impressed in the minds of his children. Dr. Smith lived a religion that might well be emulated by all who knew him. He certainly was a Brother to all Fellowmen.

Soon after moving to Whiteville his devoted wife, to whom he ascribes whatever success he might have had, died. After this he plunged deeply into his work. In a few years his health gave down completely and for two years before his death he was an invalid. Under such a strain as he had lived, most men would have succumbed at once but his was a constitution, with a strong determination to live that prolonged his life more than a year. It was a pathetic sight to see such a strong body so absolutely helpless and yet the mind as clear as a crystal and the humanitarian instincts still strong. Never a word of complaint was heard except for the trouble he thought he was causing others who were administering to his needs and comfort.

He died at Whiteville, Hardeman County, Tennessee, October 4, 1908 and was buried at Melrose Cemetery beside his wife.

Attesting the general feeling of love and reverence for Dr. Smith and sympathy for his family, at his funeral, the Methodist Church, the largest in the little town, was full and overflowing. Always a lover of

flowers, he was laid to rest under a mound of beautiful floral tributes. A good man, a real servant of God and man.

*Resciat in pacem.*

Millard McFarland Smith Jr.



Alice Hinkle Smith

916 (See 507)

#### ALICE HINKLE SMITH

Alice Hinkle Smith, daughter of George W. and Esther Frost Hinkle, was born in Dyer County, Tennessee, January 24, 1851. Her mother was the daughter of Polly (Margaret) Wilson of Lincoln County, Tennessee near Shelbyville. The records give the date of Esther Frost's birth as follows: "Hester Frost was born the 14th of October about six o'clock in the morning in the year of our Lord, 1817." The names Hester and Hesther seem to be the variables of Esther.

Wilson Frost, father of Esther Frost, moved from North Carolina to Lincoln County and from there to Dyer County during the early settlement of the country, probably in the early thirties.

Alice Hinkle Smith was christened Alabama, her father being an ardent sympathizer of the southern cause during the war of the sixties. She had three other sisters named for the seceding states, Tennessee, Missouri and Georgia. Alabama disliked her own

name so much that she determined when she was older that she would change it to Alice, which she did and was known all through her girlhood by this name. Later in life her closest friends and husband called her Allie, a variable of Alice, as was much the custom in those days.

On her father's side she was of direct German descent, the early spelling of the name being Hinkel, later changed to Hinkle. Little is known of the Hinkle family save that Geo. W. Hinkle's grandfather settled in Rowan County, North Carolina during the revolutionary period. His own father was killed later, in 1814, by the Indians.

George Hinkle never saw his father. He was born a few months after his father's death, near Maxville, Rowan County, North Carolina. In later years his mother married Mr. Bessant. His mother was Miss Vail, whose father had been a general in the Revolutionary War and later a Commanding General of the State troops. In later years Mrs. Bessant moved to Dyer County. 1830 is the nearest date we have of this.

Esther Frost's father moved to Dyer County in the early part of 1820.

Esther Frost and Geo. W. Hinkle were married in Dyer Co., Tennessee near Dyersburg, Tennessee about 1839. There is no accurate account of this marriage. Their oldest child was born in 1841, Sarah Francis Hinkle Pewett Willis. She is now living in Jonesboro, Arkansas.

Alice Hinkle Smith's early childhood was spent in Dyersburg. A few years prior to the Civil War she moved six or eight miles north, near Hurricane Hill Church. Soon after this Esther Frost Hinkle died and was buried in the churchyard of Hurricane Hill Church. Several children died at this place, leaving only two, Fannie and Alice.

George Hinkle returned to Dyersburg to live. He and the two girls made their home with Mrs. Hannah Frost Nolen, oldest sister of Esther Frost Hinkle. Mrs. Nolen and Mr. Hinkle shared alike the fortunes of war. Their slaves were gone; their money, converted into Confederate money, lost its value when the war closed. Undaunted, this sainted woman kept the faith and went through the period of the Civil War mothering all who came within her jurisdiction. Aunt Hannah was a real mother to these two orphan girls and as her son expressed it: "We regarded each other pretty much as brother and sister." Our mother went to school during the time they lived in Dyersburg. Often she referred to her life in Aunt Hannah's home as one of the bright spots in her life. She was very ambitious, always studious.

She joined the Cumberland Presbyterian Church at an early age and was a consistent member of that church until many years later, living in a community where there was no Cumberland Church, she transferred her membership to the Methodist Episcopal Church, South. Through her entire life she was one of the most consecrated women the writer has ever known. To her, religion was a practical thing, not something to be assumed on stated occasions but lived every day, and a something to brighten and make happy each day of her life.

At the age of fifteen our mother, together with her father and sister, went to Humboldt, Tennessee to make her home. She continued in school at this place until the age of eighteen. In 1869 she entered Melrose Institute at Trenton, Tennessee. This period of her life she lived over and over again with her children. Deeply appreciative of the opportunity to continue her academic work, at last the one long cherished dream and hope of her life had presented itself. She began

the study of music. In the life of every one there is a cherished ideal. Some achieve it; some do not; some achieve it only in their power of appreciation. Our mother was obsessed with the desire to become a finished musician.

Often has she recounted her efforts to make good in every way every opportunity that came to her. In the two years at Melrose she did not become the finished musician in every sense of the word, but from a point of musical intelligence and understanding, she achieved a great deal. She began too late to acquire the state of excellence in technique that would have been hers had the opportunity come earlier in life, but she did grasp that something that goes to make the real musician, the keen appreciation and understanding of the finer and deeper things that really make the genuine foundation of a real musician.

She was graduated from Melrose in 1870 with honors. She was Salutatorian of her class. That same year in September, following her graduation in June, she taught a private school in the home of Mr. Robert Taylor of Taylor's Chapel, Tennessee. During this time she studied music with Mrs. Taylor. She made her home with her sister, Fannie, who had married Mr. Robert Pewett and who lived near Taylor's Chapel.

In 1871 our mother became governess in the home of a Baptist minister, Mr. Wiley Sammons, who lived near Cedar Chapel, Tennessee, in Hardeman County. Truly this was a real haven for her. Too much cannot be said of the wonderful character of this sainted woman, Mrs. Wiley Sammons. Our mother had again found a mother, kind, gentle, always solicitous of her welfare. Truly it was a real home. She enjoyed her life and her work there. The friendship that evolved from that relationship grew and cemented even unto the present day. The remaining members of the family never tire of telling our mother's children what a wonderful, wonderful woman "Miss Allie" was.

In 1871 Dr. Millard McFarland Smith, then a mere stripling of a youth, just out of medical college, came to Cedar Chapel to practice medicine. Mr. Sammons very kindly called him in as his family physician. Upon one of his visits to this home he saw Alice Hinkle. He often told the writer that never in all of his life had he seen such perfection in womanhood. Her superb poise completely captivated the young physician even before he had ever been introduced. Our father never grew tired telling the story of how he drew rein at the front gate upon getting a

glimpse of our mother in the backyard just as she was preparing to go over the stiles that lead into the orchard back of the house. He immediately sought Mrs. Sammons and asked for an introduction to the young lady. This was in the spring of 1872.

Their finding each other in the springtime with such a happy setting as this beautiful old colonial home provided, easily paved the way for a beautiful love affair. Our father was impetuous and ardent. Our mother was cautious and discreet. Strange as it may seem to the children who perhaps have not heard the oft-repeated story from the lips of their mother, as the writer has, they may be surprised to know that father was a timid man in the affairs of the heart. He proposed to our mother in a most ardent love letter. One of the most interesting things the writer remembers of her early youth was the finding of this letter and confronting her mother with it. The mother instantly asked, "Where have you been?" The answer came: "In the attic, mother, in the old trunk in the attic." Is it to be supposed that any child would pass unnoticed such an interesting looking document as this was, recognizing the superscription to be written by our father to our mother when she was a young lady? Curiosity added to interest. Under the superscription was a large menacing hand that pointed directly to the word "Private". What belonged to our mother was common property so far as her children argued. With the blush of a school girl, she admitted the letter to be hers. Then she told the story of how "Old Hetty", our father's housekeeper, had brought the letter to her. 'Twas not a long story. Our father did not become of age until September 15, 1872, our mother was six months his senior.

On October 1, 1872, when all nature was aglow, this father and mother of ours to be, drove to the home of the sister, Mrs. Pewett, and there in the presence of this aunt, our grandfather and Mr. Pewett, they were married by their mutual friend, Mr. Wiley Sammons.

Often our mother would tell us the story of their happy journey back to the little home at Cedar Chapel. For some reason, our mother always said 'twas her innate dislike of such, she had never learned to cook, so "Hettie" was retained as housekeeper. During the first few months of her married life, our mother taught the village school. Although grown up in years as girls were counted in those days, somehow this girl-wife would not grow up. Low in stature, small of physique, a perfect blonde, as some

of the older settlers expressed it to the writer, "Your mother was a fitting type of the Marguerite in Faust". Her heavy blonde braids falling to her knees, teeth with the perfection of a pearl, skin with the rosy tint of a child, indeed our mother was a comely woman. Our father often spoke of her physical perfection. He said he had never known one more perfect. Her habits as to personal cleanliness and dress were well worthy of emulation.

The first son, Lothair, was born Aug. 19, 1873. The following year found our father practicing medicine at Oak Hill, Tennessee, near Memphis. He lived here only a short time, returning to Cedar Chapel. Another son, Valeix, was born here. The wander-lust still gripping him, he soon moved to Friendship, Tennessee where he engaged in the practice of medicine with his father, Dr. J. D. Smith. Almonta was born here one year later. The next move found them back at Cedar Chapel. This time he bought a home and went in debt for same. As our mother would say, "This settled him." This was somewhere near 1880. They lived here until the year of 1900, when, after a fire which completely destroyed their home, they moved to Whiteville, Tenn. Between the period of 1880 and 1900 five other children were born, Esther, Auber, Lebert, Collice and Millard.

Our mother was first the wife and then the mother. No wife, no mother ever loved or sacrificed more. Not one of her children remembers aught else as her outstanding qualities. Each child will remember from his earliest childhood how she instilled into each those vital things that go to make for the best in human kind. She taught truth-telling along with prayers. She aroused ambition in each of them to be and to do. Her maxim was: "Where there is a will there is a way." She wanted her children to be a living, breathing personality of the biggest and finest things she had ever conceived for herself.

All that we are today as children of Alice and Millard Smith, we owe to the unswerving determination, that finer and keener perception and gold tested integrity of our father and mother.

By nature, she was modest and retiring in her every act. She avoided all semblance of show and display. Her love of children was evidenced all through life. All children who knew her loved her. Flowers grew and bloomed under her care as though her touch were magic. Her love of books never waned. We remember her as always alert and keeping

step with the times. Her housekeeping duties were never too onerous but that sometime during the week we would find her with the daily papers, keeping in touch with the outside world and keeping herself informed in such a way that she could always discuss in an intelligent manner any subject that might be brought up. She had good health and wonderful power of endurance. But following the birth of the youngest child she was never quite herself again physically. There came a gradual decline. She was so patient, never complaining; perhaps we did not realize just how surely she was slipping away from us. We did not notice that the shadows in her life were lengthening. Her happy laugh, always like a thread of gold, lived with her until the end.

The humorous side of her nature helped her over many of the graver issues of life. Somehow there was always a sunny side to everything for her. She had loved so much, served so faithfully and so long, perhaps God and His Angels felt that she needed just this rest that He provides for all of His saints. So our mother simply went to sleep. On February 24, 1902 she slipped away for a much needed rest. I am sure she has never really left us in spirit, for to each of us there have come times when the shadows have come very low into our own lives; each of us has felt that he or she came out of them better and stronger all because of the invisible presence and force of that little mother of ours.

She sleeps today in Melrose Cemetery, Whiteville, Tennessee. Beside her are our father and one brother, Valeix. She lived so truly and so vitally among us and believed so firmly and so earnestly in her child-like faith in the good God in heaven, there should be a feeling of exaltation on the part of those who loved her so, and to whom her memory is so dear.

Truly, she left her heart with us, what more could we ask, for in life and in death, she gave us her all.

Esther Veturia (Smith) Dickerson  
Ellis Apartment "E"  
Paducah, Kentucky.

The data given below has been furnished us from the Rowan County, N. C. Records. We think the ones mentioned herein are relatives of our mother on her paternal side. We pass it along for the benefit of those who may have other data, that they may use in seeking for missing links. The 1790 Census gives further data to those seeking information.

Wilson Frost married Mary (Polly) Wilson in Rowan County, N. C., March 21, 1809, Wilson Frost and James Wilson being the bondsmen, so the records at Salisbury, N. C. disclose. James Wilson was possibly either father or brother of Mary (Polly) Wilson. The earlier ancestors of Hester (Esther) Frost, from this union, are said to come from Virginia, but we do not know whether it was the Frost or the Wilson line.

We find that one William Wilson married Ann Frost in Rowan County, N. C., March 5, 1784. We also find this data in the Rowan Co. records: Samuel Frost married Sally Andrews, June 22, 1814; bondsmen, Samuel Frost and Thomas Hunt.

John Frost married Elizabeth Hunt, December 22, 1817; bondsmen, John Frost and Ransom Powell.

Enace (or Enock) Frost married Susannah December 4, 1826; Enock Frost and Tillman, bondsmen.

Samuel Frost married Jane Robertson, March 24, 1832; bondsmen, Samuel Frost and John Hardin.

Ebenezer Frost married Elizabeth Wilson, Nov. 2, 1775; bondsmen, Ebenezer Frost and William Van Cleave.

John Frost married Rebecca Boon, August 21, 1794.

Ebenezer Frost married Rebecca Baily, April 12, 1796; bondsmen, Ebenezer Frost and Brit Baylig.

The presumption is that these people are relatives of our mother on her maternal side.

At Salisbury, Rowan Co., N. C., is recorded the will of Elizabeth Frost who died in 1825. Her sons mentioned in it are as follows: Isaac N. Frost, James Frost, William Frost, Wilson Frost, Jonathan Frost and Samuel Frost. The daughters are as follows: Amy Frost, Rachael (Frost) Holman, Sally (Frost) Garwood, Elizabeth (Frost) Van Cleave, Abigail (Frost) Mervill.

The Henkle (Hinkle) family also lived in Rowan County, N. C. The ways of spelling this name are numerous as will be seen; Henkel, Henkle and Hinkle, some using the original German name, Henkel.

In Rowan County we find the following to have obtained deeds to lands: Jacob Henkle—1763; Nathaniel Henkle—1778; Peter Henkle—1778; Charles Henkle—1778; Willis or (Wendall) Henkle—1793; George Henkle—1790; Michael Henkle—1795; Paul Henkle—1790; Caspar Henkle—1801.

Account is given of the following marriages in Rowan County, N. C.: George Henkle married Francis Shaffer, September 17, 1795; William Henkle married Edna Hunter, De-



ember 11, 1793; Joseph Henkle married Sarah Wilson, October 1, 1802; John Henkle married Mary Rosenbaum, February 26, 1790; bondsman Jacob Henkle.

The will of Peter Henkle of Rowan County, N. C., 1775, shows: wife, Salony; brother, Charles; son, Anthony; daughter, Mary; cousin, Conrad. Other children whose names are not mentioned get the rest of the property.

Esther Veturia (Smith) Dickerson

907 (See 507)

A

#### CHILDREN OF DR. MILLARD M. SMITH & HIS WIFE, ALICE HINKLE SMITH

Shortly after Alice Hinkle Smith married our brother she came to Friendship, Tennessee. The writer was only four years old. She borrowed him from our mother, took him fifty miles distant to her own home at Cedar Chapel, Tennessee and was his foster-mother for six months. The feeling he has for her children is, of necessity, that of a brother. She, to him, was a mother. As such, we place her picture in this book.

She had eight interesting children, seven of whom are now living.

A. Lothair Smith, the eldest, was born at Cedar Chapel, Tennessee, August 19, 1873. He is small in stature, never weighing over 135 pounds, we would judge. The Creator was good to him. His bright, happy nature, with the smile that won't come off, has endeared him to a multitude of friends, and baffled opposition on many occasions. A well constructed head with gray matter of that texture predominates those traits of a constructive, executive and managerial nature. Without wealth, influence or assistance; by close study, hard work and never tiring energy, he has steadily ascended the ladder of life's ambition, until today, in middle life, he stands in the foremost ranks and among the master minds of big insurance business.

As a lad, one crop of corn tended and raised by him was the completion of his course in agriculture. It can't be said that this year's work in any way impaired his physical condition, as it was the boast of Lothair Smith and his younger brother, Almonta, who gave valuable assistance in the raising of this crop of corn, that they did not leave a lizard in the field with a tail.

A common school education, with three or four years in Latin and Greek, was thought sufficient for his education, after being polished off by a course in the Smith's Business College of Paducah.

Books have been his intimate companions all through life. After leaving home, out of a salary of \$35.00 a month, he saved sufficient to take one year's course at Vanderbilt University.

He was very musical in his nature. By this, we mean, his love for good music was one of the big things in his nature. In his early business life he attempted to study music along with his work.

There soon came the realization that to make a real success in the business world, his musical career would have to be sacrificed. He said that he realized that he had to take his choice between being a first class business man or a second rate musician. So the music went.

At Paducah he was bookkeeper for the Paducah Standard, a daily newspaper. Later he went to Louisville, Kentucky, with the Equitable Life Assurance Co. Beginning as stenographer, he was finally promoted to cashier. He took a course for a year, at night, in Anatomy at the Medical College.

Seeing the constant need of legal advice in his business, to make himself more valuable to his employers, he took a four year law course in the Louisville Law School, keeping up his work at the same time, and graduated with the class at the end of the 4th year.

This effort was appreciated. Having made international law a specialty, he was offered a position in Japan by his company. This he refused. Another position in London, England, was offered but this was also declined. Finally he was offered the position as cashier at Pittsburg, Pa. This is the largest Insurance Agency in the world. He accepted and for several years there had from sixty to seventy-five people in a clerical position under him, handling millions of dollars every month.

In 1918 the Government at Washington had not been able to properly organize the War Risk Insurance Department. The Equitable was called upon to come to the rescue of the Government. Lothair Smith was sent to that place in May, 1918. He remained until Feb., 1919. His title was assistant to the Director of the Insurance Department. He had thirty-five hundred people in a clerical position under him. Others got the honor; he furnished the brains to organize and re-organize that department. High officials in Washington asked him to remain longer. He was asked to remain permanently there in the Insurance Department. He refused and went to the New York office. For many weeks thereafter he would go down

to Washington Friday night and give Saturday to the completion of the work.

When a young man, he told his father that he would never be satisfied until the Equitable Life was willing to pay him \$10,000.00 a year. The ambitions of youth when in later life are achieved are not always satisfying. Now, in a high, trusted position, he works with that same youthful ardor, contentedly awaiting to see if there shall be further honors.

In the New York office he bears the title, Assistant to the Auditor. He has accomplished by the middle of life a business reputation and standing in the insurance world that only an insignificant part of one per cent ever attains. He still wears that cheerful smile and friendly greeting that helped to start him to success when yet a boy.

Margaret Kale was born June 24, 1901. She is now completing her education in Columbia University, New York City. When four years of age, a mutual affection sprang up between her and Lothair Smith. She would leave her mother's home, go to the corner to see Lothair Smith, who then lived in the Coker Apartments in the same block. He would take her to a meal with him and then to the show. On Sunday she spent the most of the day with him. From this, there sprang a friendship out of which grew romance. On September 9, 1909, he married Margaret Kale's mother, Mrs. Anne Lindsay Kale, the daughter of John Saunders Lindsay and Margaret, his wife, of Louisville, Ky.

Mrs. Smith was born July 26, 1877. Left a widow early in life, she entered the business world and supported herself and her child. Mrs. Smith is tall, larger than her husband, graceful, and of commanding appearance. She is a very handsome woman and the essence of good nature, endowed with keen intellect and an unusual sense of wit. She is a wonderful mother and an ideal wife. She told the writer that she married the choice of all the Smith family. Lothair thinks he made the bargain of his life when he married his wife. They reside at First and Washington Streets, Bayside, Long Island, New York. His business address is Equitable Life Building, New York.

W. Thos. Smith

## B

### ALMONTA SMITH

Almonta Smith was born December 8, 1877 at Friendship, Tennessee. He was educated in the public schools of Hardeman and Haywood County, and as was required by the father of all of his children, Almonta had his quota of Greek and Latin. Always

a splendid mathematician, it is no wonder that he was of the hundred plus class when it came to his life work. After leaving the school room, he entered the Smith's Business College at Paducah, Kentucky. After finishing his course here, he went to Jonesboro, Arkansas, and was employed in a clerical capacity with the firm of Pewett Bros. at that place. From here he went to Nettleton, Ark., and was associated with a lumber concern at that place.

When about the age of twenty, we find him in the employ of Chapman-Dewey Lumber Co. in their Marked Tree, Arkansas office. He began his work here at the bottom of the ladder. With perseverance, tenacity of purpose, always giving the best in him to his people, today, Almonta stands at the top, one of the most valuable men in the entire Chapman-Dewey force of men. He knows every phase of the lumber business, from the office to the remotest part of the woods, equally at home in the office or in the yards. The one secret of his success has been his cooperation and thorough understanding of the men under him. He has never forgotten that he has not always been at the head of affairs; is able to put himself in the other man's place. He is fair; just, in its every sense of the word. If, at times, he seems harsh, it is only his way of trying to drive home a truth that will be for the man's good. His keen sense of humor, the mischievous boy in him is always bubbling over. His love of a joke keeps him young. Only a very bald head betrays his forty-four years.

In his early thirties he was the recipient from the heads of the Chapman-Dewey Co. of a gift of quite a large block of stock in this company in order to make him a partner and a permanent fixture in the business. Today he is a holder of some worth in his company and is the Sales Manager of their Memphis office.

Chapman-Dewey Lumber Co. owns something like fifty thousand acres of land and have owned as high as ninety thousand. The pay roll at Marked Tree runs in to the hundreds. The main office is located at Kansas City.

Chapman-Dewey Lumber Co. does more of a wholesale business, selling almost exclusively to large manufacturing plants rather than to the retail business. Almonta Smith is a lumber man in its every sense and is well known among the big lumber concerns of the country.

Were you to hunt the world over, you would not find a man more keenly interested

in his home and family. His wife and children come before everything else. In June, 1901, at Gilmore, Arkansas, he married Augusta (Gussie) May Stirewalt, born July 11, 1883, Timothy, Illinois. Mrs. Smith has every attribute of the wife and mother. She is of the brunette type, a very handsome woman. In her home she is the ideal housekeeper and home-maker. She is gracious in manner; making a friend means to retain it. Her husband and her children are the vital things of her life. Never tiring in her efforts to make for their comfort and happiness, the writer knows of no more unselfish mother or wife. Their home is the social center of their little town. They have put the best into their home-making. It is attractive in every way, just the kind to make children satisfied and feel that in no other home do they find just that thing that they get in their own. This is real success in life.

Two most interesting children were born to this union. Alta Ardene Smith, born June 1, 1902, was graduated from the Marked Tree High School in June, 1919. In June, 1921 she was graduated from the Randolph-Macon Institute, Danville, Virginia, with honors both in music and her academic work. In the fall of 1921 she entered the Randolph-Macon Woman's College, Lynchburg, Virginia, where she expects to remain until she has finished the course there. Alta is a very accomplished musician, both vocal and instrumental. Of rather a retiring nature, she leaves the other person to find out her real worth. The ones who know her best know just how much of the pure gold she has in her make-up. She is very ambitious for a thorough education and if she continues as she has already begun, she will make her mark.

She is of the blonde type, a beautiful girl. As before stated, her personality is of the kind that wins. A veritable gem is this wonderful girl.

Alice Ethelene Smith was born July 1, 1904 at Marked Tree, Arkansas. She was graduated from the Marked Tree High School in June 1921. In 1920 she entered the Tri-State Musical Contest, Arkansas, Mississippi and Tennessee being represented. In this contest she failed. Not to be daunted, again in the same contest in June 1921, she won the medal.

In the fall of 1921 she, with her sister Alta, entered the Randolph-Macon Woman's College at Lynchburg, Virginia.

Ethelene is of a prodigious mental acumen. She inherits from her father his talent along mathematical lines. She, too, is a talented

musician, both vocal and instrumental. Surely the spirit of their grandmother, Alice Hinkle Smith, lives again in these two girls of Almonta Smith.

She is more of the brunette type and very small. She is an athlete, entering into and enjoying almost any form of outdoor sport. As a swimmer, she excels. Both she and her sister Alta share equally in these accomplishments. With a bright, sunny disposition, making friends as she goes, truly it can be said of this girl, she is a rare type.

The writer has a catch algebraic problem which apparently proves that one equals two. We start with  $A$  equals  $X$ . Later we divide by  $A$  minus  $X$  which is zero and thus apparently obtain a result that  $A$  equals  $A$  plus  $X$ —and substituting— $A$  equals  $2A$ , or  $1$  equals  $2$ . We gave this problem to Ethelene, and in a flash she solved it, the first person to whom the writer had given the problem who had ever done so.

It would be a very difficult problem to try to determine which of the two girls really has the brighter future. It is safe to say that there is much in store for both.

W. Thos. Smith

#### C-1

#### ESTHER VETURIA (SMITH) DICKERSON

Esther Veturia Smith Dickerson, born June 13, 1880, was named for her two grandmothers. She spent most of her childhood days in the village of Cedar Chapel, Hardeman County, Tennessee.

She received her early scholastic training in the village school. In the fall of 1895 she went to Waverly, Tennessee where she entered the Waverly Training School. In the summer of 1897 she was graduated, having taken her entrance examination for Vanderbilt University. During the summers of 1896 and 1897 she was with the teachers' class in County Normal Training in Waverly, Humphreys County.

There was one thing required by the father of this woman—that was to study Greek and Latin. She had her quota, taking three years Greek and five years Latin. She began teaching in the public schools of West Tennessee in 1898 and for five years she continued in this work, during which time she completed her course in the Tennessee State Normal at Jackson, Tennessee. Later she took a course in shorthand and bookkeeping in the Smith's Business College at Paducah, Kentucky, graduating from there in the fall of 1899.

Always a great lover of music and having studied at different times since early child-

hood, she availed herself of every opportunity presented to further her work in musical lines. Her thorough foundation and what she really is today in the musical world, she will tell you she owes all to her mother, who was a real musician. At different times she studied with the best teachers she could find in Memphis, Tennessee and Louisville Kentucky. But unfortunately, or fortunately, music, of a necessity, was a side issue, for it was necessary for her to work.

She entered the business world in 1903, coming to Paducah, Kentucky, in the fall of 1904. In January she accepted a position with the A. B. Smith Lumber Co. as stenographer and bookkeeper. In the fall of 1906 she was in charge of the music department of the Indianola High School, Indianola, Sunflower County, Miss. While there she married Albert D. Dickerson of Paducah but insisted that she remain until she had fulfilled her contract with that school.

Shortly after her marriage, her husband organized the Dickerson Tobacco Co. at Paducah, Kentucky, building a large warehouse and factory. This involved a heavy indebtedness, which had to be paid. Esther Smith Dickerson was equipped to help her husband. She became his companion, his co-worker in his every interest. Today she is and for years has been his trusted secretary, his silent partner. Now that the skies are clear, it gives her great satisfaction to know and feel that she helped to steer the ship in stormy weather. Her work for her husband has been done in the home, where they have a well equipped office. She works in the capacity of stenographer and secretary.

Her greatest pride is that she can and wishes to be called a "working woman". The writer asked her why she did not keep a servant. She told him that she did not have time to bother with the kind she could afford. We asked her if she belonged to any of the numerous Bridge Clubs. She smiled; replied that she was just a normal woman, loved the game, played it with the same keen enjoyment that she worked at everything else, but that she did not allow herself the luxury of belonging to a club because she was afraid she might find herself enslaved, and somehow, there was not the time for it with the degree of regularity that club life called for. She does do club work to a certain degree, the Woman's Club, a musical club or two, the U. D. C. and D. A. R., all come for their quota. In her own words; "I belong to enough." With her regular duties as a housekeeper, "home-keeper", with the average demand on the

average woman from the outside world, her trying to keep up her music and a certain amount of reading, and last but not least, her church work, little time is left for the Bridge Club, much as the lure may be.

Her heart lies nearest her home and her husband. She works with a purpose and dispatches her duties with ease and finish. With the many interruptions, we do not know how she does it, but she does.

Her greatest love is her husband and her child. No child was ever more welcome than the little one who came and went the same day, September 24, 1908. Her love of children and humanity is really a very vital thing in her make up. A little child, to her calls forth the best in her and arouses a peculiar love and tenderness as nothing else can do.

Lack of funds limits her in her acts of charity, but she gives willingly, cheerfully and silently of herself and her substance.

She is of an optimistic nature, and is always on the alert to avoid anything of an unpleasant nature; but if that thing comes, to her, it has come, and the inevitable has to be accepted. She makes the best of it, trying to find a way around it, since it had to come.

Her husband is a well-rounded business man, endowed with more than ordinary business acumen and would have made a success anywhere, yet the writer feels that she deserves some credit for his success. She has never at any time antagonized. They have worked hand in hand, partners in business and at play. On two hours' notice she will pack a grip and be ready to go with him whether it be to New Orleans, Louisville or Virginia.

She is a member of the M. E. Church South and loves her church. Her work in the Sunday School for a number of years meant a great deal to her. Through her efforts and with the aid of a faithful class a Young Ladies Bible Class was organized. Out of this class has grown one of the largest organizations in the Broadway Methodist Church at Paducah, The Susannah Wesley Bible Class.

No life however full of well performed duties either at home or abroad can be called a real success unless the one living that life has endeared himself or herself to those who are nearest and dearest.

Esther Smith Dickerson counts that thing greatest in her life—her love for her own—and the honest belief and faith in their genuine affection for her. Love and loyalty is the keynote of her life.

W. Thos. Smith

## C-2

In 1066 William I, The Conqueror, of Normandy invaded and conquered England. With him or following him, we are told, went one Dickerson. He was rewarded with the Manor of Kenson and took the name of Walter de Kenson. Later he is said to have changed it back to Dickerson. Another English family was called Richard. It is said that later it was called Dick and then Diccon. Later this was lengthened into Dicconson about the twelfth century.

Charles Dickenson, son of Simon Dickenson married Rachael Carter. His mother was Catherine Dudley, daughter of the fifth Lord Dudley. Three of his sons came to Virginia in 1654, Walter, Henry and John. Their descendants are said to spell the name Dickenson, Dickerson and Dickinson. As this was before the day of much printing, we find many names in the same families spelled differently. Most of the Dickerson families in Virginia who have been able to trace back are said to have come from one of these three brothers.

Daniel Dickenson, United States Senator from Pennsylvania, Governor Mahlon Dickerson and Governor Philemon Dickerson, both of New Jersey, and Don M. Dickinson in Cleveland's cabinet are all said to have been descendants of these three brothers, spelling their names three ways.

James Dickerson, of Appomattox County, Virginia, married Martha (Pattie) Paris or Parish. In August 1809 there was born to them a very noted character, Daniel Dickerson who died March 11, 1900. No man in his section enjoyed the confidence of people in the way he did. He was so noted for his honesty, his ability to analyze the differences of others, dissect and explain them, come to a just and fair conclusion by the rule of reason, by the law of right and wrong, that many came to him and went over their differences and abided his decision, when had it not been for him, there would have been extended litigation in the courts. He married Elizabeth Ann Wade, born in Tenn. 1819. She died a few hours before he did and both were buried in the same grave.

To them was born William James Dickerson March 3, 1838. He died July 19, 1920. He married Annie P. Webb on Dec. 18, 1867 and she lives in Lynchburg, Virginia. He enlisted in Co. H, 18th Va. Infantry, Hunter's Brigade, Pickett's Division, Longstreet's Corps. He was in the battles of Manassas, Gettysburg, and Hatcher's Run. At Hatcher's Run with all his brigade he was taken prisoner and imprisoned at Point Lookout.

Annie P. Webb was a daughter of Albert Webb who was a Confederate soldier and who died in 1864 from fever contracted in the army. He was the son of Nathan Webb and Mary (Polly) Strange, his wife. The mother of Annie P. Webb was Mary Elizabeth (Jennings) Webb. She was born 1826, died Dec. 22, 1900 and was the daughter of James Jennings who died 1868, and who in 1822, married Phoebe Ford of Cumberland County, Virginia. James Jennings was the son of Allen Jennings who married a Miss Gilliam. Allen Jennings was the son of Robin Jennings who was a soldier in the Revolutionary war.

To William James Dickerson and Annie P. Webb, his wife, on Nov. 2, 1875 was born Albert Daniel Dickerson. Albert Daniel Dickerson was born about nine miles from Appomattox Court House, Virginia and spent his boyhood days on the farm. After passing through high school, he took a course in and was graduated from the Piedmont Business College at Lynchburg, Virginia. At the age of nineteen he entered the tobacco business and has since been engaged in it.

In 1904 he came to Paducah, Kentucky, and later married the most handsome woman in Paducah. At least if there was another one there so handsome, the writer has never met her.

He came to Paducah in Nov., 1904. He then for some time had been associated with and still is associated with W. G. Dunnington & Co. He came as buyer and bookkeeper. This firm represents the Italian Regie, New York, N. Y., exporters of tobacco for the Italian Government. Later he was made Western District Manager over all the factories which rehandle for the Italian Government, the following points being under his jurisdiction: Fulton, Ky., Mayfield, Ky., Murray, Ky., Paris, Tenn., Martin, Tenn., La Center, Ky.

In 1909 he organized the Dickerson Tobacco Co., Paducah, Ky., this being a re-handling concern also. He is manager of this.

Albert Dickerson is of the managerial and executive cast of mind. He knows how to handle men and get along with them, get the best there is in them and at the same time treat them in a manner as to make them his friends. Some who are very close to this man have been heard to say that the Courts of Justice lost a valuable man when he failed to follow the study of law. He is one of the best students of human nature the writer has ever known.



His interest is centered in his business and his wife. Save for his wife, his mother, sisters and female relatives he has no personal interest in femininity. He is very fond of children, alternately teasing and befriending them. The world knows nothing of his liberality, and yet it is wonderful, far exceeding that of many who shout it from the rooftops to advertise theirs. He is done quietly. He disdains parade, glamour or notoriety. He prefers that his works, his good deeds, his charitable acts, be incognito to all save those directly interested.

His friendship for those whom he likes becomes welded as of steel. If misfortune should come to us, there is no man living who would more quickly come to our rescue than Albert Dickerson. It is a wonderful satisfaction to have for a friend a man of his character.

His capacity for work is marvelous. There is not a lazy bone in his body. He is a man of strongest character. One can always know just how he stands on every question. Truly he is a man with the courage of his convictions. It matters little to him whether his views be popular or not. Not wantonly does he hurt the feelings of any one for the sake of wounding, and yet diplomacy does not deter him from expressing his opinion of that which concerns the good of all.

He is a high type of business man, has the confidence of men in all lines of business. He would be a leader in any occupation.

His habits are those of the student. He reads and studies much. His is of a literal type of mind, preferring history, a literature of facts, to fiction. He is a close reader of the Geographic Magazine, any magazine that pertains to the affairs of the day, agricultural matters, etc. Seldom you meet a busy business man better informed along general lines. His memory is nothing short of precocity.

A lover of nature in its every sense, he yearns for the time when he will be in a position to hark back to his native soil, Virginia. His one thought is to go back, purchase a typical Virginia home and live his last years near to nature.

His adversity to publicity is so strikingly strong, we hesitate to say more, only this: his is the common creed, the Brotherhood of Man. Adhering to no religion in particular, but with a great reverence for all, he lives each day with a clean conscience toward all, enmity toward none.

W. Thos. Smith

## D

### AUBER SMITH

Auber Smith, the fourth son of Dr. Millard M. Smith and Alice Hinkle Smith, was born March 15, 1882. He received his early scholastic training in the public schools of Hardeman County, Tennessee. On Feb. 14, 1897 he came to Paducah, Kentucky where he took a course in the Smith's Business College. After completing same he went to Jonesboro, Arkansas, where he worked in a clerical capacity. He returned to Paducah and went with the Jennings Real Estate Agency. Owing to ill health he went to California, remaining there for four years. He was city salesman for Union Metal and Hardware Co., Los Angeles. At the age of twenty-one he returned to Paducah and again associated himself with Mr. Jennings. Feeling the need of a higher and dryer climate, he again responded to call of wanderlust and moved to Roanoke, Virginia. Very soon afterwards he was offered a position with an insurance department of a bank in Indianapolis, which he accepted. Later he returned to Paducah where he accepted a position with the Maryland Casualty Co. It will be only fair to Auber Smith to quote a tribute paid him by that same Company. "Thirty years ago in Hardeman Co., Tennessee, a male child born to the Smith family was christened Auger, because he early showed unusual ability at getting through things. This name was subsequently softened to Auber at the request of the child's mother, who declared Auger too pointed even for a sharp boy like her son, but the change of name had no effect on Auber's nature.

At the age of sixteen he began drilling his way through the world, working at different times in his own state of Tennessee, in Kentucky, in Arkansas, in Virginia, in Indiana, and for four years he lived in California, bringing an impaired breathing apparatus back to health. However, he always returned to Kentucky after each attack of wanderlust, and in Kentucky there was no spot so sweet as Paducah.

It was here, in the office of a real estate and insurance agency, that Auber and the Maryland met. As he relates it, 'In 1905 we secured the agency of the Maryland from that gentlemanly old war horse, Mr. J. Stewart Bell of Louisville. Next year the Home Office took a long shot and placed the general agency for a limited territory with us. Then I saw a better field in casualty insurance than in a mixed insurance and real estate, hence the dissolution of the firm, yours truly taking

over the Maryland. Then I woke up to the fact that trying to support a family and pay office expenses on a commission income of \$750.00 per year meant starvation. As I did not want to starve I bought an automobile on nerve and started out to get business. Since then I haven't had the nerve to stop. There can be no doubt that Auber does get the business. He goes in particularly for liability, accident and disability insurances, and fidelity bonds, but he also does well with other lines. How well does he do? Why, this well: on the six months' record for the Fifteenth Anniversary Celebration Contest he stands first in his class of fifty-five. Yes, this little fighter in Kentucky, who weighs exactly one hundred and eight pounds, has so far whipped fifty-four able men. Great work for Auber—the auger, he bores right through."

Auber Smith was one of the promoters of and helped to organize The Ohio Valley Fire and Marine Insurance Company. He was their secretary for three years. He resigned to look after his own insurance business.

A. B. Smith not related to him, has built up a very large lumber business, reaching into several of the southern states. He and Auber Smith have been close friends for years. Mrs. A. B. Smith has been at the head of the managerial department for a number of years. Owing to the growth of the business, also being desirous of having some one in the business who would be capable of relieving her entirely of her responsibility as manager, the firm, in 1919, made Auber Smith a proposition to go with them in that capacity. Since then he has been their trusted man, spends most of his time here and there in the south, looking after the interests of the A. B. Smith Lumber Co., whose main office is located in 32, City National Bank Building, Paducah, Kentucky.

On January 17, 1906 he married Virgie Kinney of Bolivar, Tennessee.

Robert Kinney was a private in Captain Martin's Company, in Peter Grubb's Battalion, Lancaster County, Pennsylvania Militia in their march for the camps in the Jerseys. On August 13th, 1776 he was mustered and passed by the Committee of Observation and Inspection in Lancaster.

He was born July 1, 1758, died December 1843. He married in 1783, Carolina Grider, born 1763.

To them was born Thomas Patton Kinney, Sept., 1812, who died December 4, 1882. On March 1, 1837 he married Ann Sammons who was born August 1, 1815 and died November 4, 1859. To them was born Joseph

Marshall Kinney Feb. 22, 1850. He died Oct. 15, 1921 and was buried at Bolivar, Tennessee. On December 12, 1877 he married Ida Eleanor Hudson, born Feb. 7, 1854, daughter of Thomas Jefferson Hudson (born 1800, died 1861) and his third wife, Elizabeth Katherine Reaves, (born 1824, died 1882,) to whom he was married in 1846.

Virgie Kinney is a daughter of Joseph Marshall Kinney and his wife, Ida Eleanor Kinney. She was born in the home of her maternal grandmother, the "Old Hudson Homestead", Hardeman County, about five miles from Whiteville, Tennessee, June 19, 1884. Three days before she was fifteen, she graduated from the High School at Mercer, Tennessee. A year later she began teaching and taught for two years. She then became assistant at the Post Office at Bolivar, Tennessee, where she remained until she married Auber Smith, at which time she moved to Paducah, Kentucky. The two families had been close friends for years, Auber Smith's father, Dr. Millard M. Smith was their family physician.

We shall never forget the untiring, constant, devoted and child-like affection with which she served our mother from the day she had her fatal accident to the time her body was placed under the soil. It sealed a love, an affection, a friendship and a kindly feeling that can never be severed on our part.

Intellectuality is the dominant trait of her character. She worships her husband, idolizes her children. She ever refrained from "baby talk" and asked others to use correct English in talking with her babies.

Two bright, interesting children came from this union. Eleanor, born October 12, 1907; David, born November 15, 1909. We know of no brighter, finer children. With such a wonderful mother and father, it is no wonder.

W. Thos. Smith

## E

### LEBERT SMITH

Lebert Smith was born March 7, 1884 at Cedar Chapel, Tennessee. He received his scholastic training at Cedar Chapel, later attending the High School at Whiteville, Tennessee.

At the age of sixteen he developed the wanderlust which had seized upon his father at about the same age. He left home to explore the world, starting for Texas and landing at Huntsville, Alabama. Later we find him in Jonesboro, Arkansas. Civilian life was entirely too tame for this adventurous lad. In June, 1901 he enlisted with Uncle

Sam and was stationed at Fort Riley, Kansas. Upon hearing that he had taken this step, his mother was very much grieved. A sister who was much interested in the career of this wanderer, remarked to her mother: "Well mother, he needed a boss and he needed a job he couldn't turn loose. He has both." This was cold comfort, but truly it was a good day for Lebert Smith when he joined the army. He first joined the Infantry, but owing to a long, severe illness, contracted while at Fort Keogh, Montana, he was transferred to the Cavalry. He spent three years in the army, stationed at Forts in Kansas, Montana and the Dakotas.

His mother was critically ill while he was in the service. He obtained a furlough and reached her several days before she died. The furlough was extended but lacked twelve hours of being long enough. He was ordered back to service, another furlough being denied him. He left a dying mother, the message coming to him of her death when only fifty miles away. Such is the stern reality of duty. His love for this little mother was pathetic. He was the one who never forgot to show his affection in every way. He loved her as a man seldom loves a mother. She became reconciled to his life away from the home but somehow she felt that he was further from her than the other boys and the yearning was always there.

After he was given an honorable discharge from the army he went to Marked Tree, Arkansas where he was associated with the Chapman-Dewey Lumber Co. For a number of years he was in the main office. Later, he was made manager of the Chapman-Dewey Commissary.

In 1919 he went into the hardware business in Marked Tree. Like many other merchants at that time following the depression of a war, he suffered severe reverses. He had at one time turned down an offer from the Shapleigh Hardware Co. of St. Louis. After his business reverses, they again offered him a position with them as salesman. He accepted. Today his territory covers part of Arkansas, Tennessee and Mississippi; contiguous to Memphis, Tennessee.

He and his family live at Baldyn, Mississippi. Lebert Smith is tall, well built and round rather than angular. He is the largest one of Millard Smith's boys. The writer thinks he is the handsomest of all the boys and we say this without any intent to under estimate a certain other brother who is counted handsome by many. He is polite, open, frank and honest. A manlier fellow there never was. He is a one hundred per cent man. ☞

As a young man he called his sweetheart "Miss Edna." In the spring of 1907 he married Alice Edna Chambers. After fourteen years of married life, to him, both in private and public, she is still "Miss Edna". There is a peculiar melody in his voice when he speaks her name which breathes of a deep affection.

Their life together has been a wonderfully happy one. In it there are no family secrets. They have been partners in everything. There has always been a unison of thought, purpose and interest. They have worked and planned jointly. They were married at Henderson, Tennessee, where she then lived.

Alice Edna Chambers was born at Booneville, Miss., going to Henderson, Tennessee later in life. She is the daughter of Joseph Daniel Chambers who was of Irish descent, and of Josephine Kramer, his wife. Josephine Kramer was of direct German descent. Her father, (or her grandfather—of this we are not certain), was of the Royal Family of Germany. The compulsory service in the army to one of his station in life was so distasteful that he preferred to be a hundred per cent American than to be the recipient of a large German estate which carried with it a compulsory army service. Secretly, he left his father-land, came to America, remained incognito, so far as his title was concerned, married in America and reared a family and died. To his family after his death, a companion who had come from Germany with him revealed the identity of this man. This ancestor was truly one hundred per cent American. We know the facts but do not remember the name.

Edna Chambers was reared on the farm. She was graduated from the Christian College, Henderson, Tennessee. She loves every one, whether they be big or little, so long as they are respectable and decent in manner. She has a love and esteem for her husband and children, his and her relatives, that is distinctly closer, more wonderfully beautiful, and finer than the love she has for any other. She is in no way clannish, but really has a peculiar affection for her own.

She is a most consistent member of the Christian Church. Seldom do we find one more in love with the church of their choice than Edna Chambers Smith.

They have two interesting boys, Rubert Taylor Smith, born March 30, 1909; Hummel E. Smith, born Dec. 16, 1910. They are all there, 100 per cent American in every sense of the word.

W. Thos. Smith

F  
COLLICE SMITH

Collice Smith was born May 15, 1887 at Cedar Chapel, Tennessee. She received her early schooling in the village school at Cedar Chapel. After her parents moved to Whiteville, Tennessee, she attended the High School at that place. She graduated from the Methodist College Female Institute, Jackson, Tennessee in June, 1905. As was required by her father, Collice came in for her required quota of Latin and Greek along with her brothers and sisters. In 1904 she took a course in bookkeeping at Draughon's Business College, Paducah, Ky.

Her mother died when she was not yet sixteen years of age. Her father died when she was just past twenty one. She had been named and was the Executrix of his estate. In the closing up of this estate she showed the business sagacity that was so necessary to successfully perform this duty. Too much cannot be said of her patient untiring efforts to do the right thing at the right time, trying to please one and all of the children and all concerned. While only an inexperienced girl in the ways of business, she showed an unusual amount of tact and ability in managing the estate of her father. One cannot find a much more intricate state of affairs than that of the country doctor. She was also guardian for a younger brother. He told the writer that he had had an idea that she was a little close with him at times but when he had occasion to review his own personal statement after the estate was wound up, he remarked: "I never saw as many 'do's' in my life." His remittances had come regularly and in order. He only needed a reminder.

Collice Smith McConkey proved herself an ever present help in the time of storm. The children owe her more perhaps than they realize.

She studied voice one year at Jackson, Tennessee; two years with Mrs. Marie Greenwood Worden, Memphis, Tennessee; had two summers at Pt. Chataugua and one winter term at New York City under Madam Von Klenner of that City. Since her marriage she has studied at the Conservatory of Music, Toronto, for one term. She was a member of the Mendelssohn Choir of Toronto for a year.

A special provision was made for her for the continuance of the study of voice by her father before his death.

Had she followed up her study of voice there is no question about her having had a career. She had the talent, she had the voice. Her voice is a beautiful lyric so-

prano, rich in sweetness and yet clear, with bell-like tones. With this she has the temperament and bearing of the artist. Her mother ever encouraged her as a child to sing. She believed in her ability even before Collice was in her teens. All of her teachers encouraged her, insisting that she make it her life work. She herself honestly believed that this would come true. Not every time are we the makers of our own destiny.

In the fall of 1910 she, with a close friend, went to Toronto, Ontario, to spend a week before going to New York for their winter of study. Here she met Alfred Frederick McConkey. He was a great lover of music. With this mutual love of music, soon there sprang up a friendship between the two. This friendship ripened into a real courtship in time. Collice Smith began to wonder if there was not something more worth while in life than even a real career.

There came the old, old story, as old as time itself. On December 28, 1911 at the Broadway Methodist Church, Paducah, Kentucky, they were married.

Since that time they have resided in Toronto, Ontario. For some time after her marriage she sang a great deal in public. With the coming of her twin daughters, she, of a necessity, had to confine the most of her singing to the home. Now that they are older, she has again taken up her work in the musical world. These two children, Esther and Eileen, are the pride of her life. When asked for some data for this sketch, she said that really the two biggest things she had ever done were to get married and be the mother of her twin girls. The writer somehow agrees that she is about right. Collice Smith McConkey is at her best in her home. She is a wonderful mother and wife. Like all born mothers, she loves her children with a passionate love. At the same time she is a sane mother, most practical and sensible at all times. It is a real joy to be in the McConkey home. There radiates such happiness and congeniality as can come only from hearts that are truly and genuinely happy and where the right kind of companionship exists.

Frederick McConkey was born in Toronto, August, 1875. He is a merchant tailor and shirt manufacturer. He is among the most successful business men of Toronto. Of a most genial nature, thoroughly dependable in word and deed, no one would have a thought but to trust him. He is truly a prince among men.

W. Thos. Smith

## G

## LIEUTENANT MILLARD McFARLAND SMITH JR.

Lieutenant Millard McFarland Smith Jr. was born June 30, 1892 at Cedar Chapel, Tennessee. Here he received his early education, later attending the high school at Whiteville, Tennessee. At the age of fourteen he was sent to Brownsville, Tennessee to the Brownsville Training School. Two years later he entered school at Bell Buckle, Tennessee, the famous Webb school. After spending two years in this school, he entered the Peoples Training School, Battle Ground Academy, Franklin Tennessee. He graduated from here in June 1913. In the fall of 1913 he entered the law class at Vanderbilt University, Nashville, Tennessee. He joined the A. T. O. Fraternity while in college and is one of their most zealous members. He remained in college only one year.

In the summer of 1911 he attended the Draughon's Business College of Paducah, Kentucky.

After leaving college he went with the Chapman-Dewey Lumber Co. at Marked Tree, Arkansas, working both in the yards and in the office. He was offered a position by the Chicago Mill & Lumber Co., Blythesville, Ark., in 1916, which he accepted. He worked in a clerical capacity here.

In April, 1917, like thousands of other boys, he answered the call to arms. He volunteered and enlisted in the first Officers' Training Camp, Fort Oglethorpe, Chattanooga, Tenn., in the spring of 1917. In the summer of 1917, having completed his training here, receiving a Second Lieutenantcy, he was sent to Florida where he was assigned to the Quartermaster Department. Later he was transferred to Columbia, South Carolina. He served eighteen months over-seas, returning home in late July, 1919. While in France he was stationed at St. Nazaire and Montoir. Millard Smith made every effort to be transferred to the fighting forces before he went overseas and after. Somehow he has never had the feeling of satisfaction that he so much desired with reference to his part in the World War. Had he been a solitary individual in this capacity he might have cause to feel that something was lacking. Some one had to do this work, a peculiar training and fitness were necessary for one to fill such a place. He was selected for his ability to do the work and should feel that his was quite as much a part as the man in the trenches. He was every inch a soldier for he did his bit, and as one man expressed it, "Any man can wear a

helmet, but not every man can carry on the work of the Quartermaster Department."

He is most reticent on this subject, volunteering no information. The writer feels that a lad of his age, given a second lieutenantcy in training, afterward promoted to a first lieutenantcy, placed in charge and largely responsible for fifteen million dollars of government property, played no minor part in the World War.

After the war ended, he found his position waiting for him with the Chicago Mill & Lumber Co. Later there came a promotion, he was taken in the office at Memphis, Tennessee. He is now what is termed as "The Land Man." As the Chicago Mill & Lumber Co. has the largest acreage of land of any lumber concern in the south, his duties take him at times to most of the southern states.

We wouldn't say that Millard Smith has the ear-marks of a future finance king, for he cares naught for money save for its purchasing power. The intrinsic value matters little to him. But Millard Smith is all right. He may not be a power in the world of finance, but we will say this for him, he is one of the best judges of human nature we know. He demonstrated this when he married Elizabeth Turner. On April 28, 1921 he married Elizabeth (Betsy) Turner of Ashburn, Tenn.

Millard Smith is tall, well built, with straight shoulders and is more than ordinarily good-looking. He has that clearness of eye and vision that lets him right into the hearts of people. Somehow it would never enter the mind of a man to distrust him. He has the smile that goes home. He is polished, suave, diplomatic, and a good talker in conversation or on the platform. He wrote the sketch of his father. He also did some other work for publication of by no means small merit.

His reverence for his father and mother cannot be passed without being given a thought. Only those most closely associated with this man have the slightest idea of what they meant to him, both as a small boy and as he grew into manhood. His mother passed before he had attained his teens, but even at this early age his affection and close attention to her in her failing health were one of the most beautiful things of which the writer has ever known.

His father came next in his affections. Their tie was a peculiar one. The father, as he grew more feeble, became more as a boy with his boy. Their relations, one with the other, is something too sacred for print.

The boy is always father to the man, so it is not a strange thing that Millard Smith has succeeded in life. He has a faculty for



making friends and keeping them. His sense of loyalty is strong. At no time, under any circumstances, is he heard to pass a criticism on individuals unless it be for one thing; he never lets an opportunity to give vent to his feelings pass if he hears another criticising, whether it be a fact or from hearsay.

Elizabeth (Betsy) Turner Smith, born 1898, near Clarksville, Tennessee, is of an old southern family. Her ancestry goes back to the Williams family but we do not know that she is of our branch.

She is of the country, and proud of it. Her knowledge of farm life in all of its intricacies is something much to her credit. She is not a land owner for the mere sake of owning land. She has made a thorough study of agriculture in all of its phases to be able to be an intelligent farmer. She is of the athletic type, not afraid of work of any kind. Often when short of labor on the farm, has

she taken her place on a tractor and driven it all day long with the other laborers.

Elizabeth Turner is a college bred woman. She graduated from Ward-Belmont College, Nashville, Tennessee. She is an artist of no mean ability, china painting being a specialty. An excellent cook and housekeeper, her home today is a model of neatness and shows thoroughness in everything she does.

Her sunny nature, sense of humor and clearness of vision, combined with a very practical and business turn of mind, makes her an ideal wife for that visionary husband of hers. She is the ideal complement for a man of Millard Smith's type. He realizes this and in his way, which is a good one, he does not forget to let his wife know just how fortunate he knows he was when he went back to Ashburn to try some of his persuasive powers on her, finally inducing her to walk the long path with him.

W. Thos. Smith



Dr. Richard Fillmore Smith

918 (See 515)

#### DR. RICHARD FILMORE SMITH

Dr. Richard Fillmore Smith, born at Friendship, Tenn. October 4, 1857, died January 27, 1897 and was buried at Deport, Texas. Father received his early education in the

village schools of Friendship and here spent the most of his life. He spent two years in the Military College at Knoxville, Tenn. His childhood was spent as the average boy. He was early taught to be thrifty and energetic, for his mother believed in the old adage, "Idleness finds still some mischief for

idle hands to do." Grandfather often said he thought the children owed their success in business life to their mother.

I have heard his brothers laugh about how dignified father was when he returned from college, and how one day at the meal hour his brother Benjamin played a boyish prank of jerking the chair from under him, allowing him to fall flat on the floor, which incited his anger and limbered his military dignity.

Upon his return from school, his father gave him one half interest in the general merchandise store and placed him in full charge. Some years later this burned with little insurance. He then engaged in farming, was elected Constable, and later made another venture in the general merchandise business and ran it in a small way for two years.

Miss Cora Binford of Friendship had invited to visit her a former schoolmate, Alice Buckley, the accomplished musician, the gifted and youngest daughter of John W. and Mary C. Buckley, a prominent family of Henderson County, Tenn. She had been well educated and had finished her music in the schools of Jackson. Fate held that they should meet and soon her pretty face and sweet music won his heart completely, and after a few months of courtship they were married at her country home near Mifflin, Tenn., Feb. 6, 1878.

A rosewood case piano, hair-cloth upholstered chairs and settees furnished the parlor of the quaint farm house where the nuptials took place. Rev. Tigreet, a Baptist minister of Friendship, performed the marriage ceremony.

After the usual round of festivities he, with his bride, departed for their future home in Friendship. Here in the home of his father, the mother and others had been busy for several days and to this home the young people were invited. A feast was spread and many spent the evening there until a late hour. In a few weeks they repaired to a pretty little cottage with broad verandas all made ready for the bride. Father then went to St. Louis and bought a beautiful piano which filled the house with my mother's music through all their married life. To this union there were born sons and daughters as shown by the genealogical tables. John Orion, the oldest boy, grew to manhood and died at our home Oct. 8, 1908 in Trinity, Texas. About 1885, father purchased the stately old home where he had been born, with its great roomy rooms, large open fireplaces, cool porches and galleries and best of all the large cellar where the good things to eat, so appealing to the child's appetite, were

kept. In the yard was the stately old pine tree on the north, just at the side front was the tall magnolia and on every side were pretty arbor vistas, cedars, and flowers. Here many happy days were spent, until one night a fire alarm was given. Father rushed to the door and found it to be his own home. Getting his family out as quickly as possible, he saw the dear old home we loved so well, with most of its contents, burn to the ground. There was no insurance. Upon the same site he erected a small, modest cottage. Father had long desired to study medicine and in 1888 after gaining mother's consent he entered the Medical College, Vanderbilt University, Nashville, Tenn. and there graduated in 1891. I shall never forget how long those months did seem and how I would cry for joy upon each of his visits home. After the usual required course he received his diploma and with his fondest hopes realized, he came home to his family and at once made preparations to move to Texas to practice his chosen profession.

We moved to Texas on May 2, 1891 and located at Deport, Lamar County. After six years of very successful practice, in which he gave all his time and strength to his profession, his health failed. His family persuaded him to go to Paducah, Ky. for a visit and rest with his parents. He became worse and at the home of his parents he lingered for some weeks and died January 27, 1897. Weightman Smith, the youngest brother accompanied the remains home for burial. Funeral services were conducted by Rev. R. N. Brown, pastor of the Methodist church at Deport, Texas, and the body was laid to rest in the Deport cemetery with the Masonic ceremony, he having been a member of that order since shortly after he became twenty-one years of age.

Oh! How he did regret being away from his family in his last illness. He expressed a readiness to die but regretted leaving his family.

He was the kindest husband and father. His devotion to mother was beautiful, his only thought in declining health was of his family, that he would not be able to do the many things he had planned to make things more comfortable and give his children the advantages they desired. He was never too tired to take a child on his knee and oft would listen to the reading of a lesson.

He loved the good and pure; was a writer of no mean ability; was ever on the right side of all moral questions; was a staunch Democrat, a Master Mason, and a member of the Methodist Church.

His chivalry won for him many friends; a most entertaining host, he had quite a sense of humor, and always had a supply of good, clean stories stowed away in his memory. With a knack for learning people's ages he oft would find them out in a conversation without the individual detecting what he was attempting. Music and good books were his hobby and he was especially fond of Poe's poem, "The Raven", and of the old songs, "Kiss Me Mother, Kiss Your Darling", "Prayer of a Dying Soldier" were also two of his favorite songs. He was fond of good horses and having an extensive practice, he rode horseback a good deal, teaching me when a little girl to ride. Often he had me accompany him on one of his long rides to visit some of his patients. This was not only a great pleasure to me but was company to him which he seemed to enjoy very much. As children, we can never forget the bags of fruit and the many good things that were brought to us out of season, and how at the family altar he prayed God's blessings and His protection upon us all. He was never weary in well doing; was faithful to his principles; true to his conscience and single in his aspirations toward that which was right. No man could cherish a faith more simple and exalted. He left a lasting influence with his children. He loved humanity and gave his life for it as a country physician. He would go for miles on the darkest of nights to give relief to a mother's baby, remaining the entire night if he deemed it prudent, that the little one might be restored to health and vigor, well knowing that there would be little or no remuneration. Or perhaps he tended a sick mother whom some little child needed badly, or a father who needed the physician's care that he might be able to fight the battles of life for his family. He never refused to go when he could give relief. Sometimes after he had given relief to a father, mother, or child near death's door, other bills were paid and he was forgotten, but at this he little murmured as duty had been done. He would often carry cheer to those less fortunate than he, in many little kindnesses, such as books, magazines, and fruits or if need be the very necessities of life.

He was as tender as a mother with his children, but a firmness carried with his in-

structions. We always knew that what he said was the thing that must be done.

There was nothing of selfishness in his makeup, nothing too good for his family, friends and neighbors, so far as his abilities warranted it. He always saw some good in every one and tried to let that good overshadow the bad.

His memory is very dearly cherished by his three children who now survive him. Mother died March 19, 1922. Mary Gertrude, the second daughter resides in Delhi, California, while Richard Buckley Smith, the only living son resides at Paducah, Ky. He is city salesman for his father-in-law, T. E. Ford, who runs a wholesale grocery, he having married Leta Ford, the daughter. The writer married Alvin P. Bradford and now resides in San Antonio, Texas.

Irene (Smith) Bradford

We were very glad to receive the above tribute from the daughter as to our brother. The oldest child in the family and left fatherless when a mere child, her life has not always been a bed of roses. As a girl she came to Paducah and took a course in The Smith Business College. She then married. Three boys came to her home and they are said to be noble young fellows. A promising future she had, as she married an intellectually gifted gentleman. At length bad health came to him and it grows no better. Bravely she faced conditions and into the business world she went and as a bookkeeper, in part she also is the bread winner. Irene is a most worthy mother, a talented lady and always willing to do her part in all the struggles of life.

Gertrude in girlhood days aspired to and went to Cuba as a missionary and remained there for several years. Bad health drove her back to the United States and when she recovered, she took up nursing. That is now her occupation.

Richard Buckley Smith married Leta Ford of Paducah, Ky., and brings to our family a jewel of 100 per cent luster. Small in size, she is a bundle of energy, gifted in all things that go to make up a wife and mother, of a most elegant family, and the mother of three interesting children.

W. Thos. Smith



Prof. John D. Smith Jr.

920 (See 519)

## PROF. JOHN D. SMITH JR.

"He has achieved success who has lived well, who has gained the respect of intelligent men and the love of little children, who has never lacked appreciation of earth's beauty—or failed to express it, who has looked for the best in others and given the best he had." Such lives are an inspiration to mankind.

These quoted words apply peculiarly to Prof. John D. Smith Jr., the story of whose life it is my privilege to write.

He was born in the little village of Friendship, Tenn. There the early years of his life were spent in the happy home of his father and mother with many brothers and one sister. These children received religious training from their parents. Their father held them to what he believed to be "the white line of duty", while their gentle, sweet-faced mother taught them appreciation of the tenderness of God, and the beautiful world in which they lived.

He was much with his mother as a little boy. She played a large part in his life. When quite young his greatest delight was to assist her in her household tasks and his greatest ambition was to win her approbation. From her teaching and example he early acquired habits of punctuality and faithfulness in

the discharge of every duty, the small as well as the great. His sturdy moral courage he inherited from his father who was the uncompromising foe of the liquor traffic. In the face of opposition and reproach Dr. Smith kept on with his work at a time that would have dismayed a man of less moral courage.

John D. Smith Jr. was educated in the schools of his home town where he showed a great aptitude for penmanship and mathematics. He was an earnest student and by reading, laid the foundation of the richly stored mind he possessed in later years. Early in life he definitely gave himself to the service of Jesus Christ. From this dedication came the Christian dignity of a life whose influence lifted to a higher plane every one with whom he has been intimately associated. At the age of eighteen he took a course in the Ledden Business College of Memphis, Tennessee. On his return home he was made the treasurer of his father's varied business interests and continued in this position until his father came to Paducah, Ky. to locate. When a school boy he formed an attachment for a little girl three years his junior. Her name was Lina Dulcena Warren. This boyhood love deepened with the passing years and culminated in a happy marriage. Three years of happiness was theirs, when

the young wife died, leaving a little baby girl, her namesake, Lina Warren Smith. Nine months later the little girl followed her mother to heaven.

Several years later Mr. Smith came to Paducah to visit his father's family. Realizing that he could establish in this city a Commercial College that would fill a long felt need in this part of the state, he was persuaded to make Paducah his home.

Although a young man, he soon established a prosperous Commercial College, built by his well directed efforts, energy, and the consecration of his infinite patience to the best interest of his pupils. Many of the prominent business men of Paducah today received not only their commercial training but strength to fight the moral battles of life at Smith's Business College. We wish we had the space to publish some of the testimonials given this college by the successful business men of Paducah, as well as a legion of young men and women who have gone from its walls so well qualified to command lucrative salaries in the commercial world.

In the year 1892 Mr. Smith was most happily married to Miss Laura Lee Allard, the grand-daughter of one of the builders of the city of Paducah. In her beautiful ancestral home overlooking the Ohio River, the years of their married life have been spent. Their life has been ideally happy and his devotion to his wife stands out pre-eminently among his other characteristics.

Of late years Mr. Smith has given his time to Expert Accountant work and has brought order out of chaos in many business houses. That peculiar quality called tact, Mr. Smith possesses to a rare degree. He understands the impulses which move men. He finds the good that is in all of us, and, has in his dealings with business men, averted enmities and has gained the blessing of the peace-maker. In the settlement of business difficulties both parties would agree to his decision even though they had failed to receive what they believed due them.

For many years Mr. Smith gave much of his time and efforts in establishing a Mission Sunday School which laid the foundation of one of Paducah's most attractive churches, Fountain Avenue Methodist Church. It is one of the most influential churches of the City.

It seems however that the best work of his church life is in his own Broadway Methodist Church, where, for so many years, he was Superintendent of the Sunday School. He gave to this work the wealth of his Chris-

tian love and enthusiasm. Little children loved him and were eager to get to Sunday School on time to receive a cheery, personal greeting and a winning smile.

As treasurer of the Official Board of the church, he is today recognized as their leader. His present pastor, Dr. John Langdon Weber, says of him: "Without any exaggeration, I can say that John D. Smith of Broadway Methodist Church, Paducah, Kentucky, is the finest church treasurer I have ever had dealings with. He is not only accurate and painstaking, but he is an inspiration to the other official members. He is a leader of men. He regards his office as a sacred institution of God's church and its importance and responsibility rests heavily upon him. He is the pastor's friend and looks after the interests of the occupants of the parsonage as carefully as a father would look after the comfort of his child."

It is no wonder that he is held in such high esteem by the pastor, and members of the Broadway Church. He has the respect and love of all and deserves every good word spoken of him in appreciation of his service.

And so we close this tribute to a man universally beloved and respected with these words, which so aptly tell the secret of his useful, happy life.

"The badge of a scholar well beloved of his Master is a certain openness of mind to learn the daily lessons of life, a willingness of heart to give beyond the measure of the debt, a clearness of spirit to see the best in people, a straight-forwardness of action, a kind sincerity of speech." These are the marks of my friend, John D. Smith.

January 1, 1922                      Millie Fowler Davis

We thank Mrs. Davis for the sketch of the cleanest man we have ever intimately known. If we ever heard John Smith use a dirty or vulgar word or obscene expression, we do not remember it. If he ever related a dirty or questionable story, we have never heard of it. If he was ever accused of a questionable business transaction where by deceit or misrepresentation he has wronged or in any way attempted to wrong any man out of one cent, it has never been called to our attention.

It would take the strongest of actual proof to make us think he has violated the law of chastity at any period in life.

From earliest childhood, and uninterrupted to this day, his intense and unwavering devotion to the Deity has been the most wonderfully interesting of any one we have ever known.



From early boyhood to their death, his devotion to, and his reverence for his parents, was dramatically beautiful.

Had he the gift to accumulate wealth as has John D. Rockefeller or Henry Ford, his generosity would preclude it, and he never could become a rich man.

Should he be compelled to go into a coal mine and labor, he would have close by a bucket of water, a shoe shining brush, change of clothing, collar and necktie, so he could appear neat and clean when he came to meet others.

Should he be compelled to tramp for a living, wear rags and tattered clothing, they would be clean rags and clean clothing. Take the many ramifications of cleanliness and blend them together, we know of no one so near a true picture of the blending product as John D. Smith. We make no exceptions.

His love, worship and devotion for his dead wife and for the one now living has been equally interesting. From almost the first day she went to school, he and Lina Warren were sweethearts until her soul went to her Maker. There was never an interruption. Other suitors she could have had galore if encouragement had been given. She never had any sweetheart save John D. Smith. Three miles from Friendship she lived. To that place she was daily sent when school was in session. Newton Warren and Susie Mitchell, his wife, were of the highest type of good people. Industrious and frugal, they owned 800 acres of very rich and fertile soil. Our father had been their family physician from the time the first child was born. When Lina reached the age to enter the marriage state, our father was in a financial failing condition. Every one knew it. John was the junior partner. A year or so before a new "Richmond" appeared in the field. He had backing of wealth that John Smith did not now have. With continuity and determination, he ardently sought her favor. It is thought a wealthy uncle had made known his approval of this new suitor. There was never any wavering on her part.

In girlhood days, when church was over at Holly Grove, Mrs. Warren would at once repair to the home to see that dinner was arranged. Lina and her sisters would mingle in the crowd and invite those from a distance to go over home and take dinner. A long table was at times filled two and three times. There was always ample for all and it was as free as water. This is the kind of home she was reared in. Lina was a charming lady. In our child way, we loved her like a sister. She was small, well rounded, bru-

nette, as clean and pure as her husband. She was beautiful in form, beautiful in thought, beautiful in her character.

They were married. A year later they moved to her farm. When it became necessary for one to go to town or elsewhere, the horse was hitched to the buggy and both went. During the three years of their married life, they were only absent from each other for one night. They were inseparable. Their happiness was complete; their life ideal. Little Lina came to bless the home. She was gladly welcomed. Two weeks later the mother went to join her Creator. Nine months later little Lina Smith followed her.

At length John moved to Paducah and opened the Smith Business College. For some time he looked for another who would suit him. There was never but one choice. That was Laura Lee Allard. He never gave any other a thought or a social visit. She was the only daughter. There was only one son. She was the pet of a wealthy grandfather. She had finished the school in Paducah and then had been sent to a select school at Jackson, Miss. She had a charming personality, was witty, versatile, modest, and had a most wonderful memory for facts and things. In a conversation she was the center of attraction. She could always remember things of interest to relate and was an entertaining talker. She was of a very religious turn of mind. Dancing and theater going were objectionable to her. Music, good clean conversation and parlor amusements interested her. Sunday always found her in Church; Wednesday night at prayer meeting. Intellectually she was gifted. John was a widower. She hesitated long. John plead the more earnestly. Her father's advice was sought. He told her she need never have any fear of finding a note from another woman in his pocket. They married. His love, devotion and worship of her has been as constant and devout as is possible for man to give. To him, she is the most wonderful woman in the world. She holds him in like regard. Thus for twenty-five years and over they have traveled and are ever happy.

They live in a large, handsome brick building erected by her grandfather many years ago at 408 North Third Street, Paducah, Ky. Johnathan Allard lived in New Hampshire and married Rhoda Collins. They moved and settled near Louisville, Ky., in 1818. Their son, John Langdon Allard, was born in New Hampshire Nov. 9, 1814. He married Ann Eliza Beach. She was the daughter of Comfort Beach of Indiana and his wife, Mary Jane Lloyd, born in Ohio. Oliver

Allard, son of John Langdon Allard, married Mary Jane Boothe. She was the daughter of Harvey Robert Boothe and Virginia Lafayette Beach, sister of Ann Eliza and daughter of Comfort Beach. Harvey Robert Boothe came from Pennsylvania. His ancestors

from England. Laura Lee Allard is a daughter of Calvin Oliver Allard and his wife, Mary Jane Boothe, above mentioned. She is a distant relative of Edwin Boothe, the great actor.

W. Thos. Smith



Benjamin Franklin Smith

921 (See 520)

#### BENJAMIN FRANKLIN SMITH

Benjamin Franklin Smith was born in Friendship, Tenn., August 12, 1861, died October 5, 1919 and was buried at Birmingham, Ala. When three months old, his father kissed him goodbye and went to join his countrymen in battle against the invading foe. For four years he was nursed by a fond mother, watched over by a ten year old brother and was the center of solicitude of three or four slaves.

The war ended and they were all reunited. As a child, daily he knelt in the family circle or on the bedside while prayer was offered to the Deity before peaceful slumber. His parents were neither rich nor poor, but were good livers. At all times he had what was needed and his associates were the best in the community. His father was the leading citizen of that section. He attended the subscription schools—the only schools

there at that time—and received a good common school education. Small in stature, never perhaps at any time in life weighing over 155 pounds, he differed from his father and other brothers, as they all at some period in life weighed over two hundred, save Richard. As a boy he was small and of course was more or less picked upon.

While not quarrelsome, he was ever ready to defend his rights and took defeat with little worry. He was not inclined to be revengeful of the past but was ever happy and contented for the present, never brooding over what might come on tomorrow. His childish pranks were not of the harsh character and he could see the agreeable side of most all transactions. He was in no way gifted in telling fairy stories, but he could relate the most simple happening with an amusing demeanor which would entertain the listener. His intellect was bright; his discerning of human character keen, and he got along with the neighbor boys, all of

whom were his friends. Six years older than the writer, we do not remember ever to have seen him engage in a fight, but are sure he had some, nor have we any recollection of ever seeing any one attempting to tread upon his rights without his readiness to defend them. He did not indulge in many of the vices of life and measured up well in the virtues. As a man he possessed many of the attributes of right living and held in high regard the noble woman.

As a boy in vacation periods, and after he reached the age of eighteen and until he married, he worked for his father at the flour mill, cotton gin, or saw mill and his talents developed along mechanical lines. As a young man he had his own horse and saddle and on Sundays would use them to make social calls on his young lady friends. He at all times chose for his associates young ladies of the best of character and the daughters of good families. He rarely went away save on Sunday, spending his evenings at his father's store. At times he would remain in town all day Sunday, spending the afternoon in the company of some local lady. He drew no salary, simply boarding at home or with his oldest brother, getting at the store what was wanted and receiving pocket change for outside purposes.

In 1881 when his father was winding up and closing out a losing business, without any property save his horse and saddle and without even a salaried job, he ventured on the sea of matrimony, and at Bells Depot married Izora Bond who traces her ancestry back to one of the first families of Virginia and who is distantly related to the Bond and Daniels families of prominence in that section.

For some months they boarded with his parents but later moved to themselves. In 1882 they moved to the farm of his wife's mother and he helped to put in a crop. They then moved to Paducah, Ky., and began as a helper with the railroad company. He was shortly made a fireman and later promoted to the position of engineer. He remained there until 1898 when he moved to Birmingham and went with the Frisco railroad in the same position, which he held until his death, then being in point of service the oldest man going out of Birmingham.

For some years prior to his death, he had the passenger run. In all these years he was never seriously injured and died with a good record with the railroad company. On the fast trains he often held in his hands the lives of many and was not recreant to the confidence placed in him. He never seemed to crave for money for its own sake. He

was ever industrious and kept at continual employment, was frugal in his own personality but all that money was worth to him was the comforts and pleasures it would bring to his family. For thirty-eight years of his married life, he was at no time a drone in the bee hive, all he asked was funds for current needs, leaving for others the surplus money. For some years when he received his pay, he retained what was needed for his incidental expenses, and gave the whole of the balance to his family. His wife now owns a nice bungalow for a home and three or four small houses, purchased for the most part with money inherited from her mother, but perhaps with some saved from the earnings her husband gave her. It was not until after the World War began and he was urged to buy Liberty Bonds did he begin to save money for himself and the \$1,000 so saved was spent in the last eight months of his helpless condition. Even then he cared little for it, for he had not a lazy bone and craved to be back on his engine. He was a member of the Knights of Pythias but he loved the best of all the order of the Locomotive Engineers and the associates he had so long worked with.

In February, 1919, he had a general breakdown and came to Paducah on a visit. Sister Bettie from California was there as were other relatives. Although it was to us apparent that he was broken in health, he yearned to go back and ride the iron horse once more. His constant theme was his daughters and his grandchildren. To all he seemed most devoted, sometimes we would think that we could discern that he loved one the best and then he would speak so kindly of the other, that we wondered if it were she and then we thought it was the third one. He then went to old Friendship, Tenn. to see relatives and childhood companions. Thirty-eight years had intervened and while there were not many there to tell old stories, many delightful happenings were recalled.

In search of restored health he then made a trip to Laramie, Wyoming, to visit his daughter Oria Mea Smith Fisher. He spent some time there hoping to recover and while all was done that was possible, it availed him naught. Expressing a desire to visit his sister in Los Angeles, Oria Mea turned her duties over to others and accompanied him there, hoping against hope, but his health continued to grow worse rather than better. Oria Mea took him back to her home, still hoping, still trusting. At length in an almost helpless condition he returned to the home of his daughter, Lavelle in Birmingham,

Alabama. There he was kindly nursed and received all that skill could furnish. We received a telegram that he was in a dying condition. A few hours later we were speeding on our journey. We reached his bedside the day before he died. Although unconscious, twice by the twitching and movement of his lips we thought he knew us. Through that day and the next we sat at his bedside and with his children we watched but could see life ebbing away on its final journey. The earth was well covered with a mantle of darkness, save the twinkling of the stars, when into the next world gently glided his soul and eased a physical body from a long wrecking pain. The world said he was dead. His soul had wandered into the domain of his Creator and the welcome greeting there accorded him by his fond parents must have been beautiful.

Two years have elapsed but a letter just received from a daughter shows his memory is held in love, adoration and worship. Surrounded by his three grief-stricken daughters, by his son Gilbert (his sons Benjamin and Boyd could not be present) by his wife, by many friends and their families, we saw the grey casket laden with beautiful floral tokens of admiring friends slowly sink into an underground vault to wait the coming of judgment day.

Men's lives are measured by the good they did and by the motives that inspired their lives and deeds. His faults were few, his virtues were many, his motives good. He waited not until death to bestow all he had or was capable of earning but gave it to his family as it came. We would bury his faults on the sands of the seashore, and with them the hallucinations which now exist in the chimerical vanity of a once alert but now disintegrating mind, as seems patent from an unsigned, lengthy communication recently written and unsolicited sent us, which apparently emanated from that temperamentality which has so long floated distant from its sound moorings that it is no doubt chiefly responsible for the wrecked physical body with which it holds communion and knows not what it does. Doubtless this letter was intended to wound our heart and incite our anger. For this unfortunate condition of this mind we have a profound sympathy as we have long since by personal observation noted the irresponsible condition.

We do not think he ever fondly caressed the faults of the friend nor of the foe who had crossed the channel of death, but saw his virtues and forgot his short-comings. In sorrowful silence while alive he bore many trials, endured a multitude of heart-wounds and tribulations, some of which come to all, and with a chivalric modesty he long covered an oft pierced bleeding heart with the mantle of courageous charity. We would now let him rest in peace for he nobly fought life's battles and has well earned the trophies of quietude.

"Have you ever dug down in the heart of a man,  
Deep down through his coating of clay,  
In the way that a surgeon of souls only can,  
When he seeks for the God-given ray;  
When he probes for the fire that never goes out,  
Though it seems to the world all is dark;  
How with patience he works, with never a doubt  
He'll discover the infinite spark?  
There isn't a man, no matter how vile,  
No matter how rotten with sin,  
Who if put to the test isn't really worth while  
When you come to the furnace within.  
It is better not search for the faults of those  
Who have passed on to worlds unknown,  
But with surgical knack dig down deep to expose  
That bright, living spark, small, but your own"

We would write his virtues on the tablets of the memory of his posterity, for they were from a noble ancestry. His virtues dominated his life, were well known to his children and associates, worthy of emulation, an inspiration when understood or correctly analyzed, and a heritage well worth retaining.

May the Creator accept the son whom the mother loved as well as, if not the best of any of her children; the one, while for years living a long journey's distance from her, yet the one who in that old age often crept into her affections with such vividness that in her silent moments she would suddenly express a desire to see him. He lived not his three score and ten allotted to some but he well did his duty while here and his average among the manly, true and noble is well up among the highest.

Thus in our feeble way, we pay homage to our late lamented brother.

W. Thos. Smith



Dr. Julius Alexander Smith

922 (See 521)

DR. JULIUS ALEXANDER SMITH and  
NETTIE WARDEN WILSON

Dr. Smith was born at Friendship, Tenn., January 19, 1866 and there spent the first sixteen years of his life. He attended the schools of that village and when of sufficient age, during vacation period and on Saturdays, worked the saw mill and cotton gin operated by his father. Being in a family where there were several children, all of whom were boys save one, he early in life was trained in household duties and there assisted his mother, while the writer looked after the feeding of the horses and cattle. Professional nurses in small villages were then unknown. Chills and fever and sickness of that character was much more frequent in those days in that section than now. It was the misfortune of our family that in our childhood, the baby was long sick and died, while a younger brother and sister were sick a large part of the time during the first few years of their lives and often the sickness was of a dangerous character. This lad's aptitude for and willingness to do nursing was such that often for days and nights, he was pressed into that service. He early developed the symptoms of a good nurse, and in boyhood days often fulfilled these duties. Moving to Dyersburg

in June 1882, he there attended the schools for a scholastic year. From early childhood he had evinced a desire that he be permitted to undertake and follow the footsteps of his illustrious father and educate himself for the medical profession. In the fall after he was seventeen years of age he was sent to Memphis Medical College at Memphis, Tenn., and there spent one scholastic year. He then returned home and entered the office of his father for study. In the fall of 1885 he entered Bellvue Hospital and Medical College in New York City. At the close of the spring term of 1886 he took a summer course at the University of Vermont. In the fall of 1886 he returned to Bellvue Hospital and Medical College and was graduated from there in the spring of 1887, when he was only a few months past the age of twenty-one. He then returned to Paducah, Ky. and there practiced his profession until August, 1890, when he went to Colorado City, Colorado. He there followed his profession for seven years and then having decided he wished to live in a lower altitude, went to Deport, Texas where he did a large and heavy general practice for ten years, and gained some reputation as a surgeon. Deeming that his health demanded lighter work, in 1907, he located in Greenville, Texas, where he has since and is now following his profession. In recent years he has specialized



and devoted his time to doing office practice in Chronic cases, X-ray and Electro-therapeutics.

Dr. Smith is a man of splendid appearance, stands about five feet and ten inches high and will weigh about 260 pounds. He goes clean shaven and is affable on all occasions. He makes many friends and in life has made few enemies. He is no part of the dude nor is other than a plain dresser. He has often been called handsome. His life has ever been centered in his profession and the raising of his large family. He is of a genial nature and makes the ideal family physician and delights to bring relief to those who have been unable to find it in the skill of others.

If the old adage be true that certain persons are born and placed here to accomplish specific purposes, then there can be little doubt but that he early correctly diagnosed his intended mission and has ever worked assiduously to carry out the purpose of the Creator.

The most noted surgeon in Texas a few years ago said that Dr. Smith was the best posted man in Texas on electricity. Those who are so unfortunate as to be mashed up in railroad wrecks all over South-east Texas often pay him a visit and have him to make Xray pictures, an examination, and then in damage suits, go to the jury and explain the character of their injuries. This is partly because he is better equipped for work of this character than any other one in that section. Early after he became 21, he became a Master Mason and still retains his membership in that order.

Just before leaving Paducah, he married Nettie Warden Wilson. She was born January 1867 and was the daughter of H. C. and Virginia Warden of Paducah, Ky. At an early age she had married Dr. Wilson and at the age of twenty had been left a widow with a seven month old daughter, Wilma.

After the marriage, Wilma was too young to realize and did not learn that Dr. Smith was not her real father until she was about grown. We think that the love and affection of those two for each other could not have been greater had that been the real condition. Mrs. Smith is an exceptional woman. She is most intensely religious and for years has made it her custom at night to call all her children around her before retiring and read to them some selected verses from the scripture and then to ask the blessing of the Deity for her family. She has lived the life she professed. Her acts and words have in no way contravened the teaching to her children. She has been immaculately clean

in words, in her thoughts, in the good will towards all people, and in the life she has lived.

If there be any who think her vision in worldly things too narrow, we answer that the results in most cases is the most correct measure to use in the weighing of the lives of others. She has made a most wonderful success in the greatest mission in life; a success that few can so justly boast of; one that but a small per cent have been able to emulate, while many other mothers with superior advantages and less cares have had to face old age in sorrow and grief for the wreckage made. She has a just right to be proud that she has reared eight children, the youngest of whom is now past fourteen, and has reared them in such a way and has indented on their youthful walls of memory ever-glowing pictures of superior awards and opulent wealth which finds lodgment in the conscious mind of those who in later years of life have not to grieve over the wild oats sown and dissipated youth with its attendant evils. We think it rare that so many of the idle moments of grown boys have been contentedly spent in such pleasant home recreations where only a few blocks away were the alluring invitations which the city life ever has in store.

She has studied to make her home the happy meeting place where her children and their associates would wish to gather and give vent to youthful pleasures. The house, with the parlor and piano, has ever been their playroom and wholesome home recreations have been encouraged. Her children have sought to follow her example and have developed a mental morality, a conception of right thinking and of correct living, which in practice has gained for them the admiration and commendation of many who know them. A superior or more promising set of children would be difficult to find. She has ever been the ideal wife of the physician and has ever done team work and struggled to do her part in her mission in life. We feel sure as the years roll on and her children become burdened with family responsibilities, the goodness and greatness of this wonderful mother will ever be the happy recollection of their lives. Both parents and all the children are members of the Methodist Church.

Wilma, the daughter by the first husband, lives at home and is clerking in a store in Greenville.

Ruby Ruth Smith was a stenographer and lived in Dallas, Texas. Oct. 8, 1921 she married Frank Deckinson of Kansas City.

When the World War began, the sons of this couple did not try to shirk duty, and while only one had arrived at the age of 21, all three evinced a desire to go on the firing line for their country. They were not prevented from this by the parents.

W. J. Bryan Smith at the age of fifteen lost an eye from a spell of meningitis and he stood 100% except for that, but was rejected. January 17, 1918 he entered the Y. M. C. A. work, was made a Secretary and was the youngest one in the Southern division. He was sent to Kelly's Field, San Antonio, on the Mexican border. When the government ordered men enlisted for limited service, he resigned his position, went home and offered his services again. He was accepted Sept. 30, 1918 for limited services and sent to Jefferson Barracks, St. Louis, Mo. and then to Camp Dodge, Iowa. Here he served in the Quartermaster's Department until honorably discharged after the armistice Nov. 11, 1920. He then returned home and took up peaceful occupation. Later being with a concern where there was certain Sunday work to do, he was instructed to perform that duty. He informed the manager that Sunday to him was a day of rest and he had conscientious scruples about the matter. Failing to show up on Sunday, he was told on Monday that he was expected on the next Sunday. A day or two later he reported that he had secured a position elsewhere because he was not willing to work on Sunday. In a short time his former employer went to him and offered him considerably more money and a more responsible position if he would come back and said he would not be required to go to the place of business on Sunday. At the increase he returned. On Nov. 6, 1920, he married Miss Leslie Earle Lake, the oldest daughter of Mr. and Mrs. P. S. Lake of Greenville, Texas. They had been sweethearts for quite a period. She was a school teacher. They now reside at Tyler, Texas, and he is traveling for Swifts Packing Company.

John Devergie Clifford (Clifford) Smith, the second son, on July 6, 1916, when one day past 18, broke out with the war fever, and was anxious to go to Mexico if trouble came as some expected. On that day he enlisted in the Texas National Guard at Greenville and was assigned to Co. 4th, Texas Infantry and sent to Persido, Texas on Sept. 26. He by this time had been made Expert Rifleman, and had the highest score of any one in his regiment. He remained on the border until Oct. 17th, when he was sent to Jacksonville, Florida as a member of the Texas Rifle Team to compete for National

honors. In March 1917 his company was mustered out and he went home, entered school and in about a week was called back into service and sent to San Antonio, reaching there the day war was declared. He was then transferred to Co. E 4th Texas and a short time later was made a Corporal. He was sent to San Benito Pump Station, then to Harlingen Pump Station, then to Jacksonville. At San Benito he shot on the rifle range and was made Sharpshooter. By the sudden change of the wind at rapid fire, he missed being Expert Rifleman by a few points. One night on the border unknown parties from the Mexican side of the Rio Grande let go their rifles and there was a little fight in which he was engaged. None of the Americans were hurt and none on the other side, so far as known. Later he was sent to Camp Bowie and there his company and Co. E, 4th Texas, in which was his brother Cecil Clay Smith, were consolidated and formed Co. C, 144th Infantry, 36th Division. While there he was one of the fifteen selected to test and correct the sights of about 20,000 rifles. This took eight weeks. He fired as many as 726 sighted shots one day, which was the highest record and three times as many as the next man. Dec. 12, 1917 he was made Sergeant. July 18, 1918 he set sail on the George Washington for France and landed at Brest, France, July 30, 1918. Sept. 1st or about then he was started for the front. Oct. 9th he ate dinner in front of the Hindenburg line. That night he and Cecil Clay Smith stayed in the same hole on the top of Blanc Mont Hill and at 4 o'clock the next morning advanced and his company took the front line. At 9:30 the following morning he went over the top, and met a machine gun nest. A soldier next to him was the first one killed. On the night of Oct. 12th, the Company in which Cecil was advanced. His platoon had advanced too far and had been lost to his Company. He and Clifford again met and dug in for the night but got little rest. Sunday Oct. 13th, was a day of real fight. On the night of Oct. 17th, he was relieved and sent back to Pauvre to rest. Here he received more to eat and had a chance to remove his shoes for the first time in 13 days. It was then decided to send him to the Officer's Training School, but then it appeared that the Armistice was to be signed and this was abandoned. His division was then ordered to be ready to go in line against Metz on Nov. 14th but the armistice stopped that. He was then selected to compete in the A. E. F. rifle match of two weeks and was presented with a bronze medal, a 3rd prize, by General Pershing.

He tried out in the Inter Allied meet but lost out in the finals. July 8, 1919, he was honorably discharged, went home and again entered school, going to Wesley College, at Greenville, Texas. In July, 1921, he was given a commission as 2nd Lieutenant of the National Guard.

While in the army he did not forget the teaching of his mother, although at times there was derision, when he would read his Bible, and, on his knees ask for the protection of his Maker. In time he gained the admiration of his wilder companions, and they honored him, as his life was in keeping with his professions.

In 1921 he was Assistant Professor and working his way through Wesley College at Greenville, Texas.

Cecil Clay Smith, at the age of 17 years and 6 months, on June 22, 1917 joined a new company being formed at Greenville, Texas and enlisted in Co. A, 6th Texas Infantry, and in August was ordered into service. Sept. 6th he was sent to Camp Bowie, at Ft. Worth, and one month later made a Corporal. In Oct. his company was merged into the Co. C. 144th Inf. of the 36th Division, as mentioned above in the sketch of Clifford Smith.

He made substantially the same route as mentioned above in the sketch of Clifford and had largely the same experience. When the Armistice was signed, preparations were being made for his company to next go into the Argonne Forest. On Nov. 18th, after the Armistice, his company was ordered to go to Southern France, and in 12 days they marched 225 miles. He and Clifford were both given furloughs, and with all expenses paid were given a trip over France. On May 25th, 1919 he sailed for the United States and June 22, 1919, was honorably discharged at Camp Bowie, Ft. Worth, Texas. He at once returned home and went to work. The following year, he entered College and resumed his studies. When he became of age in January, 1921 he married Othell Cox, the oldest daughter of Mr. and Mrs. J. W. A. Cox of Ranger, Texas. She was a graduate of Wesley College. Cecil Clay Smith then taught commercial work in the Southern Business College of Ranger, Texas. Later he went with an Oil Co. He, too, like his brothers, is a young man of splendid qualities. The younger children as mentioned in the tables are yet in school.

W. Thos. Smith



William Thomas Smith

923 (See 522)

## WILLIAM THOMAS SMITH

Know all men by these presents, that W. Thos. Smith is the compiler-in-chief of this Family Tree Book, which will be handed down to succeeding generations as a monument to his unflagging zeal and indefatigable energy. He was born at Friendship, Tenn. Dec. 26, 1858 (see 522, 506-H). His father was a distinguished member of the honorable Smith family of Anson County, North Carolina. His education began in the village of Friendship. From there he went to Dyersburg, Tenn., and thence to Paducah, Ky. An active energetic youth of 18 years, he accepted work in Uncle Sam's post office. He worked irregularly, being a substitute letter carrier. He took that place or clerical positions, when others were sick or on vacation. His spare time he spent in studying the ancient Greek and Latin languages under a private tutor.

In this we note his energy, his ambition, his determination to equip himself mentally to embrace and capably fill any position the future activities of this bustling, hustling old world might present.

In 1889 choosing for his life's work the profession of the law, he entered the Law Department of Vanderbilt University of Nashville, Tenn. In 1891 he graduated from

there. Selecting the far away but thriving west as the ring into which to cast his hat, he hung out his shingle in Idaho Falls, Idaho. For seven years he followed his profession. The people appreciated his ability while there and he enjoyed the confidence of the community. When he left there, he was Chairman of the School Board, had just served a term as City Attorney and was Secretary of the Masonic Lodge. He is now a 32nd degree Mason, and a Shriner. He made a good living, paid all his debts and spent all he made. He was a thoughtless, high-spirited youth and wasted all his income. "Wear a shoe at the heel you will spend a good deal; wear a shoe at the toe, spend as you go."

Returning to Paducah, Ky., weary of the sedentary life of a lawyer and financially broke at the age of twenty-nine, he borrowed fifteen dollars of his father for expenses, went to Chicago, and accepted a position with Deering Harvester Company as a traveling collector at \$600.00 a year. This was less than half of what he had earned any of the seven years he had followed his profession. The change was beneficial. Like the prodigal son, he came to himself. He meditated how foolish it was to spend all his income. With a peculiar force, as never before, it dawned on him that the saving of money was worthy of attention; that it is one's bounden duty to lay by for the proverbial "rainy day", in

order for one to be generous to the needy, not to live for self alone. Expenses paid on the road, he determined to live on half of his salary; forced himself to deny many pleasures; practiced the severest economy and saved one half of his salary for some years. A friend occasionally spoke of his seedy clothes. Today he wears as good as money will buy. He stuck to his text, his resolve. His pluck and determination won out. He invested his small savings in wild lands. He purchased stock in the company for whom he worked. He lent his money, collected the interest and lent that. His wild lands proved profitable. His investments proved stable. His salary was increased. The Deering Harvester was merged with the International Harvester Co. W. Thos. Smith was taken over as a valuable asset. His employment was uninterrupted.

His life is a noble example of what attention to business, thrift, and economy will accomplish when intelligently directed. For over twenty-four years the managers have been satisfied with the adjustments of many delicate affairs placed in his hands. He enjoys their implicit confidence. His field now embraces seventy counties in Indiana, Illinois and Kentucky. He is a traveling adjuster in a credit business reaching over a million dollars a year. His salary has been increased to correspond with his merits, his efficiency and the successful handling of the business. His position with the company is ideal in every way, to his satisfaction and to his liking. Success in the line of duty had been more than ordinary, bringing profit to his company, and at the same time reconciling dissatisfied customers. He says his "bull-dog jaw" does it. His friends attribute his success to his insistence on what is just and right, the pressing of his reasonable demands, and his ability to retain a calm, judicial mind. He has the ability to see both sides and hold the scales of justice in equal poise. Square in his dealings, insisting on none other, he drives his adjustments of disputed or unsettled matters, with implicit confidence, without bluster, without losing a temper, without threats, carrying his points by calm, cool and intelligent reasoning.

The position he occupies in the large business of his company is no sinecure, nor a flowery bed of ease. Only a small per cent of those trying make a success of it. The position requires a different and a higher degree of intelligence than that of the salesman. At times an unreasonable debtor attempts to take advantage of some opening. A knowledge that a judgment could not be collected influences him. He at times represents that

an absent agent has promised something and hopes to thus secure an advantage in the adjustment. Requisition is therefore made for a highly developed intelligence. His legal learning, combined with clean hands and his firmness of character, have trained him to make instant decision of the right and to "strike while the iron is hot." All this accentuates acumen and discrimination. He is ever mindful of square dealing as taught by his father.

In his career of 24 years of experience as collector and as adjuster of claims, he has pursued the even tenor of his ways, verifying the words of Solomon, "He that is slow to anger is better than the mighty and he that ruleth his spirit, than he that taketh a city." By so restraining and containing his self-possession, he daily exhibited capacity and efficiency in the handling of difficult matters committed to his discretion. He has won the good will and admiration of his company, resulting in a larger salary than is enjoyed by some in like position.

One thing he lacketh and that is a good woman by his side. He is the only bachelor of our Smith family known to the writer. He is the only one who has lived for so many years without a semblance of excuse for such a deplorable condition. A college professor meeting two of his old students said: "Henry, are you married?" "Yes sir," was the reply. "Oh! You fortunate fellow." "John, are you married?" he asked. "No sir." "Oh! You happy dog." He leads a clean, moral, Christian life and is capable of making some noble lady an ideal partner in life. He is missing the privilege of sipping the sweetest nectar that flows in sparkling vintage in the stream of life. "Tis not good for man to be alone". The ideal is never realized.

When a boy, his character, builded by wise parents, was of sound timber, free of knots and imperfections, which has enabled him to rise superior to temptation and weather all experiences. Not a member of any Church, he refuses to take the name of God in vain. He ceased the use of tobacco when eighteen. Never in his life did he take a drink of whiskey or beer. He refuses to make a wager on anything, even of no value. He has rules of conduct and refuses to cross them.

He has elected to live in the prosperous Middle West in pursuit of successful business that marks nearly a generation of years and yet he still clings to the old time habits and courtesies that belonged to the suave and courtly manners of his foreparents who were raised in Dixie's sunny clime. Ennobled by preceding generations, he resolved upon com-



piling this Family Tree Book. He has brought to this work an inexhaustible store of untiring energy. He envisaged the tremendous task, tackled it with virile alacrity and has never let up. If incomplete or erroneous, it will be because the information sought was not forthcoming and deaf ears were turned upon the repeated requests he has made and the failure of co-operation of others in sending him correct data or telling where it could be obtained. Possessing ample means, he will have the Family Tree Book published in good style and binding. It is a venture he has made, not for financial gain. The one impelling motive has been the erection of a monument to his parents and their ancestors.

Never idle, vacation to him is but an opportunity for other work. A veritable steam roller, he knows no let up. His active mind can be compared to a chest of drawers. When through or weary of one subject, that drawer is closed and another opened. While the larger affairs of business are at times his, they do not absorb him to the neglect of small things. His active mind gives attention to, and grasps all things both great and small.

Education obtained at high school and college, by the study of the law, the reading of books, and through his daily contact with the cultivated minds of others has sharpened the teeth of his mind, that may be likened to the teeth of a sharp saw, cutting its way into the hardest wood. This helps him solve the knottiest of problems. With attractive personality, he wins his way into the regard and confidence of those he meets, and attaches them to him with hooks of steel.

W. Thomas Smith originated the idea of the Family Tree Book. He has generously given his time and money as a labor of love and as a duty to his forbears and their descendants, without the hope of reward except that which comes from duty well performed. All honor to him to whom this honor is due. In developing the genealogy, he searched the libraries at Paducah and Louisville, Ky. Raleigh, N. C., Columbia and Charleston, S. C., Nashville, Tenn., and Los Angeles, California. Knowing the Coat of Arms of his ancestors on the Smith side, and that they were descended from Thomas Smith Sr. of Nottingham, and Gaddesby, he searched records, located and sent to England, and obtained books that throw more light on his ancestry. He has searched colonial history, obtained traditions, and then verified them by recorded history.

He lighted the torch that illumined the connection of the present generation to and with the honorable, the noted and the noble men of the past. His father had told him that traditions all pointed to noble ancestry and had told him much of it. The centuries of Colonial history, reaching back into the centuries of England, have been unfolded by his critical research. He has read hundreds of pages and scanned hundreds more. He has spared neither labor, pains nor expense, animated by sheer, downright love for his ancestry.

Temperate habits, clean living, and a good conscience have given his body and mind refreshment in sound sleep, so that he might awake with renewed vigor and energy, to pursue the path leading to the unraveling of the intricate genealogies of the Smith, Flake, Williams, Alston, Bennett and other collateral families.

The monument that he has erected to his ancestors will also be a monument to him, more lasting than granite or marble.

In his busy life, he does not neglect the cultivation of the mind and soul. He scans the literature of the day, invariably looks over the daily paper. In his grip will often be found a good book, that when read, causes the soul to aspire and reach out for high ideals. He bears himself as a true Southern gentleman, fine as the sunlight. Inheriting the code of old time chivalry in reverence for womanhood, he breathes the social atmosphere of pure noble courtesy and his generous sympathy reaches out to all humanity. He is truly a typical gentleman of the old South, in elegance, in grace, in charm of manner, combining therewith a high type of refinement.

His capacity for work is beyond measure. "Whatsoever thy hand findeth to do, do it with thy might; for there is no work, nor device, nor knowledge, nor wisdom in the grave, whither thou goest."

His motto:

"Up mortal and act while the angel of light  
Melts the shadows before and behind thee;  
Shake off the slumbers that encumber thy  
might  
And burst the foul fetters that bind thee.  
As soars the lark, soar thou;  
As leaps the whirlwind, do thou leap;  
Learn from nature the splendor of action,  
Faithful deed brings Divine benefactions."

Wm. A. Smith



Bettie Smith Hughes

924 (See 523)

## BETTIE E. SMITH HUGHES

No. 102 North Gramercy Place, Los Angeles,  
California

Bettie E. Smith Hughes was born July 24, 1870, at Friendship, Tenn., and was shortly thereafter christened Lucy Elizabeth Smith, but due to the fact that she has always been called "Bettie" she has signed her name and called herself Bettie E. Smith, until her marriage some years ago, when she only added the name Hughes.

Her name comes from her two grandmothers, Lucy from Leusey (Williams) Smith, who with considerable Scotch blood retained the old Scotch form of spelling Leusey, and who imparted her characteristics very deeply to the father, Dr. John D. Smith. Elizabeth came from Elizabeth (Bettie) Mallock White, who gave the mother, Veturia White Smith, a sweetness of disposition and a strength of character seldom met with. But to the writer, the subject of this sketch is just simply "Bettie E. Smith", the friend; to the sick, she is Bettie E. Smith, the sympathizer; to the church, Bettie E. Smith, the loyal member; to the business world, Bettie E. Smith, the executor; to the world at large, Bettie E. Smith, the honorable citizen.

Bettie was the ninth child of Dr. John D. Smith and Veturia White Smith, the only

sister of seven brothers, who grew to manhood, and three brothers who died in infancy. When she appeared on this scene of action, a telegram was rushed to the nearest railroad station, then eighteen miles away, to be forwarded to the oldest brother, Millard, who then was a student in Miami Medical College, Cincinnati, Ohio. The message read, "Baby is here and it is a girl." This indicated a welcome, a gladness, and joyful announcement too great to await the usual mail route transportation.

Educated in the Public and Private Schools of Friendship, and Dyersburg, Tenn., up to June, 1887, she at that time moved with her parents to Paducah, Ky. Two years later she graduated from high school, having done considerable work on the side, along the lines of general Literature and Latin. In the fall of 1888 she entered the College of Music at Cincinnati, Ohio. She returned for her second year there, but soon was compelled to give up her studies on account of acute eye trouble. While in college she not only studied piano with its attending theory and technique, but also trained her voice as well as giving much time to the study of Italian. The giving up of this great ambition was not only a great blow to her, but also to her father, Dr. John D. Smith, who had centered his greatest hope and loftiest ambition on her. Returning to Paducah, not willing to be idle,

she plunged into Church work. Being an ardent Methodist her activities brought her in contact with the Wilhelm family and with the writer especially. Here was welded and sealed a friendship which had been ripening for years—a friendship which grows sweeter, stronger and more blessed as time goes on, and has brought to me the opportunity of giving to the world something of her life and work.

Prior to this time her brother, Prof. John D. Smith Jr., had opened a very successful Business College in Paducah. Up to this period "The Modern Business Woman" was "the unknown quantity" in the South. Woman's realm was confined strictly to the home or school room. In order to partly break down the barriers of conservatism, and begin the liberation of woman, Bettie, together with a girl friend, volunteered to take the prescribed course of instruction at the Smith Business College. So, besides driving the opening wedge which gave to Paducah and its vicinity business freedom and opportunity for its women, Bettie has often told the writer that it was there that she found the key of her life work.

During all this time, Bettie was an active worker in the Methodist Church, a member of the Sunday School, Epworth League, and Missionary Society. She rendered valuable service in each department. I had been named Chairman of the "Furnishing Committee", to fit up the room for the Epworth League. An impossible situation seemed to confront me as to arrangement for music. I remember very distinctly the generous act on the part of Bettie in donating her piano to this body. This gift helped out most materially and was very much appreciated by all the League members. However, the law of love and compensation did its usual work, for following Bettie's gift to us, she received as a gift from her father a much handsomer and a more valuable piano.

Socially Bettie never aspired to be the butterfly. Her life was a happy one, but she lived in a very quiet, useful way. Her circle of friends had their parties, moonlight boat excursions, etc. At this time much reading along constructive lines was enjoyed by small circles of young people—a much interested member of which is the subject of this sketch. During this period, the teachings and practices of the Methodist Church admitted no card playing, dancing or theatres, so Bettie, being ever loyal to anything to which she subscribed, tabooed these amusements entirely.

Oftimes Bettie's girl associates envied her, feeling that as an only daughter in a family of so many boys, she must be the ideal and pet of the household.

In later years she informed me that she was reared by a very sensible mother and father, and in a very strict fashion. Her entire life bears out that statement, for no evidences of the pampered child have ever been seen by those who know her best. The feeling of envy also showed activity in our mind, because Bettie always would ride wherever she chose to go in her father's closed carriage with a real negro coachman up in front. This was the day before motor cars were in use, and very few family carriages were in Paducah. It was considered quite a mark of distinction and keen enjoyment when invited to go driving with her.

In October, 1892, Bettie was stricken with acute pleurisy, which developed into more serious lung trouble, which confined her to her bed more or less until the following summer, at which time she was ordered to Colorado and while in the wonderful Rockies some few of her charming articles, descriptive of the scenes she witnessed, were published in the local papers. A winter followed in San Antonio, Texas. After one year's absence she returned home apparently fully recovered. Some years later, however, she fell ill again with the same malady and left at once for Riverside, California.

After some months of complete rest she again was restored to health. Realizing the wonderful opportunities of California, with its wideness and bigness of thought, she decided to cast her lot among its people. Moving to Los Angeles, she again became restless for mental activity and once more entered the business world. In 1909 she married Mr. G. L. Hughes, of Riverside, California. Three years later she became a widow. At this time there was pending a consolidation of several wholesale houses, which plan was later completed and reorganized under the name of "The Los Angeles Wholesale Dry Goods Company," but which later changed its name to "The McComas Dry Goods Company." Mr. F. B. McComas, at that time President of the National Wholesale Credit Mens' Association, also President of the above named concern, heard of Mrs. Hughes, sought her and offered her a very flattering position in his office as head bookkeeper, which she accepted. Later she was placed in entire charge of the office. Mr. F. B. McComas, President of this concern, said in a letter about her: "I have a very clear and vivid remembrance of the

sterling qualities of Mrs. Bettie Smith Hughes. She came to me at a time when my business was in a turmoil. I had recently been appointed manager of this company. There were four or five partners, none of whom had any distinct idea of the value of co-operation, consequently each did about as he pleased, figuring that as he was an officer of the concern he could violate any rule. The necessity for laying down rules and regulations became so apparent that it was the only thing to do. At the time Mrs. Hughes came to me, she and I began to formulate rules and regulations pertaining to office work. One was that nobody should take any paper of any value out of the office, either for examination consultation, or for any other purpose, whatsoever, without the consent of the manager.

"Once this rule was put in effect, so far as Mrs. Hughes was concerned it was absolutely iron-clad. Before I realized it, my partners were ready to rise in rebellion because she had been enforcing the rule against them, which was perfectly right and proper.

"In her opinion orders were given to be obeyed and once having issued the ultimatum there was no turning back. This seemed to dominate all of her work and the result was, she carried me over the most critical period of my career.

"At all times having in mind my convenience and the good of the business, she never refused to accept responsibility, but sought it, and obeyed orders implicitly. In return she exacted obedience from those under her, and consequently made herself somewhat unpopular thereby, but the office was put in elegant shape, and the business was turned from one losing money to a money maker. It has been one of the keen regrets of my life that I permitted her to load up with this responsibility and work herself down to a condition of nervous prostration. She was a splendid executive and had a keen knowledge not only of book-keeping but financing as well. She was a disciplinarian from the word go, but she exacted from others no more than she was always willing to give. She was honest and conscientious in her work and an able assistant to anyone needing her strong executive ability, and was better fitted to work as a lieutenant than as a private."

Ten years ago she was compelled to give up her position with this concern and take a rest of long duration all due to mental overwork. Since then her life in the business world has been intermittent.

The Manager of the Pacific Wholesale Grocery Company heard of her through Mr.

McComas and in October, 1920, came to her and asked that she take charge of their office. He offered her hours from 9 A. M. to 3 P. M. with a bookkeeper and stenographer for detail work. The salary offered was attractive and she accepted and still occupies this position. It was not long, however, before she assumed so much responsibility that she was at the office at 7 A. M. instead of 9 A. M.

Her home is an eight room bungalow. There is a rose covered summer house and double garage in the rear.

Her home is located on the corner of two beautiful streets in a very select residential section, and is a strikingly beautiful place, surrounded on all sides by other homes of beauty, and many palaces of grandeur. The place is well kept, being under the care of an expert Japanese gardener all the year. Only those who have seen beautiful homes in Southern California can have a conception of them. Her home has all modern conveniences and appointments, and is comfortable in every way, and most attractively furnished.

With her Baby Grand Piano, Electric Victrola, a library of 600 or more books, well selected and for the most part purchased by her, all fitted in beautiful book cases, with her considerable amount of cut glass, beautiful china, quantities of rare silver and other furnishings in keeping; and as neatness and beautiful housekeeping are among her specialties, this home is ideally attractive both from without and from within.

She is happiest when in this—her real domain.

Her life in California has been indicative of her real character, and Oh! how she loves the great wonderful West!

Handicapped from birth by weak eyes and near sightedness, with an apparently strong physical body but in fact one of very fine texture and from babyhood very susceptible to sickness, all of which usually went to her eyes or lungs, her life has of necessity ever been of the upgrade pull, because of these tendencies.

She possesses many of the sterling qualities of both her father and her mother. I have spent many months at a time in her home during the last ten years. Prominent characteristics are: her strong sense of justice, her big heartedness, her progressiveness and her hospitality. These with her strong mentality form a splendid character. She has most decided opinions but tries not to force her ideas and views on others, nor does she attempt to make others think her way. She believes each individual should live his own

life and above all else think for himself. She certainly lives the idea advanced by William Ellery Channing: "A true friend will appear such in leaving us to act according to our intimate conceptions, will cherish this nobleness of sentiment, will never wish to substitute his power for our own."

Bettie leads a busy, useful life. In her home she usually has three of four professional or young business men. For them she makes it a real home and at times is spoken of by them as "Mother Hughes," indicative of the real feeling they bear for her. Recently she has had several attractive offers for her home but has no idea of parting with it—for to her it is her earthly goal—"Home".

Last year I took my mother, 84 years old, into this home. We were there for ten months. I would be remiss if I failed to express my appreciation of the kind and loving attention that "Mother Wilhelm" as Bettie always called her, received in that home.

Many of the folks back home, Paducah, Ky., have been royally entertained by her. The spirit of Southern hospitality has been and is ever evident in this rest haven.

The Stewart family lived in the same block. Diphtheria came into their midst. Two daughters were in the business world and daily had to go to their duties. Quarantine regulations would not allow the mother who nursed the sick child to mingle with the family when at home. Bettie volunteered and went into this home and managed it while the mother nursed the child back to health and the girls remained at their posts of duty. It is acts such as this that make her neighbors love her.

This act sealed a friendship that lasted unto death. To me, Mrs. Stewart was not able to find words sufficiently strong to express her gratitude and full appreciation. When Mr. Stewart had passed away, it was found that in his last will and testament he had made "Mrs. Bettie E. Smith Hughes, My Dear Friend," his executrix. She modestly relinquished this honor in favor of a daughter of Mr. Stewart.

Bettie is a member of the United Daughters of the Confederacy. She has creditably filled several offices in that organization. She is eligible to membership in the D. A. R., and Colonial Dames but due to lack of time she has never sought admission. She is a Democrat in politics and when available is always asked to serve on the election board.

In religion, after some years of study, she left the Methodist Church and connected herself with the Christian Science Church.

She is a very devout member, well versed in its teachings and has in her library all of its books which she has studied closely. Her father, having been a Steward in the Methodist Church for nearly fifty years, I remarked to her, "Bettie! It certainly looks strange to me to see Dr. Smith's daughter a member of the Christian Science Church." She replied: "Well, if father had lived, I believe he would have become a Christian Scientist as he was always progressive in his ideas." A clever answer.

Bettie still retains her love for music and is familiar with the best offerings of Grand Opera and other forms of musical composition, and at times plays the piano. She finds much pleasure in her electric Victrola and has quantities of records of the more noted musicians, covering every instrument known as well as a good representation of voice, dramatic art, etc. She rarely misses attending Grand Opera or Concerts when any noted artist comes to Los Angeles.

Bettie is of a literary turn of mind and spends as much time as she can reading but her busy life and weak eyes do not allow as much of this as she desires. She wrote the sketch of her mother, Veturia (White) Smith (see 50) in this book.

She is of striking appearance, reminding me both of her father and mother, but more strongly resembling her father, Dr. Smith. She is of the brunette type, with a splendid fair complexion, dark hair and blue eyes. Her favorite color is pink. When she gives a dinner party you may be sure the color scheme will be pink in the main. She is deeply attached to her brothers and holds her parents in loving remembrance.

In the words of another: "She is so frank, so generous, so brave, yet so unboasting; so mild, so kind in act and speech; so unselfish and so careful of others, blending so completely in character, nobleness and simplicity, high wisdom and practical sense, she seems the most finished type of womanly virtue and one who does not easily suffer by time nor weary by familiarity."

"A true friend is a friend forever."—George McDonald.

Plutarch says, "A constant friend is rare and hard to find."

I use these quotations because the element of time is to be emphasized. The friendship between Bettie and the writer has lasted all these years without interruption, has been tried and stood the test. I know she is true and constant. To me the tie of friendship has always been of deep significance and one of the strongest in life. What greater asset



can one have than a true and faithful friend, be such a one within or without the family circle. Such is she!

So! As the years come and go our friendship becomes stronger and a source of pleasure and comfort to me. I have received great inspiration from Bettie and some ideas of life, and here's hoping she may continue her useful life for many years and that much happiness may come to her.

I cannot but fully realize the sweet, sacred opportunity afforded me, but as I think of that sweet, retiring, reticent life about which

I have so freely written, I feel that I do not want to defame it by any idle word and yet I wish to lend expression in concrete form of my appreciation of the friendship that binds her to me with hoops of steel.

I feel with George Eliot, that: "It is easy to say how we love new friends and what we think of them, but words can never trace out all the fibers that point us to the old." God bless her!

Mrs. Jeff Davis Herndon,  
(nee Minnie Wilhelm)  
Clarksville, Tenn.



Josiah Weightman Smith

925 (See 524)

### JOSIAH WEIGHTMAN SMITH

It has been thought and written by some of our best writers that the best biography written, is in most cases, that of one who has long departed this life. In such writings past sins of omission and commission are forgotten and the wonder cure has so tempered our thoughts that nothing but the best is said concerning the departed.

The writer esteems it not only a privilege but a pleasure to tell the story of Josiah Weightman Smith, youngest son of Dr. J. D.

Smith and his wife, Veturly White Smith. He lives today in Berkley, California, and is one of the successful business men on the Pacific Coast.

He was born in the village of Friendship, Tennessee, County of Crockett, May 17, 1873. The first years of his life were spent here. Nothing of special import occurred during this period.

His father moved from Friendship to Dyersburg, Tennessee, in 1882. While he was yet a boy of fourteen, his father moved to Paducah, Kentucky, where he remained until his death in 1906.

Weightman Smith was graduated from the public schools of Paducah at the age of sixteen. Later he entered Smith's Business College, the President of which was his older brother, John. After finishing his business course he secured a position with the Paducah Banking Co. In 1891 he accepted a position with Smith & Scott, wholesale tobacco dealers. He remained with this firm in the capacity of bookkeeper until 1897.

On February 5, 1896, he was married to Miss May Hawkins, daughter of Mr. and Mrs. H. P. Hawkins of Paducah, Kentucky. They have one child, Weightman Junior, ten years old.

In 1897 his health failed, on account of which he sought a milder climate and located in Riverside, California in 1898.

He was associated with the California Packing Corporation in San Francisco for a number of years and later was transferred to Los Angeles. In 1906 he resigned and associated himself with the California Real Estate and Building Co., later becoming Vice-President of same.

Somehow it seems that really, in mind and heart, he never left the California Packing Corporation; always there remained a close tie for his old love. So, in 1915 he returned to the California Packing Corporation, "his old love" as he was wont to express it. He is with them today as District Sales Manager for twelve Atlantic States.

In big business, too often are we inclined to place the greater stress on the business side of a man's life. The writer prefers to deal more with the personal side of this man's life.

He has made a success in the business world. Why? Because—from childhood he has built carefully and surely, putting into this life work that which stands for the best and spells success for every builder. In the beginning, let us not forget that much he owes to his early training in the home. Here he was taught that in character he must first secure depth before he could attain breadth or height. "Unless the roots are struck far into the soil the tree cannot afford to shoot up high or spread its branches wide to catch the influences of the sunlight and rain." Sons and daughters should give thanks for the godly fathers and mothers. If they are yet with us, cherish them; if they are gone, cherish their memory, never forgetting the unspeakable power of family life to mould the future of a nation.

His great love and reverence for his parents, as a young boy, was one of his outstanding

qualities, and be it known to those who may read, he never outgrew obedience.

There is only one case on record where he openly clashed arms with parental authority. The story goes that when he was a lad of about fifteen years his father bought him a pair of shoes, perfectly good shoes, shoes that to the father's eyes were all that a lad of fifteen should need or desire. The father had overlooked one thing. The lad was no longer a little boy, nor was he a man. Just a boy, that was all; in the adolescent state where the choosing of a pair of shoes, or maybe a tie, to him had grown to the point of a ceremonial. He wanted to select his own shoes. The choice his father had made was altogether too unsightly for one of his growing pride. Not a word of complaint reached the father's ears. He put the shoes on. Promptly he sought the office of Mr. E. O. Leigh, then editor of the Paducah Standard. He asked for a job as newsboy, to carry papers before and after school. This position he secured. At the end of two weeks he took his earnings and bought just such a pair of shoes as he desired, discarding forever the ones his father had bought for him.

Foolish pride? Who shall say yea or nay? We only know that all through life this indomitable pride of the growing boy has accompanied the man, making him not content with the smaller successes of life, leading him to greater heights, greater achievements, placing him hand in hand with the men of affairs today.

Early in his business life, as one brother fittingly described himself, Weightman Smith spent all he made, made all he spent and owed no man. He laughingly said on one occasion that the head of his business firm explained to him that he always selected him to entertain out of town customers because he was decidedly the best spender they had in the business.

This man makes a rule not to go in debt, arguing that it is the best protection and investment a man can offer to his family. In no way is he a snob. He says the only relative he would fail to recognize is one who wantonly and deliberately failed to support his family.

In religion, at one time, he was a member of the Methodist Episcopal Church, South. At the present time, he is not affiliated with any church. His life is not without religious belief. He believes in God, the Christ, and lives the creed, the Brotherhood of Man. He is a member of the Masonic Lodge, as well as his father and all of his brothers, save one.

Nature was kind to him, giving him energy, fair health, a cheerful, social dis-

position a manly, generous, keen ambition to attain excellence in harmony with unsullied honor, which he has never changed for profit, position or power. He has won his success by honest, hard work and by a life of truth and scorn of hypocrisy and pretense.

His is a sympathetic nature, this, with a friendliness of manner makes him a boon companion and a man much sought after as a friend. One may form some estimate of the character if they will study his face. He is Southern born and of English descent. The chin, lips and nose would indicate Roman type; the eyes, a soft, grey-blue, fixedness of purpose; the projecting eyebrows, a quickness of perception; the lofty forehead, a comprehensive mind and moral dignity. The entire facial expression denotes will-power and self assertion, a face of a much enduring man with faith in final results.

His motto has always been to merit success by energy, industry and close application, and if a man would succeed he must help himself, for fortune helps those who help themselves.

Every man is the architect of his own fortune.

After all is said and done, the chief interest in the life of Weightman Smith lies in his wife and boy, back in their lovely home in Berkley Hills. When men have failed as husband and father, other successes in life fall short of real values. Had he failed in every other walk in life, somehow the writer thinks his great love and efforts in behalf of his home and family would largely atone for each failure. But he has not failed here. By his own human endeavors he has built a monument in the hearts of those who know and love him that will live through all time and eternity.

Weightman Smith began life with nothing, so far as this world's goods are concerned. He has received no inheritance. By upright dealings, always looking well to his reputation, strength of determination and tenacity of purpose, he is a success today. Perseverance and power of concentration, along with a kindness of disposition and the living of his creed, the Brotherhood of Man, makes of him a man of mark and deserving of honorable mention in these pages.

Esther Smith Dickerson,  
Apartment E-Ellis,  
Paducah, Kentucky.

To Friendship, Tenn. in early May, 1873, Bishop Josiah Weightman of the Methodist Church made a pilgrimage and presided over the District Conference held there at that time. A discussion arose as to some matter. Our

father made an extended talk on it. As the Conference was closing, Bishop Weightman arose and made a short talk. "Dr. Smith" might well be named as his subject. He eulogized our father, talked of the metal of which he was made, suggested that he should locate in a larger city where opportunities were greater and fields for labor more abundant.

A few days later there came a boy to our home. He was named Josiah Weightman Smith and has ever been known as Weightman Smith. Three months and two days younger than he is his nephew, Lothair Smith. For a season in childhood days they were companions. In young manhood they roomed together at Paducah for two or three years. They were there inseparable companions. Lothair started eastward. Today he stands high among men of big insurance business in New York City as can be seen from this sketch. Later Weightman started westward. As a business success he has surpassed all his brothers and at San Francisco stands as high in the commercial and business world as does his nephew in the insurance world in New York. It is not often that of two who were so close, so near related, who chose different lines of work, each has attained such standing in his own particular field of endeavor.

W. Thos. Smith

926 (See 525)

#### WILLIAM THOMAS SMITH

William Thomas Smith of Henderson County, Tenn., was born in Anson County, N. C., July 8, 1820, the oldest child of a large family. In 1838 with his parents he emigrated to Henderson County, Tenn., arrived there April 28 of that year and settled about seven miles northwest of Lexington. He lived with his parents until January 30th of the following year when he was happily married to Susan, the daughter of John B. Williams. He purchased a farm near where his parents lived and spent the whole of his life in farming. Happily he lived with this childhood wife as he was not yet nineteen when he married. He was of a thrifty nature and loved to work and provide for the tomorrow. Two children came and the home was more happy. Thus his cup of pleasure was overflowing in the winters and through the summers. After four years the angel of death stole into his home and from it cruelly snatched this young wife and her babe. Two orphan children needed a mother and after a reasonable time, on March 20, 1844 he married Arstalia Hoy, the daughter of William Hoy who came from

Lexington, Ky. To this union there were born children as seen in the tables. William Thomas Smith was a good farmer and knew how to handle a farm to make it yield good returns. He was a devoted husband and a good father. He well provided for his family and always furnished plenty and of good quality of all that was wanted. He was a Whig in politics before the war. Before he left North Carolina his grandfather had offered to give him a slave but he declined to accept him as slavery was contrary to his ideas of humanity. With this feeling when the war came on, he did not sympathize with that element who wanted to perpetuate slavery, and in the election that was held in Henderson County, he was of the faction who wanted to remain in the Union. By a small majority his faction was out-voted but he did not yet feel that he could reverse the principles he had held since boyhood days since he believed secession meant perpetuation of slavery. He was unwilling to go out and fight his kith and kin in the deathly struggle and thus he remained neutral.

William Thomas Smith was from childhood a deeply religious man. From a sainted mother he had received religious instruction, and in childhood days had listened to his uncle, Elder Archibald Harris, expound the gospel. Early he connected himself with the Primitive Baptist church and was ever a defender of that religion, a contributor to its existence. He was a constant reader of the Bible, seeking to understand and carry out the wishes of the Master. From a close study of the Scriptures as he was able to interpret them, some years before he died, he decided that in Church doctrines, the Primitive Baptist was not so near in harmony with the teachings of the Bible as was the Christian Church. He had love for the Primitive Baptist Church in which he had been nurtured for so many years and in whose faith his parents had died, but Christian duty to him was the first law of nature and he withdrew from the Primitive Baptist Church and asked admission in the Christian Church. He was given the hand of fellowship and accepted as a member, for his life had been an open book and of a Christian character. On March 13, 1897 he was stricken with paralysis and after three days suffering his soul was gently wafted to his Master. He realized his condition and informed his family that he was ready and knew that he was to be among the saved. His last words to his family were of the certainty he felt as to his future and an injunction to his children to

so live, walk and act to meet him in a better eternity.

William Thomas Smith impressed his character in his children and taught them thrift honesty and good morals. He left an example without blemish or stain, as shown by the character of the posterity that he leaves behind him. His son, James Samuel Smith, now lives on the home place. He too, of the manly, Christian character of his father, is counted as one of the good substantial farmers of Henderson County. He lives on his father's old home place, has accumulated such a sufficiency of this worlds goods that he is in good circumstances, is highly respected, well posted on the doctrines of his, the Christian Church, has been close student of the Bible and is familiar with the contents of it. He is a high-toned gentleman, a good neighbor and married a most estimable woman.

J. S. Smith

927 (See 530)

#### ELY TYRE SMITH

Ely Tyre Smith was born at Lilesville, N. C. April 13, 1831; died August 13, 1885; and was buried at Mt. Zion Cemetery at Friendship, Tenn. At the age of seven, with his parents he went to Henderson County, Tenn., and was reared on the farm six miles northwest of Lexington. After his father's death he with the oldest brother remained on the farm and looked after their mother until she died in 1852. He then moved to Dyer County where he met Elizabeth York, the daughter of John York, one of the most highly respected citizens of that county and one of the early settlers. Elizabeth York agreed to wed him and with him fight the battles of life. They were married November 25, 1857 and located near the village of Friendship. His wife, a most devoted and very high-toned Christian at the age of eighty and nearly blind, lives in Friendship. She still possesses all of her faculties, and in the spring of 1920 the writer had a most delightful visit with her. She has proven herself a woman of good business characteristics and since the death of her husband has added to what he left until she has a plenty of this world's goods. She will never suffer for want of anything. She still retains all of her former mental vigor.

Uncle Eli began life's battles on the farm and there ended them. When the war came up, he was not in sympathy with slavery and took no part in the rebellion. In early life he connected himself with the Methodist Church and was ever a devoted member. There were few meetings but that he with his family attended. He was a member of

the Masonic order and with that class of citizens he sought companionship. There was no more worthy member. His habits were plain, his reputation of the highest character. His life was his family. There was no other place where he was so contented. He was not a man who was always fond of spending his leisure time loafing in town. The writer well remembers him. Although only fourteen years old when we moved away from Friendship, we shall always remember Uncle Eli. He was of a most gentle and kindly nature. We were anxious to have had a more complete sketch of him and his wife but it was not furnished. Uncle Eli died as he had lived and as he had been taught by a sainted mother, with an unquestioned faith in God. With our mother, we attended the funeral. We will remember his daughter, Lou, now dead, and to whom we were attached. His daughter Mary Etter Smith Bessent married James Harvey Bessent, an older schoolmate of ours in early life. He was a farmer, succeeded fairly well, and was elected as a member of the legislature, and while at Nashville attending his duties, he was killed in an automobile accident. Cousin Mary has an interesting family and she is one of the Church workers in her community. See the genealogical table for the other children.

W. Thos. Smith.

928 (See 538)

#### ELIJAH FLAKE SMITH

Elijah Flake Smith was born in Anson County, N. C., July 5, 1837, died June 2, 1920 and was buried in Deport, Texas.

Elijah Flake Smith was named for and by Elijah Flake, who was a half-brother of his great-grandmother, Mary Flake, wife of John Smith No. 2.

In the spring of 1838, when only a few months old, he with his parents moved to Henderson Co., Tennessee, near Red Mound. Here he spent the early part of his life. His father died when he was ten years old. He helped his mother on the farm until she died in 1852. At the age of fifteen he went to Sugar Tree, Tennessee and lived for a year with his brother, Dr. John D. Smith, making a corn crop. Later he returned to Henderson County, Tennessee. At the age of twenty he married Lydia Argo, a most highly respected woman of that county and a devoted Christian. They were most happy and congenial in their life together, striving to so live as to leave an example worthy of emulation by all of their posterity.

When the struggle of the sixties came there was a very much divided opinion in that

County on the slavery question and as to the position that should be assumed.

Flake Smith was among the eight hundred who wished to remain in the Union. Out-numbered, most of those who had been for the preservation of the Union, joined the Confederacy. Flake Smith was opposed to slavery and was also unwilling to take up arms against kinsmen. He went to Illinois and there remained until after the war. After the war ended he returned to live among those whom he loved best.

About 1880, with his family, he moved to Friendship, Tennessee, where he farmed for a year, after which he moved to Deport, Texas where he remained until his death. His wife, Lydia Argo Smith, died in 1892.

His home life had been a happy one. A few years after he was united in wedlock to Mary McGraw, daughter of Reverend Joseph McGraw, a highly respected minister of the Missionary Baptist Church of Henderson County, Tenn.

For the twenty-three years of their married life no woman was ever more devoted to man than was this woman. For quite a period before he died, he was an invalid, unable to leave his room. A constant nurse, a companion, she watched over him day and night. She inherited Christian ideas and ideals and has ever cultivated these. Today she is a wonderful woman. She resides in Dallas, Texas.

Flake Smith began his battles on a farm and ever remained and fought them there until age depleted his strength and sickness compelled his surrender.

In early life he united himself with the Missionary Baptist Church, was ever a devoted member, was well versed in its dogmas and for sixty five years was ever ready to defend its teachings. He attended other churches when there was no service at his own but was ever present at his church, and an attendant at Sunday School, where his children went as his companions and studied God's word with him. He has often told the writer that he wanted to so live and was trying to live and leave behind him a clean life, one that his children, grandchildren and great grandchildren could think of and point to with pride after he had gone.

The writer is proud of such an heritage and only hopes, that when she has finished with life's duties, that her life will have been such that others may have a similar regard for her.

Flake Smith was ever a faithful servant, true to himself, his ideals, to his own and to all with whom he came in contact. He died as he lived, keeping the faith.

Edna Wallace



929 (See 750)

SAMUEL SMITH SR. AND  
MARGARET HUTCHINSON

Samuel Smith Sr., the fourth son born to John Smith No. 2 and his wife Mary Flake, was born, lived and died in Anson County, N. C. As a boy he was large for his age and stout. As a youth, he developed a large manly body, with long, awkward, ungainly limbs. As he grew to manhood his limbs became more symmetrical and proportional, while his body developed remarkable strength. He was known far and wide as the Sampson of the county. The king of prowess, he walked the militia drilling grounds after the ranks were broken, offering to wrestle or fight all comers, but the challenge was not taken. His stout limbs gave him power to maintain his upright position as a wrestler and his long arms as a boxer or fighter. These, backed by great strength, gave him fame which spread to adjacent counties. A bully from Montgomery county, reared in the hills of Uwharrie River section, came over the Pee Dee river to his home to test his strength and match his power. He rode a little mule. Dismounting, he tied it to the fence in front of the house. Samuel Smith was "tting in his yard under a large white oak. This species of oak is the finest of all the numerous trees of the oak family, noted for its longevity, strength and toughness of its wood, its symmetry, its spreading limbs and dense shade. It bears abundant fruit, edible by man and beast. Its majestic appearance and deep strong roots make it peculiarly adapted for safety, for shade, and grandeur to the home. The stranger saluted, passed the time of the day and told Mr. Smith that he had heard of his fame, that he himself was the champion of Montgomery county in athletic exercises, and that he had come to test his prowess and settle the championship. As Mr. Smith arose from the ground, his large proportions, stout legs, long arms and broad chest and giant size struck his visitor with astonishment, and to his amazement, without saying a word, Mr. Smith walked out to the mule, picked it up and set it over on the other side of the fence. The Montgomery Champion mounted his mule and rode away, fully and perfectly satisfied.

Mr. Smith was a member of the Primitive Baptist Church, adhered strictly to the tenets of that faith, refusing to adopt the new teachings of the Missionary Baptist Church, which was making considerable leeway in the county. He was regarded by his neighbors as a good man, a good citizen, upright in his dealings.

His word was his bond. His rule of life was, "I pay as I go." He avoided debts and was careful to limit his wants to his ability to pay spot cash. He produced everything at home in the way of food and clothing, even tanning the leather for shoes. He went to the store only for sugar, coffee, salt and hats.

It was his custom to lend a willing hand, viz: his own, when called upon to tender assistance to his neighbors. Especially was this true on log rolling days. In clearing land for cultivation, the owner felled the trees, looped off the limbs, piled the brush, cut the trunks in 10, 15, 20 feet lengths and invited his friends and neighbors in to assist him in the piling of the logs in heaps for burning. This was called "log rolling day." Log rolling day was one of hard labor but was made a day of fun and frolic as well as of labor, a day of testing manhood and manhood strength in lifting and bearing the logs to the heap. A pole, called a hand-spike, two or three inches in diameter and five or six feet long would be thrust under the log, a man on either side would take hold of the hand-spike, lift the log and carry it to the heap. With Sam Smith on the one side, no one man would take the other end of the handspike. It required two men to match his great strength. During the work hours, rum, apple and peach brandy, cider and water, with the famous ginger cake were served; for high noon, a bountiful dinner; in the afternoon, supper in time for those who desired to reach home before night. Generally on the same day a quilting party was arranged for the matrons and girls. In the evening after supper, "Old Sister Phoeby" and other plays were enjoyed, to be followed by a dance that lasted, well—I won't say how long.

"On with the dance, let joy be unconfined,  
No sleep till morn when youth and beauty meet,  
To chase the glowing hours with flying feet."  
The old song ran,  
"Dance all night till broad daylight,  
And go home with the girls in the morning."

Samuel Smith was frugal but not parsimonious, temperate abroad and at home, temperate in his eating, temperate in his drinking. He was like the Gauls before Christ, the great teacher of temperance. I quote from Froude's history referring to the Gauls: "Caesar respected their character. He admired their abstinence from wine, their courage, their frugal habits, their pure morality." Samuel Smith was one of the elect who add knowledge to temperance and

to temperance, patience. He was opposed to slavery and utterly refused to own a negro servant. He pursued the even tenor of his way, cultivating his fertile land on Fall Branch with his own hands, without envying his brothers, who were large owners of the negro, adding tract of land to land and negro to negro. Isaiah says: "He that loveth silver shall not be satisfied with silver; nor he that loveth abundance, with increase", and we have the word of the Master himself that "a man's life consisteth not in the abundance of the things he possesseth."

His religious convictions were well grounded; his attendance on worship, constant and prompt. He was no laggard, no slacker and was always among the first to arrive at the meeting house to greet the preacher and invite him home. His hospitality embraced all comers, extending that true and genuine feeling, so rarely found.

He married Margaret Hutchinson, whom every one lovingly called "Aunt Peggy". She was a lovely woman in mind, body and soul, a God-given helpmate, a helpful assistant in all his undertakings, efficient, comely, and graceful. She bore to him four handsome sons and six beautiful daughters, all of whom married honorable members of society, doing their part in the building up of their country. They could safely use the motto of the Prince of Wales, "Ich dien"—I serve. By serving mankind, they serve God and their country.

W. A. Smith

930 (See 607)

#### JOSEPH PEARSON SMITH

Joseph Pearson Smith, son of John Smith No. 3, grandson of John Smith No. 2 and his wife, Mary Flake Smith. Joseph Pearson Smith was born in Anson County, N. C. Aug. 10, 1813. The youngest son of his parents, he was the child of their old age.

"His said parents often spoil the youngest child by indulgence and leniency to faults, which give offence, and which would have been met with punishment in the first born. Be that as it may, the youngest son here was not spoiled by indulgence or otherwise. He was just a natural boy, perfect in form, with regular features, black hair, bright eyes and modulated voice. He was active, fond of play, riding his stick for a horse, lively and noisy. His education began in the field log school house, thence to the high school in the town of Wadesboro, thence to college. At 21 he was associated in the mercantile business with his father, the style of the firm being, John Smith and Son. They did a

large and general merchandise business, carrying a large stock for a country store.

When 25 years old he had acquired the two great essentials for success, thrift and tact, spelled with capitals, and should be known as the two T's. He married Miss Mary Alef Cooper of Kennansville, Duplin County, North Carolina, daughter of John Cooper, the wealthiest man in the county and very prominent in his section of the state. John Cooper's consort was Mary (Polly) Williams, the daughter of Robert Williams, also a very prominent citizen of Duplin County. (See 104) The sister of Mary Alef Smith, Elizabeth Cooper, married Sherwood Lindsey, living in a lovely old Colonial home near Columbus, Georgia.

Mary Alef Smith was a handsome, fine-looking woman, tall and stately, of elegant manners and a collegiate education.

This union was idealistic. He, the youngest son of Anson's most thriving family of aristocrats and she, a fair daughter of Duplin County, whose beautiful face and gifted conversation won his heart. She did not say nay when he offered his hand. The marriage ceremony was celebrated according to his wish on Sunday, the Lord's Day, May 1, 1836. "With this ring (a solid gold band) I thee wed and with all my worldly goods I thee endow." He built an elegant mansion in the town of Wadesboro, the capital of the county, on the most beautiful spot in said town, amid a large grove of oaks. In this home she reigned as queen—her gracious manners lending a distant charm to her stately appearance. Her naturally strong intellect, developed by education, gave effect to her refined conversational powers. She dispensed hospitality in a gracious manner, in accordance with the true ideas of a Southern woman to the manor born; mingling with the genial society of the families of Gen. Dargon, Judge Little, Doctors Glass and Jones, Hon. Thos. L. Ashe, Eben Nelme and others. "Primus inter pares"; first among equals. With her elegant form, handsomely gowned, she walked a queen among her sisters.

Joseph Pearson Smith erected the only brick store building then in the town, in which he did a successful business for years, establishing a branch in the village of Carolina Female College, under the management of General Neal. Because of better educational advantages he later moved to said village, but retained and maintained his old home in Wadesboro.

In 1868 a spark ignited the shingle roof of the court house. This was seen but no ladder could reach it. The court house was

burned and the entire section of the town was razed to the ground, leaving as sentinels blackened chimneys and the bare walls of this old brick store building and those of the court house. In the year of 1858 he moved to Spartanburg, S. C., where his children had the advantages afforded in both Converse Female, and Wofford Male Colleges. He still retained his property in Anson County.

In his youth, his heart was changed in old Olivet Church. Then and there he made a life covenant with the God of all the earth, that he would "fear Him in all the days of his life that he lived in the land," "To keep his commandments, his statutes and his judgments"; "To bring his way upon his head, justifying the righteous, to give him according to his righteousness."

His after life attested the consecrating vows of his youthful days. As it was said of Hiram the widow's son, "He was filled with wisdom and understanding". A steward in the Methodist Church for all these years, he took a leading part in the constructive work and for the betterment of the people, looking especially to the welfare of the women and children. Hence we find him the foremost figure in the temperance movement. Grog-shops abounded in the town and dotted cross roads of the county and even the main stores often dispensed intoxicating liquor. The bad habit of drinking was conducive to drunkenness and led to gambling, dice, cards and all manner of evil. He engaged actively in the cause, going over the county making addresses in support of temperance and reform, generously assisting in the building of Temperance Halls, organizing societies, advocating the idealistic slogan, "Touch not; Taste not; Handle not". His wisdom of the world taught him this great work must begin with the education of the child and the result was afterwards shown in 1888 when prohibition was adopted in the State of North Carolina by over 40,000 majority. All honor to Joseph Smith and his confederates.

In advance of the laws and sentiments of the people he opposed "Imprisonment for debt" and at times would pay the debt, set the debtor up in business to enable him to support his suffering family. He always took the precaution of having the beneficiary take the vows of temperance, "Touch not; Taste not; Handle not", and connect himself with some temperance society. Some refunded the debt, others did not, a few violated their vows. See 2nd Peter, 2:22. "But it hath happened unto them according to the true proverb the dog is returned to its vomit

again; and the sow that had been washed, to wallowing in the mire."

In his boyhood days he attended the "singing schools" where one learned the scale, "do, re, me, fa, sol, la, se, do", and the teacher used a tuning fork to obtain the correct pitch. He cultivated a clear, soprano voice of great range, full soft, modulated and his intonation charmed his audience. The writer was present when an unfamiliar hymn was announced from the pulpit. Joseph Pearson Smith was equal to the occasion. In a firm, full sweetly modulated voice he sang the hymn "frae and to end" in clear, distinct words, understood by the whole congregation, (a very rare accomplishment) all the more effective as a solo in musical monotone.

At old Savannah Church, at the close of a sermon he was asked to lead in prayer. Elegant in devotional prayer, the writer never heard finer language in earnest beseeching voice as he implored the Divinity to pardon the erring backslider, and in the very acme of exalted eloquence he said, "Call them back! Call them back". His voice rings in my ear to this day. Many heeded that prayer and the mourners' bench was crowded. He was a big man, not physically, but in heart, in mind and good works for the uplifting of mankind, consecrated to the service of God, in the upraising and elevating of humanity.

With an eye to business opportunities, he heard of an anomaly of humanity; birth of negro twins with body united, in the State of South Carolina. Visiting them, he purchased them of the owner and not willing to separate the family, he purchased the father and mother. They grew to maturity, were highly educated by their mistress, who was well qualified to train them in the fine art of various kinds of needlework and other womanly accomplishments. She also taught them music. Skilled as piano performers, their melodious negro voices trained in unison and with extraordinary powers of elocution, they were prepared for exhibition as the "Two Headed Girl"—Millie-Christine. They traveled every State in the Union, attracting crowds, remaining in some of the large cities weeks and months, and were taken abroad to foreign countries, all through Europe, and were viewed and entertained by the royal Victoria of England and other crowned heads. All proving his perception and sagacity; his "tact and thrift."

While visiting his brother, Col. Wm. G. Smith at Ansonville, N. C. in 1862, he was taken ill and died in the county of his nativity. The universal sentiment was that a good

man had gone to his rest and to his abundant reward in Paradise. Just, genial, honorable: His life was gentle and the elements so mixed in him that nature might stand up and say to all the world, "This is a man".

"Gone where he shall see Him face to face and be with those he loved once more". The world is better by his having lived. His life was an inspiration to his children and grandchildren, and to every reader of this inadequate sketch, may it prove beneficial.

W. A. Smith

931 (See 632)

ELIZA CATHERINE (KATE) SMITH and  
DR. H. W. ROBINSON

Eliza Catherine (Kate) Smith was the third daughter of Col. Wm. G. Smith and Eliza Sydnor Nelme, his wife. She was the favorite grandchild of her grandfather Presley Nelme, because her head was crowned with red hair, near the color of that of her mother's rich auburn and akin to the color of his own, golden brown. She was born Nov. 22, 1839, married Dec. 7, 1862, and died in her home in Pine Bluff, Ark., Sept. 10, 1915. Educated in Carolina Female College, situated in Anson County, of which institution her father was Chairman of the Board of Trustees, and in Greensboro Female College, Greensboro, N. C., said institution being now known as the Greensboro College for Women.

Born with the proverbial silver spoon in her mouth, contrary to common practice and custom, her sensible mother trained her in household economy and domestic arts. This stood her in good part after Appomattox and during the reconstruction days. Her home lay in the sandy loam of the southern part of Anson County. Footprints of sand could be seen on the floor when the blowing winds sifted the fine invisible sand dust over her furniture and curtains, and these sorely vexed her cleanly soul on neatness bent.

Dec. 7, 1862, the bands of matrimony were celebrated by her union with Dr. Henry William Robinson, who was born in 1832 and died in 1885. He was the son of Thomas Robinson and Ann Elizabeth Auld, his wife. Thomas Robinson came to America from Northumberland County, England, near the Scottish border, landed in Charleston, S. C., and settled in Marlboro County, S. C., taking charge of the farm of Gen. Henry William Harrington, of several thousand acres, located on the Pee Dee river. General Harrington's father married the daughter of James Auld, Esquire. His name was also Henry William Harrington.

Ann Eliza Auld, the wife of Thomas Robinson, was the daughter of Henry William Auld, who was the son of John Auld and Elizabeth Shurlock, his wife, and John Auld was the son of James Auld, Esq. and Rosanna Piper, his wife. She was the daughter of Rev. Marshall Piper, a Protestant Episcopal Clergyman, and Rosanna Button, his wife. James Auld, Esq. settled in Dorchester County, Maryland. The writer is in possession of a manuscript, written in a plain, running hand, readable and elegant, written by James Auld, Esq., the fly leaf saying: "A small Journal", "The Travels of J. A. Commencing the 10th day of February Anno 1765, and the accidents and adventures attending the same."

"Sunday, Feb. 10, 1765, I took my departure from my home in Dorchester County, Maryland, where I left my wife and six children, viz: 4 daughters and two sons, whose names are as follows: Wife's name Rosannah Auld, a virtuous and beautiful woman and mother of said six children." (He then gives a list of his children, whose names will be found later in this sketch). "I proceeded on horse back, all day being rainy and cold. I got to Nanticoke River, very rotten roads, lodged at one Beards, 24 miles. Had pork and hominy for supper. Feb. 11 crossed Nanticoke River at Bayley's Ferry, Cold, cloudy and roads rotten; proceeded to lower Ferry Wycomico and on way thither got lost and rode 8 or 10 miles out of the way, crossed the Ferry, got corn husks at a French house for my horse, dined upon one boiled egg and biscuit, which I had in my pocket. Passed by Princess Ann Town in ye dark and lodged at one Jesse Kings, three miles beyond town. I was kindly used but family itichified. Feb. 12, Tuesday, traveled to Stephens Ferry, Pocomoke 18 miles, crossed it at one o'clock, traveled 11 miles to one Warrington's where I lodged, having been refused lodging in that neighborhood. Here I was used kindly but poor. Dined that day on one egg and one biscuit." He seems to have been provident and carried his lunch with him, as he said he had it in his pocket. He continues: "Pork and hominy for supper and fodder for horse. Called on the verge of Accomack County at a widow Tayloress of the roadside, who fed my horse with husk. In the whole 82 miles to here. Wednesday, 13th Feb. To Accomack Court House 27 miles, passed it about one o'clock without calling, stopped at roadside and got oatstraw for horse of a poor man, proceeded to Pungatyne Church, 11 miles, and lodged at a small logged house on roadside, three miles making 123 miles to here. The people were young beginners,

extremely poor but clean and very finiking was the woman and very obliging, fried pork and hominy for supper. Seaside Oysters and sort of liquid they called coffee for breakfast, horse fed with corn and fodder, and 13 days from home." This is the first time he mentions that his horse was fed with both corn and fodder. "Proceeded that afternoon to a blacksmith, a small logged house, people much itichified and poor lodging, lay in my clothing and great coat—a little corn and fodder for horse, fried meat and hominy for supper and the like for breakfast, very dirty and badly managed. Friday, 15th Feb. proceeded to Pungor's Church in Northampton about 10 miles and from thence to Seven Airst Ferry in order to cross Bay near Cherry Stands about 15 miles more, where I alighted at a large new house a distance from Thom's Airst dwelling and belonging to him as I understood, but kept as a Tavern or house of entertainment for travelers by a poor dirty pair, a Tailor and his wife, nothing for man or horse but stinking rum and as bad wine, no meat and a little bread ground at a hand mill and baked in a dirty manner at the fire at which myself and several travelers sat, with oysters and cockles, which we helped to provide, being there two days, although obliged to pay 1-3 per meal for the same without other diet except a sort of hot water of clay color which the dirty queen called coffee and some butter of various colors; feather bed and good house but also dirty."

We will not copy further from this valuable manuscript. Surely traveling was not a pleasure in those days. Rotten roads, poor eats for man and beast. Further on he says: "Arrived at Norfolk, ferried across Elizabeth river to Portsmouth, a handsome little town, and thence to Suffolk, a pretty little town, situated on the Nansemond river. In said town is a beautiful court house, a good church and school house, merchants, tradesmen, etc. Trade of the town in Indian corn, tobacco, tar, turpentine, flour, pork and butter. About three miles out of town came to the Doct's under whose hospitable roof I continued for several days." He does not give the name of the Doctor but the Doctor accompanied him then to Halifax, N. C. "Houses chiefly of wood. A pine burr mast by which hogs get fat. It is a small kennel between the prickle or parting of every division round the burr, which is called the seed about the size of an apple seed, sweet and oily but tintured of the pine. On the Meherrin river we lodged with Maj. Henry Hills, a grand liver in Carolina. All these rivers contain plenty of fresh water fish. Arrived

at Roanoke River of first magnitude. Lands here high on the river bank and said to overflow with the freshet, which at times rises from 30 feet to 60 feet perpendicular. Lands on both sides of the Roanoke excessively rich, large quantities of ash and sicamore, and elm, walnut and cyprus, poplar, oak and juniper. Crossed this river paying a bit and 6 p." (A bit is an expression still occasionally used in Kentucky, Tennessee and some of the southern states and means 12 cents.) "Arrived at Halifax March 14th and put up at the house of John Monfort, Esq., and afterwards settled in town and took the county clerkship of him and kept a store." In September following James Auld, Esq. moved his family to Halifax, N. C. He lived in town about two years and then purchased a house and 650 acres on Mill Swamp seven miles from Halifax. Again we copy: "In Nov., 1670, traveled up to Anson County about 200 miles, contracted with Col. Sam Spencer for the clerkship of that county and my first court commenced January 1771. This fall negro wench Cate run away. Continued traveling and attending Anson County court with my sons, John and Michael until January court 72, when John is placed for one year at Chatham County Court House in a store for Mr. Neal McKennon and also Deputy Clerk for Wm. Cooper of that County, myself pursuing my attendance at Anson County Court until April 72, proposing now to move my family to Anson County before July Court." Here ends the Journal of James Auld, Esq. He was a gentleman of great prominence in the Colonial days as evidenced by the following: Dec 23, 1776, by act of General Assembly he was appointed Justice of the Peace as was also William Blewett, Thomas Wade and others. Aug. 18, 1774, James Auld is named on the Com. of Correspondence and with power to call meetings of freeholders, etc. Sept. 9 the Congress appointed him one of the members of the provincial Congress for the Salisbury District. On the same date he was commissioned first Major of the Minute Men of Anson County. Oct. 17, 1777, James Auld, Thomas Wade, Henry Williams Harrington and two others sign a letter to Gov. Caswell giving information of the Tories of Anson County. The above is taken from the N. C. Colonial Records. He was one of the Committee of Safety for the Salisbury District. (See Wheeler's History.) His son John Auld was a member of the General Assembly House in 1783, Senate 1788 and 1798.

A gentleman living in Richmond County, N. C., in a letter dated Sept., 1845, gives



the following items pertaining to the Auld family. "The Rev. Marshall Piper, a Protestant Episcopal Clergyman, married Miss Rowena Button. They emigrated from Ireland and Rosanna was born in Maryland. Elizabeth married a Mr. Buckingham of Maryland, and had two sons. Rosanna married Mr. Howes Goldsborough of Maryland and had a daughter, Carolina. After Mr. Goldsborough's death she married James Auld, Esq., a lawyer of Maryland and has the following children: James, born Oct. 4, 1747, died June 10, 1751; Ann, born Dec. 26, 1749, never married, died March 1, 1822; John, born May 30, 1752, married Elizabeth Shurlock of Chatham County, born Nov. 28, 1796; Rosanna, born Dec. 2, 1754, died July, 1776, Henry William Harrington, died Oct. 13, 1828; Michael, born March 3, 1757, died Sept. 18, 1788; Mary, born Oct. 5, 1759, died Oct. 25, 1801; Elizabeth, born Nov. 11, 1764, never married, died.— Second James, born Nov. 30, 1776, married, died Jan. 21, 1870. James Auld died in Maryland, May 8, 1782. Rosanna Auld, their mother died in Anson County, N. C., Nov. 11, 1792. Caroline, daughter of Howes Goldsborough and Rosanna Piper (afterwards Mrs. Auld) was born about 1744 and married John Goldsborough about 1762, and she died in Maryland in 1816. John Goldsborough died in Nov., 1803. Their children were John, Howes, Robert, and Eliza, (twins born about 1775), Mathew and Samuel, (twins) Charles and Horatio. Children born to John Auld and Elizabeth Schurlock, his wife were: Elizabeth, born May 29, 1776; died Oct., 1776; James Sherwood, born Jan. 15, 1778, died 1827; Henry William, born 1781, died Oct., 1823; Second Elizabeth, born March 1, 1783, married James Gains, Esq. and died in 1803; Sarah, born 1785, died 1788; Charles born Dec. 13, 1787, died Jan. 30, 1797; Alexander, born Sept. 16, 1789, died in 1822. Second Sarah, born Dec. 25, 1792, married Dr. James Bogle of Fayetteville, N. C., now (1845) a widow residing in the city of New York. Rosanna Auld, daughter of James and Rosanna Auld, married July 31, 1776, Henry William Harrington of South Carolina. Born to them: Rosanna, born Feb. 2, 1778, died in Wadesboro, N. C., March 30, 1838; Harriet, born Oct. 29, 1779, died in Pittsboro, N. C. Sept. 16, 1780; Henry William, born March 14, 1782, died in Richmond County, N. C., March 23, 1792.; James Auld, born Aug. 1, 1785, died in Marlborough Dist. March 31, 1834; Second Harriet, born Jan. 24, 1788, died in Richmond County, Oct. 2, 1791; Michael, born Dec. 5, 1790, died in

Richmond County, N. C. 1794; Second Henry William, born July 5, 1790; Third Harriet, born Nov. 22, 1795; Caroline Goldsborough, born Nov. 8, 1795, died in Salisbury, N. C., April 10, 1829."

In the possession of the writer is also a letter written by Caroline Goldsborough bearing date August 8, 1771, and addressed to Mrs. Rosanna Auld, detailing home and family affairs. It is a plain legible ladies' handwriting, showing command of language and evidencing a good education. James Auld in provincial days bought the Clerkship of Anson County from Col. Samuel Spencer. The first Court held with James Auld as clerk was in January, 1771. He was followed in office by his son John and John, by his son Michael. Thus we see that James Auld was Clerk of Anson County Court in Colonial days, to be followed by his sons, John and Michael. Michael's will is preserved and was made Sept. 17, 1789. The court records were largely burned in the great fire of April 2, 1868, which destroyed the court house and a large part of the business section of Wadesboro, and we have no means of ascertaining the exact dates each one occupied said office. We know however that James Auld, the father, and his sons held this important office during the strenuous days of the Regulators and during the more strenuous days of the Revolution and for several years after the Independence of the Colony of North Carolina was acknowledged by Great Britain.

Thomas Robinson was born April 20, 1801, and died March 18, 1877. His marriage to Ann Elizabeth Auld took place May 27, 1830. She was born April 20, 1809, and died July 31, 1834. She was a descendant of James Auld, Esq. and was probably the niece of Gen. Harrington, over whose place Thomas Robinson was the trusted overseer. Thomas Robinson was so esteemed and trusted by General Harrington that he was named the sole Executor of his will. He administered the estate to the satisfaction of the heirs of Gen. Harrington. Two sons and one daughter were born to Thomas Robinson and Ann Elizabeth Auld, his wife: John Robinson, born March 20, 1831; Henry William Robinson, born March 16, 1833, died 1885; and Nancy Robinson, born Oct., 1834, died Aug. 1836.

By the union of Henry William Robinson and Kate Smith, the blood of the old Colonial families, Auld, Nelme, Sherlock, Bellew, Flake and Smith became united; English, Scotch and French. For children born to them see genealogical tables.

On leaving college halls, Henry William Robinson attended lectures at the famous College of Dental Surgery in Baltimore, Md. This college attracted students from the British Islands, and the continents of Europe and of Asia. Obtaining his diploma, he established his office in Wadesboro, N. C. Waiting in his office could be seen patients from Anson County, adjoining counties and from across the line in South Carolina. He was the first Surgeon Dentist who was a native of Anson County.

The war of the sixties was on. The heart of North Carolina was in the war. As a private Dr. Robinson volunteered in the Anson Guards, the first company to offer its services to the governor of the State.

Had the Government been aware of the importance to health that dentistry is esteemed in these days (1921) Dr. Robinson would have been promptly commissioned as Dental Surgeon with the rank of Captain in the Confederate army. This brave man, cast in heroic mold, serving as a private, did his duty faithfully and cheerfully. The historian of Anson Guards, alluding to the regiment at the battle of Williamsburg, says: "We were ordered to the right to relieve the 19th Miss. fighting gallantly. Forward we went and soon we were into one of the worst places that can be constructed. During the preceding night the Yankees had felled trees in our direction, sharpened the limbs, making a cheval de frise that would seem to impose a barrier impossible to penetrate, while they could pour a destructive fire into our ranks. It always did seem unaccountable that the Yankees were the invading force, and yet we had to charge and drive them out of forts filled with batteries of guns, with infantry supports, protected by cheval de frise and all other obstructions that could be devised by the ingenuity of men. Somehow, the Lord only knows, we managed to crawl, climb and surmount these obstructions, and work our way through, falling over logs and stumps to rise again and press forward. Working our necessarily slow way through these obstructions about one hundred yards, peppered at by the Yankee sharpshooters, we were ordered to lie down. Henry W. Robinson remained standing through the fight.

The Guards were all very proud of the conduct of H. W. Robinson in braving the bullets of the enemy, upstanding while the rest of us were lying behind logs and stumps. This was our first real battle. The Colonel of the regiment in his report of the battle individualizes "Henry Saunders of Anson

was very forward in the fighting. Henry W. Robinson of the latter County was upstanding through the fight in spite of entreaty and orders." William A. Smith being desperately wounded in the battle of Malvern Hill, H. W. Robinson was detailed to attend and nurse him.

A conscientious Christian, his daily walk and conversation was observed by the Company, and they noted how closely he followed his religious convictions and "departed not from the law of righteousness."

Note the following incident. One day Dr. Robinson had prepared his dinner and set it aside. While washing his hands preparatory to appeasing his hunger and enjoying his meal, a dog smelled the appetizing food and proceeded to make way with it, and as the Doctor turned around he saw the last of his dinner disappearing. Some of the boys saw it and thought surely the doctor would forget himself, break over and "cuss", for the occasion justified forceful language. He said: "Clear out from here, you nasty long-legged flop-eared yellow hound". Even in such trying circumstances he did not forget the command: "Thou shalt not take the name of the Lord thy God in vain." His language was impressive but the wicked boys were sorely disappointed.

The Spirit was poured out on him from on high and he was endowed with the gift of eloquence in prayer. Religious services were often held in the camp and Dr. Robinson was frequently called upon to lead the worshippers in prayer.

In January, 1865, Sherman, in his ever famous or infamous march to the sea, passed through the lower or southern portion of Anson County. The home of the father of Dr. Robinson was visited by cutthroat robbers, calling themselves Federal soldiers. Thomas Robinson had passed the three-score years but with hair whitened by the frost of many winters was still a ruddy fine-looking and grand old Englishman. Rumors of Sherman's wicked hordes had preceded their arrival and most of the gentlemen proprietors had left their mansions and sought safety in flight, for freedom was before them, the devil, hell-fire and Sherman behind. Thomas Robinson was a brave man and thought it a cowardly shame to protect himself by flight and leave his wife, children and negroes to the tender mercies of Sherman's army. The first company of soldiers left the highway, wheeled to the right, advanced up the driveway, entered the yard on horseback, treading down the flowers. Thomas Robinson met them on the veranda. They took his gold watch

and at the point of pistols, demanded and received his wife's jewelry and silver plate. The second company demanded the same valuables, to be told they had already been surrendered. They swung the old grey haired gentleman up by the thumbs three times. The last time he fainted from pain, anguish and exhaustion. He could not deliver to them that which he did not have. This inhuman treatment forced him to languish in bed, but it did not exempt him from torture by others who followed. They forced him to lie upon the floor, while with swords and knives they ripped up the bedding and bed covering in the search of gold, and covered him with the rags. This was done in January in the midst of winter. They slew, ate, robbed, pillaged, destroyed and burned. Give the devil his dues. They did not burn his fine old mansion of 12 large rooms, probably because they dared not holocaust him. Sherman said, "War is hell" and he ought to know for he made it. The women of the South were dowered with the courage of conviction, and beyond question they long sustained the war by their labor and sacrifices. They suffered untold indignities and endured to the end with sublime faith and courage. The way to conquer the South was to conquer the women. The way to conquer the women was to force the children to cry for bread their mothers could not supply. "But let the dead past bury its dead." The war-worn veterans of the Confederacy grieved with anguish over Appomattox, but today every heart beats with loyalty to the Stars and Stripes, unalloyed by their love for the Stars and Bars, while deep down in their hearts a glow of pride comes to them contemplating this: the greatest of all Nations of the world, UNITED AND FOREVER INDIVISIBLE.

Taps have already been sounded for the vast majority of the contending hosts, and may we join them up yonder and when the roll is called, answer, "Here".

"Oh! the blood our fathers gave.  
Oh! the tide of mothers' shed tears;  
And the flow of red  
And the tears they shed  
Embittered a sea of years;  
But the roses we plucked for the Blue,  
And the lilies we twined for the Gray,  
We have bound in a wreath,  
And in glory beneath  
Slumber our heroes today."

After the close of the war, people had no money to pay for dental work. There was no money to spend for dental work. Dr.

Robinson closed his office and followed the plow to win bread for his family. His wife, though raised in the lap of luxury, had been taught by her mother useful domestic arts and science. She cheerfully aided him by making the nicest, sweetest, and richest golden-yellow butter which commanded fancy prices. In girlhood days she had given attention to painting in oil, landscapes being her specialty. She liked this work rather than the work of mechanical drudgery, the resultant product being the conceptions of her artistic soul, discriminating eye and facile fingers. The walls of her home are adorned with her paintings, combining beauty with grandeur, which are greatly prized by her children. She possessed the power of spiritual vision that lent to her a sweetness of disposition that foiled the shafts of adversity. Her insight to character was swift and unerring. An atmosphere of calmness and peace abided in her home, like the deep waters of the river, bringing the silent forces of love and affection. She was the presiding genius, and swayed unconsciously the motive powers that created order without friction. Day by day she kept the domestic machinery well oiled and running smoothly, making a model home. An ideal woman, unruffled, unobtrusive. The children were glad when one said, "let's go to Aunt Kate's."

Dr. Henry William Robinson saw the best that was in others and gave the best he had. His life was an inspiration. His memory a benediction.

Wm. A. Smith

932 (See 617)

SAMUEL SMITH JR. and  
JANE MEACHAM

Samuel Smith Jr. and Jane Meacham, his wife. John Smith No. 3 begat 5 sons and 2 daughters. Samuel, born in Anson County, N. C., was the third child and second son. As a boy he was active of limb and body, often running to accomplish the behests of his parents. His brothers and sisters delighted to call him "Sammie". In his old age he was known to all the country-side as "Uncle Sam". His neighbors were saddened when he left this native county to seek a home in the West. His temperament was modest, fair, just and equitable. Never ruffled, d'sturbed nor confused, symmetrical in mind and body, his well balanced poise made him respected and a compeer of the best and noblest of the land. In middle age he grew to be quite stout, weighing 225-250 pounds, the English would say 16-18 stone.

Early in life he gave his spirit in devotion to his Maker. He was a faithful, consistent member of Olivet Methodist Church, South. He began and ended the day with family prayer. We have the authority of Sir Walter Scott who quotes the sentence and used it more than once, viz: "Meat and mass hinder no man."

"Then kneeling down to Heaven's Eternal King,

The Saint, the Father, and the Husband prays;  
Hope springs exulting on triumphal wing  
That thus they all shall meet in future days."

One of the old gentleman's favorite expressions was taken from Zech. 1, 10 "His dominion shall be from sea to sea, and from the river to the ends of the earth". One evening a school companion spent the night with his son. At prayer his son, kneeling over the chair, fell asleep. The visitor roused him. "Has he said anything about Brad-dock's defeat?" he asked. "No". "Well, when he gets to that he is just half through".

His arrival gave pleasure and his departure grief, for all regarded him with great respect for they knew him to be a kindly and good man of wise thoughts, as one who led an exemplary life to be seen and read of all men. A careful, painstaking man, apparently he counted his steps lest his foot slip as he walked by faith, hand in hand with the God of all the earth.

In the days of prosperity he saw to it that the widow's "barrel of meal did not waste, neither the cruse of oil fail", for was he not, as he regarded himself, God's almoner of his gifts to him. "Let not mercy and truth forsake thee, bind them about thy neck; write them upon the table of thine heart".

He married Jane, the daughter of Winfree Meacham, Esq. In her was exemplified one of Solomon's wise sayings: "Whoso findeth a wife, findeth a good thing and obtaineth the favor of God." She, a model of proportions, of Grecian type, with dark hair and brown eyes, a comely girl, robust and fair, a good specimen of Anson County's beautiful womanhood, was noted far and wide as an energetic, capable director of her household. It was her delight to spread a good table of savory viands for the delectation of her many visitors. Having one of the best of old time darkey cooks, using an abundance of home made hog lard, she could and did make the most deliciously palatable sweet buns and fried cakes with long tanglad fingers. (Tanglad was the word used for platted or plaited.) My mouth waters now at the recollection of their crumbling sweetness, and memory carries me back to boyhood days when from out the

old mahogany sideboard, with clawed feet, would be handed with gracious smile these cakes and other food to stay the appetite of a hungry boy.

Their home was located in the Grassy Island section of the Pee Dee River, a favorite place for picnics and fishing parties. At Uncle Sam's and Aunt Jane's the young people would assemble, where hospitality, entertainment and a hearty welcome was meted out to all unreservedly and without stint. Having lands and negroes, the gift of his affluent father, he basked in sunshine of abundance produced on his fine plantation lying on Savannah Creek, happy in his home and children, happy through piety.

The disastrous result of Appomattox stripped him of his means, but cheerful in his poverty he gathered his family around him and took them to Mississippi, purchased a home and walked between the plow handles and with his own hands gathered the fruits of his labor, happy and content in the affections of a loving wife.

He saw the beautiful sheen of the sun as it rose in the morning, labored in its heat in the noonday and rested in the gloam of the evening. His adversity and toil brought him contentment, nearer his true ideal, and faith in Him that doeth all things for the happiness of those who love and serve Him. It was given to him to bask in the grateful smiles of those dependent upon him and to see the silver lining of the golden clouds of adversity. His love for his fellow man did not wane; no stranger was permitted by him to lodge in the street and his was the door always open to the wayfaring man.

When adversity came, his noble wife did not abandon his side not shirk her toil, but cheerfully and resolutely turned her capable hands to unaccustomed toil, to the chores of her house. A loving helpmate, she conserved the harvest of his labors and enabled him to heartily join in the sentiment of the song sung in his youthful days:

"Roll on ye dark waves o'er the troubled tide,  
I heed not your anger with Maggie at my side."

Adversity teaches lessons that we could not attain otherwise. Misfortune has its compensations. He read his Bible with more thoughtful attention and his faith was strengthened thereby. Pride and courage came to his assistance while the courage of his wife, with iron-like nerves, upheld him. In a few years she too was taken.

"When the sun in all his state  
Illumined the eastern skies,  
She passed through glory's morning gate  
And walked in Paradise."

When the shadows of evening gathered around him and darkness of night came trooping past, he gathered the folds of his mantle about him, and flew away as a dream, believing the tomb the very gate of heaven opening to receive his mortal remains; while his immortal spirit took wings which the tomb could neither bind nor confine. Know you not, "A Good Man Never Dies".

He was a successful farmer. His negroes were well fed, well treated in sickness and in health. They multiplied. Every darkey born into his family represented wealth. There was no cruel northerner "Legree" (see Uncle Tom's Cabin) hired to oversee and drive them with the cruel lash to make brick without straw. Mrs. Harriet Beecher Stowe did well to import the revolting character, the bullying Legree from the North, for the South had no such inhuman taskmasters. The negro servants were a part of a southern gentleman's family, a degree lower than his children but they were his children's associates, playmates and nurses and the old time darkey "mammy's child" the like will never be seen again. They were well fed and well clothed. A selfish interest would dictate this policy because the servant was his valuable property. Slaves were inherited and the master was actuated not by policy but by humanity. By esteem and affection he protected his servants and treated them as a part of his family, which they were in fact. Between the home of Samuel Smith and his older brother, Col. Wm. G. Smith, lay Brown Creek with swamps a mile or more wide. The roadbed through the swamp was often in terrible condition. Col. Smith would avoid the muddy road by picking his way through the woods between the trees. When Samuel Smith attempted to follow, his buggy would sometimes bark the trees. Unwilling to confess his lack of skill in driving, when disparagement was made, he would assert that his buggy axles were wider.

Observance of the evil tendency of the Free-Soilers and Abolition doctrine, their condemnation and abuse of southern people, their evasion of the laws of the land, even inciting the negroes to insurrection, pillage, arson and murder; over-riding, abrogating and annulling the Constitution (the compact that made the States a Nation) finally resulted in the election of a sectional President, an act warned of and deprecated by the

great Washington in his farewell address. All this and more caused the intelligence of the South to regard the language of Richard Henry Lee and also the preamble of the Constitution wholly applicable, substituting the word Confederacy for the Colonies: "That the Confederate States are and of right ought to be free and independent, that they are absolved from all allegiance to the Federal Government and all political connections between them and the United States is, and ought to be totally dissolved", etc. They had the indubitable right to withdraw. This they did by acts of secession, and for four long years upheld and heroically maintained the Confederacy against the vast power of the North, backed as was the North by the overwhelming power of the world. To this declaration the whole South gave its unqualified consent, and to maintain it gave its best blood. Samuel Smith cheerfully gave his only son of 18 years to the holy cause. James Marshall Smith volunteered into Company C of the Anson County Guards, the first company organized in the County of Anson. He was wounded in the battle of Williamsburg, fought May 5, 1862. Invalided he was sent home and died. He now sleeps in the Smith and Nelme Cemetery on the old Cedar Row amid the sacred dust of other members of the family. He paid the supreme sacrifice in defence of the rights of the state against the encroachment of the Federal Government, and the great, grand and impeachable doctrine that "all government should rest upon the consent of the governed", who have the right to select their own rulers. He too, like his father, conscientiously believed in the doctrine of the atonement once made and for all men. A good soldier was he both of the cross and of the Confederacy. "Who comes?" the herald cried, "To join the ranks of noble dead?" "Thy glory dazzles all our eyes" "A PRIVATE! Sir!" he said.

Wm. A. Smith

### 933 (See 620)

DR. JOHN GUINN SMITH and  
ANN EUGENIA SMITH, h's wife.

Dr. John Guinn Smith, the son of Eli Smith and Sarah Hicks his wife, was born in 1822 and lived to be 72 years old. Ann Eugenia Smith, to whom he was married Nov. 2, 1852, was the daughter of Col. William G. Smith and Eliza Sydnor Nelme, his wife. She was born Sept. 23, 1832, and died in her 82nd year. The fine old homestead in which he was born is located two or three miles from old Mount Pleasant



where was located the first court house of Anson County, N. C., notable for its history in pre-colonial days as showing the independent spirit which animated our forefathers in their refusing to submit to the exactions of the king's officers. In open day they took possession of the court house, and expelled the venal judge and other officials. In 1783 the capitol of the county was moved to Wadesboro. Eli Smith died when his son John was a boy, and when settled up, the estate was quite limited. John Guinn Smith, a sturdy youth and born of sturdy stock, was hale, healthy, bright and ambitious. Not content to merely exist, he determined to follow the example of his grandfather and of other members of the family, become a useful member of society and take his position as a prominent member and influential citizen of the county. To become a worthy scion of the genealogical tree an education was essential. Therefore he bent his efforts to obtain and thoroughly master the rudiments of "reading, riting and rithmetic", known and spoken of in our day, as the "Three R's". These inspired and spurred him on to the attainment of the higher branches. Not possessed of the wherewith to defray his college expenses, undeterred however, he went to work and by manual labor earned sufficient to pay the expenses of his first scholastic year of 9 months at the University of North Carolina. Then he taught school and in so doing acquired a better knowledge of and became more thoroughly grounded in the text books he had studied. At the same time his stipend enabled him to attend another year at the University. Alternately teaching and attending college, he won his diploma at the University, chose the profession of medicine and continued to teach. His education and experience commanding for him a high salary, he was enabled to pay his own way while attending lectures. Taking his diploma as a Doctor of Medicine, then free of debt, he was beholden to no man. He owed his diplomas to his own determination and individual efforts, a self made man. He was all the more respected and esteemed for being the architect of his own promotion and high standing. He set his heart on winning the affection of the talented daughter of Col. Wm. G. Smith, his cousin, and his pupil. A courtship of months extended into years and finally won the heart of this fair maiden and they were happily married. Her collegiate education fitted her to be the intellectual companion of her talented husband. Looking glasses are flat but they do not flatter. When she looked into one, she saw the regular

features of an amiable girl with dark hair, a sweet, lovely mouth, unpainted pink cheeks, an open countenance, clear and bright as the silvery moon, a shapely form and beautiful, small feet with the high instep of the southern born lady. She was a distinguished beauty, intellectual and superior. He loved her for years. When a maiden pupil, her intrinsic charms had won his admiration and her intellectual cast of mind and amiable qualities captivated him. An old time wedding feast with sumptuous appointments was spread for a hundred guests. Splendidly gowned, with a long train, she looked just what she was, one sweet woman who when she gave her hand also gave her very soul to "love, honor and obey till death do us part", and even beyond death, into and throughout eternity. Trained in domestic arts, it was her pride and pleasure to keep her house neat, clean and immaculate, "a thing of beauty and joy". Her home lay in the track of Sherman's army in January, 1865. Dr. Smith was a surgeon in the Confederate army. She was the only white adult on the plantation, safely lodged in the affections of her faithful servants. Thus situated she was no exception of the civilization of the old South in the sixties, truly unique; nothing like it ever before and never to be known again. Would that the scope of this sketch permitted the writer to detail the relations that of his knowledge existed between the master and his servants. (Please observe the word slave was never applied to the negro servant by the South but it was done by the Abolitionists). The master held the negro in high esteem. He was his guardian and protector, and he regarded him as a child, as a comrade, a member of the family. So the servant gave respect, veneration and affection to the master who supplied his wants, kept him in sickness and in health and gave him religious instruction. Bonds, indissoluble bonds of personal interest and affection united them into one family, and hence the fidelity of the negro during the war. In all the South there was not one case of insurrection.

The old-time negro during the war,  
How faithful his service, how constant his  
care,  
For the families of soldiers, defenceless alone,  
Whose husbands and fathers to service had  
gone.

Yes! Her home lay in the track of and was visited by Sherman's army, composed in part of foraging bummers. Her negroes looked to her for protection from these marauders. One woman said: "Oh my mistress, how am I

to feed my children?" The vandals destroyed, wantonly destroyed all food they could not use and did not leave a fowl or animal alive on the place. They entered her dwelling, robbed it of all those things desired that could be carried away, and destroyed the remainder. They left this Southern matron with her children, her servants and their children to starve. The ruthless vandals even took the blankets, the covering for her baby, from the cradle, and left it to freeze in the bitter January weather. This one act of the unfeeling, inhuman brute drove the poniard of hate into her heart, never to be forgotten, never to be forgiven.

Dr. Smith was full of energy. He began his career with manual labor and toil, and exemplified the dignity of toil all his life, for human toil is of divine inspiration. "In the sweat of thy face shall thou eat bread." He devoted his life to the practice of medicine, cultivating his farm, raising and educating his children. He became noted as a surgeon. Before the war between the States, a negro boy some 12 years old was kicked by a mule, his skull torn off and his brains run out. Dr. Smith confined his head so he could not move it, used a silver plate for the crushed bone, sewed the flesh over the plate and the boy recovered. Remember, this occurred before the days of wonderful surgery of the present generation.

At an early day he became a member of the Methodist Episcopal Church South and his name was recorded in the books of Olivet Church. Faithful in attendance he answered roll call at Sunday School and other services.

"When the trumpet of the Lord shall sound,  
and time shall be no more,

And the morning breaks eternal bright and fair;

When the saved of earth shall gather, over on the other shore,

And the roll is called up yonder, I'll be there."

With melodious voice he delighted in singing the sacred tunes of devotion. When going to and fro, visiting his patients he would lift his voice in praise.

He bought the old Nelme homestead and its fertile acres on Cedar Creek. When he began the practice of medicine he won the confidence of his patrons and enjoyed a fine country practice. In the early morning he would direct the day's work on his farm and then visit his patients. A marked success attended his farming operations, he specialized on hogs and hominy. His rule was: "Never allow a pig to see two Christmases and slaughter it at 150 lbs. weight". "The meat

at that weight is more tender, sweet and juicy and the size of the pieces more desirable to handle, preserve and cook", he said.

Bear with me while I relate the following incident of his school experience. The last day of school in his day was usually attended by the pupils taking possession. This was called "School Breaking". It was the custom; custom makes law, and whoever was in possession of the school-house was the master. The teacher being in possession the students must submit. His reputation as a scholar and teacher had attracted a number of young men of 16-21 years, and many more younger boys and girls. In some way he became aware of the intended resistance for the last day. He secured the assistance of Mr. Thomas Hendly. Approaching the building, they found the windows closed and the doors barred from the inside, with all his pupils ready for the fun. They attempted to force the windows and doors but could not obtain admission. They then retired to a log for consultation. One of the boys opened the window and one by one they sprang to the ground, formed ranks of ten, three deep and charged. They simply covered the teacher and his assistant, like bees cover the queen bee in a swarm. Hendly at once surrendered and was released under promise to desist. Smith vowed he would never surrender, although he was on his back, his arms and legs pinioned by two, three boys on each limb. The spring branch was distant about a hundred yards and there a large hole of water two or three feet deep. A ducking therein was threatened but he refused to surrender. By this time the large boys showed some temper and they commenced to drag him toward the branch. Seeing their determination, his courageous spirit yielded and he was allowed to rise. He led the way to the village store, distant one half mile, followed by the entire school. Candy, raisins and fruits was the treat which must have cost him several dollars. The teacher apparently and the pupils most certainly enjoyed the "School-Breaking."

Dr. Smith looked after his farm closely when not professionally engaged, and thrived beyond others. Kind and considerate of his negroes, every week he gave them an extra allowance of food, and extra money for Christmas. His servants vied, one with the another, in obeying his instructions and doing faithful work in his absence.

The Confederate war, or "War Between The States," which the North erroneously called "Rebellion", came in the sixties. His fame as a physician and surgeon had pre-

ceded him and he was promptly commissioned surgeon, with the rank of Captain. During his absence in the army, Ann Eugenia Smith was the queen regnant at home. Capable, energetic and efficient, she ruled with firmness, in kindness and leniency while success crowned her effort. After Appomattox and the liberation of the negroes, he thought it best to move his lares and penates southwest, across the Mississippi river. He located in northwest Arkansas, where there were few if any negroes. He was fearful of the outcome of emancipation and the irresponsible race. He did not think it advisable to raise his increasing family among them. In the spring of life prepare for the winter of old age. In the west, land was abundant, rich and cheap. There he would settle his children and they would grow up with the populous country, free from the menace of manumitted slaves. In his new home his energy did not flag, and again he resumed his profession, his farming operations, and took up the reins and began rebuilding his lost fortune. By day and by night he answered the call of the afflicted and served the poor without reward or the hope of reward. He devoted his life to the relief of suffering humanity, his physical ability often being taxed to the limit.

His boyhood and early manhood days were spent in the famous Grassy Islands neighborhood. The Pee Dee river spread out near or quite a mile wide. Small islands covered with trees, larger ones being cultivated, and the innumerable small grass patches growing in the shallow water gave the name of Grassy Islands. Fish of various kinds abounded in these waters. The largest fish was the sturgeon, weighing 100-150 pounds. These were caught in traps. Redhorse, succors, and chad, in season, were abundant and catfish were like pebbles on the bank in number. These were caught mostly at night in the seines, when they had left their covert of rocks and were feeding on the grass patches. The catfish has no scales. The Mosaic law reads: "These shall ye eat that are in the waters; all that have fins and scales shall ye eat; and whatsoever hath not fins and scales ye may not eat; it is unclean to you." So also swine were forbidden. Gentiles take greater liberty and eat both swine and "fish without scales." The flesh of the catfish is white as the driven snow, very palatable and the river people are exceedingly fond of them. The banks of the river were steep, rocky and rugged. The bright silvery waters, leaping over the rocks, in the bed of the river, and interspersed with islands of grass patches,

were a thing of beauty but not a joy forever; for the old noted Grassy Islands are no longer there, but all covered by deep water caused by a dam erected at Blewett's Falls to generate electric power. Thus the beauties of nature must yield to the march of progress in the twentieth century.

During the months of December, January, February and March, these waters were the favorite haunts of the wild goose. Beyond question, this species of goose is correctly named, for when feeding by day or resting by night, they always have a sentinel on the lookout to warn them of danger. Dr. Smith often tried to surprise them and catch the sentinel asleep but asserted he never could. He was fond of hunting, and following his hounds in the pursuit of a fox was his especial delight. "Old Dash", not called that because he was old but because of southern idiomatic dialect, with his deep sonorous voice usually led the pack.

"I have a dog of Blenheim birth,  
With fine long ears and full of mirth  
And sometimes, running o'er the plain,  
He tumbles on his nose;  
But quickly jumping up again,  
Like lightning on he goes."

Ruskin—My Dog Dash.

Possessing a level head, his neighbors frequently consulted him on business propositions. His acumen was remarkable. His wife and himself were communicants of the Methodist Church. Hand in hand they climbed the hill, hand in hand they walked down the incline, and hand in hand they bask in the Paradise of God. In this world: "Life is a struggle, a bubble, a dream; Man is a boat a-floating down the stream."

Great struggles make great men. The great struggle of the sixties brought to the front this great surgeon of the Confederate Army, and another brave soldier answered the last roll call when the Master ordered the angel beat taps of the great soul of John Guinn Smith.

Wm. A. Smith

934 (See 619-H and 847)

SARAH ALEF SMITH  
LEWIS JAMES WILLIAMS  
CAPTAIN N. W. LILLINGTON

Sarah (Sallie) Alef Smith was born May 26, 1848, at five o'clock in the morning. She was the daughter of Col. William G. Smith of Anson County, North Carolina, whose lineage is traced back to the 17th century, to one Thomas Smith of Nottingham, England,

the founder of this family, from whose loins sprang many scions of nobility. Their Coat-of-Arms heraldic reading, shows: Arms; Or; a chevron cotised between two demi-griffins couped respecting each other in chief, and a like griffin in base sable; Crest, an elephant's head erased or, eared gules and charged on the neck with three fleur-de-lis, azure two and one. Motto: Tenax Et Fidelis. Anglicized, Preserving and Faithful. A wonderfully beautiful Coat of Arms.

The mother of Sarah Alef Smith was Eliza Sydnor Nelme, directly descended from the Nelme family of Scotland and Wales, known as the "Lords of the Marches," to whom were committed the defence of the borders. The Arms of the Nelme family are thus described in heraldic terms. Azure a saltaire or, on a chief of the last, a cross-crosslet fitch gules. Crest: Out of a ducal coronet or, demi-dragon, or wings inverted azure, holding between the claws a cross-crosslet, gules. This union allying two ancient noble families.

On March 23, 1869, Sallie Alef Smith married Lewis James Williams of Panther Creek, Yadkin Co., N. C., with all the pomp and ceremony of an old time Southern family wedding, celebrated at "The Oaks" amid the congratulations of more than a hundred guests assembled to honor the union of two old Colonial and Revolutionary families. Lewis Williams was the youngest child of Nicholas Lanier Williams and Mary Graves Kerr, his wife. Her mother was the daughter of Robert Lanier, who was the son of Thomas Lanier who married Elizabeth Washington, the daughter of Richard Washington, the son of John Washington. She was first cousin to George Washington, the Father of his country. Thomas Lanier was descended from Sir Thomas Lanier of the Queen's Regiment which was engaged in the famous battle of the Boyne, fought July 1, 1690, between William III and James II. James was defeated and fled to France and William was established on the throne of England and reigned under the title of William and Mary. A large, beautiful, stained glass window with the Washington Arms thereon is to be seen in Ripon Minster, in the city of Ripon, Yorkshire, England.

Lewis J. Williams was the youngest son of Nicholas Lanier Williams, the son of Joseph Williams who was reared in Hanover County, Va. (See sketch). Lewis Williams inherited the old homestead "Panther Creek" with its broad acres of fertile land on the banks of the Yadkin River in the Piedmont Section, sometimes called "God's Hills". Panther Creek, situated about one mile from

Shallow Ford, was famous throughout the South for its liberal, prodigal hospitality. There were no bridges in those days across the river, nor, indeed for two hundred years afterwards. This was the principal ford and crossing place, especially when the river was flush, because one could cross at Shallow Ford when no other could be used. It is correctly and appropriately named Shallow Ford, and it is also the smoothest ford on the river. A party of gentlemen attorneys were going from Mocksville to Winston-Salem. One of them was familiar with the country. He purposely fell in the rear. The public highway led to Yadkinville and made a sharp turn to the right crossing the river to Winston. He took a short way, a hypotenuse of the triangle and when the party arrived at the river he was seen on the other side, robing. He confirmed their conclusion that the river was very deep, but could be crossed safely, advising them to disrobe. With this he drove on. The water nowhere exceeded fourteen inches in depth. An angry, crest-fallen party could not vent their spleen on the absent and soon the victims laughed at and enjoyed the practical joke. Shallow Ford was used by Daniel Boone on his way to the wilds of Tennessee and Kentucky. Likewise it witnesses the martial tread of Cornwallis' victorious army, while the sound of his bugles rang out over the hills and mingled with the roar of the river in this mad pursuit of Greene with the remnant of Gates' defeated army. Greene had crossed at Trading Ford. A providential rise in the river forced Cornwallis to go higher up and cross at Shallow Ford. This delay enabled Greene to make good his escape. Thus Gen. Greene, first at Catawba, then at the Yadkin and last at the Dan, succeeded in placing a river between him and his foe. This great general, with sleepless energy, celerity of movement and masterly skill saved his little, worn and footsore army. Re-enforcements came, he recrossed the Dan and took the offensive, leading to the battle of Guilford Court House, which all historians agree, was the fore-runner of and led to the surrender of Cornwallis at Yorktown. Pardon this digression.

The main public highway leading from the South to the Shenandoah Valley, to Richmond and on to Washington, ran by the way of Shallow Ford and Panther Creek, famous for hospitality as "The House Beside the Road". Private conveyance was the mode of travel in those primitive days. Generally horseback was preferred by Congressmen, owing to the fearful and almost impassable condition

of the roads. Occasionally in summer or fall carriages were used by the opulent. Prominent gentlemen from the South were always welcomed at Panther Creek as they traveled to and from Washington. Henry Clay, John Caldwell Calhoun and many others of lesser note were pleased and glad to cross the threshold of Panther Creek, guests for the night, guests for days that oft-times extended into weeks and sometimes into months. Here was found the best welcome, the best society, the best entertainment, the best food, the best drinks, all in abundance and without stint. In those good old days, now past forever, to the deep regret of many alcoholic habitus, beverages of various kinds, viz., apple and peach brandy, corn and rye whiskey, (wines were reserved for a digestive at the festive board) were kept in exquisite cut glass decanters on the sideboards of influential and wealthy citizens, with honey and sugar and water to be partaken of at one's own sweet will. But woe to him too freely imbibing, he was kicked out as no longer a gentleman fit to be the guest of, or to associate with gentlemen. This was so salutary, no gentleman dared disgrace himself under the roof of a hospitable host. Exception was made to this rule when only gentlemen were present at a big convivial night feast when many were expected to go under the table. Neither in those good old days was it thought wrong by distillation to convert apples, peaches, corn and rye or barley into alcoholic liquors, a merchantable product, but rather an honor.

Nicholas Lanier Williams was esteemed and honored as a benefactor of the people, became distinguished, known and noted far and wide, all over the country as a manufacturer of pure whiskey, being the first to discover the art of converting raw whiskey, by removing essential oils, into a pure, wholesome product, universally prescribed by physicians. And today, 1921, in this enlightened age, no substitute has been found that a layman can administer. The "Old Nick" brand of whiskey was famed throughout the length and breadth of the land for more than a century and was classed with "Old Nash Brandy", manufactured in Nash County, North Carolina.

Children are noted as good readers of character; intuitively they know a good man. Among the many noble characteristics of this good man was his fondness for children and children were devotedly attracted to him. Not only those of his own household but his grandchildren and even those of strangers. In towns and villages his appear-

ance was heralded by the gathering of children around him as he passed along the streets and from house to house. Like the sunshine in the room, was this estimable, upright and lovable man.

He had large possessions in the mountains in Ashe County, devoted to stock. His summer home here was known as "The Cabins" and was situated about seven miles from Roaring Gap, Shelving Falls. It was his delight to gather around him his friends and spend his summers at "The Cabins" and enjoy the invigorating ozone of the rarified atmosphere of this most beautiful land of the sky. He said to the writer: "A summer at the Cabins gives me another eight months' lease on life."

He was a Trustee of the University of North Carolina and never failed to attend the Trustee meetings and Commencements of his Alma Mater. He was fortunate in winning the affections of Mary Graves Kerr, the daughter of Rev. John Kerr, who was said to be the finest pulpit orator in America. Possessing brilliant mentality, she was brilliant in conversation, expressing her thoughts with clearness, unction and power. Terse and eloquent, she proclaimed great truths in few words. For instance, she said to the writer: "Babies are bundles of love and trouble." So in brevity is the soul of wit. She was gracious, refined, all compelling, a lover of nature and flowers, and flowers are the interpreter of a loving nature. Her extensive garden of two or more acres was surrounded with a box tree hedge and it walk with the box bush. This garden was the creation of her artistic soul, filled with flowers, shrubs and rare trees, arranged in geometrical designs, with arches, bowers, summer houses and lovers' nooks. It is not surprising that hearts have been wooed and won in this paradise. "And the Lord God took the man and put him into the garden of Eden to dress it and keep it." After the death of Mrs. Williams, this garden, said to have been the finest in the state, in its pristine glory, became plaintive in its desolation and the sad result of Appomattox. Much of the shrubbery, tree and box bush with the beautiful walks still lend magnificence and grandeur to the old home.

Lewis J. Williams of Panther Creek, Yadkin County, the youngest child of N. L. Williams, married Sallie A. Smith of "The Oaks", Anson County, the youngest child of Col. Wm. G. Smith. This union united two spoiled children of indulgent, doting parents. Both inherited sterling characteristics from noble forebears, grew into splendid manhood



and magnificent womanhood and made good in succeeding years, to the gratification of their "ain folks" and well wishers. Under medium height, of light weight, boyish in stature, he remained boyish in kindly sentiment all his life. Generous to a fault but impulsive, quickly angered, quick to resent an affront to himself or a slur upon a friend; brave, fearless and intrepid, he would fight to a finish. He was educated at the famed Bingham School. With a wonderful memory he readily acquired the contents of his text books and became the recipient of his teacher's commendation. After marriage he looked after the cultivation of his fertile acres then studied law without an instructor. With mind so apt and memory so tenacious, within six months he stood examination and was licensed to practice by the Supreme Court. He followed his profession of law in the city of Winston-Salem for seven years, when death cut short his career, to the regret of his clientele.

Musicians like poets are born, not made. Sallie Smith, a little girl too small to climb upon the piano stool, being helped to a seat, could play the simple, sweet old airs, "Days of Absence," "Home Sweet Home," and the like. She was a musical prodigy. She was attractive with the winning ways of a child, possessing a musical soul, which increased as she grew into girlhood. She attended Greensboro Female College until it was destroyed by fire, then Edgeworth College, Statesville, and graduated at Carolina Female College. She took piano lessons under several instructors, the best of them being Prof. Genari, an Italian, and private tutor in music at her home. Under professional teachers and with indomitable energy, she became a skilled pianist, interpreting the old masters with excellent technique. Gifted with the musical ear for sound, she played by ear with animation and perfection jigs and other quick dance music. Recently, when over three score and ten at a Confederate reunion, these old boys could not resist the limbering up of joints and shaking their old feet in dancing to her music. She was simply inspiring. In clear, distinct tones, so that they can be understood clearly, (a rare accomplishment) to her own accompaniments, she sings the old sweet songs culled by universal sentiment from the world's music, which have become classical favorites. Her voice is not a contralto, neither soprano, rather a mezzo soprano, delightful and pleasing to the artist ear in its richness. Assemblies in uproar of conversation and laughter would become hushed and stilled by concord

of sweet sounds while she sat at the piano and made the shining ivories dance by the touch of her nimble, dexterous fingers. Voices of "Bravo" and clapping of hands in encore would demand repetition, to be smilingly answered by another brilliant performance. As she grew older she grew wiser in the strength of a well rounded old character and, as a matron, more beautiful, just as the full blown rose exceeds the bud in beauty and fragrance. Successor of the saintly and beloved Mrs. Mary Graves Wilkies, the beautiful, magnificent, extensive old garden filled with sweet odors, in which birds flitting from bush to bush sing love songs to their mates and to their Maker; in which the tea rose gives of its fragrance and in which this exquisite garden of bowers and perfume reminds one of peace and happiness, of love-blissful love; like the true Southern girl with little domestic training because of many servants, she soon became expert in the culinary department and efficient in housekeeping cleanliness, having a place for everything and storing everything in its place. With retentive memory, the words of songs come readily to mind, while children and grandchildren gather around the piano in a scene of happiness, and sing in unison sweet songs.

The years of her life have been devoted to her children and to kindness and good deeds and love; love for many and kindness for all. Love begets love; kindness begets kindness; neighborly acts beget neighborly returns. Noted for these, she won the respect, the hearts, the love of her neighborhood.

Charming in widowhood, her hand was sought by Captain Nicholas Williams Lillington. They were married the day of the Nativity, 1895. Captain Lillington was a member of the 55th Regiment, North Carolina, Volunteers. He entered the Confederate service when he was sixteen years old, was elected First Lieutenant, then Captain of Company H at eighteen and often commanded the regiment at nineteen. Captain Lillington attended the Military Institute at Charlotte, N. C., of which Maj. D. H. Hill, who afterwards became a Lieutenant in the Confederate Army, was the Superintendent. A strategist and a great fighter, known as the one general in all the war who never failed to occupy at the close of the battle, ground in advance of the position held at the beginning. This can be said of no other general of the Confederacy. Capt. Lillington also attended the Virginia Military Institute of Lexington, Virginia. He is lineally descended from General Alex-

ander Lillington, that foremost patriot of anti-Revolutionary days, who, as colonel, commanded the Patriots that fought the battle of Moore's Creek Bridge, Feb. 27, 1776, gaining a glorious victory and capturing Gen. Donald McDonald, the Commander of the King's forces. The resultant effect of their victory was very important and the laurels gained were enhanced by the generous conduct of the victors toward the vanquished. This was the first battle of the Revolution and in this engagement was shed the first blood of the Patriots, or Rebels, as they were called, in defense of the rights of man in behalf of freedom and independence.

Please allow me to affirm the fact, that in all American wars, North Carolina has borne an honorable part and her sons have been the first to shed their blood and pay the supreme sacrifice. A noble record, of which fact her sons are very proud. Like his heroic ancestor, Captain Lillington fought to the finish, refused to surrender at Appomattox and made his way to Texas to join the army under Gen. E. Kirby Smith. Unconquered, brave, tender, immaculate; such are the precious jewels of the Confederacy, now garnered up in a brief sketch of family history, worthy example to coming generations.

Returning home, he was made Grand Giant of the Ku Klux Klan and organized his county into the Invisible Empire, thereby protecting the women and children from brutes and saving the civilization of the country. He chose the profession of law and studied under his relative, Judge Richmond Pearson and located at Weldon, N. C.

The law was a field of service for which he was exceptionally fitted by education, by temperament, by his analytical faculties and powers of cogent reasoning with excellent, convincing diction. After his marriage he made his home at Panther Creek where he had spent so many of his boyhood days with his grandfather, N. L. Williams. A typical Southern gentleman, he was esteemed by acquaintances, valued by friends, loved by his kin.

In war his military training and superior qualities received immediate recognition as First Lieutenant, then Captain and Commander of the Regiment. He was all white in war, all white in peace and has indelibly written this fact in the hearts of his contemporaries. He is fond of reading and is spending the evening of his days, as the shadows lengthen, in a comfortable home, Panther Creek, where Angels find a resting place. When bearing blessings to mortals they descend to earth.

Wm. A. Smith

935 (See 583)

#### COL. WILLIAM CALVIN SMITH

Col. William Calvin Smith was the son of James Smith and his wife, Mary Cathings, the son of John Smith and his wife, Mary Flake, the son of John Smith, the emigrant from Hertfordshire, England; the founder of the famous family being one Thomas Smith of Nottingham, England, dating back to the 17th century.

William Calvin Smith was a native of Anson County, North Carolina, born April 25th, 1824, in the mansion of his father, James Smith, on Savannah Creek. He was an active, alert boy, fond of sport but studious and obedient. His parents' wish was a law unto him, to be implicitly obeyed, so great was his respect and love for them. He was educated in the neighborhood schools, going from these to the famous Bingham School, at Mebane, N. C. Of medium stature and stocky build, he was known among his contemporaries as "Guinea Bill", to distinguish him from his cousin, William Gaston Smith, who was called "Hopping Bill", lamed by white swelling. He was cordial, affable and accessible, had the happy faculty of making acquaintances with strangers, converting formal acquaintances into friends, and far better still, of retaining them as friends.

When 36 years old, he was elected Colonel of the Anson County Militia and held that important position during the years 1861-65, when the Confederate Army was absorbing the manhood of the State. His only son, James Tillman Smith volunteered into the Anson Guards, the first company in the State to offer its services to Gov. Ellis in defence of North Carolina. This company was commanded by his cousin, Capt. Charles Eben Smith, and belonged to the 14th Reg. N. C. Volunteers, known as Co. C and was the color company. He gave creditable, honorable service till disabled by three wounds and honorably discharged. This is the proof positive that the heart of the south was in the Confederate War embattling for State Rights and the privilege of selecting its rulers and the enactment of laws, conducive to its advancement. To repeat, this is proof positive that the heart of the South was in the Confederate War, when a gentleman of standing, wealth, influence and education cheerfully gave his only son, who was to perpetuate his name, to the cause of secession and independence. Owning a large estate in land and negroes, Col. William Calvin Smith was reduced to poverty by the result of the great internecine strife. His slaves

emancipated, he and his family were left dependent on land for support; land which was unproductive, because of no labor to cultivate it. Indefatigable energy moved him to renewed effort and with zeal, he followed the line of rebuilding his lost fortune and the maintenance of his family in the high social position to which they were born and the education of his minor children.

He successfully engaged in the tanning business, establishing the town of New Forestville. While superintending this business he did not neglect his patrimonial acres on Savannah Creek. By diligence, he thrived and prospered, educating his children in the best schools and colleges, demonstrating that human virtue is equal to human calamity.

His many friends and admirers nominated and elected him to the upper House of the Legislature. He represented Anson and Union Counties in the Senate in the years 1862-63, to the credit of his constituency and the enhancing of his reputation. He took an active and important part in legislation during those trying years of strenuous war. "All that he did and his wisdom, are they not written in the book" of the daily records of the Legislature? Olivet Methodist Church was situated on the Wadesboro and Stanback Ferry Public Highway about one mile from his residence, located on the same public thoroughfare. He was a member of this church, and a constant, faithful attendant on its ministrations; intelligently advocating its needs, generously contributing to its worthy causes and sustaining the minister with his substance and with his influence. As steward of the church his advice was frequently sought and his directions relied on.

In the administration of his private affairs he exhibited a mind trained to business, practicing economy that enabled him to be liberal. Oct. 15, 1842, he married Mary Ann Tillman, one of Anson's fair daughters, a beautiful scion of the old, important substantial Tillman family of the Southwestern portion of the county. They begat one son, James Tillman Smith, and three accomplished daughters of lovely womanhood (see genealogical table 585). His hospitality was proverbial, his house the preacher's home, open at all hours to them and to his friends. His gracious wife aided him in dispensing good cheer to his guests. A woman after Solomon's heart "She looketh well to the ways of her household and eateth not the bread of idleness." Gracious, good and kind, she enjoyed the respect of her neighbors, the esteem of

her acquaintance, the love of her friends and devotion of her children.

His two brothers, Philip and Thomas having made their home in Texas, he decided to follow them and located in Cleburn, in that great state. In his new home his cordiality soon won the hearts of his associates who respected his well-stored mind, his sound judgment and sane advice. He had not lost his energy and though his steps had turned toward the sunset of life, he was still enterprising, manifesting the high qualifications for which he had been noted in his native state. Having passed the biblical three score he was peacefully gathered unto his fathers.

Life's fitful fever being over he quietly sleeps in the soil of his adopted State calmly awaiting the dawn of the Great Easter.

Copied from the Cleburn (Texas) Chronicle: "Col. William Calvin Smith departed this life March 9th, 1886, in his 62nd year. The Colonel retired Monday night stating that he felt considerably better. About 2 o'clock he awoke his wife, telling her he felt very strange and was satisfied he was dying. The family physician was summoned, but ere he arrived the immortal soul had passed from earth to Paradise. Col. Smith was born in Anson County, North Carolina. He sprang from a vigorous and intellectual race, honorable, wealthy and aggressive. He always occupied a commanding and conspicuous place among the people. He was an educated and accomplished gentleman of the old school, always noted and respected for the purity of his life, whether in public or private station. He served in the State Senate of North Carolina during the war, and by his calmness at all times, his iron will and ardent patriotism, contributed as much as any other man to the proud and noble position which his state today occupies in the hearts and minds of those who remember the days of the Civil War.

He occupied many positions of honor in his native state and remained in North Carolina until the spring of 1876 when he moved to Texas. He settled in Cleburn in October, 1876, where he has remained ever since. He leaves a wife, one son and three daughters to mourn his decease. His son is Hon. Tillman Smith, a prominent attorney of this city. His daughters are Mrs. J. A. Willingham of Cleburn, Mrs. W. E. Cox of North Carolina and Mrs. Fanny McGregor now living at the old James Smith homestead, her grandfather's in Anson County, N. C. It is seldom that such devotion to a parent is seen as was manifested toward the subject of this notice by his loving wife and children.

His son remarked in the presence of this writer, "May I so live that when I die my children will love and respect me as I love and respect my father." The funeral services were conducted at the Methodist Church, Wednesday at 2 o'clock p. m. The Rev. W. L. Nebus officiating."

Wm. A. Smith

936 (See 585)

### JAMES TILLMAN SMITH

James Tillman Smith was the son of William Calvin Smith and his wife, Mary Ann Tillman, born Sept. 8, 1843, died Jan. 30, 1908. He was named for his grandfather James and for his mother's patronymic Tillman. Like all normal boys he liked to make a noise and was full of mischief. It was his delight to mingle with and play pranks on his father's slaves.

He attended the school of his section, known as "Old Field Schools" because it was situated in a worn-out and abandoned field. In the days of our fathers, the most abundant thing in the country was land. True there was no more land then than now, but the population then did not exceed one fourth and apparently land seemed inexhaustible. Go where you would, there was land, land and more land awaiting the woodman's ax to convert it into fruitful fields. It was the custom of our fathers to annually clear a field to take the place of one that had been farmed, worn out, washed into gullies or abandoned. Beneficent nature restored these lands in the course of years by an orderly system. First the abandoned field was protected by a cover crop of sedge of old field straw, of which our mothers made brooms. The sedge was followed by pine, called old field pine to distinguish it from the forest pine. As the land recuperated and gained in fertility, oak, dogwood, tulip, hickory and other native growths mingled with the pine.

The old field school house was generally located among the old field pine trees. Our fathers, of the better class, believed in education and usually employed college graduates to teach their children and the children of their neighbors in these old field schools. In such a school James Tillman Smith was prepared for college. In Sept., 1859, he matriculated in Davidson College in Mecklenburg County, N. C., a Presbyterian Institution, and the Presbyterians are distinguished for the high order of their institutions of learning. At Davidson he elected to take the full academic course. To the endowment of nature for a fondness for the languages, he

added persevering application, which gained for him a high standing in his classes of Latin and Greek. Consequently, the Professors of Greek and Latin liked the bright student and he was fond of them. His mind did not naturally run in the mathematical groove and the Professor of the science of numbers, and the subject of this sketch had many a tilt in words over the "whys" of a proposition. Algebra, geometry, trigonometry and calculus were his abomination. As a member of the Philanthropic Literary Society, he participated in composition and debates and won distinction in the forensic hall. A model student in deportment he was liked by the authorities of the college and joined the students in their sports with zest, he was a favorite with them.

In 1861 in the spring and early summer  
 "When the dread noise of battle  
 Woke hillside and glen,  
 None rallied more valiantly  
 Than college youth and men,"

he left the hall of his Alma Mater and hastened to enlist in the Confederate ranks, joining company C, 14 Reg. N. C. Volunteers, known as the Anson Guards, his cousin Charles Eben Smith, Captain. In the spring of 1862, the time for which the company volunteered, expired as did also most of the army. Reorganization was imperative, a very perilous, hazardous, dangerous operation in the face of an enemy.

James Tillman cheerfully re-enlisted for the war, bravely determined to win independence and if necessary pay the supreme sacrifice. Wounded in battle, he was honorably discharged. Again he sought collegiate halls and graduated from the University of North Carolina.

The Lone Star State attracted him. Locating in Grimes County and choosing the law for a profession he entered the office of John D. McAdoo, obtained license in 1866 and displayed his "shingle" in Hillsboro. He changed his office to Navasota. Forming a partnership with A. W. DeBerry, Secretary of State, he went to Cleburn. From Cleburn he went to Fort Worth, seeking a larger field in which to display his ability and forensic powers. He thoroughly prepared his cases with painstaking care which won for him a large clientele and a lucrative practice. He fought in the open and scorned the tricks of the pettifogger. He was elected to the Legislature in 1874-75 and represented the 15th District in the Senate 1876-77. He was also prominently mentioned as suitable timber for Congressional honors.

His first matrimonial alliance was formed on Nov. 27, 1867 and was with Miss Ellen Pegues, daughter of William Pegues, whose fine plantation and magnificent residence was situated on the Pee Dee River, 10 miles above Cheraw, S. C. She bore him a daughter, Ellen, March 3, 1870 and gave her life in so doing. Ellen Pegues Smith on July 27, 1910 married P. B. Bookman. To them was born Ellen Bookman, Oct. 5, 1911.

His second wife was Emma Adela DeMaret born in Franklin, La. Nov. 18, 1846. They were married June 17, 1874. Their children were William Calvin, July 7, 1879; DeMaret July 21, 1881; Selwyn Feb. 20, 1883; Felix Carson July, 1887.

North Carolina's loss was Texas' gain when James Tillman Smith decided to pitch his tent in the Lone Star State. He led a clean, honorable life, esteemed by his compeers at the bar and by the citizens of Texas.

While in the enjoyment of his full mental faculties he passed to the reward of the just, surrounded by the family. His bones were affectionately laid away in, and now commingle with the soil of his adopted State.

DeMaret of Grimes County, whom he married in 1876 survives him, together with four sons and one daughter, William C., DeMaret, Selwyn, Felix C. and Ellen T. Smith, all of Fort Worth. He leaves two sisters, Mrs. John W. McGregor of Lilesville, N. C. and Mrs. Willingham. Mrs. Willingham and her son Smith were present when the end came.

Following is a tribute to James Tillman Smith by the Colonel of his Regiment.

"The comrades in arms of James Tillman Smith, whose beautiful soul entered eternal rest Jan. 30, 1908, pause to render the tribute of love to his bright life, consecrated to duty and spent in arduous endeavors to attain success, professional, political and patriotic. The son of Col. Wm. C. Smith, long time conspicuous in our public service, the most influential man in the Senate of our General Assembly during the palpitating days when Grant thundered at the gates of Richmond. Born in Anson, Sept. 8, 1843, he quit Davidson College and plunged into the Army. All covered with blood in the famous lane at Sharpsburg, his right hand crushed with a nefarious bullet, escaping from the gates of hell, he was discharged from the army and took instructions at Chapel Hill; emigrated to Texas with kith and kin, He read law and practiced with success in Hillsboro, Texas. His success was immediate, he took legislative honors and impressed the state by his unselfishness and ardor. At one time his earn-

ings were recompensed \$10,000 a year. Along then his words at the bar were sharpened; his manners at the bar did not transgress decorum, as a rule. He married first a daughter of William Pegues, of Chesterfield, S. C. Then he won the heart of Miss DeMaret of French extraction.

A daughter and four sons survive this noble man and watch his repute. He fell a victim of paralysis, dying the fourth day after.

Verily a lofty soul is translated to heaven."

R. T. Bennett.

937 (See 584)

## MARY FRANCES SMITH MCGREGOR

Mary Frances Smith McGregor, born March 9, 1846, residence Lilesville, N. C., married John Williamson McGregor, born August 15, 1841, and who died October 25, 1909. She, the oldest daughter of Col. Wm. C. Smith and Mary Ann Tillman Smith, his wife, was educated in the neighboring schools before the Civil War, and during the war, to obtain higher branches and finishing touches as given by collegiate halls, she attended Greensboro Female College, the president of which was a distant relative by blood. From one end of the south to the other, and all through the middle, every man, woman and child, with few exceptions, gave heart, soul and body to the Confederate struggle for freedom and the God-given right to live under laws enacted by themselves as dedicated by their wisdom. The people as a unit were so absorbed, that the doors of our higher institutions were closed, as few were left to keep them open to give and supply instruction to the rising generation, the hope of the country. At Greensboro, Mary Frances Smith spent the years of 1859-60-61-62, graduating in 63. Deprived of the society and many advantages to which she had been accustomed, she possessed the intrinsic ability and polished manner that come naturally to those mingling with the best of the Southland, derived from generations of distinguished forefathers; only upon whom rests that ease, calmness and composure—that sangfroid, habitual by blood, of those to the manor born.

Tutored by her efficient mother, she became skilled in domestic arts and accomplishments. The close of the war left her poor in purse but rich in health, in womanly graces and cheerful willingness to abide the result of Appomattox, and to extract from life the best circumstances would allow.

Captain John Williamson McGregor, son of Duncan McGregor of Anson county, brave,



heroically brave, chivalric to a fault, won the heart of this kind, courteous and gracious maiden, and they were married December 15, 1858. No wedding tour to Niagara Falls, the Rocky Mountains nor to Havana, Cuba, for them. This extravagant, wasteful fashion was not then considered the acme of high life. Their sensible wedding tour was from her father's elegant home to the fine old mansion of her grandfather, James Smith, a distance of 300 or 400 yards. Here they placed their household goods, love, esteem, affection and devotion; here they reared a family of boys to be a credit to their country and themselves, and here the widow still resides, to counsel, direct, provide for and succor her children and grandchildren. Long may she live.

John W. McGregor was teaching school in South Carolina when the fife and drum sounded the valorous notes of daring to do, portending the impending strife. In the early spring of 1861 he closed his schools, and no one rallied more valiantly to the defense of his mother, the State of North Carolina, than did John W. McGregor who volunteered to shoulder a musket as a private in the ranks of the Anson Guards; the first organized band of troops to offer its services to the Governor of the State, not simply to abide the state line as many companies did, but to go wherever ordered in the line of duty. For four long years he participated in the hardships of a soldier's life: the common exhausting march, the common hunger, thirst, graybacks and other discomforts; the common dangers, the many dangers of the battle lines; the common touch of elbows that gave animation, strength and confidence when the war god had turned loose his furies. At the battle of the wilderness the 14th N. C. V. occupied part of the far flung line, the part known in history as "The Bloody Angle". The line was in the shape of a V and the 14th was a short distance from the apex. The minnie balls were flying thick and fast; those deadly whistling balls, with the indescribable sound, but once heard never to be forgotten. Word came down the line from Mississippi: "Send us ammunition, ours is exhausted". Volunteers were called for. Out stepped John W. McGregor and Charlie Cox of Anson County Guards for this dangerous service. Boxes of cartridges were fastened to a pole, shouldered and borne to General Harrison at the very apex of the angle. The timely arrival of the ammunition saved the day, due to the intrepid bravery of these two heroic boys. The escape of these men will become the more miraculous when you are informed that the enemy de-

livered such a constant, accurate, terrible fire, that their minnie balls bit in twain a red oak 22 inches in diameter, the stump of the tree being now preserved and exhibited in the Smithsonian Institute, Washington, D. C. The falling tree top reached within a few feet of that part of this Bloody Angle line occupied by the Anson Guards, known as Co. C or the color company. John McGregor was wounded in this battle. Charlie Cox became a Brigade Sharpshooter, was mortally wounded at Charleston in 1864 and died two days after the battle. For his bravery, dauntless, intrepid bravery, John W. McGregor was promoted to 1st Sergeant, skipping seven grades, and soon thereafter was promoted to a Commissioned officer with the rank of 3rd Lieutenant. On the morning of the 9th of April, 1865, ever memorable in the South, the 14th Reg. had been so reduced that every field officer, every Captain, every First, Second and Third Lieutenant had been disabled down to John W. McGregor of Company C, by whom the 14th Regiment was commanded, he being the ranking officer. Gallantly leading his regiment, driving the enemy in the last charge made on that fateful day, he was wounded and borne to the rear. A few minutes afterwards came the order: "Cease firing". Lee had surrendered. We could not, would not believe it and continued firing as we advanced, till the order was dinned into our ears. Appomattox passed into history. Recovering from his slight wound he made his way home defeated, but not humiliated by defeat. Still strong and able, he could adopt the language of Jehunneh, the Kenzite: "As yet I am as strong this day as I was in the day that Moses sent me: as my strength was then so is my strength now, for war, both to go out and to come in."

His father's plantation lay in the track of Sherman's bummers. That meant ruin, devastation, destruction. Not to be daunted, this brave soldier of "Marse Robert" set determinedly to work to rebuild and make fruitful the ravaged homestead. Marrying the girl of his heart, the honeymoon did not wane. The good people of his native county elected him High Sheriff of Anson, which office he held for two terms.

He took a leading part in politics and when the dire coalition of the Populist and Republican parties was inaugurated, he made speeches over the county exhorting the people to remain steadfast to Democracy and white supremacy—their only salvation from negro domination, rule and ruin. Indisposed for weeks, he was taken to Charlotte, lingered

and finally succumbed to the inevitable on the 25th of October, 1909, leaving an odor of a brave man, good soldier of the Confederacy and of a faithful life, spent in the service of his family, his country and his State.

The people mourned his departure to Paradise.

By Gen. W. A. Smith

938 (See 551)

### THOMAS JEFFERSON SMITH

Thomas Jefferson Smith, son of James Smith and Mary Gathings Smith, was born in Anson County, North Carolina, in 1810, was united with the Methodist Church early in life, and by marriage with Mary Washington Ledbetter in 1832. He became a citizen of Plantersville, Grimes County, Texas, in 1859, having come to Texas in 1858. He died in Mexia, Limestone County, Texas, Jan. 18, 1887, at the home of his son, Lewis Philip Smith.

His manly form was an index to the inner man, the vigor of his native intellect and noble instincts of his generous nature. Possessed of a strong will, true courage and independence of character, he was a man of decision and firmness, boldly expressing his convictions on any subject (secular or religious) where principle was involved and good could be accomplished. His individuality, by the timid was sometimes termed sternness, but his ideals were so high, it was difficult for him to be patient with smallness, or lack of principle in others. He was truly a Southern Gentleman, with all the chivalry of the Old South towards its women, courtly manners, broad-minded and honorable, generous and of noble nature, a devoted father and husband.

His sound discretion was exemplified in selecting a companion for life. His wife's family had intermarried for generations, thus retaining their property, and were opposed to her marriage to Thomas Smith for no other reason than that he was not related. Later when his small fortune grew larger, and he was most kind and generous to her kin, they became devoted to him and recognized his fine character and superior ability. Although reared in affluence, the blandishments of the world had no power over the mind and heart of his good wife. Pious, amiable, intelligent and prudent she was a helpmate to him; a blessing to her household. This most consecrated woman was called to her reward some years before his death. She had been the light and joy of his household for near half a century and when withdrawn, the world

would have been, indeed, dark and gloomy, but for the hope of a reunion,

"To part no more,  
But live and love in Heaven."

The first half of his life was spent as a planter in North Carolina, where all his children were born. At the age of forty-nine, after disposing of many of his slaves and as much of his property as was advisable, he left the rest in the care and management of his brother, William C. Smith. In the spring of 1858, he undertook the strenuous move to Texas with his family, his remaining slaves, and household effects, to establish a new home in a new country. The Civil War soon followed, and like so many others, he lost heavily. Still possessing enough of this world's goods, domestic bliss and the hope of Heaven, he occupied a prominent position in social life, and dispensed his hospitality with a liberal hand. Many a weary itinerant found in his home a resting place to recruit both mind and body for his sacred work. He was an exhorter and, living near the church, his home dispensed its hospitality each Sabbath and all felt free and welcome to come, but the circumstances did not justify extra work for the slaves on the Sabbath and all preparations were made the day before.

The loss of his good wife was a blow from which he never recovered, and missing her loving care and sympathy, his health rapidly failed. For six years the trial of his faith and patience was sorely tested by constant and severe suffering, but never did faith in the wisdom and mercy of God fail. By grace, he was enabled to say:

"My Father's hand prepares the cup,  
And what he wills is best."

Often in health he expressed a wish that nothing to stupify his senses should be given in his last illness. He desired with an unclouded intellect to bear testimony in a dying hour that the Christian Religion was sufficient to sustain and comfort him in his pilgrimage through the Valley of the Shadow of Death. In this he was favored and departed leaving a sure testimony that he had entered into "The rest that remaineth for the people of God." In his last moments, as often in the midst of his suffering, he quoted:

"Bless the Lord, O my soul,  
And forget not all his benefits."  
"Death came—but to him was no surprise, Who was found watching each day in prayer; Waiting and longing with burning lamp To meet the Bridegroom at his coming. No oil to buy, he entered in and found A bridal garment, and a seat on high."

939 (See 551)

MARY WASHINGTON LEDBETTER  
SMITH

Mary Washington Ledbetter Smith, the daughter of Henry W. and Ann Ledbetter, was born in Montgomery County, North Carolina, Oct. 28, 1808. On Dec. 21, 1837, she was married to Thomas Jefferson Smith, and with him came to Texas in the spring of 1858. When seven years old she united with the Methodist Episcopal Church South, and for sixty-six years was one of its most worthy members until death called her home. During all those years her pleasure and highest happiness were found in the discharge of duty to her fellow creatures, to her church and to her God.

She was one of twins and was left in early life an orphan. Having been placed in care of brothers and sisters who, with herself, experienced the sadness of a home without a mother, she was early inducted into the school of self-government and right well did she learn the difficult and important lesson, for all who knew her most intimately pay this high tribute to her memory. A more guarded and conscientious person in all the varied relations of life could not be found. Mary Ledbetter Smith's religious life was one in which the Christian graces all shone in their brightest fullness. Her Bible was her almost constant companion. No matter how busy, or what calls were made upon her time, three times each day she read her Bible, and it was her rule to read it through, at least, once a year. Her closet was her favorite retreat; there she spent many hours in communing with God, and every Friday she fasted, and thus she gathered strength for the battles of life. It was said of her, even by some who were the most critical, that Mary Ledbetter Smith was the best woman they ever knew.

One day, about four days before her death, when recovering from an especially severe attack, addressing her husband, she said: "Why didn't you let the little lamp go out? I am ready, and one little breeze would have wafted my spirit home." This is the comforting testimony she leaves: "It is well with my soul." When nearing the "Home of the Soul", she whispered three times in the ear of her sorrowing companion, "Almost home." At eleven o'clock on the night of July 14, 1881, her soul left the house of clay and went up to dwell in Heaven. The lamp of life faded as gently before the light of her glorified immortality as the stars fade before

the light of the rising sun. She fell asleep in the arms of Jesus, saved to all eternity.

940 (See 578-E)

## THOMAS SMITH

-578-E-Thomas Smith was a native of Anson County, North Carolina, where he was born March 3, 1839. He died at Brenham, Texas, Jan. 6, 1904, at the age of 64 years, and was buried by his wife in Prairie Lea Cemetery, Brenham, Texas.

Thomas Smith was educated in Anson County and resigned as cashier of a bank in Wadesboro, N. C., to answer the "Call of the South." He enlisted with a Company from Wadesboro, and under the gallant leadership of Stephen Dodson Ramseur, General Stonewall Jackson, and General Early, he fought in many important battles of the Civil War. His services continued through the entire period of the war, and he was with the noble and heroic Lee at Appomattox.

In 1865, Mr. Smith joined his parents, Philip and Ann E. Cheairs Smith, in Texas.

At Independence, Texas, July 24, 1867, he was married to Miss Mattie Randle, daughter of Dr. I. G. Randle. She was born June 13, 1849, and died at Chappell Hill, Texas, July 13, 1879. Of this union five children were born, the fourth, Ileana Marvin Smith, lived to maturity and at Brenham, Texas, was married March 31, 1903, to Robert E. L. Saner, Attorney at Law, Dallas, Texas. Mr. Saner was born Aug. 9, 1871, Hempstead County, Ark. He attended Vanderbilt University, Nashville, Tenn., and was graduated from the Law School of the University of Texas. Their only child, a daughter, Dorothy Lee Saner, was born Jan. 25, 1904, in Dallas, Texas. The Saners now reside at 4625 Bryan Street, Dallas, Texas.

Thomas Smith engaged in farming near Chappell Hill, Texas, for some years, but later he removed to Brenham, Texas, where he engaged in the mercantile business. He was one of Brenham's most honored citizens and one of her strongest influences for good. Thomas Smith was well known throughout this section of the State, was in business for a number of years and acquired considerable wealth. He was modest and retiring in disposition, even shunning publicity. He was always to be found on the side of truth and right and with the courage of his convictions, helping to sustain those causes and measures that make for the lasting good of a community. Not only thoroughly and scrupulously honest in business, but even generously so,

his name will be remembered with praises by every one of those with whom he dealt, who were less fortunate than himself in a matter of worldly possessions. His good deeds were many, and always unostentatiously, even secretly, accomplished. One of the few who never let the left hand know what the right hand did for the unfortunate, but whose right hand was always busy.

The last few years of his life, he was debarr'd by ill health from the activities of life, but he did not lose sympathy for his kind, and every worthy cause claimed his support. Eminently just, upright and true, while manly and firm in word and deed, he was a man whose removal meant irreparable loss to the community in which he had lived. He was a member of the Methodist Church, and in his daily life he lived up to the best precepts of mankind. He lived the life of a simple man without display of his manifold virtues. But those who knew him best recognized them in him. He was sincerely conscientious throughout life, and humbly and deeply religious. His was the heart of a child, his the head of a statesman. Indelibly he impressed his personality upon his associates, upon the community in which he lived.

Thomas Smith withdrew from active business and for a number of years lived a very quiet and secluded life at his home in Brenham. He was a sufferer for several years, and his death was due to heart failure. Mr. Smith abhorred debts and never permitted himself to make them. At the close of his life, in settling up his affairs, it was learned that every bill had been paid, even to the doctor, who when he paid his last call, was handed his fee by Mr. Smith, before he lapsed into unconsciousness.

941 (See 554)

#### JAMES LEDBETTER SMITH

James Ledbetter Smith was born October 15, 1840, in Anson County, North Carolina, died May 13, 1905, at his residence in Mexia, Limestone County, Texas, and was buried in that city.

He came to Texas in 1856 but returned to North Carolina to complete his education at Chapel Hill. He deserted the school room when twenty years of age to answer the call of the South. Although at first not a strict believer in secession, he became one of the strongest advocates of Southern principles, and in 1861, enlisted in the Army of the Confederacy and fought through all the

Civil War as a private, although offered a commission more than once. He was a member of Company C, 14th North Carolina Regiment, Ramseur's Brigade in the Army of Gen. Robert E. Lee. He was wounded twice in action. He was captured, and during his imprisonment, contracted typhoid fever. Because of his emaciated condition from this disease, he was granted a furlough and returned to his relatives such a wreck, they scarcely were able to recognize him. Regaining his strength, he returned to his command where he remained until the close of the war. He was with General Lee when he surrendered at Appomattox Court House, April 9, 1865. After the war he went directly to Texas with his sister, Sallie Eliza Smith, and his cousins, Mollie Meacham, Thomas and Tillman Smith. In 1868 he embarked in the mercantile business with his brother, Lewis Philip Smith, in the village of Cotton Gin, Freestone County, Texas, and remained there until 1879.

In 1868 he was married to Miss Eugenia Womack, who was born July 2, 1851, at Montgomery, Texas. Of this union, seven children were born, five sons and two daughters, all of whom, including his wife, survive him, with the exception of one son who died in infancy.

In 1879 he moved his family to Mexia, Limestone County, Texas, where he and his brother engaged in the mercantile business under the firm name of J. L. & L. P. Smith. This business grew to be one of the most substantial concerns in that part of the State. In 1882 J. L. Smith, L. P. Smith and Judge D. M. Prendergrast organized the banking firm of Prendergrast, Smith & Co. This venture was a marked success and the business is now operating under its first title and ranks as one of the leading State banks of Texas, being managed by the sons of J. L. Smith and his brother-in-law, Mr. Jack Womack.

James Ledbetter Smith was a lifelong member of the Methodist Episcopal Church, South; a staunch supporter of all moral issues and one of the first to raise his voice in the cause of prohibition in Texas. He was a man of extensive acquaintance and enjoyed the confidence of those with whom he had enterprises, and always anxious to help those in want or distress. He was possessed of a keen sense of humor, his ready wit and ability to tell a good story made him a most interesting entertainer.

Anonymous.

942 (See 556)

## LEWIS PHILIP SMITH

-551-D-Lewis Philip Smith was a citizen of Mexia, Texas, almost from the time the town was laid off and seldom has any community suffered more deeply in the loss of one of its members, than Mexia in his death at his home, Oct. 24, 1886. He was born in Anson County, North Carolina, Jan. 3, 1847, becoming a citizen of Texas in 1858.

Like his brother, James Ledbetter, and his sister, Sallie Eliza, he was sent to North Carolina to be educated, and while there the Civil War began. He wanted to do his bit for the South and was restless in school and finally, no longer able to resist the "Call of the South," he ran away from the school room, a boy of fifteen, and enlisted with the Confederacy. He was terribly disappointed because the war ended so soon after he had enlisted.

Lewis Philip Smith was successful in every business enterprise in which he engaged, beginning in 1868 in Cotton Gin, Freestone County, Texas, where he and his brother, James Ledbetter Smith, were in the mercantile business for ten years. Later, both brothers removed to Mexia, Limestone County, Texas, and continued their mercantile business under the firm name of J. L. & L. P. Smith. Also, they organized the first Bank in Mexia, and Lewis Philip Smith continued in these businesses until his death in 1886. He had large land interests in Mexia and its surrounding country.

At Plantersville, Grimes County, Texas, he was married June 29, 1869, to Aurelia Walton, who was born July 18, 1851, and died Aug. 31, 1873, leaving two small children: Mary Walton, born Sept. 12, 1870, and a son, Thomas Frank Smith, born Feb. 12, 1873.

After the death of his first wife, Lewis Philip Smith, on Sept. 28, 1876, married Mattie Beeson, born Jan. 24, 1855, and of this union, four children were born: Emma Aurelia, born Feb. 24, 1878; Sallie Eugenia, born Feb. 15, 1880; Lewis Philip Jr., born Oct. 28, 1883, and died Dec. 7, 1884; Luella Ross, born June 7, 1885, died July 21, 1904. Both were buried in Mexia, Texas.

Lewis Philip Smith was universally esteemed, not alone for his high Christian character, but for his charm of manner and the pleasant and generous disposition that gave him the friendship of all, regardless of race, sex or color. He died at the early age of thirty-nine, in the prime of manhood, from an attack of appendicitis. At the hour of his funeral all business houses were closed

as a mark of respect and love to the man who had done so much for his community, and who had lived his life so nobly.

943 (See 558)

## SALLIE ELIZA SMITH GIBBS

Sallie Eliza Smith Gibbs, second daughter of Thomas Jefferson Smith and Mary Washington Ledbetter Smith, was born October 18, 1844, in Anson County, North Carolina. She came to Texas in the spring of 1858, but in order to complete her education, she returned to North Carolina and attended school in Ashville and Greensboro. She graduated at Greensboro during the Civil War and was valedictorian of her class. The class manifested their patriotism by singing "The Homespun Dress", wearing homespun dresses and using turkey tail fans. She spent the remaining time, until the close of the war made it possible for her to return to Texas, in the home of her father's brother, William C. Smith.

Thomas Jefferson Smith brought his family to Texas from North Carolina by private conveyance. It took six months for the journey. His daughters and wife rode in a handsome, old fashioned closed carriage or coach with silk brocades, silver ornaments and steps that lowered when needed. In a Rock-a-way rode the younger boys with their father. The oldest son, Jim, often on horse back rode ahead to locate the camp and direct the negroes in the preparations for the night. After the Rock-a-way followed wagons, each with a black mammy to care for the smaller children of the negro slaves. The slaves who were grown, walked. The household effects, carried in wagons, brought up the rear.

At night by the time the carriages arrived, the negroes had made camp. In the ladies' tent, a carpet was spread and fresh boughs placed on which feather beds were laid to give the much needed rest and comfort for the night.

Sallie E. Smith had hardly reached Texas before she started back to North Carolina to attend school. Her father, Thomas J. Smith, accompanied her on this trip, part of which was made by water from Galveston, a mode of travel always enjoyed by her.

During the Civil War her father had great difficulty in sending money to his daughter, as he never knew what would be the fate of his messenger.

Sallie E. Smith's second trip to Texas, like the first, was made by private conveyance, but under much more trying circumstances.



Jim L. served under Stonewall Jackson until Jackson was killed and then under Gen. Lee until the surrender at Appomattox Court House. Jim L. was discharged after the surrender of Lee. He went by North Carolina to see his sister before leaving for Texas, his idea being to leave her there until a comfortable trip could be arranged, but she was determined to go with him, no matter how great the difficulties were and it was well she so decided for it might have been months before she could have had another chance to make the trip. They had not heard from Texas for a long time and were not even sure the members of the family were alive. It was agreed that Cousin Mollie Meacham, Sallie Smith, Jim L., Tom and Tillman Smith should make the trip together. Next morning the boys appeared with two Confederate horses and an old mule, an old carriage, a saddle and some mended harness. The mule had U. S. A. branded on him. It was agreed that Jim L. should be outrider and blaze the trail. He rode one horse, leaving the other horse and mule for the carriage. Although they preferred not calling attention to the brand on the mule, evidently he had a different idea, as he never failed to announce their arrival in each village by loud braying. Their course was through a part of the country laid waste by Sherman's Army. Supplies were very scarce, and even though they were willing to pay, the people feared to part with the food. However, the soldier boys in the party were accustomed to foraging and did not fail to keep them well supplied. The girls were careful to ask no questions. Their one thought was to reach Texas, and not to complain at any difficulties that might arise. The last day seemed interminable. Finally they drove up to the home of Thomas Jefferson Smith. Sallie E. said she would never forget the tightness in her throat while she waited to hear if her loved ones were all alive. She was told of the marriage of her only sister, which had taken place months before. She said she had never seen a cleaner, sweeter spot than her Texas home, with its gleaming white floors, bare but spotless. Her mother, always noted for her neat housekeeping, appeared at her best in a home so attractive to the dusty travelers. To have found a carpeted floor would have been a disgrace. The Confederacy, cut off from the factories of the North by secession, used carpets for horse blankets, or stretchers. Table cloths, napkins and linen sheets were conspicuous by their absence, as all of these had been converted into bandages for the wounded.

Sanford Gibbs, already having heard so much of the many virtues possessed by Sallie E. Smith, was prepared to fall in love with her before she returned, and when they met he lost no time in winning her love, and in six months she again left her father's house, but this time for her own.

At Plantersville, Texas, on January 31, 1866, at her parent's home, she was married to Sanford Gibbs and she came to Huntsville, her future home, the same day. Here, as a bride, her beauty was much admired. Upon reaching her new home, Mrs. Gibbs at once assumed her church duties. She esteemed it a privilege to continue the custom of the Gibbs family of supplying the communion, and since her death this is continued by her daughter, Alla Gibbs Robinson.

One friend, when asked by her daughter if it was possible to always be truthful and at the same time polite, was told: "Yes, my daughter, Mrs. Gibbs is a living example of one who never fails in courtesy and who is absolutely truthful."

Although Sanford Gibbs was a banker and merchant and a prosperous man, his wife not only gave of her means, but gave herself. Many incidents of this came to the knowledge of her children only after her death. One I recall of a friend who told me that she would never forget Mrs. Gibbs and what her goodness had meant to her, as well as to numerous others.

It was in the days before there were telephones, trained nurses and undertakers, and though Mrs. Gibbs had six small children and the daughter and niece of Mr. Gibbs in her home, she was the one who nursed the sick. One day Mrs. Gibbs and her friend were calling. The bell was answered by the mistress herself, who was then a young married woman. When she saw her guests, she exclaimed: "Oh, Mrs. Gibbs, do not come in, both of you have small children at home and mine have just died with diphtheria." Mrs. Gibbs began drawing off her gloves as she asked: "Who is with you?" "I am all alone and have been for three days, no one dared come near after they learned the child's trouble." By this time her gloves were off and best clothes forgotten. She was heating water on the old fashioned stove. The friend said, "Mrs. Gibbs and Mrs. Oliphant did not leave until my child was shrouded and my house in order, and the quiet funeral over. They had not heard of my child's illness, but Mrs. Gibbs walked right in without hesitation. These two were the only friends who dared to come near me in this, my first great sorrow. I shall never forget. Mine was only

one of many cases of sorrow and trouble where Mrs. Gibbs came to the rescue."

Blessed with children, she made her home a delightful place for them. Where there was loving indulgence, there was also gentle restraint, patient firmness and fixedness of principle and ever watchfulness of their welfare. She saw to it that each of them was not only a member of the church but also an active worker therein. She was truly a wonderful mother.

In her business ability, she was almost uncanny, her judgment, quick and sure. Intuitively, she seemed to arrive at the right conclusion. Mr. Gibbs had great confidence in his wife's advice, which he sought privately, and few knew her part in his business transactions. Their eldest son inherited his father's business responsibilities at nineteen. It was his mother who encouraged and helped her son to succeed. The dignity and respect her children gave to their father, their mother now demanded for this nineteen year old brother. At times he met with bad investments and great discouragements, but his mother knew how to handle the situation, and as he gained experience, the estate steadily grew in value and the family, in loyalty and love.

She was known and loved in the homes of people and her thoughtfulness of those about her knew no bounds. She was never ostentatious, always quiet, unassuming. Many a troubled soul has been able to lift its burden and start again through her sympathy. Many a young man and many a young woman owe the beginning of a successful career to her kindly interest.

Mrs. Gibbs was broad minded, always well informed in public affairs and deeply patriotic. For nearly twenty-five years she was in feeble health but she would never permit her own discomfort to lessen her interest in life, or lower the measure of her usefulness.

To Mrs. Gibbs was known the reality of the word Friendship. No consideration of wealth, rich apparel or high position affected her. In the time of need she never failed. Her heart, her home, her very self were at the service of others. In her presence every one was secure against misjudgment, for, to Mrs. Gibbs, life meant truth, service and the right to be happy. Not merely content to admit this as the noble plan, she went further and lived it day by day and proved it true to others.

944 (See 558)

#### SANDFORD ST. JOHN GIBBS

Sandford St. John Gibbs was born in Union District, South Carolina, July 7th, 1819, and died September 30, 1886 at Huntsville, Texas. He was the son of Hiram Gibbs and Sara Ann Wilbourn Gibbs. After completing the educational advantages afforded by his native district, he attended Washington College, East Tennessee, and completed his education at Greenville, Green County, Tenn.

After a visit in his father's home at Pleasant Mount Post Office, Panola County, Miss., he commenced business at the age of twenty-one with his brother, Jasper Gibbs, at Pottersville, South Carolina, where he lived three years.

His father, Hiram Gibbs, died Sept. 9, 1844. Sandford Gibbs remained in Miss. for two years, settling up the Hiram Gibbs estate. He arrived at Huntsville, Texas, Tuesday, Feb. 10, 1846, where he entered the mercantile and banking business with his brother, Thomas Gibbs. On March 14, 1855, Sandford Gibbs married Mary Wilmoth Gary at Montgomery, Texas. Of this union there were born three children, two of whom died in infancy and the third, Alice Lena Gibbs, survived her mother. Mary Wilmoth Gary died in Huntsville, Texas, Feb. 10, 1863.

Sandford Gibbs served with the rank of Captain with a creditable record throughout the Civil War.

On Wednesday morning at five-thirty o'clock, Jan. 31, 1866, he was married to Sallie Eliza Smith at her parents' home. They left at six-thirty, driving in a buggy (a rare possession in that part of the country) and reached Huntsville, a distance of forty miles, at three-thirty that same afternoon. That evening at the home of his brother, Thomas Gibbs, an old fashioned wedding supper was given in their honor, to which the elite of the community was invited. Of this union, seven children were born.

Sandford Gibbs bought Texas land when it was cheap, which he was able to hold and while his fortune was small according to present day standards, in that time and place, his thousands were counted rich by his neighbors. His private bank was later converted by his sons into a National Bank, but some depositors preferred to keep their holdings in the brother's safe rather than in the Bank.

He was revered and beloved at home, looked upon as indispensable in the church, and universally esteemed as an upright, useful citizen and consistent Christian. He seemed

to possess a gift for training young men for future business careers. With discretion, he used his means frequently in acts of charity, some known but more unknown to the world.

His unobtrusive but controlling influence was constantly felt while living, always on the right side and in the right direction. His eminent success in business, conducted in accordance with the golden rule, is a beacon light, to encourage and guide the young man starting life with moderate means, giving assurance that success may be secured without resorting to a single trick in trade, or engaging in any questionable enterprise.

Amid almost superhuman exertion demanded by his extensive transactions, he found time to cherish and cultivate the heart's best affections in his devotions and in his domestic and social relations. Sustained by an inward consciousness of integrity, he was ever cheerful and mirthful on becoming occasions. A Roman pencil has drawn his portrait as a man:

"Who with wise discrimination knows  
What to his God, himself,  
His household and the world—he owes."

945 (See 558-A)

#### WILBOURN SMITH GIBBS

Wilbourn Smith Gibbs, eldest son of Sandford Gibbs and Sallie Eliza Smith Gibbs, was born November 12, 1866. Springing from old pioneer stock and a long line of honorable, upright men and women, he possessed the virtues and ability that raised him to eminence early in life. He bore the maiden names of both of his grandmothers.

When he was eleven months old he was stricken with yellow fever but recovered from this then dread disease. He and his sister Alla were baptized at the home of their grandmother and grandfather in Plantersville, Texas, by their uncle, Rev. Thomas W. Blake, on the fourth of October, 1868.

His education was commenced at a private school and continued at Austin College and the Sam Houston Normal Institute. Like most boys, he reached an age when he was ready to leave school and go to work, in spite of his father's advice to the contrary. A wise father gave him real work, placing him on a farm where he was compelled to remain until his crop was made and gathered, although long before this he had gained his own consent to continue his education.

The following term he entered Southwestern University. Before he was graduated a serious illness made it necessary for him to

return home and his association with his father, who died six months later, seemed providential, as the management of the estate, which consisted of banking interests, large real estate holdings and a mercantile business, fell upon his shoulders at the early age of nineteen, which he managed with such marked success as to inspire the utmost confidence in his business ability.

A few years after his father's death, he was joined in the business by his brother, Thomas Clifton Gibbs, whose fine business judgment was not only an asset but a comfort in the sharing of the responsibility. Though there were three brothers and three sisters, there was no jarring or family discord over property. That harmony and co-operation prevailed for thirty-five years which might have been expected between the well born and well reared. In the year 1889, the private bank was changed into a National bank under the name of Gibbs National Bank of which he was elected president. Later the S. Gibbs, Real Estate, Loans and Investments, as well as the mercantile business, was changed to Gibbs Brothers and Co., real estate and investments, the firm being composed of W. S. Gibbs, T. C. Gibbs, J. P. Gibbs, H. Y. Robinson, Alla G. Robinson, O. L. Norsworthy, Sandford G. Norsworthy, H. H. Hawlet and Luteola G. Hawley.

On June 26, 1900, at the First Methodist Church, Jackson, Mississippi, he was married, by Bishop Charles B. Galloway, to Miss Anne Nugent, the second daughter of Colonel William Lewis Nugent and Aimee Webb Nugent. Of this union, three sons were born, the first two died in infancy but the third son, Wilbourn Sandford Gibbs, born February 28, 1909, survives. Wilbourn Sandford is a brunette type, handsome and manly, a strong character, a close observer, thoughtful, well developed mentally and physically. The boy gives great promise for the future. His maternal grandfather was one of the foremost lawyers in the South, prominent in all good works and descended from a line of big lawyers and his maternal grandmother's family were descended from the Couperly family of Paris, France, and the Webb family of Virginia.

Wilbourn Smith Gibbs was a member of all local Masonic bodies, was a Shriner, and 32nd degree Mason, belonging to the El Mina Temple of Galveston, Texas. In him the lodge lost a member, who, holding always to Christian principles of conscience and duty, walked before his brothers and the world a just and upright Mason. He was a member of the Kappa Alpha Fraternity.

Many young people were indebted to his generous aid in their struggle for an education, not only in the use of his own money but in his management of loan funds. His policy was never to let the right hand know what the left hand did and many instances of his charity were not known, even to his family, until after his death. He was a very generous man. He often said that the felt his property was a personal trust, granted by God to his keeping for the betterment of humanity, and not for personal ease or vanity.

He loved all men and was ever ready to help any one who needed him. He had great sympathy for minors and widows, the uneducated and those who were victims of the technicalities of the law and proved himself their friend. Truly it could be said of him, "Write me as one who loves his fellow man". When he answered the question, "Is it right?" that answer became his guide and nothing could move him from his position.

After war was declared with Germany in 1917, and the Treasury Department of the United States Government began a National campaign for the sale of War Savings Stamps, he was called upon by the government to act as Chairman of Walker County, Texas. Feeling the long years of heavy responsibility were telling on his health, and already burdened to the limit of time and strength, yet at the appeal, "Your Country needs you", he could not resist and no one was more patriotic or conscientious in this work. He said his last dollar, as well as himself, was at the service of the government. He served for more than a year and until after the Armistice was signed.

Having carried his burdens so conscientiously and so long, rest was given him on the 17th of September, 1921.

He was devoted to his family, an affectionate husband, a wise father, a wonderful son and brother. His loving companionship, his sweet smile, his wise counsel will be sadly missed.

He was charitable in his judgment, just in his dealings, one whom any one might feel proud to call friend. A splendid example of modest, unobtrusive but efficient citizenship.

In the passing of W. S. Gibbs, the Church lost one, who, from his early childhood, was a devoted, active, loyal, sympathetic and worthy member. To him the Church, speaking not in a denominational sense, but of the broad, universal Church of God, was the most vital and potential institution in the world. In the life of this man of large affairs, the Church was the biggest thing. He gave much thought to the problems of the Kingdom

and constantly "Grew in grace and in the knowledge of the truth." Close observation was not required to see his constant growth, both in depth and broadness, as the years went on. As he approached the end, out of the fulness of faith and experience he said to his brother: "Love is all that counts; it is the only thing worth while."

As his body lay in state in the Methodist Church, he loved so well, surrounded by flowers, the rays of the western sun centered on the casket, like a special benediction and one could almost hear a voice saying: "Well done, thou good and faithful servant."

946 (See 558-B)

#### MARY ALLA GIBBS ROBINSON

Mary Alla Gibbs Robinson, eldest daughter of Sandford Gibbs and Sallie Smith Gibbs, was born August 11, 1868, at Huntsville, Texas.

In 1883 Mary Alla and Sarah Sandford Gibbs were received into the Methodist Church by Bishop H. M. Dubose. The eldest brother in his effort to say "Sister Alla", said "Star", and she was ever afterwards "Star" to her brothers and sisters.

She was educated at the Huntsville Schools, Waco Female College and Montgomery Female College, Virginia, and a selected course in Salem, North Carolina, where she was graduated in music. Later she took a special course in music and art in Nashville, Tenn.

On October 26, 1897, she was married to Henderson Yoakum Robinson, at the home of her mother, Mrs. Sandford Gibbs. H. Y. Robinson is the son of Col. William Thomas Robinson and Mary Yoakum, who was the daughter of Col. Henderson Yoakum, the author of Yoakum's History of Texas.

Mary Alla Gibbs Robinson is a woman of fine judgment, keen intellect, a splendid Christian character, a good and kind and loving sister and every one considers her an unusually dependable woman.

To Alla Gibbs Robinson and Henderson Yoakum Robinson were born two sons, Wilbourn Thomas, born in 1898, and Henderson Yoakum, born Oct. 28, 1904.

Wilbourn is a wonderful physical specimen, gifted with an unusual power of concentration and quickness of intellect. The year before his graduation from the Huntsville school, he went with his uncle and aunt, Dr. and Mrs. O. L. Norsworthy, to California and for a two year tour around the world. At Honolulu, the rumor of the great World War was heard, and this being confirmed on reach-

ing Yokohama, the tour was confined to the Orient. On his return through California in 1915, he visited the World's Fair at San Francisco, seeing something of the Western part of our country.

He spent one year at the Sam Houston Normal, two years at Rice Institute, Houston, Texas, and then two years at Princeton University, New Jersey, where he was graduated with A. B. degree at the age of twenty-two. The summer previous to his graduation, he went with the Princeton boys for the games at Oxford, England, and afterwards toured the Continent. Since June 1921, he has been located at Huntsville, Texas. He is a member of the Kappa Alpha Fraternity, is a K. P. and Knight Templar.

Herndon Yoakum, six years younger than his brother, is a prime favorite with the boys, being a good leader. His keen sense of justice, his quiet but firm stand for the right, together with an unusually sweet, modest nature commands the respect, confidence and love of those who know him. He plays the cornet and is a member of the Normal Orchestra and band. As a young boy, he was a regular question box, and was fond of being read to, but his interest in the story did not make him lose sight of the words and each new word demanded a pause until its meaning was clear, consequently his vocabulary has always been an occasion for comment by his teachers. He has the shoulders of an athlete and is very strong, although he has had no special training until this year. He has been graduated from High School and is now, in 1922, a student at the Sam Houston Normal Institute.

Henderson Yoakum Robinson received his early business training under Sandford Gibbs, of whose family he was then practically a member, because of the close friendship between him and Wilbourn Smith Gibbs. He afterwards became a hardware merchant, but later sold this business. In the conversion of the S. Gibbs business to Gibbs Brothers & Company, Mr. Robinson assumed the management of the mercantile branch of this organization.

Alla Gibbs Robinson was organist at the Methodist Church all during her young ladyhood, and she has also been a teacher in the Sunday School since early girlhood.

947 (See 578-E)

#### THOMAS CLIFTON GIBBS

On the seventh of February, 1870, was born to Sandford Gibbs and Sallie Smith Gibbs their second son, Thomas Clifton

Gibbs. When a year and a half old, he was baptized at the Methodist Church, Huntsville, Texas, by Bishop Marvin.

He was always fond of reading and possessed a strong mind and an unusual memory and good flow of language. His gift of story telling, with his fine memory, has ever made him a pleasant addition to a party. While at Southwestern University, he became a member of the K. A. Fraternity and was distinguished in all his subjects.

He was married September 27, 1893, to Miss Jamesetta Hunt, daughter of Judge Thomas M. Hunt and Adelaide Virginia Wilson Hunt of Caldwell, Texas, and granddaughter of Gov. Hunt of Kentucky, the ceremony being performed by Bishop E. D. Mouzon. After a visit to the World's Fair at Chicago and other Eastern points, they returned to Huntsville, Texas, their future home.

Of this union, the eldest, a son, Thomas Clifton Gibbs Jr., died in infancy. Four daughters brightened the home. Pauline was educated at the Huntsville Public School, the Sam Houston Normal and Ward-Belmont, Nashville, Tenn. She is a well balanced young woman, with good judgment and the strength of character to promptly and forcibly express her views on the side of right. She was married to Jesse Vernon Butler, November 19, 1919. Mr. Butler is a graduate of the Texas A. & M. in Civil Engineering and served with the rank of Captain in the 23rd Engineers in France during the great World War. He is Post Commander of the American Legion in Huntsville. Their little daughter, born November 24, 1921, bears her mother's name, Pauline. At the present time, Mr. Butler and his family are with Mrs. Butler's parents while he is engaged in building a new railroad out of Huntsville.

After finishing her school work in her home town, Cecile, the second daughter, spent three years at Ward-Belmont College, Nashville, Tenn., and was graduated in June, 1919. She is a musician; her playing and singing giving pleasure on many occasions. Her dainty physique and charm of manner have won for her the title of "Little Lady" from those who know and love her.

Edith, a handsome brunette, is very ambitious and, since being graduated from Dana Hall, Wellesley, Mass., is continuing her good work, as well as music, at Pine Manor, Wellesley, Mass.

Anne Kathleen is young but remarkably bright and promising as a student and musician.



## Just A Girl

Many a throne has had to fall

For a girl,

Just a girl;

Many a king has had to crawl

For a girl,

Just a girl;

When a hero goes to war

He may battle for the right,

But 'tis likelier by far

That he sallies forth to fight

For a girl,

Just a girl.

When the doctor turns to say

"It's a girl,

Just a girl"

Papa murmurs with dismay:

"What, a girl,

Just a girl?"

Ah, but why the sadness there,

Why the bitterness displayed?

Some day some strong man will swear

That the great round world was made

For a girl,

Just that girl.

Why did Adam take the bite?

For a girl,

Just a girl.

Why was Troy swept out of sight?

For a girl,

Just a girl.

Oh, would Heaven still be bright,

And would any good man care,

To achieve it if he might

Never claim forever there

Just a girl,

Glorious girl?

Thomas Clifton Gibbs has ever been a loyal friend and devoted, indulgent husband and father and a loyal brother and son. He served Huntsville as Mayor for four years, declining another term in office, during which time a marked advance was made in civic improvements. He won for himself the title of "The Concrete Mayor", because during his administration concrete sidewalks and bridges were constructed in Huntsville for the first time. He assisted worthy young students in the completion of their education.

The Methodist Church, of which Mr. Gibbs has been a steward and trustee for many years, burned and, knowing his unusual qualification he was appointed chairman of the building committee for the new church. He filled this position with credit to himself, and gratification to the church members, who gave expression to their appreciation of his services, by appointing a committee to draft resolutions expressing appreciation and re-

questing his name, as chairman of the building committee, be placed on the corner stone of the church. These resolutions were read at the dedication services by Bishop Ainsworth, with added words of commendation.

Since his school days, Thomas Gibbs has assisted his brother, Wilbourn Smith Gibbs, in the management of the family estate, and since his brother's death, the business has been managed by him, assisted by his younger brother, James Philip Gibbs.

For a number of years he has been a director of the Gibbs National Bank, and at the death of his older brother, W. S. Gibbs, he succeeded him as president.

T. C. Gibbs is also president of the Huntsville Electric Light and Power Co. and the Huntsville Cotton Oil Co., first vice-president of the Trinity Valley Southern R. R. Co. and interested in various other commercial enterprises.

## 948 (See 558-E)

## DR. JAMES PHILIP GIBBS

Dr. James Philip Gibbs, the third son of Mr. Sanford Gibbs and Mrs. Sallie Smith Gibbs, was born April 3, 1875. In the summer of 1883, he was baptized by Bishop H. M. Dubose.

At Huntsville Public School he received the General Excellence Medal and commenced his University course at Southwestern University, Georgetown, Texas, at the age of fifteen. Here he took his A. M. degree and was graduated with honor at the age of nineteen, being the youngest in his class. He was always ambitious and a fine student. The following year was spent at Leland Stanford Jr. University, Palo Alto, California, where he specialized in chemistry, preparatory to the study of medicine. Later he studied medicine at the College of Physicians and Surgeons, the medical department of Columbia University, New York City. There his grades entitled him to take an examination, participated in by thousands of students from various medical schools in the East. In this he won one of the seven internships. He practiced two years in the hospitals of New York City. Being especially interested in the diseases of children, he took courses at the Holt Hospital for children, New York City.

A year of study at Berlin, Germany, and Vienna, Austria, was followed by a tour of Europe, after which Dr. Gibbs returned to his home in Huntsville for a visit, before locating in Houston, Texas, to practice his profession.

His elegance and grace of manner reveal his historic ancestry through his father, from the French Huguenots.

In 1905 he was married to Miss Mary Brent McAshen, the only daughter of Mr. and Mrs. J. E. McAshen, Houston, Texas. Of this union, three children were born, who from their maternal ancestors are descended from a long line of prominent men, among some of whom can be named: their great-grandfather, Dr. H. H. Smith, prominent as an educator; their great-uncle, Ex-Governor Hoke Smith of Atlanta, Ga., now United States Senator; and their grandfather, Mr. J. E. McAshen, organizer of the South Texas National Bank and prominent in social, business, educational and religious circles of Houston.

The oldest child, Virginia Sandford Gibbs, is wonderfully gifted in music. Her school record is almost perfect, and her beautiful, gracious manners suggest those of a young lady.

Sarah Elizabeth, the second daughter, is unusually developed, both mentally and physically. She is also an untiring worker and nothing short of perfection will satisfy her ambition.

The youngest, James Philip Jr., as a baby with wonderful golden curls, very fair skin, dark blue eyes, red cheeks and lips, was a veritable cherub. Now as a small boy, he is extremely obedient and sweet tempered.

Dr. Gibbs was elected a charter member of the Thalian Club in Houston and a charter member of the University Club which succeeded the Thalian. He retains his membership in the University Club as a non-resident member. He was elected President of the Harris County Medical Society for the year 1906. He has been a member of the Kappa Alpha Fraternity since he entered preparatory school.

When the United States entered the great World War, although beyond the age limit, Dr. Gibbs relinquished a choice practice in Houston, Texas, and volunteered. He was appointed Medical Examiner for Texas physicians, which office he filled from September, 1917 until June, 1918, without remuneration. Feeling that duty called for a greater sacrifice, he again volunteered for foreign service, and two weeks after the loss of his sainted mother, he was ordered to Camp Greenleaf, Ft. Oglethorpe, Ga., to take a preliminary course in military training. He was later placed in command of Infirmary No. 1 of the Central Officers Training School, Field Artillery, Camp Zachary Taylor, Louisville, Kentucky. While there he was sent to West Point, Ky.,

as Chief Medical Officer of Artillery Camp. He was known in War Records as Captain James P. Gibbs, the army preferring to use the first name.

Dr. Gibbs left the United States early in September and sailed for France, where he had no news from his loved ones until a cable reached him in January. He saw foreign service for ten months at Camp Lusitania, St. Nazaire; Camp Hospital 91, La Baule; Camp Guthrie, A. P. O. 701, near Montoir.

On his first visit to Huntsville, soon after his honorable discharge from the Army, he realized his brother Wilbourn's health was failing and his strength was being overtaxed, so he gave up his profession and moved his family to Huntsville, Texas, in order that he might assist in postponing the end, by his professional services and the sharing of business responsibilities. He has been a member of the American Legion Post in Huntsville since its organization, in fact, he was very active in its organization. He has repeatedly been offered the position of Commander but has always declined.

He is an active member of the firm of Gibbs Brothers & Company, and since his brother, Thomas Gibbs, was elected to the Presidency of the Gibbs National Bank, he has succeeded him as a Director in the Bank.

Dr. Gibbs is also treasurer of the Trinity Valley Southern Railroad Co. and chairman of the board of trustees of the First Methodist Church.

949 (See 538-F)

## LUTEOLA GIBBS HAWLEY

Luteola, sixth child of Sandford Gibbs and Sallie Smith Gibbs, was born June 10, 1878, at Huntsville, Texas. In 1895, she and her brother, Philip, were baptized by Bishop H. M. Dubose at the Methodist Church, Huntsville, Texas. She was received into full membership in 1894 by Bishop Seth Ward.

Luteola Gibbs, after finishing at the Huntsville School, took her degree at the North Texas Female College. There she won the school medal in mathematics. A post graduate course at Dr. Price's, Nashville, Tenn., was followed by travel in the United States, Old Mexico and Canada. Then a selected course at Randolph Macon Woman's College, Lynchburg, Virginia, followed by a tour of Europe, which included the Pan-American Exposition, Paris, France, and the Passion Play at Oberammergau.

On Nov. 18, 1905, at the home of her mother, Mrs. Sandford Gibbs, Bishop W. W. Duncan united in marriage Luteola Gibbs and Henry

Houston Hawley, son of Philip Livingston Hawley, a descendant of Philip Livingston of New York, one of the signers of the Declaration of Independence, and Sarah Jane Roberts, a descendant of Gen. Seth Warner of Revolutionary fame. Henry Houston Hawley was born in Walla Walla, Washington, but the greater part of his boyhood was spent in China, where he was educated. When nineteen years old he moved to Texas. He located in Dallas in 1845, and later he organized the firm of H. H. Hawley & Company, of which he is president. This company is one of the largest Wholesale Jewelers Supply Houses in the United States and the largest in the Southwest, located at Dallas and Oklahoma City.

Of this union, two children were born: Henry Houston Hawley Jr., born July 14, 1896; and Sarah Alla Hawley, born March 31, 1898. Henry Jr. is a splendid lot of fifteen, manly and chivalrous. He is exceedingly thoughtful and considerate of others, especially his mother, towards whom he is deferential and tender. He is respectful to his father and devoted itself, to his baby sister, for whom he seems to feel a personal responsibility. He has an admirable disposition, is refined, gentle and unselfish, but a genuine boy. His school record has been most satisfactory, both to his teachers and his parents. Henry Jr. hopes to be graduated from Terrell School, Dallas, Texas, in another year and to be ready to enter the University when he is sixteen. He and his cousin, Anne Kathleen, were baptized by Bishop E. D. Munoz, at the Thomas C. Gibbs home, Huntsville, Texas. On Easter Sunday, March 27, 1910, he was received into the membership of the First Methodist Church, South, Dallas, Texas, by Dr. C. C. Seligman.

Sarah Alla, twelve years younger than her brother, is an adorable baby. A little girl was greatly desired in her home, and never was a baby more welcome. She came bringing only happiness where already sorrow hovered near. Soon her dear grandmother's spirit was to take its flight, and already she was predestined to bear her name. Sarah Alla's most striking features are her large, dark eyes, which are almost black in color, and fringed with very long lashes. Her lips, too, are exceedingly red. She is strong and healthy and still too much a baby to determine whether her business or music will be emphasized in her fingers or the tips of her toes. She was baptized at her home, Dallas, Texas, Nov. 10, 1898, by Dr. Sam S. Hix, assisted by Rev. J. J. Morgan.

On Nov. 24, 1895, Larenda Gibbs Hawley and Henry Houston Hawley were received into the First Methodist Church, South, Dallas, by Bishop W. W. Duncan, by courtesy of Bishop John M. Moore, who was then pastor of First Church, since which time they have been interested in the church work and charities of the city.

Mrs. Hawley is a strong character, simple and straightforward in manner, with a sunny temperament, equable taste, full of quick, generous sympathy, with dignity and courage, upholding the fine old traditions of loyalty, friendship and love.

### 351 (See 354-D)

## SARAH SANDFORD GIBBS

### NORSWORTHY

Sarah Sandford Gibbs Norsworthy, the second daughter of Sandford Gibbs and Sallie Eliza Smith Gibbs, was born September 11, 1873, and given the names of both parents.

Sarah Sandford was received into the Methodist Church when seven years of age. She was educated at the Huntsville Public School where she received the General Excellence Medal. She was graduated from the Wade Female College as Valedictorian of her class, and later took a post-graduate course at Ward's College, Nashville, Tennessee. Her education was continued in travel in the United States, Old Mexico, Canada and Europe.

At the home of her mother, Mrs. Sandford Gibbs, Huntsville, Texas, she was married November 31, 1901, to Dr. Oscar Leavitt Norsworthy, son of Leavitt Norsworthy and Sallie S. Ford, Jasper, Texas. Of this union, a son, Oscar Leavitt Norsworthy Jr., was born October 20, 1905, but lived only two days.

Dr. Norsworthy's medical education was received in New Orleans at the Medical Department of Tulane University of Louisiana. After serving two years internship in Charity Hospital, he located in Houston, Texas, continuing his studies at the various clinics of the United States, Vienna and Berlin. After three years in general practice, he built Norsworthy Hospital at Houston and then specialized in surgery.

He is a member of the Clinical Congress of Surgeons at the American College of Surgeons.

In 1914 Dr. and Mrs. Norsworthy sailed for a two year's tour around the world, but the World War interfered with their plans and the trip was confined to Asia. While

there, Dr. Norsworthy visited the hospitals of Japan, China, India, and the Leper Hospital in Ragoon, Burma.

Sarah Sandford Gibbs Norsworthy transferred her church membership from the Methodist Church of Huntsville to St. Paul's Methodist Church, Houston, Texas, where she and Dr. Norsworthy have been interested in the church work and charities of that city. They have contributed liberally in money, time and thought to all church activities and have aided especially young men and women in acquiring an education and training for life work. Their hospitality and firm stand on the right side of all questions contribute much to the social and civil life of their home city. Her husband's admiration and devotion are only a continuation of the way she was regarded in the home before marriage; this is the well deserved tribute to her never failing tact, sweetness of disposition, social charm and response to every duty. She is equally gracious to the most humble and most exalted, all classes unite equally in sincere praise of her.

#### 951 (See 109)

#### DAVID WILLIAMS AND MARTHA IVEY WILLIAMS, HIS WIFE

My great-grandfather, David Williams, was born in Edgcomb Precinct, Province of North Carolina, about 1760. He was the son of William Williams and Catherine Tyre Williams, his wife, who is thought to be the daughter of Captain Thomas Tyre and his wife, Ann. (For the ancestry of his parents see Tables).

We, his descendants, have always been taught that his ancestors were among the best people of North Carolina, in fact, what in those early days were termed aristocrats. In childhood he was no doubt familiar with the "Regulators" so abundant in the western counties of North Carolina at that time. The Colonial Records show that he enlisted in the 10th N. C. Regiment under Captain Coleman Jan. 10, 1782, for one year. Whether or not he served at an earlier period we do not know. Probably in the early stages of the Revolution he was kept at home to care for the family while his father served his country as a soldier. There are given in the North Carolina Colonial Records six enlistments, at separate times, of William Williams in the 10 N. C. Regiment and we feel sure that our ancestor was one of these. Tradition tells us that he was a patriot, gathered his gun and went to the assistance of Gen. George Washington, and while absent, the

Tories came and took the last horse from the mother. David Williams has been justly placed on the Honor Roll by the Daughters of the American Revolution, but perhaps that honor will never be granted to his father because we have never been able to determine, for a certainty, which of the William Williams mentioned in Colonial Records was our ancestor.

David Williams and his father's family moved to Wake County about the time of the Revolution, whether before or after, we are not sure, for there were but few records kept at that time; it is most probable that the estate inherited from his grandfather, Samuel Williams Jr., had been shattered by the ravages of war and at it's close, they went to Wake County on account of the cheapness of the land.

About this time he married Martha Ivey, whose father (Peter Ivey, we think) was a minister of the Gospel, and lived in Wake County. The exact date of his marriage is not known, but a tombstone here in our family graveyard shows that his son, Henry Williams, was born in 1778 in Wake County. We know he remained in Wake County until 1800. Our grandmother (Mary Williams Harris) was born there in that year. The next year they bought land in Anson County and lived there until 1817.

The Williams family is closely interlocked with that of the Harries, Flakes and Smiths, as David Williams had a brother and three sisters who married Harries, two nieces who married Flakes and one who married a Smith. (See Tables) Lilesville, North Carolina was the trading town of these families and many of our forefathers are buried there.

In 1818, David Williams, together with his brothers-in-law, John Harris and John King, and Elijah Flake who married a niece, with their families moved to Tennessee, where they remained one year, when they, John Harris and John King, with their families came on to Alabama, while it was yet a territory, stopped in Will's Valley in North Alabama, and would have remained there, had there been a treaty made with the Indians for that section of the territory. They came on to near where Stewart Station now stands, reaching here May 1st, 1819. They did not settle there but entered land across Five Mile Creek near Akron, and settled a large section of this country about four miles from Akron. I have in my possession deeds of parchment signed by Presidents James Monroe, Andrew Jackson and Martin Van Buren.



The journeys were long and tedious, sometimes through trackless forests, bringing families, slaves, cattle and household goods on wagons, but it was a band of hardy, God-fearing people. Often they made the woods and hills to echo the music of their voices as they sang those dear, old, sacred hymns. They built a house in which to worship and organized a Baptist Church the next year after their arrival.

John and Milly King with their family, moved away at an early date, but many descendants of David Williams and John Harris are living here now.

David Williams died in 1834, and his wife a few years later. My mother, Louiwinsy Harris Bishop, was a little girl at the time, but their personalities were indelibly impressed upon her memory. She and my grandfather, Page Harris, a son-in-law of David Williams, loved to tell us about them and to instill into our minds and hearts the precepts handed down from these worthy ancestors.

Great grandfather was a farmer by occupation, but was also a good carpenter, the house he erected more than a hundred years ago still stands as a monument to his handiwork. It was used as a residence until a few years ago. He had a bright and genial disposition but always deported himself with the dignity of a gentleman, for it was said he could never forget that he was a descendant of an English gentleman, referring, of course, to one known in Heraldry. He was very companionable with his children, often accompanying them to the parties when they were young, and joining with them in the games and dances. He was very fond of hunting and fishing even in his older days. He was withal a devout Christian. It was on the eve of his departure to a Baptist Association when he selected the spot for the Williams graveyard, where he is buried. He had a very sick grand-child and he had my grandfather go with him to the place, about two hundred yards from his house, and told him if the babe should die during his absence to bury it there, adding that he wished to be buried there.

Martha Ivey Williams was quiet, gentle and very religious, perhaps doubly so by inheritance. She died very suddenly and is also buried in the Williams graveyard in sight of where I live. One of the most sacred and pleasant duties of my life is to care for their graves. They have two sons and two daughters resting in the same cemetery.

J. Nicholene Bishop

Miss J. Nicholene Bishop resides at Akron, Alabama. She has taught school for many

years and, we believe, was County Superintendent of Public Instruction at one time. She is a member of the D. A. R., being a descendant of David Williams. She is eligible for membership in the Colonial Dames, being descended from Col. John Alston.

952 (See 169)

### HAMPTON WILLIAMS

Hampton Williams, the Witch Doctor, was born in Anson County, N. C., perhaps about 1810-15, being a son of Benjamin Williams by his second wife, who was a Miss Mitchell. While yet single he moved to Henderson County, Tennessee, and there married twice and had children as shown by the Genealogical Table. He died about the close of the Civil War. He was a farmer by occupation, was frugal, of good habits, sagacious, very highly respected and accumulated from his farming all that was needed for his wants. We met a gentleman who was born in 1840 and had been a frequent visitor at the home of Hampton Williams. He spoke most highly and interestingly of him. He was a man of strong mentality, a gentleman in bearing, and enjoyed the confidence of some as a Witch Doctor.

Witches and wizards have ever been interesting history to some people in the world. They seem in this day to torment largely the colored race rather than the white. They often speak of it as being "hoo-doo-ed". The bible speaks of the the Witch of Ender. Buck's Theological Dictionary, an old Calvinistic work says: "Witchcraft: a supernatural power which persons were formerly supposed to obtain the possession of by entering into a compact with the devil. Witchcraft was universally believed in Europe till the sixteenth century, and even maintained its ground with tolerable firmness until the middle of the seventeenth century. That such persons have been found among men seems evident from the scriptures." The Rev. John Brown in his Dictionary of the Bible, an old work, says: "Witch is a woman, and wizard is a man, that has dealings with Satan, if not actually entered into a compact with him. That such persons are among men, is abundantly plain from the scriptures, and they ought to be put to death. Great caution is necessary in the detection of the guilty and in the punishing of them, lest the innocent suffer, as many instances in New England and other places show." As late as 1846, Joseph L. Wilson, D. D., is said to have said in the First Presbyterian Church at Cincinnati, Ohio, in a sermon: "Having before



proved the reality of witchcraft and given its practical effects as an art, among pagans, infidels and several sorts of nominal Christians, I shall now attempt to show more fully the operation of this art in the fulfilment of the prophecy expressed in our text."

There are said to have been more persons executed in the New England States about 1692 for witchcraft than were killed in the Mexican war. We recently purchased at a second hand store a small book entitled "The Amaranth", published in Massachusetts in 1831. It was intended to be an annual if it met with public favor and is a collection of short articles and poems by American writers of acknowledged merit, interspersed with sentiments of deep religious and moral character. In it, there is an article of twenty-one pages by Mrs. L. H. Sigourney entitled "Jehiel Wigglesworth". After the grain had been gathered in the fall of 1692, James Higgins, who lived in the Huguenot settlement of Massachusetts, was the most talkative of several gathered together in neighborhood conversation. There was an interruption by the appearance of a young man of large physique, tattered and torn clothes, weary and hungry. A stranger in that community, he was a cousin of Higgins and was so greeted. He was Jehiel Wigglesworth of Malden, near Salem, Mass. Furnished food, which he quickly devoured as if starved almost to death, which he was, he discussed as he ate, the perils he had just passed through and gave vent to obligation to the Creator for his deliverance. He was a man of some education and of deep religious feeling. His parents were poor and he had left home to go out and work and assist his parents in caring for the family.

He had gone to Salem and there sought work and had been employed by Rev. Samuel Paris, a Presbyterian Minister. In this home it seems there was a daughter and a niece, one about ten and one eleven years old. In February prior to this time as he said, "they had been brought under the power of Satan and tormented exactly as the four children of Mr. John Goodwin of North Boston, as published by a larned and Godly minister." He continued, "Just in that way, other bold ones blasphemed till Satan laid hands on them and they were hung upon the gallows. Sometimes we could find them standing in brooks, crying out that the devil wanted to drown them, then they would be found clinging to the top of a high tree, where they had no way in nature of getting, saying the devil commanded them to cast themselves down." He asked, speaking of these girls,

"When the poor souls sat down to a meal of victuals who do you reckon drew their tongues out of their mouths and laid them upon their chins so they could not eat? Who do you think run pins into them and left the marks of great pinches and bites on their innocent flesh, and when told to do the least chore, fall into fits, like one going to die?" It seemed that other ministers had come to this home and prayed with these girls that they might be delivered from this awful plague, and even when other ministers were present they would tremble as if afraid that Satan was near by and was going to take them at once. Rev. Paris had a negro slave named Tituba and at length these girls began to cry out on many occasions, "Tituba, the wench, bites us, sticks pins in us". The negro woman would at times be out of the room or at a distance and they would make these accusations. It was finally decided that the devil had Tituba under control, that she was bewitching the girls, although Tituba very stoutly denied she was a witch or bothered the girls at all.

At length Tituba was carried to Salem to be tried for witchcraft. The Court was composed of Governor Danforth, while Governor Stoughton stood by and the Rev. Samuel Paris with pen in hand sat there to write down all that was said. The Court asked the girls who hurt them and, "Tituba! Tituba!", both screamed for several minutes. "How does she hurt you?" was asked. "She afflicts us." "Does she ever tell you to sign the devil's book," was asked. "Yes, she is going to ride a broomstick and will stick pins in us." Then they fell into fits and the Court became very much wrought up and exhorted this old negro woman to confess she was a witch, and she so confessed. She was at once ordered to be put in prison and so soon as she was removed from the Court room, these two girls became normal again. Wigglesworth tells us that just a few minutes later both the girls screamed out, "Jehiel Wigglesworth! Jehiel Wigglesworth! He afflicts us". Wigglesworth then became frightened he says and undertook to run from the room, but was caught by the sheriff. He was brought back to the room and in a high trembling voice the Judge demanded, "Have you ever afflicted these maids?" He denied he had and was then ordered to walk in front of them and look one of them in the face, which he did. She then began to scream and declared that Wigglesworth was tearing out her vitals and continued to scream and holler until the Court ordered that Wigglesworth be taken from the room and be placed in jail as having bewitched these girls. When

this was done, the girls became normal again. When news reached them that their son was in jail, the father and mother of Wigglesworth both came to see him at the jail, and the mother implored him to confess that he had bewitched the girls, as she said the officials had told her that all who confessed would be set at liberty and the others would be hung. Wigglesworth denied to his parents that he had bewitched the girls and refused to confess. He says, "In August five of the prisoners were taken out and hung. One of them was a grave minister, Burroughs by name. But Oh! never to the longest day I have to live shall I forget the awful twenty-second of September. Then we were all summoned to look out and see eight of our miserable comrades marched out to the gallows. There was poor Martha Corey, who walked first, paler than death, and Molly Esty, who sent a beautiful speech to the Court, saying she was innocent, and Goody Parker, with her face muffled in her hood, making a prayer, and Anna Pudeator, who could hardly keep from crying, and Peggy Scoot, who used to be admired by all the young sparks for her comely face. Next came Wilmot Read that I used to play with at school, and Gaffer Wardwell, whom his wife and daughter accused of making a league with the devil, and last of all, Molly Parker, stepping as light as if she was going to a wedding." It seemed that Rev. Noyes of Salem had accused Molly Parker of being a witch.

In the afternoon a minister was sent to preach to those yet in jail, and while he was exhorting them to search their heart for the plague and get rid of the influence the devil was exerting over them, enabling or causing them to bewitch people, one Molly Lacey fell into a fit and accused her own mother and her grandmother of witchcraft. During the excitement, incident to the accusation and the fit she had, Wigglesworth picked up the hat of the minister and jumped through the window of the second story and escaped. After several nights traveling, and hiding by day, he had arrived at this settlement, being afraid to go home, lest they would go there in search for him. For some years he lived in this settlement among the Huguenots, but at length went back to Malden. There he lived, married and eventually died without ever again being molested or charged with bewitching anyone. After the execution and death of the many witches who were said to have lived in the New England States about the close of the seventeenth century, they have never been so numerous in the United States.

There are many traditions of a celebrated witch who lived near Adairville, Ky., in Robertson County, Tenn. About 1799, one Elisha Cheek, said to have been an octoroon with a white wife and several slaves, is said to have settled near there. He is thought to have come from Va. built a saw mill on Red river, kept a distillery and had a Tavern where travelers stopped over night. The country was infested by highwaymen. Near his home there was a cave of unknown depth. One night all the dogs in the country gathered about this cave and set up an awful howling and kept it up the next day. People went there and took their dogs home. When fed, the dogs would again go to this cave. One dog was a strange dog and he never left and on the twelfth day died. He was thought to have been the dog of a stranger who had been seen in that section and who it was surmised had been killed and thrown in the cave. It was not a great distance from where General Jackson had killed Dickerson in their duel.

About 1804 or five years after this dog story, John Bell came from the East and settled near Adams Station, not a great way from here. An old lady, Kate, as she was known, and supposed to have some connection with the tavern keeper, lived near there. She was well versed in the scriptures and for some years is said to have been very religious until the devil got her under his influence and controlled her and then she is said to have become a witch or thought to have become so. This witch appeared both in the day time and at night. Once she appeared to Mr. Bell as a large bird and he shot at it, while she flew away. It seemed a larger and different fowl than he had ever seen. Once it appeared to the daughter of Mr. Bell, as a girl dressed in white and as swinging in a tree and fading away. Sometimes as he went along it would seem as a dog at a distance and as he moved toward it, it would just fade away as if there was nothing there at all. At night it would gnaw at his bed post, then talk in a whisper, then its voice grew stronger. At night it would make all kind of noises, pull the hair of his daughter and pull off the cover. Many doubting people came for hundreds of miles to solve the problems. Mr. Bell was a well to do farmer and made no charges for any one who came to remain over night to help solve this problem. People would sleep in his beds, have the cover pulled off, hear all kind of noises and leave bewildered. His daughter would go and spend the night with neighbors and the witch would follow her there. The

wife was never molested with other than the noises. Finally the witch would quote scriptures and at request of ministers, would repeat the sermon delivered the Sunday before and repeat it in full.

It is said that hundreds of people came there and tried to solve the problem, came as skeptics and left bewildered. Mr. Bell was a man of high standing and gave his children all a good education, one of whom was an attorney. He eventually is thought and said to have died from worry. In the spring of 1921, the writer was at Nashville, Tenn., and spoke of this witch when a young traveling man present spoke up and said that he was at Adairville, Ky., just two days before and was asking for directions. That the house where Kate, the witch had lived, was mentioned and he was told that he would pass it and told to watch out that nothing happened. He thought no more of it until traveling along, when his car stopped and when he looked, he was in front of the house where he had been told the witch had lived. He said that he got out, cranked his car and went on, and that on his return trip he had the same accident as he passed the house. One of the sons of Mr. Bell kept a diary of events as to Kate and in 1890, this was turned over to a gentleman who published a paper in Clarksville, Tenn. He wrote a very interesting book of it. This book is out of print but we saw a copy in the Carnegie Library at Nashville.

Somewhat like these, were the witches in Henderson County, Tenn. One story we heard was of Levi Adams. He was a good citizen and a farmer. He became ill and after a time there began to be all kind of noises around his house. At night he could hear the clanging of chains above the ceiling in his room and various noises. At length the cows frequently came home on a run as if frightened by some wild beast and gave bloody milk. The sheep at times would unexpectedly run toward the house as if frightened. At length one of his eyes came out and laid on his face and he lost sight in that eye. He grew so thin his wife could pick him up in her arms as a child. After the medical men had strived for over a year to bring some relief, they informed his wife that they were of the opinion that her husband was bewitched and she had best send for Hampton Williams. She was not a believer in the ability of Hampton Williams to accomplish anything, but as that was the only ray of hope she saw, he was sent for. He came and she addressed him as Dr. Williams. He examined Mr. Adams and said he was

bewitched by two old women whom he named and who lived about three miles away. He ordered that provisions be got for nine days and that then nothing should be allowed to be carried from the place nor brought to the place for nine days. He then drew some water, and placed it in a bottle. In this bottle he placed nine new needles and nine new pins. He then sealed the bottle, took up the stones in the hearth, buried the bottle and then replaced the hearth. He told them that should they ever wish to kill these witches, to get plenty of dry wood, build up a big fire and when the fire got so hot that the bottle bursted, that at that time the witches would die. He informed them it was not necessary to kill the witches, as in nine days he would return and cure Mr. Adams. In nine days he did return. Instead of lead as was used he took some silver and in the presence of Mr. Adams molded a silver bullet. He then drew on two pieces of paper the pictures of these two old women who were the witches. He then took the pictures and held them between himself and the sun and with his revolver and silver bullet he shot the pictures, shooting one in the thigh and one in the breast. At that same moment the two women three miles away are said to have screamed out: "Hampton Williams has shot me in the breast", and "Hampton Williams has shot me in the thigh". Some two weeks later Mr. Adams was able to ride horseback and in a short time recovered but had lost his eye. Years after that, he and his wife told their children how he had been bewitched and lost his eye. In their anger and of their own volition, the children one day went out, brought in a lot of dry wood and built up a very hot fire. When it died down they took up the hearth and found that at that time the bottle buried by Hampton Williams years before had just bursted. At that same moment those old women died some three miles away. Mrs. Adams was still skeptical and went to help lay out one of the women and in her breast was found the scar made by the silver bullet of Hampton Williams as she said some eighteen years before when he shot through the picture at the sun three miles from where the woman was. Good people in Henderson County tell us these things and vouch for the truthfulness of them, saying to us that their parents told them these things happened and that their parents did not tell their children stories. Grandchildren of those interested vouch for it as true.

Hampton Williams was in no sense a fakir. He made no charges for his services of this

character. He simply did his work and after it was over, if those whom he cured thought he had been of benefit to them, he took what they voluntarily gave.

We make no profession of any kind as to our belief or our disbelief in witches. That many people more learned than us have believed in them and seen the works performed by them, there seems no question. We confess that when a boy, as most physicians had, our father had a skeleton, and for several years we slept with that skeleton in a box under our bed and we never saw any ghost. We do not object to beginning a piece of work on Friday nor sleeping in room 13. Neither have we ever enjoyed a night's entertainment nor had our slumber broken by the noise of a witch. Whether these things are of a reality or the chimerical vanity of a disordered mind we know not. We do know that today some of the most highly educated profess to have apparitions of various kind, even going so far as to commune with the dead. We laugh at the ignorant negro women who put salt in the gate to keep some other negro woman from harming or "Hoo-doo-ing" her, and stand in silent awe at him who professes to speak to the dead.

Of late years we have read a little of Mental Science. We are of the opinion that if Hampton Williams was living in this age he would be a Mental Healer with a splendid reputation. He was a man, in thought, eighty years ahead of his time. That in this day Mental Healers and Christian Scientist Healers, both in a way working along the same line as did Hampton Williams, accomplish wonders, there can be little doubt. Had he lived in the New England States during the troublesome times at the close of the seventeenth century, he would have no doubt saved the lives of many. In our judgment, Hampton Williams was a man of remarkable mentality and lived not in vain.

W. Thos. Smith

953 (See 176-F)

#### NEWSPAPER, LILESVILLE, N. C. DEACON WILLIAM TYRE WILLIAMS

Deacon William Tyre Williams, on April 9, 1887, at his residence near Lilesville, died in the 74th year of his age. For fifty-two years Brother Williams had been a member of the Baptist Church at this place and for many years past he has acted as deacon and treasurer. Soon after the war he was appointed magistrate of his township and such was the confidence of his neighbors in his

integrity that it is said his decisions were generally satisfactory to both parties in the law-suits tried before him. He was plain and unostentatious in his manner but exceedingly popular as a man and magistrate. He has been a constant reader of his church paper, The Biblical Recorder, having been a regular subscriber from the very first issue of the paper till the day of his death, and was consequently liberal in his views of men and things and liberal in contributions to benevolent objects. He was sadly missed by his church, his pastor and the entire community in which he lived. A large concourse of prominent citizens from all parts of the county was present at his funeral which was preached at the Lilesville Baptist Church on Easter Sunday. Birmingham Jackson, Jordan Sanders, and W. T. Williams, four deacons of this church have passed away since I left the village eight years ago, and many whom I baptized have gone with them. The time is short.

Needham Brown Cobb

#### NEWSPAPER, LILESVILLE, N. C.

(See 171)

#### JOHN DUDLEY WILLIAMS

John Dudley Williams died at his home near Lilesville, Aug. 9, 1890, age 75 years. His reverence for the Christian religion was at all times a marked characteristic of him, and his life. "Must I be carried to the skies on flowery beds of ease", came audibly from his lips just a little while before the Angel of Death came and bore his spirit to that celestial home. As a husband and father he was gentle, kind and devoted. As a citizen, quiet and unobtrusive, yet conservative in his views of men and measures. His manly bearing and consistent action toward his fellow beings commanded respect from all who knew him and placed his name high on the roll as an "old time gentleman". His life was worthy of emulation.

James Berrygrove Lindsey

To John Dudley Williams:

Dear grandfather, thou hast left us,  
And our hearts all bleeding lie;  
Still, we know thou art in Heaven,  
Where we hope to meet thee, by and by.  
Days and weeks we watched beside thee,  
Doing all that we could do.  
Ah! How many prayers were uttered,  
Asking our Father to spare you.  
Now our time of watching is over;

In that old home there's a vacant chair.  
 And we feel that thou art waiting,  
 Waiting for us Over There.  
 No more can we look at that noble face,  
 No more can we smooth that snow white brow.  
 For thou hast left us, thou hast left us.  
 And are praising the Lord in mansions fair.  
 Oh! Who can paint that mutual joy,  
 Of the meeting on the Heavenly shore,  
 When he clasped his loved ones in his arms  
 To live with them ever more.  
 How sadly we miss thee, no one can tell  
 Our burdens seem too great to bear;  
 But through it all we know and feel  
 That God is very near.  
 Let us look beyond the dark, dark cloud  
 To that blessed Heavenly home,  
 Where death and suffering are not known  
 And where farewell words will never come.  
 Lord; keep us, bless and cheer us,  
 While our loved one is away.  
 May we strive to live as he did,  
 And meet him in Heaven some day.

Lucy Morton Frederick

NEWSPAPER, LILESVILLE, N. C.  
 April 14, 1904

(See 175)

#### WILLIAM ELLIS WILLIAMS

In the death of William Ellis Williams, son of John Dudley Williams, which occurred at his home near Lilesville, last evening about 8 o'clock, the country loses one of its very best citizens. He was a true man in every relation of life and was greatly respected and loved by all who knew him. He was, we suppose, about 50 years of age. He had been a great sufferer for some time and with a complication of diseases had been confined to his bed for five weeks. He is survived by four children, all boys, ranging from two to twelve years. The interment will be at the J. D. Williams old burying ground three miles south of Lilesville.

NEWSPAPER, LILESVILLE, N. C.  
 March 31, 1909 (See 171)

#### MRS. CAROLINA WILLIAMS

Mrs. Carolina Williams, wife of the late John Dudley Williams, died Wednesday night at her home near Lilesville at the age of 86 years. She is survived by two daughters, Mrs. Bettie Dabbs and Mrs. Peter Morton, both of Lilesville township. The deceased was a devoted member of the Baptist Church and lived a most worthy life. She lived a

useful life and the world is better because of the worthy example and her good deeds, which she leaves as a memorial. Rev. A. Summey conducted the funeral and burial service at the Williams grave yard, where the remains were laid at rest Thursday afternoon.

LILESVILLE, N. C., Jan. 30, 1897  
 (See 171-F)

Our whole town was shrouded in gloom last Tuesday morning when the sad news reached us that Benjamin Albert Williams was dead. No one could realize that the bright, happy form, so well usually, and full of life the day before, was then still and cold in death. He left us apparently in perfect health late the evening before, to go to his home near Lilesville, and going to his bedside before day, his relatives were shocked to find him dead. Ah! What a shock to the devoted mother to whom he had always been such an appreciative and obedient son. Never has a death produced such universal sorrow.

None knew him but to love him. He was a pleasant companion, being noted for his ready wit and humor and for his love of humanity. The writer knew him from boyhood days and considered him one of his most valued friends. A warmer, truer heart never beat in any man's bosom, and on Wednesday, amid the tears of friends that fell like the frozen rain, we laid his body to rest in the family burial ground to await the Resurrection.

His mother, one brother, and two sisters survive him. To them and all his loved ones we extend our sympathy and pray that God will bind up their broken hearts. Farewell, Ben! Many will come and go but none can fill the vacant place in our heart.

John C. Birmingham

NEWSPAPER, LILESVILLE, N. C.  
 (See 174)

In Lilesville, on Friday night, Nov. 11, 1887, Mrs. Roxie Tyson, wife of James A. Tyson, (daughter of John Dudley Williams) died, aged 35 years, 4 months and 23 days, leaving a husband and three children, the youngest, a son being seven weeks old. His birth was the beginning of the sickness. Mrs. Tyson, though a long seeker of religion, and for some time cherishing a hope of her acceptance in the Beloved, was of such a shrinking, timid disposition that not until Aug., 1886, did she come out openly and unite with the church of her choice. She was baptized into the fellowship of the Lilesville church by Rev.



H. W. Battle at the close of a protracted meeting. Afflicted nearly all of her life she lovingly looked to the Saviour as her Great Physician and yielded herself cheerfully into His hands.

Never did a sick wife meet with more unremitting and unselfish care than she received from her devoted husband. Another church member gone, another home on earth is broken up. Three more children made motherless. God bless and comfort those who are left behind.—Needham B. Cobb.

At his home near Lilesville, Aug. 9, 1890, John Dudley Williams, in the seventy-fifth year of his life, passed on. He joined the Gum Springs Baptist Church many years ago and died in the triumph of the gospel. As a citizen, he was universally esteemed. As a Christian, his life was consistent. The last year of his life he had almost lost his sight and hearing. We feel assured that he has been healed by Him who opened the eyes of the blind and caused the deaf to hear.

#### 954 (See 353)

#### JAMES MADISON FLAKE and AGNES HAILY LOVE

These parties were born June 22, 1815, and Nov. 6, 1819, the first in Anson County and the second in the adjoining County of Richmond, N. C. Agnes Haily Love was the daughter of William (Billie) Love, who was the son of John Love and Mollie (Mary) Crawford, his wife, and Mollie Crawford was a daughter of Thomas Crawford and a sister to Maston Crawford, William Crawford, Patsy Crawford and Nancy Crawford.

In the year of 1838, they were united in matrimony and in 1842, before it was given, they started out to follow Horace Greeley's advice: "Go West! Young man, go West". With an old time "Prairie Schooner" which carried all their earthly possessions of provision and household goods, with three small children, two slaves, a twenty year old negro man and a ten year old negro girl, given them by the parents of the wife, with two mares and a horse as a motive power, they set out on the journey with Kemper County, Mississippi, as the destination. There he became the owner of a good farm, salted his own private hunting ground for deer, fed the wild turkey and was thus enabled to go out any morning and quickly secure all the meat wanted. James Madison Flake loved the chase and kept on this plantation a fine pack of hounds and two well trained dogs. The hounds would chase the deer until he shot it, when they would stop and the large

dog which always stayed at his side would then go after the deer, while the smaller was trained to follow behind and pick up anything that was left or dropped. His hogs ran in the woods, fed upon the acorn, and furnished him all of the pork and lard that was wanted. Thus the young married life of this pair was being spent in happiness and ideal pleasure.

At length there came into that community an Elder, sometimes termed a Missionary, preaching a new Gospel. This Elder accepted the Bible from Alpha to Omega but he had an additional message that was handed down to the Prophet Joseph Smith by Moroni of old. James Madison Flake and Agnes Haily Love, his wife, accepted the teachings of the Latter-Day Saints and notwithstanding its unpopularity, they became members of that denomination and were called "Mormons" because of their acceptance of the book of Moroni. The prejudice and persecution that ever raises its bigoted head when any intellect successfully advances any new religious thought contrary to the concepts that impregnate any community was unusually strong in this community, against this new religion, but their loyalty to their honest opinions in matters of this character overweighed the life of pleasure and ease they were dropping into, and they forsook all to live the Gospel as was taught by the Apostles of old. In 1844 James Madison Flake went to Nauvoo and there met the Prophet Joseph Smith fifteen days before he was murdered, and he received a Patriarchal Blessing under the hands of Hyrum Smith. He took his family and went to live at Nauvoo, Ill., in order to be with people who now believed as he did. There this family and others suffered a persecution such as had never been known before on the American Continent. They were robbed of most all they had and eventually were driven from their beloved city of Nauvoo and in the dead of winter again began their journey westward, crossing the Mississippi river on ice. Through a united effort of all, they were able to make the way by slow stages, to where is now, Council Bluffs, Iowa, where they went into winter quarters. There they lived in a "dug-out" during the winter of 1846-47. When the first train of pioneers started there for the West and settled in Utah, their negro slave, Green, was sent with a team of mules and wagon to help others across the continent, while James Madison Flake was left behind to help make preparations for the big companies to follow. In the spring of 1847, he planted a crop at Council Bluffs and built a log house to live in during the winter following. Green, having

returned with his team and wagon, in the spring of 1848, James Madison Flake again bundled his family into a wagon and started on the long stretch across the plains with many others. They were all organized into different companies and James Madison Flake was made a captain of 100 wagons in Amsa Lyman's company. It would make this article too long to attempt to describe the trip, tell of the trials and the hardships they passed through, but they buried three of their six children on the plains, which fact itself tells a long story in a few words, and reached the valley of Salt Lake in the fall of 1848. Green had preceded them and had built a log hut in which they then lived. In the summer of 1848, James Madison Flake was sent with an exploring party to California to find and fit out a place of settlement for the Saints who came by water to the West coast. His party passed through the valley that in later years gained the name of "Death Valley" because of the many emigrants that died of thirst when attempting to cross it. These came near meeting the same fate, as when they had gone as far as it seemed possible to go without water, they stopped and lay down on the dry parched ground. Like Washington at Valley Forge, the leader of the party went off to one side to pray, and when he returned he told them help was coming. They looked to see from where, but the only thing visible was a small cloud rising from the west, and this in a few minutes passed over them and fell into rain. This rain saved their lives and they went on their journey in rejoicing of their faith in the Deity. A few days later James Madison Flake took the "cinch" from his saddle to loan to a companion who was riding a fractious horse and he put a circingle around his saddle. A short time thereafter his mule became scared at a rope lying across the road, gave a jump which broke the circingle and threw saddle and rider to the ground, from which fall, this ancestor in his youth, passed on to the other world. There he was buried and the mules brought back to his young widow. Most of the Southern people with whom she had lived and traveled made preparations to go to California and in 1851, with her three small children, she again faced a hard and long journey across the vast desert and went to California. She made her own living, helped to buy the San Bernardino Ranch and built the first house built by Americans in Southern California. The children made the adobe while a neighbor laid them up, having the boys work for him in return.

A wealthy brother, learning of her widowhood, asked that she return to North Carolina, promising that she nor her children should never want for anything, if she would only leave the "Mormon" people alone. She replied that she knew the Gospel was true and that she had rather wash for a living than to leave the people whom she knew were right in thought as to religion. She remained loyal to the teaching of the Later-Day Saints and died in that faith. She was a delicate woman and the pioneer life was too much for her. She soon failed and when death was near, she refused to allow any one to sit up with her. Liz, her negro girl, slept by the side of her bed and kept watch over her, waking up with a word when anything was wanted. One night, realizing the end was near, she told Liz to bring to her all the children. This done, Liz was sent for a neighbor and while gone the children were given their last instruction. The friend was told what to do with the children and then turning to the eldest of her three children she said: "William! You are the oldest and I will hold you responsible for the example you set before the younger ones". She then kissed each one good-bye and lay back on her pillow. Her soul had gone to meet her life's companion, leaving these three orphans, the oldest fifteen years, in a new country, and two thousand miles from the nearest kin, with no railroads intervening.

Osme D. Flake

955 (See 355)

#### WILLIAM JORDAN FLAKE

William Jordan Flake, the oldest son of James Madison and Agnes Love Flake, was born in Anson County, N. C., July 3, 1839, and now past the age of 82, lives at Snowflake, Arizona. Although only three years old when the journey was made, he has not forgotten the old time "Schooner" and the two mares and a horse which drew it when they left Anson County and settled on a small branch of the Tom Bigbee River in Kemper County, Mississippi. There his parents having embraced the faith of the Later-Day Saints, or "Mormon" as often designated by others, the persecution and feeling was such that they preferred to move to Nauvoo, where they could mingle with those of their religion. There he saw his first temple, was taken to the top where he could see all over the surrounding country. It was a beautiful sight.

Here he first learned how quickly powder burns, when he took some in his hands from his father's powder keg, and threw it in the fire. The flash so burned his face that all the skin came off and for months he had to wear over it a black cloth, with holes cut in it to see through. Mobs often in that day came and looted Nauvoo and when he saw them on the street he would run and hide. He saw the people driven from Nauvoo and he shared in the exodus. The trip across the frontier was slow and full of tribulation. A youth of but 8 years, he walked the entire distance to Utah. First to Council Bluffs for winter quarters. Here he received his first schooling of two months. Then on to Salt Lake. With three other small boys and a negro girl, he drove cattle from Nauvoo, Ill., to Salt Lake, Utah. The plains were then covered with the buffalo and he saw many thousands of them. Again in 1851, he went with his mother to California and he was put behind the cows with an Indian pony his mother had bought for him. This pony carried him the most of the way but was too poor to ride all the time. At one time on this journey they were five days and nights on the desert without water for the stock and very little for themselves. When at length he reached a small, bitter seepage, he drank three cans of water and was reaching for the fourth, when a man caught him and took the can from him. He was in the fight for more water but the man was too strong and he was then allowed to eat, after which he was allowed to have more water. This no doubt saved his life. His first stop was in Cahoon Pass, near San Bernardino, where he was able to get another month of schooling.

While driving cows up the Majave river, one got away out in the brush and as he went out to drive her back into the herd, an arrow whizzed by him and hit the cow, a trick of the Indians to kill the cow and have a feast. His youthful days were busy ones in assisting and helping his widowed mother. He did quite a bit of freighting, helped to build a home, worked on the roads and did manual work of all character. An orphan at fifteen, he felt he was almost alone in the world. For nearly fifty years he never heard of any of his relatives, although he inquired of hundreds of people from all parts of the country, he was never able to hear of any one by the name of Flake, until the writer happened to meet John J. Flake from DeKalp, Kemper County, Miss. This was in Dec., 1897, on a train near Meridian, Miss.

While bathing in 1856, he dived from a stump about eight feet high and struck the

ground in shallow water. He was dragged out for dead but finally was able to breathe. His head was knocked back so he could only look upwards, not being able to see the ground without getting down on his hands and knees. The physician informed him that he would never be able to get it down again. He said he would get it down or break his neck trying. He also found that he was quite numb on one side. Later one day he was asked why one leg was shorter than the other one and found that he had but one shoe on. For months he worked with his neck, rubbing it, using liniment and would lie with the head on the chair and weight of the body suspended on the back of his head in this way for hours. At length it yielded and in time he got it so corrected that no one could tell that anything was ever the matter with it. It now does not bother him unless when he undertakes to do some writing or work that requires the head to be held down. The numbness has never left him, but while he uses that side as well as the other, he has little feeling in it.

In 1857, when Johnson's army was sent to Utah to "bring the Mormons into subjection" and it was reported that the Mormons were all to be killed, William Jordan Flake returned to Utah, to live or die with his people. He knew they were honest, honorable people, that their loyalty was second to no other people who lived. Evil disposed men who knew better, had gained the ear of the United States authorities and the army had been sent. When things were represented by honorable men, the army was recalled. He however now decided to remain in Utah. His first job was following some Indians who had stolen a bunch of horses which they took with them. He was ten days on the trail and most of that time without food. He took the horses he brought from California to Salt Lake and traded them for five yoke of oxen and two big wagons. While returning to his home a snow storm came one night and he lost his oxen. For ten days in eighteen inches of snow he hunted for them, and finally found them in a small cove up in the mountains. A little further on he got his oxen into Salt Creek, had to drag them out, got wet and nearly froze before he got a fire to warm by. Two deserting soldiers came up, warmed by his fire but dared not stop for fear of being captured. They both froze to death before morning. He reached home without further trouble except the freezing of his feet. This kept him in for a short time and while not being able to do work, he made use of his time in courting Lucy White of Cedar City, Utah. Later he married her.

Late in the winter, while on the Sevier river, an officer tried to take from him a Government overcoat. He refused to give it up, saying that it would mean death by freezing and he would rather die fighting. Finding that he well knew the roads and the officer having a detachment of soldiers on their way to California, they obtained from him all the information they could as to the roads and went on their journey, leaving him the coat.

For several years he herded stock most of the time, generally to protect them from the Indians and sometimes from the white outlaws. He joined the Minute Men, an organization whose members were always to have, in easy reach, a good horse and saddle, to be ever ready to go on the trail of the outlaw at once, day or night. He often went on these missions. In 1859, he moved to Beaver, Utah. In 1860, while the mountain road was covered with snow, with a load of logs he was hauling with which to build a house, he was coming down the mountain when the wagon slid from the dug-way, his feet were caught in the logs and he fell under the load. The snow was ten feet deep and this saved his life. His brother, Charles, dug in the snow from the lower side and got him out unhurt. He shortly afterwards traded two horses for two houses and lots and of a generous nature, he gave one of them to his boyhood chum, Marion Lyman, and with his young wife, lived in the other one.

The house furnishings were more crude than the younger generation can well imagine; a tin plate or two, one case knife that he found without a handle and for which he whittled a handle, a wooden spoon, the work of his hands, a bedstead made with an axe, a couple of log stools, and yet he lived in the fashion, as nothing more could be bought within a thousand miles. He must wait until he could make a trip to the "store" for something better and that trip meant a summer's journey.

That same year he took up a farm and fenced it. He has been owning farms ever since that time but has done little farming as you cannot farm well while in the saddle and riding a horse. The following year he took a herd of sheep to keep on the share and kept them for several years under this arrangement. He employed men to look after them in the summer time while he went off freighting, one summer on the Pony Express and two summers he went to California.

In 1854 at the call of his Church, he took a six horse team and went to the Missouri River to bring out immigrants who were then constant-

ly coming to Utah. He was to bring 2000 pounds for the Church and any additional matter he chose to bring, he could bring for himself. He brought things most needed, of which were two stoves.

Most of the year of 1866 was spent in the Indian War, known as the Black Hawk War.

In 1868, he married Prudence Kartchner. He now spent his time working with cattle, taking all the cattle of the community to look after and was helping to open up new places on the frontier. In 1875-76 he was employed by the United Order, at \$1000.00 per year, to look after their cattle and also opened up a farm in Escallante, southeastern Utah. In 1873, having been sent with a few others to look up the prospects for settlements in Arizona, he was called by the Church authorities in 1877 to take all he had and go to Arizona to help develop that country. To him the call was a command; a duty that could not be shirked. He sold his home, his lands and everything he could not move and on Nov. 19, 1877, started for a new home 500 miles distant, in an unsettled and wild country. He had six wagons loaded with provisions. Nine yoke of oxen and seven span of horses pulled them. With him he carried 200 head of loose cattle and some 30 or 40 horses. A cold winter, snow in places on the road from 12 to 15 inches deep, they did not reach the valley of the Little Colorado until about the middle of January, 1878. Here they settled, the whole of the winter being spent in wagon boxes for homes. Because of numerous floods which took out the dams needed for irrigation purposes, this location proved very unsatisfactory and in June he started to look for another home.

There were few settlers in that country, some small towns, and a few ranchers. Those in the towns were principally Mexicans. We were compelled to get along on what we brought with us as the nearest trading point was 250 miles away. After a two week trip, during which he went as far East as New Mexico, he returned having found only one place that suited him and as the owner wanted \$12,000.00 for it, he did not buy as that was more than he then was worth. His family wished to move so badly that he went back and purchased it, and got three years in which to pay for it. It was necessary to go back to his friends in Utah to get stock on credit. He went and traded sheep for cattle, telling them that he had no sheep but that the Mexicans did and he could trade for them. He promised them that he would deliver them twice the number he sold them, the delivery to be made in three years. They

knew him and did not hesitate to trust him. The following year he did the same thing again and got more cattle.

The first winter at this new home, some fifteen families from the South who had been West about a year, came to him for help. They had neither food nor clothing and begged him to provide for them, saying they would work early and late for just enough to keep them until they could get something to do for themselves. There was no work to be had and they were destitute. They were taken in, every room in the ranch house sheltered a family, and the adobe stables were pressed into service. He thus furnished shelter of some kind for all. His wife Lucy cut up the seamless sacks for pants for the boys. I have worn them myself, and the wagon covers were used to make dresses for the women and girls. We ate anything we could get to eat. When the flour was gone, all ate Graham bread, and the Graham had been ground in a coffee mill. We had barley bread.

This benefactor bought grain from ranchers for seventy-five miles distant and then went to Utah and purchased \$500.00 of cloth with which to clothe them.

The most of those who came were poor. He purchased farms or ranches and turned them over to the people to pay for when able to do so, reselling to them without a profit. He never collected one cent of interest from any man, although some did not pay him for years. His home was the camping place for travelers and for fifteen years, he fed more to the travelers passing through than it took to keep his large family. He fed their horses for days sometimes, never turned any man from his door empty handed nor did he charge a cent for the accommodation he gave. Twenty and as many as thirty strangers at a time sat at his table in a single day and during these days, it was rare that the family ate a meal with no other one present.

I remember an old miner who came to our home and being sick, asked to be allowed to stop a day or two until he was able to go on to Colorado. Father unpacked his burro, took the man into a room, and placed him in bed where he remained for weeks. Several days later this old miner called mother, and handing her a belt containing several hundred dollars, asked that she take care of it, informing her at the same time that he had not stated the truth when he came and told us he had no money. He said that he had feared the Mormons would kill him, if they learned he had the money, as he had been told they were that kind of people and had never met

one before. He said he knew different now for it was her kind nursing that had saved his life. Three months passed, before he was able to go on his journey and when his belt was handed back to him as given to mother, he offered to pay for his keeping and the feeding of his two animals, but father refused to accept anything. Used to roughing it, this old miner cried like a child and said it was not right to refuse to accept pay, and opening his belt, he dropped several pieces of gold upon the table and walked out and went on his journey.

The first year after William Jordan Flake bought the valley, he raised 2100 bushels of of grain. There were those who were ready to buy it but he kept it, used and gave it to the poor for food, as they needed it. More land was now needed for those coming in to settle, he gave forty cows for the Concho ranch and then he gave three hundred cattle for the Nutriose ranch. Then he helped to purchase Springerville, which was a part of the valley purchased from the Mexicans and finally purchased the Nutriose. Most every settlement made in Navajo and Apache Counties, Arizona, by the Latter-Day Saints, after he came into that section was purchased first by him and they are the beneficiaries of his exertion.

His word has ever been his bond. He was never required to give security and has purchased property running up into the thousands without any security other than his oral promise to pay. He was never sued in court nor has he ever entered suit against any one. He was often the instrument of breaking up gangs of thieves, who infested the West in an early day and he has looked down the barrel of a gun of an outlaw on several occasions. He never used a gun in defense of himself or his property, although he always carried it as a protection against the Indians at times.

Two wives have been buried and for twenty-one years he has been without a companion, living with his children, all of whom are now married. Until eighty years old, he rode the range in all kinds of weather, thought nothing of lying out all night on a quilt, or being out in the rain or snow, or having missed a meal or two in order to accomplish a task undertaken. For exercise, he often, yet, goes out for a day's ride among the cattle he sold some years ago. He has good teeth, reads without glasses, enjoys a good appetite, eats any kind of food and hardly knows what a days sickness is. He has become somewhat deaf and for that reason does not mingle or go out much where he will meet strangers. He has more



and truer friends than any man in Arizona and has in his lifetime done more to build up that State than any man ever has or can do. In his dealing with mankind, he has never considered a man's politics or his religion. He has treated all men as brothers until proven unworthy. Uncompromising with evil, he has ever stood for clean and honest living. No scandal has ever been attached to his name and when he passes from this sphere, it can be well said of him: "There lies an honest man."

Osmer D. Flake

#### 956 (See 367)

#### JAMES MADISON FLAKE NO. 2

James Madison Flake No. 2 was born in Beaver City, Utah, Nov. 8, 1859, and now resides at Snowflake, Arizona. He lived with and worked for his father until some ten years after he was married. He was of great help in the work of pioneering in Arizona. In 1876-77, he farmed in Escalante, where he met and married Nancy Hall.

In the fall of 1877 he moved to Arizona and worked some on the farm but principally with cattle. He was an expert bronco rider and a good pistol shot. As cattle men had often to break in wild horses, the former was quite beneficial, while the latter stood him in good hand many times and was finally the means of saving his life. In 1887 he was called by the Latter-Day Saints to go on a mission for the church to Great Britain and there and in Scotland he gave to his church two years of service. While there he went to France and saw the World's Fair. After his mission was completed, he returned to his home and with his brother Charles as a partner, operated a daily mail route of 100 miles and ran a merchandise store in connection. On Dec. 8, 1892, an outlaw who had robbed a bank and killed three men in New Mexico, undertook to rob the store in Snowflake, or it was thought so. He was being detained by the Flake brothers, when he suddenly drew his pistol and shot at James Flake. The powder burned the left side of his face and cost him the sight of his left eye and the ball passed through his ear. The bandit then fired at Charles Flake, the ball going through the neck, cutting the jugular vein and hitting the spinal column of Charles Flake. As he did this, James Flake drew his revolver and shot the bandit in the face and as he turned toward him sent another ball through the head just below the eye, killing the bandit immediately. Charles Flake lived thirty minutes.

For fifteen years, James Flake conducted the "Flake Brothers" business, dividing all profits with the widow, the same as if she had been doing her share of the work. When her boys were of sufficient age to attend to the business, he divided the business, the widow taking the store and he taking the cattle. Since then he has run his farm, raised cattle and horses. As a benefactor of mankind he has followed in the footsteps of his father. He has always been highly respected by his associates, and holds positions of responsibility in the town and in the county in which he lives. He is still active and attends to his own business and is a leader in all affairs for the benefit and betterment of the community. He is much interested in having the genealogy of the family collected and published.

He is the father of a large family. He first married Nancy Hall who died April 6, 1895 and on Oct. 8, 1896, he married Martha Smith. For a list of his children, see the tables.

Osmer D. Flake

#### 960 (See 2)

JOHN WHITE, MARTHA (PATSY) PYEATT his wife; JOHN CASWELL MATLOCK, MARY (POLLY) MERRICK, his wife, our great-grandparents.

A writer has said: "The privilege and duty of each generation is to imitate and perfect whatever is virtuous and commendable and avoid the wrong and hurtful."

If in the pursuit of this, we of this generation can gain an inspiration from the search of this line of our ancestors, we think it no more than filial duty to record and pass this information on, in some way tell it to posterity. While not able to go so far back in the annals of the past on our maternal as on our paternal side of our kindred, we find, to us, a no less interesting story.

Tradition is, that John White and Martha (Patsy) Pyeatt were married in South Carolina and their first born child, James White, was born at or near Nashville, July 27, 1789. They were perhaps born about 1768 and 1771, respectively, as it seems girls in those days married young and circumstances hereafter related would indicate she married young. John Caswell Matlock and Mary (Polly) Merrick were likely born in North Carolina, or South Carolina, Virginia or Maryland, or some eastern state, and yet it may be they were born at Nashville, Tenn. Their first-born came Sept. 21, 1804. We

know not the name of the ancestors, although "Mother" Merrick came West with her daughter and a son, who later went to Missouri.

We can then guess that John White arrived at Nashville in 1788, and perhaps John Caswell Matlock came later.

As our information about these ancestors is so meager and as history was being made so rapidly and the detailed history of that epoch in the sections where they lived is fraught with such great interest, we think it not amiss to combine with this sketch some historical matters, hoping that it may, in a way, call the attention of some youthful member of some of the descendants of these ancestors, and in this way, he too, may read with interest and amazement, as we have, the detail history of the early Cumberland settlements and Revolutionary days in South Carolina.

The childhood days of John White and Martha (Patsy) White were spent during the days of the Revolution in South Carolina. One early writer says: "It was the misfortune of South Carolina, during the Revolutionary war, to possess a numerous party, less attached to the Union (Continental Congress) and more tainted with dissatisfaction than the inhabitants of any of the other States. Among her citizens the disinclination to separate from the mother country was stronger, the spread of republican principles more limited and the march of the Revolution slower, than any other colony save Georgia. There were heroes in South Carolina who entered with the best spirit of chivalry into the national quarrel. These men refused submission to their conquerors, endured exile, chains and prisons rather than the yoke. These patriots were often compelled to retreat to secret places, to live in the forest with trees for a cover. Their homes were burned, their property destroyed and punishment by death when captured was not uncommon. These patriots would from time to time gather in secret places and then make a dash against the soldiers who patrolled the country and professed to rule that section. History records that there was a kind of free-masonry extending from settlement to settlement among those and by which the Patriots could by friendly greeting and guarded conversations distinguish friend from foe. As strangers met, discretion warranted an expression of neutrality but the Patriots or Whigs as they were called, could soon determine whether he be friend or foe. Kindred were often arrayed against each other. Father and son often battled for supremacy,

one for the older order of things, one in support of the uncertain promises hoped for by the Continental Congress. Strangers were constantly passing through the country, stopping with strangers at night, and when they retired at night the landlord and lodger did not know whether or not one or the other might be murdered before morning. Families were, at times, compelled by roaming bandits of the King's troops, which infested that section, to leave home and dwell in thickets and in marshes. If it was suspicion that comfort had been given to a Patriot, the home was burned. Here was spent the childhood days of John White and Martha Pyeatt White and an unhappy lot these childhood days must have been.

Tradition is, that the mother of Martha Pyatt had become deranged and died. Her husband had been a loyal Patriot and was killed in the Revolutionary war as a soldier and Patriot. (See N. C. Colonial Records). This misfortune weighed heavily on the mind of the mother and she died. This orphan girl went to live with brother Peter. The treatment of his wife was such that, as a youthful maiden, she started on foot to Georgia all alone, to live with a married sister, Jane Pyeatt Davis. She stopped with a Dutchman over night or to rest for a season. There was then a fable that if you should throw in the fire some shavings, unseen and in the presence of two old people, then the first name mentioned would be the name of the one she would marry. Martha tried this fortune. There had been another John White who had gone to the old country. One of these old people said to the other, "I wonder if John White is coming back to this country." She remained there and married John White but not the one talked of. Then tradition tells us they came to Nashville.

Nashville had been first settled in the fall of 1779, and we think they perhaps arrived in the year of 1787 or 88. Nashville has a most interesting history. Tradition is that they came on horseback. History records that at that period on horseback or foot was the only way to reach Nashville. Just who came with them, we know not. Perhaps Richard White, a brother of John White was with them. Tradition is, that he settled finally and perhaps died on the Harpeth river west of Nashville, east of Waverly. Perhaps the two sisters, the wives of Jonathan Pryor and Duncan Pryor, mentioned in the Table were with them. Possibly Mary White who married John Craig McDaniels was with them. At that early date they, no doubt, came in numbers, for the dangers of the

Indians were so great, people rarely traveled singly over the mountain trail. Tradition is that they first lived, or before going to Humphrey County, near the "Hermitage", known as the home of General Jackson, just south of Nashville. Reaching there, they began housekeeping in a tent. They had many companions in like condition.

On these journeys, in these early days the equipments were a heavy blanket or buffalo robe, a rifle, hatchet, knife, powder horn, powder and bullet, an extra gun flint, a sack well filled with corn. This was made into meal with the hand pestle. Game for meat could be killed on the way. That they were brave and daring, there can be no doubt. History tells us that there were few cowards recorded in this country's early history. History tells us that many in these early days subsisted on most meager food at times. That they could read and write we feel sure, as history tells us that these early settlers could read and write almost to a man. Poverty however in those days was no disgrace as it was most common. Of those who signed the Cumberland Compact May 13, 1780, when that colony arrived and formed a government, of the 256, only two had to make his mark and each was required to sign it in this own method of signature.

Early in the spring of 1779, the war of the Revolution was yet uncertain. At Wauteaga, in Washington County, was the only settlement in Tennessee. From there James Robertson, Zachariah White and six other white men and a negro slave set out westward in search of a new location far away from possible British domination. They traveled over three hundred miles by the shortest route then known and set out a corn crop at or where Nashville now stands. Zachariah White and two others remained to guard the crop from destruction from the buffalo while the other returned to bring out a colony.

James Robertson at the head of the first section left Wauteaga early in the fall. On his way he was joined by many others, some from North Carolina and some from South Carolina, seeking to explore and in search of a resting place in the forest of the boundless West. He reached Nashville in December, 1779 with more than 200, many of them single young men.

The second section, under the leadership of Colonel John Donelson, was largely of women and children, families of those who had left before, but in this colony were quite a number of men. They were to come on the water route. They left Ft. Patrick on the Holston river on Dec. 22, 1779, passed

where now stands Knoxville, down the Tennessee river as it winds through Alabama, on through western Tennessee to the Ohio where is now Paducah, Ky., then up the Ohio to where Smithland now is, then up the Cumberland river to Nashville, reaching Paducah on Feb. 20, Monday, and reaching Smithland on Friday, 24, and Nashville on April 24, 1780, having traveled the waters for one thousand miles. It took them four months and two days to make the trip. There were 160 men, women and children in the party. Six small boats made from logs with the broad axe and small tools, and manned by wooden paddles had been the means of conveyance. History tells us that his journey has no parallel in American history. We are of the opinion that the unfettered heroism of these women and children will ever adorn the most lustrous page of Tennessee history. The diary kept by Colonel Donelson has been republished in full on several occasions in prints of historical character and needs only be mentioned on this occasion. One John White and Solomon White were on this river expedition.

On May 30, 1780, all the male inhabitants over twenty-one years of age at Nashville, or Nashborough as it was then called, assembled in meeting and formed a government for their guidance. Twelve men were selected who were to pass all laws, make all regulations, interpret these laws and enforce them. This was called the Cumberland Compact and was duly signed by each person.

Among the signers of this compact, we find the names of Burgess White, Zachariah White, and Samuel White. The names of Solomon White and John White do not appear. We think that because they were not yet of age, their names do not appear.

We do not know and have no reason to think any of these Whites were related to us. John White and Martha (Patsy) Pyeatt, his wife and our ancestors were married in South Carolina and did not come to Nashville until about 1787 or 1788, we are thinking.

The tradition from our father and from Green Bivens is that they were among the early arrivals of Nashville, Tenn. Our assumption of the date of the arrival is based wholly on the date of the birth of James White, the son. We are of the opinion that he was the oldest son. If mistaken in that assumption, then the arrival was earlier.

Zachariah White was, some two years later, killed by the Indians and for this blood so spilled in 1784, his heirs were given 640 acres of land by the State. This was only one of 69 cases, then awarded for like sacrifices.

John White, the early arrival, seemed to have led a more charmed life as by the same act, he and 69 others were each given 640 acres of land for services rendered in protecting the settlement from Indian depredations. This colony of less than four hundred souls now found themselves on a new continent to so speak, over three hundred miles distant by the shortest road then known from the western line of the white settlement and over six hundred miles by the nearest route then traveled from Raleigh, N. C. the nearest seat of any Colonial government. Little have they now to worry about the King's officers.

True the Indians had for money received and by papers signed, prior to this relinquished and sold to private individuals all of the middle Tennessee territory, and these individuals and their representatives had now come to take possession of it, but the Indians were on the south, west and north, and continued to make frequent incursions on hunting expeditions on the east, in disregard to their agreements.

The boast of those who claim ancestry among the settlers of Plymouth Rock and tell us of the hardships of the Puritans and claim all the glory for those people, can only bring a smile to those who are familiar with and can trace their ancestry back to those who were of the early settlers in the Cumberland District. This is in no way intended as a flippant remark, as on those Plymouth settlers we would cast no aspersions. They had their mission in life and well did their duty. Their deeds are written on the granite leaves of history and will ever be of interest to American children.

The Cumberland settlers had dreams of a freer government, had well timed and fully determined their purpose, drew the plans, erected the foundation walls and builded a higher civilization. The intrepid deeds, the excruciating sorrows, the deprivations and unflinching courage of those honest-to-God people is worthy of being handed down to all coming generations. We think that one writer says that of the 256 who signed the Cumberland Compact, not over a dozen yet lived at the end of twelve years and only one had died a natural death. We have not carefully counted the number nor the names and while this may or may not be exaggerated it does not far miss the borderline of truth. As above stated, four years and seven months after the signing of this Compact, the government awarded lands to the heirs of 69 victims and these were largely of those who had signed the Compact.

April 2, 1781, 700 Indian warriors arrived at Nashville to engage the whites in battle. They came at night. The inhabitants were in the Forts and it was surrounded by a high fence made of logs for protection. The Indians undertook to burn the fence but the timbers were as yet so green they would not burn. Three Indians during the night were seen lurking on the outside and were promptly killed. Early in the morning three more approached the fort, fired their guns and ran for cover. Not supposing the force to be so large, the gates were now opened and twenty men dashed out on horses. The Indians now appeared on all sides. The men dismounted. The horses became frightened from the war cries and broke away. The fight was now on. Fifty trained dogs were now released from the forts and turned loose on the Indians. In their zeal to catch the horses, which they highly prized and from fear and fright from the dogs, the Indians were kept so busy that of the twenty men, fifteen were able to get back within the wall of the fort, leaving five killed. The dogs were then called in and the gates closed. The noise of the dogs is said to have been greater than the war cry of the Indians and one lady in her old age is reputed to have said that the barking of the dogs on this occasion was the sweetest music she had ever heard. In those days practically every settler had a pack of dogs and in many instances they outnumbered the children. We must not be forgetful of the fact that in those days the families were usually large, often from seven to eleven children as can be seen by reference to the genealogical tables. A horse would tremble with fear when an Indian was scented and they could at times discern them at a considerable distance but the dogs would trail them as they would a wild animal. If an Indian should shoot or wound one, the others of the pack would fight him with more glory and greater madness. Never a good marksman at best and generally with inferior guns, these Indians would be so badly frightened that they could rarely shoot a dog and as it took time to reload the old single ball and powder rifle, an Indian would rarely stand battle against a pack of dogs. For the families, a pack of dogs was splendid protection.

After the above battle was over, the Indians remained under cover around the fortress all day. Night came on. Powder was scarce and balls none too plentiful. A small cannon was loaded with slugs of iron, broken horse shoes and things of that character. Opportunity was awaited when a large assembled bunch of Indians was discovered. The aim

must have been accurate as at once the Indians disbanded and fled in terror. These incursions by the Indians continued with such regularity that some settlers returned to the east and there was earnest discussion by all about abandoning the settlement and going to Kentucky.

In December, 1782, the news of the surrender of Cornwallis reached the settlement and historians tell us that there was great rejoicing among the settlers that the Patriots had been successful and many audibly expressed their adorations to the Deity. Few Tories prior to this date or afterwards came to the Cumberland settlements and practically all those who came in a short time either returned to the east or went to other places. Historians tell us they were all known on their arrival and did not receive a friendly greeting. As over Wauteaga, so over Nashville the flag of Great Britain never floated and we submit that the Cumberland settlement was the first born of the American Revolution.

We pass the first few years, although they were the most fatal. In 1787, thirty-five deaths are charged against the Indians. In 1790, seven thousand whites and slaves were in the Cumberland settlements, scattered up and down the river for forty or fifty miles in each direction but there was less than one thousand men able to bear arms. Slaves were not permitted to engage in warfare but remained at home to protect the women and children.

At first ferocious, now the scalping of their victims by the Indians had grown worse. They now would generally skin the whole head and mutilate the body by cutting it and this was especially true of a woman victim. In 1792, sixty are recorded to have been killed by the Indians. Indian agents of the government now estimate that there were fifty thousand Indians in fighting distance of the Cumberland settlements.

In this year, the inhabitants of Tennessee County, then territory west and north west of Davidson County, in which Nashville is located, petitioned the government for help and informed it that unless something was done to stop the incursions and massacres by the Indians, that the settlement would have to be abandoned.

In 1793, fifty were killed and some say as high as seventy nine. Others were made prisoners. Prisoners among the Indians were made slaves and treated as such. In the first three months of 1794 twelve were killed. From Feb. 26, 1794 to Sept. 6, 1794, there were 67 killed, 10 wounded, 25 captured and 374 horses stolen. In the next sixty days,

thirty more were killed. The whole Cumberland settlement, whites, blacks, men, women, and children was not over 9,000.

In September of this year, James Ore with 550 mounted men marched into the Indian country south of Nashville, killed many, made 19 women and children prisoners and scattered the Indians in all directions with the loss of only three men.

Up to now the emigrants had come on foot or horse back but in 1795 a wagon road was opened from Nashville to Knoxville which had by this time become settled. The emigrants now began to go westward in greater numbers and in 1796 we find 12,000 in the Cumberland settlements.

July 1805, a treaty was made by which the Indians ceded to the United States all the territory to the Tennessee river but by the terms of this no one was to be allowed to enter and settle upon it prior to July 3, 1808. When this day arrived there were hundreds on the line to go into that territory. The Creeks had been the Indians who had given the most of trouble, while there had been some trouble from the Cherokees but it was the Chichasaws with whom this treaty was made. The Creeks and Cherokee Indians were sent southward, but the Chichasaws were sent west across the Tennessee river.

Hichman County was organized in 1807 and included the lands of the Tennessee river and now in the southern part of Humphrey County, while the latter county was organized in 1809 with Reynoldsville, then on the river, as a county seat. At a later date, the county seat was moved to Waverly and all that remains of Reynoldsville are the land-marks of the former buildings. Tradition is, that James White and father, John White, were pioneers of Hichman County, we think that they must have located in this section after July 3, 1808 and prior to the time in 1809 when Humphrey County was organized.

It now looked as if many troubles were ended, but in 1812 we find a band of Muscogee Indians and other tribes of Indians roaming through this country between the two rivers, stealing horses, producing alarm, and "stirring up the demon of revenge". The ancient hostility of the Creeks was renewed and they wandered into the sparsely settled country near the Tennessee river and murdered several near the mouth of Duck river. Not once but on repeated times they came. The Indians to the north had encouraged it to such an extent that the government deemed it prudent and sent Captain David Mason across the Tennessee river to cut communication between the Creeks and the northern Indians.



August 30, 1814, the Creeks broke into Fort Mimms and slew all of the men, women and children. A meeting at Nashville was called and people came from all this western country. The purpose was: "To devise means whereby speedy and effective aid should be offered to those distressed citizens and to punish and exterminate the Creek Nation and their abettors". Abettors was the British nation, as it was known that its emissaries were among the Indians trying to incite them against the government. All eyes turned to Andrew Jackson. A force of 2500 was raised and he was sent against the Indians. No quarter was now asked and none was given and in the battle there were killed 600 Indians. Coffee and Carroll were both with him. Jackson was now made a Major General of the United States army.

Now it was discovered that Great Britain with whom we were at war had designs on the southern country and General Jackson was sent there and up to Dec. 18, 1814, he only had 884 regulars, the 44th under Colonel Ross and the 7th under Major Piere. It would look as if the cup of sorrow of the Cumberland settlers was about all that could be endured but tradition is that William White who married Susan Carter and who was the son of our great-grandparents, John and Martha Pyeatt White was in this battle of New Orleans. Whether he was a volunteer and left Nashville on Nov. 19, 1814, on the barges and went with Colonel Carroll down the Cumberland, Ohio and Mississippi rivers or whether he was with Colonel Coffee and had taken part in the Indian war against the Creeks, we know not. Coffee with 800 men from Tennessee had left Fort Jackson and traveled through the marshes for some eight hundred miles, when word came that he was very badly needed and the last two days these brave boys of Tennessee made a march of 150 miles to reach New Orleans.

On Dec. 23, 1814, as soon as Jackson learned the British had landed, he began preparation for an attack, and ordered that they give them battle that night. 1800 men went against a like number of the British trained soldiers. "The Regulars were under Lieutenant McClelland but they were led in this fight by that gallant staff officer Colonel Pyeatt". McClelland was killed and Colonel Pyeatt wounded. Colonel Carroll ordered his Tennessee men not to lose a shot and to fire only at a short distance. These Tennessee hunters had long rifles and could fire with great accuracy. The battle ended in a hand to hand fight with guns as clubs and the Tennessee hunters used their hunting knives

as bayonets. Among those lost on that night was the gallant Lieutenant Colonel Lauderdale, a relative of Miss Jennie Lauderdale, our school teacher at Dyersburg, Tenn. 1882-87. We shall never forget Miss Jennie. We do not think there has ever been any one save a relative to whom our thoughts have so often wandered as to that gifted and talented lady and of whatever good there is in us there is, to her influence, due some credit. At school we were often called her pet, but this was unjust to her and of all she was our most beloved teacher in childhood.

In this night battle of perhaps less than 4000 in all, the British lost over 400 killed, wounded and missing, while the loss of the Americans was 24 killed, 118 wounded and 74 prisoners. A writer says: "It was a night of duels. Many men who had never been engaged in personal combats were that night transformed into heroes. Many whose whole career had been of greatest gentleness, on that night fought like tigers and were as brave as lions. On the next day the bodies of a British and American could be found with the knife of the one stuck in the body of the other one." A young officer the next day said that with 10,000 Tennesseans he could march to London. In January, 1815, more troops had arrived, 2500 from Kentucky and with the citizens of New Orleans who had volunteered or been drafted, each side went into battle with about 10,000. After the battle was over 356 dead of the British were counted on the battle field, some were supposed to have been lying in the marshes. The British admitted that the wounded were 1255 and missing or prisoners 483. The Americans lost 8 killed and 13 wounded. The thanks for this victory is in most part due to the Kentucky and Tennessee hunters and their long rifles. They fought behind breast-works. We can be justly proud of the part our great-uncle William may have played in this battle.

For thirty-four years, now since 1780, those living of the early Cumberland settlers had lived through an almost continued guerilla war as waged by the Creeks and at times by the Cherokee Indians, never knowing what tomorrow might bring to light. The war against them was the most ferocious, the most stealthy, more cruel and more unjust than any Indian war waged in America.

Middle Tennessee had never been an Indian home nor more than a hunting ground. The Indians were too indolent to clear the land. With thick cane brakes abounding on every side, it afforded a most fruitful hunting place. Circular earthen mounds ris-

ing well above the surface and so arranged at the top as to afford a fortress against a most dreaded foe and fifty thousand graves in close array with bones lying six inches under the surface and in a circumference of forty miles of Nashville are the mute witnesses who tell a silent story of the heroic defense by a defeated, for so extinguished by these barbarians that this generation has not even a traditional story of how long ago the Mound Builders were completely destroyed, and their homes and their lands turned into a game preserve for the wild beast to roam in.

Whatever time our ancestors may have come to the Cumberland settlements, we are sure that the time was still in that period when it was still deemed necessary to maintain an armed guard. As to John White and Martha (Polly) Pyeatt, we are most positive that it was prior to the birth of James White in July, 1789. As to these ancestors, there is a traditional story that on their journey to Nashville, they had to travel so late one night to reach water, that after drinking it Martha Pyeatt was so weary and tired that she dropped off to sleep as soon as drinking the water. Another traditional story is that when living near the home of General Jackson, one morning they awoke upon hearing something on the house. They went out and found a large panther on the house trying to get to some meat that was fastened on top of the house. The barking of a small dog and the presence of these people was a surprise and the panther jumped and ran up a tree. The rifle had been broken and Martha (Pyeatt) White and the dog kept this panther up the tree until John White went one mile, got a gun and returned. At times the dog would cease to bark and then the panther would begin to act as if he was going to spring on Martha (Pyeatt) White. She would hiss on the dog and the panther would then look at the dog. Thus by the encouragement of the dog, the panther was bluffed until John White came with a rifle and killed it. He then pursued another to the river, found it in some bushes and killed it. The one on the house when skinned and stretched, measured ten feet from tip of the nose to the end of the tail. General Jackson came by and suggested to Martha (Pyeatt) White that she cook a piece and they would eat it. This was done but all three quickly agreed panther was not good eating and it was thrown away all except the hide.

After leaving the section, where is located the Hermitage, tradition is that John White settled on Waverly Blue Creek, south of Waverly and north of Duck river. This is

the section where John Caswell Matlock and his wife lived for some time. Near there, where Duck river runs into the Tennessee, there was built a fortress where the settlers could go for protection in case of an Indian raid.

As General Jackson was born in South Carolina in 1767, about the time of the birth of John White and Martha (Pyeatt) White, and as he came to Nashville about the time of their arrival and as they lived neighbors for some years, we can somewhat judge of their childhood days by quoting from a friend of Jackson who wrote in 1845 as follows: "In old age when time and infirmity pressed heavily upon the sanguine and dauntless spirit, and the impressions of youth came heavily upon memory with more distinctness, that tottering old man of the Hermitage, with his shriveled visage and snowy locks, but with eye still undimmed and as piercing as ever, would recall with frightful accuracy the horrible scenes of carnage, rapine and desolation which had made that boyhood, to which most men recur as the brightest spot of their lives, the gloomiest and saddest epoch in his career."

As to the childhood days of John White and Martha (Pyeatt) White, we know and as to John Caswell Matlock and Mary Merrick we think they were whetted with many tempest, some of cyclonic portensions, while the dark clouds hung heavily around their shoulders, and would oft but drown their youthful aspirations. Too young to have taken part in the Revolutionary war, as to John White and Martha (Pyeatt) White we know where they stood, and as to John Caswell Matlock and Mary Merrick, we think we know where they stood from the location of where they lived, as those who had opposed the patriots never long lingered in these Cumberland settlements, so early writers tell us. The western breezes must have wafted hopes of better days, while stories from returning pilgrims must have made them think that in the setting sun they could see flashed the beacon light of a distant nation where ambitions for a better life could be best attained. They must have longed for a happy life to have undergone this perilous journey. We think great must have been their disappointment, but the historians all tell us the fortune of all these early settlers was enduring. They fought on for a better tomorrow. Back eastward went stories. More came out. The families increased. Indian trouble decreased. The Seminole war of 1818 and it was all over. Tradition is that Jack White, son of John White, went

to Florida in this war. History tells us that these early women did read the Bible and wished for a living ministry, while both men and women recognized a divine Providence and the religion of the Bible and the word of God as had been handed down to them and as was taught by the Protestant religion.

For years the rifle was a constant companion whether it be in the corn fields or traveling abroad, going to the dance at night or to church on Sunday. The Minister was not immune and as he traveled from settlement to settlement, from house to house and to the church of the Deity, the rifle was his companion. At church on Sunday these would all be stacked in the corner in case of an emergency, while in the corn field at times some youthful member of the family was perched high in a tree top to keep vigilance against the stealthy Indian. The dogs were of benefit on these occasions.

Their homes had been built of logs, hewn flat and well fastened. No window at times adorned the building while the door was so astened as to be barricaded from within. Portholes for the rifle were made in the walls. The buildings were frequently square and most generally had a second story. Here the walls extended further out two or three feet and portholes were in the floor of this extension. When the Indians should surround the house to burn it, through these portholes the rifle could be shot. This was the citadel that our ancestors had for a home, so tradition tells us.

In an early day they beat the corn and made hominy by the use of the hand pestle but in 1782 there was a corn mill and hominy pounder with a water wheel as motive power built at or near Nashville. For years after in remote sections the hand pestle was used.

With neat simplicity at times, these our female ancestors or their daughters may as did others wear the leather dress with noble bearing. It was not the usual conventional garb but was worn with such frequency as not to cause derision; while the leather apron more frequently made its appearance. Some in those days could tan the deer skin and give it the "softness of velvet and the beauty of Canton Crepe silk".

No man was ever ashamed to wear leather breeches or a leather hunting shirt and fur cap. Thus arrayed or with jean pants patched at the knee, with moccasins on their feet, they would dance the "Contra dance of the jig" at entertainments and on the split log floor. To the music of the fiddlers they would dance the Quadrille, Cotillon, or Virginia Reel.

These ancestors had good eating in later days. In the early days bear oil was a substitute for butter, lard and gravy. Hunters became very fond of it and counted it a delightful drink, especially on a cold hunting trip. "Well-stuffed, well-cooked wild turkey, buffalo, venison steak, boiled bear meat, fried chicken, ham and gravy, eggs, spice wood tea, hoe-cake, ash-cake, johnny-cake, and after frost when pawpaws and 'simmons' were ripe, a fat opossum and sweet potatoes", these were the things our ancestors feasted on, and after they moved to Humphrey County, they were in the midst of the maple forest while maple sugar and honey furnished the sweetness for life.

Old age we think was spent in pleasure. Corn mills to properly grind the meal were now plentiful. All the sweets of former days remained with much of the bitter vanished. Farming had well gained the ascendancy. Cotton was being raised. The Matlocks were neither rich nor poor but had all that was wanted and there was always plenty.

John White at all times was fond of the hunter's life and engaged in farming and stock raising. When he left Tennessee he had not acquired much of the world's goods. About 1836 he moved to the "Iron Banks" in the Mississippi River, near Columbus in Hickman County, Kentucky and both he and wife died there about 1850. Here game was plentiful and as some of his children lived there he probably never suffered for what was needed. The Indians were no longer of trouble. Greed for gain had not arrived. Their old age was perhaps one of pleasure.

To encounter the many dangers, hardships and tribulations these ancestors no doubt had decided was their destiny. They had no doubt hoped for less. Victory and the comforts of the simple life, the absence of the savage Indian no doubt filled their cup of joy to over-running. In Matlocks Graveyard near Sugar Tree lie the remains of the Matlocks, while at some place near the Mississippi river in Hickman County, Kentucky, lie the remains of John White and Martha Pyeatt White. When the morning of the resurrection comes, who better than this generation can say: "Master! I have done my duty well".

W. Thos. Smith

961 (See 50)

JAMES WHITE, and ELIZABETH MATLOCK WHITE, HIS WIFE, OUR GRAND-PARENTS

James White was born July 27, 1789, some where in Nashville, or about ten or

twelve miles south, and near the Hermitage, known as the old home of General Jackson. Elizabeth Matlock was born Dec. 8, 1806, at or near Nashville. They spent their lives up to 1820 at and around Nashville and on the north side of Duck river and east of the Tennessee river. No one can fully realize their life's existence in childhood days unless he has read the detail history of the Cumberland settlements during that period. There was no occasion to tell these children ghost stories or try to incite their fear by the relating of an imaginary being. It was only necessary to whisper "Indian," and every child trembled. Either born in a tent or living in one for some time in babyhood is the tradition of this male ancestor. The father of his mother had been killed as a Patriot in the Revolutionary war. The wife had become deranged and died as a result of this calamity. Thrown on the charities of the world, Martha Pyeatt had joined young John White in his fight for a living. All he possessed they had brought from South Carolina on the horses they had ridden across the Mountain trail. A tent was all they had for a mansion in married life's first struggles. James White the first born, came into existence during this period. In those days, there were many neighbors sharing like quarters. Elizabeth Matlock had her tribulations. One night when a child, she with her parents had gone five miles to spend the night with friends in the next settlement. Into their settlements, this night the Indians ventured. Every man, woman and child, save one small child were pushed into a cellar and upon discovery by the Indians, were killed. Every one killed was scalped save one small girl and surroundings indicated that she had been taken by the feet and her brains dashed out against the chimney. The visit of our grandmother and her people to another settlement was all that spared their lives, as they were not present. In childhood days he was perhaps called Jimmie, later probably known as Jim, and then for some small service as a leader in some trifling Indian skirmish, he was the recipient of the title of Captain James. A little later, having been elected Justice of the Peace, and having served to settle neighborhood disputes for some years, he was called Squire White, but having reached ninety years, five months and nineteen days before he was called to his maker, he was universally called Uncle Jimmie, as is the custom in the Southland when one has grown aged and is highly respected. In early life he met Polly McSwaine and their love ripened into matrimony. She too had led

the adventurous life and when yet in childhood had lived near the banks of Duck river. The house had been washed away by an unexpected freshet and the McSwaine and Jourinigin families sought safety on a hurriedly made raft fastened to a tree, not of sufficient size to hold up and float the families. Seven or eight days of the childhood of Polly McSwaine was spent in these waters. On the back of a horse an older sister had floated down the stream until the horse had crossed the river three times before he could make a landing. She managed to gain safety. Starvation was staring them in the face, when a McSwaine boy and a male member of the other family undertook to swim out and bring assistance. They both lost their lives and the bottom of Duck river was their burial place. Under all circumstances, there would be a shudder to think of killing a dog and especially one of those valued animals in those days, but we think that we would do that rather than to die of starvation. At length came along two men in a large canoe and these unfortunates were escorted to land. One small piece of bread was all they had and this was given to Jane, the baby. Jane is said to have married a Mr. Young, while Hessie, the oldest, is said to have married Tom Wily, from Alabama, the richest man in that country. These are the traditional stories still being handed down in that section of country. After reaching land, in this enfeebled condition, a walk of fourteen miles was made before they could reach habitation and satisfy a ringing hunger. James White and Polly McSwaine upon marriage traveled their journey together and life was one of sweetness. A babe came and he was called Andrew. Later they went over to see the child's grandmother, as they journeyed many times; but of this one trip we make mention. As they went through the cane brakes, a bear was seen coming. Undoubtedly hungry, he rose on his hind feet in fighting fashion and made a dash for them. Two large bull dogs which they had thought they had made remain at home, unbidden and against orders were trailing behind them. Looking behind as if to retreat, the dogs were discovered. The babe was handed mother and with it she went for a rifle. The battle grew fierce when in turning James White stepped on a broken stick and thinking the bear had struck him in the back, once for the first and only time, so far as we know, he showed the white feather and ran but he always claimed he made a record run on this occasion. At length looking back, he saw the dogs still in battle and re-

turned. At length his wife came with the rifle and he killed the bear.

A second babe came and then the wife was called to meet her Maker. She lived in a trying epoch and served her country well. He had moved across the river to Benton County as soon as it was opened for settlement after the treaty of 1818, by which it ceased to be Indian territory. 1820 was the year it was opened up and according to tradition he settled there that same year. He needed a wife for his children and he courted Elizabeth Matlock. She was the bright jewel of that country if traditional stories are a criterion. She was very gifted and her specialty was work; her virtues were cleanliness and correct living; her religion was Presbyterian; her ambition was lineage to follow her. There was not an indolent atom in her body and she was as proud as a queen. If perchance it had fallen to her lot to grow up in this new country, had not her grandmother brought from the east silk worms. She fed them the mulberry leaves that nurtured life and brought into existence, so as to be used, the cocoons, and spinning six of these small fibers into one, she procured the silk thread and this she wove into cloth, and then made it into her own wedding gown. She carded the cotton or wool, spun it into thread and knitted her own stockings. So fine was this silken cloth woven, that she could pull one width through her thimble. These were the wedding clothes of our grandmother in this, then, new settled country. When her husband had accumulated a sufficiency, still she spun and wove as work was her religion. Her handiwork was the admiration of all. To all of her children when they married, she gave ample bed spreads, quilts and bedding material to start in life with and at home had many more. Her own were destroyed by fire which burned the home prior to her death. In the distribution of her handiwork, as it has passed on to posterity, it was our good fortune to have handed down to us one of her works of this character. On every Saturday morning the yards had to be cleaned of rubbish of every character. Carpets had not yet reached this settlement, and we are not sure they were then common anywhere. When so tedious and it took so long to make cloth, carpets were not so often thought of. Every fourth week, in all the rooms and hall from top to bottom, the floors were scrubbed and made as white and clean as hot water and home made soap would make them. Whenever there was need of cleanliness, this was done more often. They had plenty of slaves to

do all the work, but for her, negroes were not sufficiently tidy and clean to cook and do the milking. To be sure she had one in the kitchen to do the drudgery, but she must not handle the food for grandmother and her family. If unable to cook and milk, a daughter must do it, and she would never drink milk unless she was told her daughters had done the milking. Her incessant and never relenting work went on until she died. She was a most devout Presbyterian and when her husband joined the church, she proffered to go with him to the Methodist, but he insisted that she remain with the church of her choice. All the slaves were very fond of her and did her bidding, some remaining after the war just as before the war until she died and left them. They were her friends and so fond of her that we now think it not amiss to mention them by name as they were when the war freed them. Nig, Winnie, Ann, Bob, Babez, Marcus, Rufus, Priss, and Bill were the ones who got their freedom by the war, while to each of their children prior to that time these ancestors had given a negro. These good but not forgotten servants are perhaps all dead now, save Ann. Peace be to their ashes!

James White was somewhat different from his wife. We would not call him lazy, but he thought his part in life could be best played by seeing that the negroes kept busy. He cared little for hunting, so common in that time and country. Tradition is that he often in one morning, traveling from Morgan's to Eagle Creek, could see fifteen or twenty deer. He was industrious and frugal, but left details to others, seeing that everything kept moving. Then in idle moments he had a feast in reading. Our father told us he was a well read man. Books, in those days, were scarce articles and others tell us that he had more books than had others and that he was a great reader. We had hoped to find his library and note the character of his reading. Some few months prior to his death the house was burned and with it, all of his books perished. We are told that he had a good opinion of Lorenzo Dow and oft read his works and passed them to neighbors. Lorenzo Dow was a noted preacher and was the Billy Sunday of the epoch of his time in history. The Bible was his most oft companion and he had read it through from cover to cover on several occasions. In old age this was his constant companion. Second sight returned to him and he read his Bible until he became tired, and after resting, he would again reach for his Bible. For some years before his death, he always



had family prayers before retiring. James White was angular in form, witty in expression. He very seldom laughed outright but by witty expressions, well spoken and well reasoned utterances he could always keep others in good humor. Dead now, he is still personally remembered by the older citizens of Benton County, and is held in high esteem. Of gentle and even character, with a higher development of intellectuality than that of most his companions, his opinions were highly respected. After the marriage of our father to his daughter, seeing the ambition in his son-in-law for a higher medical education he generously proffered him financial assistance to take a College course in medicine. This was accepted as a loan, afterwards repaid and our father's children feel very grateful to this ancestor for this assistance. None of his ancestors were held higher in esteem by our father than was this and these, his wife's ancestors. James White always put butter in his coffee instead of cream. He would sweeten his

butter milk, of which he was fond, with a little sorghum molasses. He objected to biscuits with soda in them and oft strategy was resorted to by rolling a piece of dough very thin and placing these biscuits in a plate for him. He was always a good provider and his family enjoyed a reasonable amount and all that was needed of the best this new settled country afforded. Not ambitious for riches, he was ever the master mechanic rather than detail workman. There is an old saying that from his shoulders down, a man is like a mule, only worth his food, clothing or for the mule his provender, and that for whatever he receives more than that is because of what he has stored in the regions of the body above the shoulders. James White recognized this and all through life was of a studious character. In the southern part of Benton County lie the remains of these ancestors, near Sugar Tree, their trading station.

W. Thos. Smith

## List of Subscribers for Book

No.	Name	No.	Name
1	Miss Pattie V. Battel, Nashville, N. C. (604-C).	2	Dr. E. Clark Hubbs, 801 Ferguson Building, Los Angeles, Cal. (59).
2	Frank Bennett, Wadesboro, N. C. (806G-H).	2	Mrs. Bettie E. Smith Hughes, 102 North Gramercy Place, Los Angeles, California. (523). (She does not know all books will be given to her).
1	Mrs. Irene Smith Bradford, 320 Baltimore Street, San Antonio, Texas. (515-A).	1	Mrs. Alfred P. Johnson, Blue Ridge, Georgia (323-C).
1	Dr. J. H. Bennett, Wadesboro, N. C. (806G-H).	1	Mrs. Fred S. Karner, 202 S. Kaufman St., Mexia, Texas (556-D).
1	Mrs. Mary Smith Bessent, Tygret, Tenn.	1	Mrs. Sam D. Knowlton, Pertshire, Miss. (113-C).
1	Prof. Peter F. Brown, 198 Milledge Ave., Athens, Georgia.	2	Mrs. Fannie M. McGregor, Lilesville, N. C. (584).
2	Miss J. Nicholene Bishop, Akron, Alabama (110-C, 951).	1	Mrs. Fannie Mathews, Prairie Grove, Arkansas.
4	Mrs. P. B. Bookman, Holland Street, Navasota, Texas.	1	William Matlock, Coxburg, Tenn. (14).
8	Mrs. Julia Flake Burns, Wadesboro, N. C. (339).	1	Elizabeth Meachum, care of Mrs. W. S. Gibbs, Huntsville, Texas.
1	Green Bivens, Camden, Tenn. (46).	1	Mrs. Margie R. Flake Miller, 1420 South Cullom Street, Birmingham, Ala. (341).
1	Mrs. Florence Smith Cannon, 232 Candler Building, Atlanta, Ga. (751).	1	Mrs. Teleoah Townsend Moore, 33 Arlington Place, Macon, Georgia (Nelme).
1	Alexander Bayard Clark, Eatonton, Ga. (Nelme Family).	1	E. Nelms, Lake Cormornat, Miss. (841-842).
1	Mrs. M. J. Cooper, New Hebron, Miss. (617-E).	2	Mrs. Dr. O. L. Norsworthy, 3915 Main Street, Houston, Texas (558-D).
1	Edward Hull Crump, Memphis, Tenn. (849) (806A-A).	1	W. S. Odle, Lexington, Tenn. (6E).
1	Mrs. Esther Smith Dickerson, Ellis Apartments, Paducah, Ky. (510).	1	Sam Odle, Sugar Tree, Tenn. (6D).
1	Mrs. Ruby Smith Dickinson, 510 Goodrick Building, Kansas City, Mo. (521C).	1	Mrs. Etta Biles Redfern, Rowland, N. C. (542-A).
2	Mrs. Eliza N. Dula, Lenoir, N. C.	1	Mrs. T. L. Robinson, Monroe, N. C. (331-B).
1	Mrs. Oria Mea Smith Fisher, 311 2nd St., Larimie, Wyoming (520-B).	2	Mrs. H. Y. Robinson, Huntsville, Texas. (558-B).
25	Osmer D. Flake, Phoenix, Arizona (364).	1	Cecil C. Smith, Box 687, Ranger, Texas. (521F).
1	R. B. Flake, 242 South Main Street, Winston-Salem, N. C. (335-C).	2	Dr. Julius A. Smith, 1230 North King Street, Greenville, Texas (521).
1	T. J. Flake, Plainview, Texas (390-A).	1	Prof. John D. Smith, North Third Street, Paducah, Ky. (506).
1	Thos. J. Flake, Lilesville, N. C. (324-A).	1	Weightman Smith Sr., 101 California Street, San Francisco, Cal. (524).
2	W. D. Fry, Harris Station, Tenn. (10-E).	1	W. J. Bryan Smith, Box 320, Tyler, Texas (522-D).
1	John W. Fry, Alvin, Texas (6-C).	2	William Blake Smith, Sherman Street, Mexia, Texas (554-F).
1	J. T. Garriss, Lilesville, N. C.	1	Miss M. Gertrude Smith, Delhi, California (515-B).
1	Mrs. T. A. Gandy, Wadesboro, N. C. (546).	1	Jesse Philip Smith, 5022 San Jacinto St., Dallas, Texas (559).
1	Miss Florilla Girvin, Point Pleasant, Mo. (68-A).	2	Almonta Smith, Marked Tree, Arkansas (509).
1	Mrs. Wilbourn S. Gibbs, 1225 L. Street, Huntsville, Texas (558-A) (1225).	1	Millard M. Smith, 1518 Bank of Commerce Building, Memphis, Tenn. (514).
1	T. C. Gibbs, Huntsville, Texas (558-C).	20	Gen. W. A. Smith, Ansonville, N. C. (631).
1	Thos. V. Hardison, Wadesboro, N. C. (331-C).		
1	James A. Hardison, Wadesboro, N. C. (331-E).		
4	Mrs. Henry Houston Hawley, 5701 Gaston Avenue, Dallas, Texas (558-H).		
1	Jerry Smith Henry, Lilesville, N. C. 702-D).		

List of Subscribers (*Continued*)

No.	Name	No.	Name
1	Mrs. Maggie Smith, R. F. D. R. 4, Memphis, Tenn. (636).	2	Mrs. M. J. Yates, 738 South Second St., Louisville, Ky.
1	James M. Smith, 203 South Dupre Street, New Orleans, La.		
1	Mrs. Auber Smith, 1739 Jefferson Street, Paducah, Ky. (511).		
1	Mrs. J. H. Steedman, Norwood, Ga. (554-B).		
1	J. T. Stanback, 309 Hillsboro Street, Raleigh, N. C. (815).		
2	Mrs. J. A. Sutton, 127 North Spruce St., Winston-Salem, N. C.		
5	Mrs. Martha Flavel Flake Sullivan, Box 101, Wadesboro, N. C. (341A).		
1	Mrs. Lucy D. Wall, Pee Dee, N. C. (606).		
1	Mrs. P. K. Wallace, 92 South 25th St., Paris, Texas (539H).		
1	John A. Weaver, Lonoke, Arkansas (75).		
1	Louis J. Williams, Lewisville, N. C. (847).		
8	W. Smith Williams, Winston-Salem, N. C. (847).		
5	Mrs. Lucy J. F. Wood, Colonia, Jaurez, Chit. Mexico (363).		

Eight hundred circulars were sent out. This is the list of subscribers. If the book shall please you, the writer is of the opinion that if you will secure a well bound blank book and write in it your knowledge of your ancestors who are not mentioned herein, and pass it with this to your children, there is no gift costing so little that will be so much appreciated after you have passed away. If the book shall please you, any assistance in the way of a word to some other, which may help my sister dispose of the other books will be appreciated. Thanking those who have assisted us, thanking those who have subscribed in advance, the writer is glad he has compiled and finished this book, regrets that there are some errors in it. These are always unavoidable in books of this character, as some guess at information and some do not write plainly.

W. Thos. Smith

























